THE OLD PIONEERS MEMORIAL

HISTORY
OF
MELBOURNE

From the Discovery of Port Phillip up to World War I

by

ISAAC SELBY

Two hundred and eighty photo engravings
from original pictures and maps

"We Gather Strength as We Go"

Published by
THE OLD PIONEERS MEMORIAL FUND
and Printed by
Mc. CARRON, BIRD & C.O.
479 Collins Street, Melbourne

1924
Published by Ian J. Itter
Swan Hill
Victoria 3585
Australia

Release 1
First published 1824
Rare LT, 919.45, W 527 - Aus.

Copyright on this 2015 transcribed “Revisited” publication, is assigned by me, Ian J. Itter to the State Library of Victoria.

Printed by Academy Graphics: Swan Hill Victoria: (03) 5032 2725
Postage weight Kilograms
210 pages
Title: The Old Pioneers Memorial History of Melbourne - Revisited
Transcribed and compiled by Ian J. Itter
Google Ian Itter ASRP
ISBN –
Classifications :-
Pioneers – Australia
Pioneers – Victoria
Pioneers - Melbourne
# TABLE OF CONTENTS.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Disclaimer</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Introduction</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Preface</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>01. The Origins of a Great City as seen through the eyes of an Old Cemetery</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>02. John Batman, an Empire Builder</td>
<td>24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>03. The Aboriginals and the Pioneers</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>04. Statesmen and State Servants</td>
<td>82</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>05. The Founders of Trade and Commerce</td>
<td>122</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>06. Great Missionaries</td>
<td>149</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>07. The Science and Culture of Melbourne</td>
<td>178</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>08. Art and Architecture</td>
<td>217</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>09. Naval and Military Men</td>
<td>243</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10. Representative Men and Institutions</td>
<td>279</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11. A History of the Suburbs</td>
<td>305</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brunswick</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brighton</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Footscray</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kensington</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12. Circumspect the Epitaph of the Architect</td>
<td>358</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Appendices</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Victorian Pioneers Song</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Australian Dictionary of Biographies, Isaac Selby</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Victorian Holiday Resorts</td>
<td>392</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
THE OLD PIONEERS' MEMORIAL
HISTORY
OF
MELBOURNE
From the Discovery of Port Phillip down to the WORLD WAR
BY
ISAAC SELBY
TWO HUNDRED AND EIGHTY PHOTO ENGRAVINGS
FROM ORIGINAL PICTURES AND MAPS

Vires acquirit Eundo

Published by
THE OLD PIONEERS' MEMORIAL FUND
and Printed by
McCABRION, BIRD & CO., 479 Collins Street, Melbourne

Facsimile of the original front page
(Courtesy State Library of Victoria)
REVISITED CLASSIFICATION

This book is one of the “Revisited Series.”
Books with this additional word appended to the original title, are publications now out of copyright and are not a viable option for large publishers to “reprint.”

With the advent of smaller, more efficient electronic printing processes, it is now possible to reproduce titles of previous publications for smaller “Interest Groups.”

Although offered at a premium price, due to Australian cost structures, many readers have remarked how satisfying it is to be able to acquire these almost unattainable titles in a comfortable book form.

During the process of “revisiting,” the original documents are digitized, sometimes edited and abridged. Illustrations and portraits are added and the text updated with later details. An International Standard Book Number is applied. (ISBN) An Index is added and an attractive cover is also produced to reflect the contents.

Some titles may be offered as an E-book.

ABORIGINAL ACKNOWLEDGEMENT

The terms “Aboriginal and Native” have been substituted for various other descriptive names given in any original text used as a mark of respect for the indigenous peoples of Australia. This word covers the languages of the Palawa of Tasmania, the Noongar of Western Australia, the Nungah of South Australia, the Murri of Queensland, and the Kooris of the Riverina and Victoria. and is used to indicate a commonality of these numerous tribes.

Ian J. Itter
SWAN HILL
2015

CONDENSED AND ABRIDGED VERSION

This book is a condensed, abridged and transcribed version of the original. During the transcription process, it was decided to NOT transcribe the Appendix. And to NOT include the chapter on Early Men (Chuck) as this chapter is in a separate book.
INTRODUCTION

This book is about the history of Melbourne as seen through the eyes of Isaac Selby. Isaac Selby was an Historian, Teacher, Minister of Religion etc.

His method of presentation within this book is to say unique, as he addresses a lot of items using the tombstones of the Old Melbourne Cemetery.

He was as assisted in his compilations by some official and non-official documents held by the State Library of Victoria and notes and personal remembrances of older pioneers of his day.

Selby has used these resources to bring-out, verify and record for posterity many historical events commencing from the time of discovery up to the cessation of World War I. Some of his last entries carry over to 1923.

He has been quite willing to quote events recorded by earlier Melbourne historians such as William Westgarth and Garryowen.

Some readers may find the narrative at times erratic or jumbled, as he did have a tendency to “drop-in” an associated item of interest relating to or not relating too, a story being told.

James Bonwick
William Westgarth
Edward Wilson
Garryowen (Edmund Finn)
Proprietor of the Argus Newspaper
Journalist
1815 – 1889
1819 - 1898

Persons who are referenced in this book
PREFACE

About twenty-five years ago I formed the idea of writing *The Stranger in San Francisco* and while preparing the notes for it I went to The Lone Hill Cemetery, in America where I was told that Baker, the Californian orator, and other early pioneers were buried. I found that the historians of California had used their Old Cemetery in writing the history of that State.

When I returned to Melbourne I sought to enter our Old Cemetery so that I might look back on early Melbourne as they had done on early California, and thus gather a few facts for a chapter in my book, *An Empire Without an Emperor.* I found the gates closed, and as there was no hurry I left the matter over and took it up again as soon as it was proposed to build there a vegetable market. (*now the Victorian Market*)

I joined my forces with those of Mr. Padley, of the Old Cemetery Preservation League, but we found that we disagreed as to methods of work, and we resolved to take separate courses.

I formed the "Old Cemetery and Soldiers' Memorial Union," and laid the emphasis on the historical value of the ground. I learned that William Westgarth and Edmund Finn (Garryowen) had written their Histories of Melbourne after wandering in this Cemetery, and that it was Melbourne’s earliest memorial. This led me on to write a brief sketch of early Melbourne as I saw it there, which in time I converted into this history of the City.

I have to acknowledge the kindness of Mr. C. R. Long, in inducing the Education Department to lend me some of their blocks for the engravings, such as that of the lighthouse at Point Lonsdale. I have also to thank the Historical Society for allowing me to draw on their collection of photographs, such as that of our first railway station.

I have probably overlooked some events and institutions that should have been referred to. I think I ought to have written of the Old Waxworks that were in Bourke Street, and doubtless other subjects have been forgotten; still no other book has furnished the maps, and such pictures as the Woodhouse picture and portraits of the distinguished pioneers, and I have given authorities for all my statements.

I do not care to give a page of errata, but refer to a few errors I observed while preparing the Index. Charles Laing is miscalled James Laing, under the picture of the Old John Knox Church.

Our pictures of animals in the Zoo are taken from photographs lent us by the Secretary. On page 219 there is also another error, Dr. Godfrey Howitt is called Dr. Godfrey; it was Dr. Howitt who experimented in date growing. In the story of Carlton, Mr. levers is represented as living there for six years; it should be sixty years. The Elder Nuttall is alluded to as the artist who made the first Native and white sketch of Batman; this statement is doubtful, the sketch had been a long time in the family, and it was acknowledged by them to be a good picture, but there is some doubt as to who made it. On page 78 Batman is represented as having a house at the corner of William and Market Street; it should be Market Square. In the key to the old pioneers pictures on page 417, 32 should be 82. On page 125, Harbin should read Harlin. It was Harlin who introduced the threshing machine into the Plenty district. In writing of our proposed Star Memorial to the unknown soldier the phrase, seven-steepled, like the steeples of Christopher Wren occurs. It should be seven stepped, like the steeples of Christopher Wren. Nevertheless, the typographical error does not take from the general truth of the passage, and our narrative on the whole seems to be free from error. Yet I am sensible of the imperfections of the work, and gratefully tender my thanks to the many friends who have helped me.

Mr. C. Miller Clark I must specially thank for his pictures of actors and actresses, also Mr. E. La T. Armstrong of the Public Library, and Dr. F. Hobill Cole for giving me the use of pictures of early Melbourne.

Trusting that the book will be of value to both young and old.
ISAAC SELBY

11th July, 1924.

ISAAC SELBY

1859 - 1956
Map of the Old Melbourne Cemetery
CHAPTER I.

THE ORIGIN OF A GREAT CITY SEEN THROUGH AN OLD CEMETERY.

Archaeology is the basis of all history. Our first history is in the Cemetery. All the civil and military edifices of Egypt are gone, only its temples and its sepulchres survive; and from that book of the dead we rebuild the History of Ancient Egypt. And while we are not so dependent on the Cemetery in Greece and Italy, still the old Urns and Classic Pottery of the dead are a revelation of ancient life. In the lands where Cremation was practised history demanded its monuments.

The hunted and fugitive thinker and reformer sought immunity from persecution in the catacombs, and these sleeping places of the dead preserved the record of an early church; and what these catacombs did for Christianity our Old Cemetery has done for the history of early Melbourne. History today is based on archaeology, and the cemetery is the faithful servant of the historian; and, how different is its revelation to the partial view gathered from other sources. As all men go to the General Cemetery, so its revelation is universal. If a newspaper man sets out to write history, it is a story of literature or of gossip. If a churchman writes, the probability is that he will give an ecclesiastical history. An Army Officer gives us a military history, and his story is generally a chronicle of war; and if a favourite of the King, he writes on the Monarchy, while the Democrat tells the story of the mysteries of the Court.

And so men are partial; and this led Voltaire to call history, printed lies, and men like Henry Thomas Buckle demanded the scientific spirit and asked us to look beyond events to the great and general causes which produce revolutions, reformations and other great changes in society.

The doctrine of evolution has invaded our life, and the nineteenth century called for a full orbed study of the growth of human institutions; and with it came the study of stones, organisms, natural history, and the scientific examination of the workmanship of primitive man. Thus there arose a new interest in archaeology, and in this study is the data of the Old Cemetery, not in the old cemeteries of Europe, but in our own.

The history of Melbourne naturally divides itself into three epochs:-

a. first that of the capital of the Port Phillip district, or Australia Felix, from 1835 to 1851, when we were a province of New South Wales. This is the story of foundation, and the source of our wealth in that period is chiefly pastoral and agricultural.

b. The second period is that of Melbourne as the Capital of the Colony of Victoria, extending from 1851 down to 1901. It commences with Victoria’s separation from New South Wales and finds its source of wealth in minerals.

c. The third is that of Melbourne as the Capital for the time being of Australia. Our wealth is now in manufactured goods, and we see the originating of the Commonwealth. Foundation, Separation and Federation have been the beginnings of successive civic revolutions. The first and second are well told in the cemetery. The third but lightly touched.

We lay the accent on the first period, that covered by the Police Magistracy of Lonsdale and the Superintendency and Governorship of Latrobe. The men and women buried in that period were the founders of our trade, commerce, religion and science, our literature and art, and all that belongs to the beginning of our civic and social life.

There were no deaths in 1835; death came into the settlement in 1836, and it is a happy harbinger that birth preceded death. In George Goodman’s book, The Church in Victoria, there occurs this footnote:

*On the 12th of April, 1858, the author solemnized the marriage of John Melbourne Gilbert at Christ Church, Geelong.*
The day of his birth is recorded in the Church Register as 29th of December, 1835, with a note of the fact that he claimed to be the first white child born in Port Phillip. As his second name is Melbourne, and this place was not then called Melbourne in 1835, he was christened later; this I verified. There was a great difference of opinion concerning the first child born here. Historian Garryowen, like Goodman, gave John Melbourne Gilbert; Alex. Sutherland, John Fleming; Henry Gyles Turner, Annio Webb; and A. B. Weire (the grandson of John Batman), John Charles Batman.

With these different opinions in my mind, I asked the Government Statist to allow me to go over the earliest Registers in St. James Register and I found that the first baptism was John Melbourne Elliott, the second John Charles Batman, and the third Annio Webb. To the first two no date of birth was given, only the date of baptism, but with the date of the baptism of Annie Webb was the record that she was born on 15th December, 1836. Mr. Weire sent me the date of John Charles Batman’s birth, 5th May, 1836, a date which is confirmed by the registration of his death. As he antedates Annie Webb, I came to the conclusion that the Registrar had entered them in the order of their birth; and as John Melbourne Elliott was the first, he was the first born. The Minister had apparently mistakenly entered the name Elliott for Gilbert, because he gives the occupation of the child’s father as a Smithy, and at that time the only Smithy in Port Phillip was Gilbert.

He had his workshop in the Market Reserve. John Fleming is not in it, as he is not even the first in the Presbyterian Register, but is preceded by Hannah Caulfield, who was born on 6th of December, 1836, whereas he was not born until 6th June, 1837. These returns are in the handwriting of our earliest ministers, and therefore we have the best authority for saying Gilbert or Elliott, whichever was his name, was the first child born in Melbourne.

The first death was that of Willie Goodman, the little son of James Goodman; the second and third, Charles Franks, and his shepherd; they were both murdered by the natives at Cottrell, near the Werribee. (river) The fourth was a seaman of The Rattlesnake, accidentally shot while landing arms. The fifth was the wife of John Ross, who shot herself in a fit of delirium tremens; and the sixth, the infant child of Mr. Wells. All these are reported to have been buried on Burial Hill, now called the Flagstaff Gardens. A Monument has been erected near the spot, and on it is this inscription:-

Erected 1871,

to the Memory of some of the Earliest Pioneers of this Colony, whose remains are interred near this spot.

Hayter's Statistics differ a little from our record, as he gives three deaths for 1836 and one for 1837, while we have the names of nine or ten people who died in that period. Garryowen gives eight names, to which the names of Diprose and Kirby may be added. Diprose kept a store in early Melbourne. Garryowen tells us that John Smith, a shepherd, was the first interred in the Old Cemetery, and that the second was Frederick William, the son of Skene Craig.

That Memorial was in the Old Cemetery and I take it that there was no proper registration of deaths in the first year, hence the difference of numbers and the fact that they have not put any names on the Monument in Flagstaff Gardens was an eloquent reason for preserving the original record in our Old Cemetery. That cemetery was laid out with the first survey of Melbourne, and therefore it was our oldest memorial. Its first record is that of this child in 1837, and its last that of Jean Hamilton Henderson, of the old McIntyre family, whose burial service was conducted by the Reverend James Gibson, Minister of our West Melbourne Presbyterian Church, on 29th October, 1917.

Melbourne was 88 years old last June, if you reckon from the day Batman made his treaty with the natives and bought the land from them. But as Batman only brought his sheep here in October, and Fawknear came in that month, many prefer to say that Melbourne did not commence as a village until 1836; this would make our Cemetery very nearly the same age as the city. Skene Craig, the father of the child whose name is on the first Memorial, came over with Lonsdale, and a little later had a place of business in Collins-street, which for a very short time was our Post Office.
When we observe our broad streets and magnificent buildings, we find it difficult to think of Melbourne as a village; but when we return to the Old Cemetery and look on the primitive tombstones and red gum slabs, we then think of the village and the local store where the farmers, before returning to their farms, stopped to get their letters. It was here that William Westgarth, our earliest Historian, and Garryowen, our Racy Chronicler, retired to gather the data for their books that are now considered to be classics.

Joseph Rushton was the village blacksmith. How do I know? I saw a noble old sandstone monument bearing his name in the Cemetery. I looked up the map of 1838, and saw his smithy (Workshop) marked between Collins and Little Collins streets, and then I turned to the date of his death on the monument, and found the notice of his funeral in the papers of 1841. I noted that the funeral left his residence in Little Collins-street, and then I knew that that stone was over a Pioneer Blacksmith of the old village of Melbourne.

The Cemetery was opened in 1837; therefore by knowing the dead there, we know how our immediate forerunners conquered the wilderness. It is the more striking because it represents one of the first efforts of civilization, also to forget all religious differences at the verge of the grave. There were not any public General Cemeteries in England until 1855, while, ours was open in 1837; and under the benevolent authority of Richard Bourke there was an effort to equally endow all religious denominations and to grant complete religious freedom. Our Cemetery represents that beneficent effort. Our first memorial bears the date March 1837, and it was on the 2nd March that Bourke arrived here on his visit to Melbourne.

We remember that our name Melbourne was conferred on us at the same time and that the Cemetery was included in Bourke’s Survey of the City, when our streets were named. Sydney carried the evidence of her age in the name of her streets, George, Pitt and Castlereagh streets, which take us back to the eighteenth century. We too, show the age of our settlement by our names:

- Flinders-street, after Matthew Flinders, who was the second commander to enter Port Phillip.
- Collins-street, after Captain Collins, who founded our first settlement in Port Phillip, located at Sorrento, which only lasted a few months.
- Bourke-street, after Governor Bourke himself.
- Lonsdale-street, after Captain Lonsdale, our first Chief Magistrate, some of whose family were buried in the Old Cemetery.
- Latrobe-street was named later after our first Superintendent and Governor.
- Spencer-street was named after Lord Spencer, who was in Melbourne’s Cabinet.
- King-street, after Governor King.
- William-street, after the reigning Monarch.
- Queen-street, in honour of his wife.
- Elizabeth-street, after the wife of Richard Bourke.
- Swanston-street, after Captain Swanston a Hobart Town banker, who furthered the Port Phillip Association.
- Russell-street, after Lord John Russell.
- Stephen-street (now Exhibition-street), after a representative in the Colonial Office.
- Spring-street, after Mr. Spring Rice, Chancellor of the Exchequer.

That was as far north as our town went in these days; the Cemetery was out in the bush. But the town ran its full extent from Spencer-street to Spring-street. Some of these reasons are debatable. Some think that King naturally precedes William, who was then Monarch, and that Queen in the same way precedes Elizabeth, the Virgin Queen; and finally in the east, Spring-street reminds us of the smiling morning when the wattle is in bloom. These could only be secondary reasons, and the consensus of opinion is in favour of the origin of the names as I have given them.
Lord Melbourne, after whom our city is named, was born on the 15th of March, 1779, and died on 24th of November, 1848, aged 69 years, and was buried in the family vault at Hatfield, in England. Melbourne was only his title; his name was William Lamb, and an oil painting of him and a bust are in our Public Library. But the city has failed to erect a monument to him.

He was an interesting man and a statesman of great merit, and lived at a time when our great Reform Measures were being introduced, such as the abolition of the slave trade, the passing of the Reform Bill, and of Roman Catholic Emancipation in Ireland. He introduced the first Factory Act, forbidding the employment of children under nine years of age in factories, and the working of any under eleven years for more than forty-eight hours. This is considered now too much for many men. His great principle was Liberty. He wanted Liberty in his Cabinet. On one occasion a number of gentlemen waited on him with an address, at his estate Melbourne, in Derby, and in replying he took chiefly as his theme the subject of LIBERTY. He said: “There were in that Cabinet shades of opinion, as there always must be among men who think and act freely and conscientiously, but there was no such difference of opinion upon great impending public measures as was likely to interfere with the harmonious and united action of the Administration. And further,” he said, “speaking of his friends contrasted with his opponents: You, gentlemen, I know are stronger than they are; you are strong in sense and spirit, you are strong in reason and justice, in instruction and inquiry, and general sympathy and fellow-feeling of the community, but you are not strong enough to be able to be disunited.” He was reproached for introducing Robert Owen to the King, but he denied that he had done so. He gave him the right to appear at a royal reception and present his views to the King. He was asked then to introduce repressive legislation, and suppress Socialism. He would not do it. He said it was generally believed that truth would be triumphant, although it seemed to him that a he sometimes succeeded. Yet Great Britain had acted on the principle of giving equal rights to Truth and Falsehood, and he did not see any reason why he should give up that position. He acted on the same principle when he voted for Catholic Emancipation. So Melbourne is named after a man who stood for Liberty; and we all know that that was the ideal of Richard Bourke, who was Governor of Australia when Melbourne was founded. That fact is inscribed on his monument in Sydney. Lord Melbourne entertained at three of his English houses, that in London, and these at Brocket and Melbourne (UK). The great literary men met in his splendid house in London.

He was the scion of a wealthy family, and moved within the circle of Royalty, changed houses with the Prince of Wales, and was three times Prime Minister of Great Britain. Lord Rosebery resembles him, but Melbourne was more active and more in the limelight than Rosebery. He was an uncommonly handsome man. Beau Brummel visited his house, and declared that his cook was one of the best in England. Lord Byron was a frequent visitor to his London house, and his first intrigue was with Caroline Lamb, Melbourne’s wife. Disraeli went to him for advice before he had entered Parliament, and said to him: “I want to be Premier.”

Melbourne thought that he would never get there, but thirty-five years afterwards Disraeli was Premier. Bulwer Lytton and nearly all the distinguished men and women in Britain found their way to Melbourne’s house in London. Spencer was Chancellor of the Exchequer in his first Ministry, John Russell Home Secretary in his second. T. Spring Rice was especially associated with him and there is a large body of their correspondence extant. Names of places that now stand out were taken from members of his Ministry Glenelg, Palmerston, Lansdowne and others. He was the only Prime Minister under King William the fourth, but also under Queen Victoria at her ascension.

She loved him very much, and in addition to his work as a Statesman was her Private Secretary. It was very fitting therefore that the colony of which Melbourne was the Capital should afterwards become Victoria. The Village by the Yarra, was known in the beginning as “The Settlement” and by other names, such as “Batmania,” “Doutagalla” and “Bearbrass,” which Labilliere thinks was a misprint for Baregrass, a name used in the report of George Stewart, a visiting magistrate, in 1836; and it was also thought that it would have been called “Glenelg,” after the Colonial Minister. Both Sydney and Melbourne have been called after titles; the name of the one Statesmen we have seen was
William Lamb, that of the other Thomas Townshend.

As you enter our Old Cemetery you pass through a short but beautiful avenue of elm trees, and if my idea of building the Memorial Hall to the heroic men who have fallen at the front had been carried out, this Elm Avenue would have been a fitting entrance to the grounds, unique and beautiful as the old names attached to our city. These elms in themselves constituted an argument against destroying the grounds; they took years to grow to their present form. Our map shows how the Old Cemetery was originally divided among the Denominations: Two acres to the Episcopalians, two acres to the Presbyterians, two acres to the Roman Catholics, one acre to the Independents, one acre to the Wesleyans, one acre to the Jews, half an acre to the Quakers, and half an acre to the Aboriginales. The convicts were buried just outside the northern end of the Cemetery in No Man’s Land.

The Cemetery was 834 ft. long and 540 ft. wide; that is, it had an area of 450,000 square feet, and as it was crowded with graves it has been estimated that ten thousand were buried there. Hayter’s Statistics show that there were in Victoria seventeen thousand one hundreds and twelve deaths from 1836 to 1854. This with the fact that Batman’s burial was the 33rd in the Church of England ground, and there is no memorial between it and that of Skene Craig’s son, this would support the estimate; also the fact that Howitt testifies that he saw 800 graves in 1843.

For there are now only, as our plan shows, 450 memorial graves, which contain about five hundred memorials that have on them nine hundred names; I reckon a similar gap between all the graves that exist as that between Craig and Batman’s and you must allow that the Cemetery was crowded, as living pioneers like Miss Margaret Ward Cole testify.

Among all these names there are only two that are foreign, Thomas Frederick Marzetti and William Hoffman. On another stone we read that a Miss Marzetti had married a Robert Patterson, and she is buried in the Presbyterian ground, and William Hoffman, if a German, was thoroughly naturalized, for he is mentioned by Garryowen as our earliest pieman.

Our Cemetery, you will see, is distinctly Anglo-Saxon and Anglo-Celtic, and while it is without a foreign inscription, yet it has two of the languages of Ancient Britain represented on the stones. On the tomb of John McColl or McCool is a paraphrase in Scotch/Gaelic, and on that of Humphrey Hughes is one in Welsh. Here is a reminder of how early and how dearly the memories of the motherland were cherished here. It is essentially an Empire Cemetery, as the original Batman or Port Phillip Association that settled here was in its composition, as you may see from the names attached to Batman’s letters and documents.

We often express surprise that Port Phillip was settled from Van Diemen’s Land instead of from Sydney; this fact is testified to by the Cemetery, where we see that many of these buried there originally came from Tasmania, such, for instance, as Thomas Boucher. Of course the name Victoria does not appear on the stones until 1851, when we obtained separation from New South Wales; Port Phillip and Australia-Felix were on the earlier stones.

Some illustration will be given in our engravings of this. When I first went into the Cemetery I saw on a slab the name Doutagalla, as a name of Melbourne, the name of the tribe from which Batman acquired the district. Through the weather the inscription has disappeared, or through vandalism the memorial has been removed. A name like that takes us back to the age when the tea tree hung like a weeping willow over the Yarra; around were the sheoak and other natural trees and above flocks of the native cockatoo. Away on Emerald Hill the kangaroo still found a pasture; and the aboriginals, sensible of the obligation we were under to them, followed in the train of Batman, and looked for their yearly tribute.

At that time the Cemetery was not enclosed. In Laing’s Map of 1847 you will see it laid out, but in Russell’s Map of 1837 it does not appear, but Russell’s Map was retrospective and looked back to the beginning; it was produced in 1837, rather than being a map of 1837.

The first two public subscriptions in Melbourne were to get a town clock and put a fence around this Cemetery. David Charteris McArthur raised the money for the town clock, and the Parish Clerk,
Charles Greening Ward, undertook to keep it wound up. He was buried in the Old Cemetery, where also is the old sexton, William Willis. One day I met Willis grandson seeking his grandfather’s grave. In these first days the cattle roamed over the graves, and all north of that was pasture land. The daughter of Batman’s shepherd told me that he father watched the sheep where the Melbourne General Cemetery now is; but Rolf Boldrewood (Thomas Browne, Squatter and Author) when droving cattle camped close to the Old Cemetery. Dr. Patterson undertook to save the graves from being trodden down by erecting a picket fence around the ten acres. He made a house-to-house collection, and raised £200. In 1840 he buried his wife in the ground he fenced in, and the stone remained leaning against a laurel tree. Tradition says he was buried in the same grave. It is regrettable that all the records of the burials have been destroyed. The son of Mr. Maurice Blaney Murphy, the old caretaker, says a fire destroyed the lodge when Summerhayes was caretaker, but J. W. Brown, our oldest monumental mason, the only one left to us who was in business in the fifties, assures me that the keeper of them carried them with him home to England, and that they were lost in the wreck of The London. Whether this be so or not it is not so important as some would have us believe. True, we have thus lost the location of very many unnamed graves, but there is a very complete register of burials in the Victorian Statist’s office. Gryll’s returns for St. James Parish, Forbes returns for the Presbyterians of Melbourne, Waterfield for the Congregationalists, Geoghegan for the Catholics, and the returns of all the other ministers and missionaries in early Melbourne are there. Mr. Brown affirmed that the broken wall at the south end of the Cemetery is the remains of the old Jewish prayer house. If so I am inclined to think that other denominations used it. Dr. Abrahams argued against exhuming because it was so contrary to the tenets of their religion; that they always aimed to keep in perpetuity their burial places; that their Father Abraham bought with that intent the Cavern of Machpelah from the Hittites, and he took the legendary view that Adam was buried in the same cavern. To these who look back through their graveyards for a thousand years, it seems revolting to touch a Cemetery that is not yet as old as many of the old men in the community. And it is our best record. Mr. A. Stewart, of McCarron, Bird & Co., could remember the launching of the City of Melbourne, the first screw steamer built here, but when he came to think of the launching of the city he turned to books like the rest of us. Old Mr. William Reid came in 1839, and can remember the scattered settlement, then not so old as himself, but he was only a boy five years old, and only here and there does his boyish mind touch History. Gordon McCrae, one of our poets of whom few are better read or more distinguished in Letters, came here in 1841. Then Melbourne was five or six years old. It is doubtful if there is another man living with such general knowledge whose memory goes further back over the History of our City. He is now 90, but it is while contemplating these graves that his vivid memory is restored, and he is able to give a full-orbed view of the forties; and he stops just within the first decade.

The graves led these men to deal with the chief events of our History, and while the written record has been destroyed, the stone book remains with many leaves torn out, but nevertheless is the partial data of a universal history of Melbourne. To-morrow the whole world will turn to us and ask here is the grave of William Pascoe Crook, he who with three others taught Polynesia to read and to write, and to become subject to British Law. Someday the world may turn to his grave as they now turn to the grave of Shakespeare. For seventy years it had been marked by a red gum slab, and our primitive life is illustrated by these primitive memorials. One seems to see the evolution of Melbourne in the evolution of monumental art in the Old Cemetery. The red gum slabs belong to a very early period, and so also the rude sandstone memorials; although simple, some of them are well executed. There is one over the grave of Jane McKindlay it clearly belongs to that age; the date on it is 1846 and the stone suggests 1846. The letters are well and deeply cut. I met the son of this lady one Sunday afternoon in the Cemetery; he was born in 1842, and would be among our oldest “Australian Natives Association” men.

If a stone be without a date we can locate it by its character. There are the names of thirty-six different monument makers on the memorials, only seven of whom are in business to-day in Melbourne.
The old firms have all passed away, and some of the grave holders, unable to get suitable memorials in Melbourne, before we had good monumental masons here, sent to Britain or New South Wales, and to Tasmania for stones. There is an iron table over the grave of Evans Fawcus, manufactured by R. Rogers, ironfounder, Stockton-on-Tees, and over the wife of the Reverend William Dunn is a stone with a scroll on it, sent out from Glasgow. Mrs. Wallacestone came from Hobart in 1851, and bears the name of W. Barclay. The study of the art in the Cemetery is so interesting that the Royal Victorian Institute of Architects prompted by W. R. Butler, the Editor of the Architects Journal, offered a prize to the members of the Victorian Architects Students Society and others for the best measured drawings of Mrs. Lauchlan Mackinnon and Joseph and Priscilla Raleigh tombs, which prove, as Mr. Lucas, another of our architects, puts it, that Mackinnon’s casket is enriched by such graceful detail, that we must pronounce it to be the work of a master sculptor. Raleigh’s in the striking simplicity of line and contour, is unsurpassed in any Necropolis, and this fact is brought home to the mind, by its being placed on a rusticated pedestal. Probably of equal merit in the Protestant ground are the tombs of Cassell and Hobson and De Arch. That of Cassell is a memorial of exquisite Grecian beauty. A Grecian colonnade of four fluted columns, standing on a stylobate relieved by ornament, within the colonnade is a draped urn, and above the entablature an embellished terminal, the whole, says Mr. Lucas, one of our architects, being chaste in design and execution and some what a reminder of the Choragie Monuments of Ancient Athens. One of the most conspicuous monuments in Melbourne is that to the Great White Queen, after whom our State is named. When you look closely at it, you will see that it is but a modification of the old monument to Lysierates, as is also that of Cassell, a colonnade of four columns surmounted by the statue of the Queen. In between the columns are niches in which are four figures Progress, History, Wisdom and Justice. Under Progress is the date of Victoria’s birth, 1819 under History, her marriage, 1840; under Wisdom the length of her reign, 1837-1901; under Justice, her death, 1901; while the symbolism is large and noble, you cannot say the art in the monument excels Cassell’s. Cassell’s was not so expensive, and therefore devoid of statuary and expensive detail work, but in symmetry, in the beautiful execution of the urn, the drapery, and the emblems, it far excelled the monument near Government House. It is hard to say whether Grecian or Gothic architecture is the more beautiful; the latter is illustrated by Mr. Hobson’s monument, which Mr. Lucas thinks is reminiscent of the Tabernacle. It is questionable whether there is another monument built at the same expense, and in the same relation to the age of a city, anywhere in the world. It stood like a sentinel tower at the south-east corner of the Cemetery. Over the grave of Patrick Turnbull and the De Arches was a Roman column standing on a square pedestal, and surmounted by an urn, draped with a folded cloak, a singularly symmetrical monument of classic beauty. Greek, Goth, Roman, Egyptian, Hebrew and others have given their art to beautify our Cemetery that to-day is destroyed by the vandalism of the temporarily distorted mind of the city. When we look on the obelisk over the grave of Batman, we think of the old petrified sunbeams on the banks of the Nile, such a one was Cleopatra’s Needle.

The Pyramid is over Mrs. Winifred Harper’s grave, and sarcophagi are scattered about in profusion: that on the grave of Caroline Nesbit Wilkes and her family by its oblique pilasters called up the memory of the tombs of the Egyptian Kings. Puros is the Greek for fire, and to resemble the flame which consumed the body, the Egyptians built pyramids or conic mounds which preceded pyramids. Cremation has never meant forgetting the dead. There is a flame on the stone over Reuben Light, but is not suggestive of the fire that consumes the body, but of the flame that gives light to the world. The Symbolism of the Cemetery is most interesting. Of course the entire tomb is often symbolic, like the altar over the grave of young Nankivell, and the spire over that of James Jackson, but more often it is found in the details which miss the eye of the casual visitor. The prevailing symbols are the broken columns, the cross, the urn, and the scroll, but the open Bible is over the grave of Brierty. A patriotic Scotchman, David Houston, has put the Scotch Thistle on the stone over his son’s remains. The Maddens have the Shamrock, and the Rose is on more than one stone. John Jones Peers, one of Melbourne’s earliest musicians, had David
playing the harp on his stone, and the Angelic Harp is on the McIntyre stone. The Freemason puts the square and compass on the memorial over his family grave, and the Oddfellow the hand and heart; the pall, the vase of flowers, the wreath, the shield, the oak leaves and the vine all have their place in beautifying the stones. Also the trumpets, the cherub’s face, and on one grave is the symbol of Time.

The eye of God is on Mrs. Mackinnon’s tomb, and inadvertently the broad arrow appears on one stone, showing that it was made by Government workmen. The cup is on the memorial of Skinner, the cricketer. There were several beautiful stones in the Roman Catholic ground.

The most conspicuous monument was that of Fitzsimmons. It is the figure of a woman, I presume the Virgin Mary, standing on a granite pedestal, which rests on a bluestone foundation, and contrasting with it and near to it is the smallest memorial in the Cemetery, an oval iron tablet to the memory of Mary Fulton, for simple conception as a memorial to a child, this is rather unique. Not far away from these was the classic memorial over the grave of Cowell, which we must account one of the choice tombs in the Cemetery. A beautiful stone resembling a Gothic window we found in the ground; it had originally stood on the grave of Lucy Newstead, and had been erected by her husband, Robert Newstead. An obelisk supporting a cross was over the grave of Falvy and Oldaker. Most of the Jewish graves were oblong horizontal tombs. A Jewish architect told me that the Portuguese Jews favour that kind of tomb, while the German generally prefer an upright stone.

When the sacrifice of this historic ground to accommodate a market was discussed in Parliament, it was affirmed, without contradiction, that the graves were in a dilapidated condition. This statement was incorrect; the truth is that seventy of the graves were splendidly kept, and the neglect was chiefly on the part of the authorities, who had allowed the pathways to go to ruin, and who had not kept the ways between the graves and had neglected the beautiful old trees.

One of the best kept graves was that of Dr. Watton, in which also James Moore, M.A. the third controller of our savings bank, is buried. Nearby was the beautifully kept grave of John Conway, the famous sportsman, who took our first eleven (Cricket Team) home to England. A lovely grave was that of Janet Steele and William Little. Many graves were so built that they could not get out of order, such as the bluestone and granite tomb of the Honourable James Graham, or the marble sarcophagus of W. F. A. Rucker. Miss Cole had her grave flagged over, only in 1917 one of the family was interred there. All these works of art mentioned are self-preserving. They were so built that they would not need special attention as the family died out. You might as well argue that the pyramids should be destroyed because the Arabs robbed them of their covering to build their mosques.

What is true of the Protestant ground is also true of the Roman Catholic division. The Parnells grave was beautifully kept, and these of the Reardon’s, the Moranes, the Lane’s, the Foley’s and many others denote expenditure and care. When we wish to take a place, how ready we are to rush to a false reason; some sinister hand is behind it all. It is our last historic memorial.

Old St. James has gone. It no longer marks the site of our Episcopal efforts and our first social and governmental functions; as a historic monument it is no more. Monuments are a part of popular education. If I wish to remember when the eight-hour system was initiated, I step down and look at the date on the eight hour monument. The story of Burke and Wills is retold in the panels on their monument in Spring-street. On or about the time of the anniversary of Batman’s arrival I walked into the Old Cemetery and saw the children of the King Street State School reading under the guidance of their teacher the inscription on the monument; in a few minutes they thus learned more of Batman’s history than they would acquire by many hours of tuition in school. Take occasionally the children to the old Pioneer Ground and explain the tombs of the founders, and in pleasant and certain way they acquire Victorian history from Batman to the Gold Era. Of what greater value is any monument in the city than these? Are there any monuments in the city equal to them?
Take the greatest - to the eight-hour system. it as great a vindication of humanity, and an indication of
the love of man as this Cemetery with all its trophies to humanity and on none of them a title?
Here and there a professional man is called Esquire, or a medical man is called Doctor, but nowhere
are there any perpetual social titles only one of any kind, that is on the tomb of James Horatio
Nelson Cassell, who was a member of our first Victorian Cabinet, and who is called Honourable. But
this is not only a people Cemetery in that sense, but in the broader one that here are monuments
to the first men in Australia who stood out for free labour and opposed transportation. Why was Port
Phillip so readily settled? Because our pioneers wished to get from under the bondage and slavery
of a penal settlement, and thus with the enthusiasm of the ideal of freedom they crossed the
Strait's and laid the foundation of our settlement.

Take another monument in the city, that to Burke and Wills, which is said to be our first memorial.
Batman was before both, in the proposition to cross the continent. He proposed to John Holder Wedge
to go with him to Carpentaria and to cross from there to Sydney. He would have been successful,
since he was a great bushman and demonstrated his capacity for that work in the Native War in
Tasmania. In this, however, we are not confined to Batman; any of the overlanders would have
been equal to Burke and Wills, men like Coghill, Worster and James Graham, who drove their
cattle from New South Wales to Port Phillip. There were twelve memorials in the Old Cemetery built
by the public and nine of them antedated Burke and Wills.

There is a monument in the city to the Duke of York, to commemorate the Kings visit when
he was a Duke, and there is a stone in the Town Hall the Duke of Edinburgh laid on his visit to
Melbourne fifty years ago that antiquarians and the members of the Historical Society are
enthusiastic over. Are these greater monument than the broken grave where the brother-in-law of
our first magistrate is buried? To the community at large are they as much as that grave that contains
the relatives of Richard Seddon, the old New Zealand Labour Statesman? Is the monument to Burns,
whose songs, says Emerson, did more for Democracy than the Rights of Man, the Declaration
of Independence, or the Marseillaise, historical in the sense that the old Burns Home in Scotland is?
Should it not be placed beside that to Captain Cook at St. Kilda as a work of art rather than a
work of history.

In my chapter, Representative Men and Institutions, I undertake to prove that there were a hundred
more valuable monuments in the Old Cemetery. There is a monument in the city to a man who is
called a White Knight, Edmund Gerald Fitzgibbon, a Town Clerk, not the first or the second,
because, they were both buried in the Old Cemetery, and we have taken their monuments away.
John Charles King, our first, William Kerr, our second Town Clerk, were buried in the Old
Cemetery.

We remember a Town Clerk of our time and forget the one who gave us our first book of Municipal
Bylaws, and the other who gave us our Digest of Australian Law.

All over Carlton are monuments bearing the amiable face of old Mr. Eivers, one of our City
Councillors and latterly a Member of Parliament, and yet his son was on the Council which exhumed
the body of Alderman Kerr, our first Alderman; Councillor Armstead, an early Councillor; Councillor
Clarke, who beat O'Shanassy; Councillor Pullar, who succeeded Fawkner when he went through the
Bankruptcy Court; Councillor Fogarty, who helped to make and form our eastern suburbs. These
and many others were exhumed while we are putting up monuments all over the city to mediocre
men of a day. We will pass by the Crooks, the Duttons, the Hobsons, and the many others for
the present, claiming that there are at least one hundred men buried in the Old Cemetery who
by natural worth and service to the community were each entitled to a monument in the heart of the
city.

Our Australia Natives Association has declared for cremation, yet its branches pass motions in
sympathy with The preservation of the Old Cemetery, because they recognize that cremation is to
destroy disease, not to destroy national education or the policy of the Germans and mutilate and ruin
historic monuments. The countries that have raised some of the proudest monuments to the dead
incinerated them; thus the Greeks and the Italians. It is a strange thing that although Shelley was
burned we still tend his grave in Italy. There is relationship in knowledge.

Tyndal will leave his body to be burned in the interests of science, but will also extol Dr. Draper as
an historian. And thus there is no conflict in the realm of science; the same spirit which prompts us to
love science prompts us to preserve the records of history; and in our museums are the urns
from Italy and Greece attesting the fact that the pagan world which burnt its dead also reared
monuments which were sacred to their memory. America has set apart a day in every year known
as Decoration or Memorial Day, when the people of the most progressive and democratic country in
the world throw up work to go and put flowers on the graves of their heroic dead.

It was argued by the City Council that in England old graveyards have been converted into
open spaces for recreation. It must be apparent that this is a very different thing to utilising
them for a vegetable market it does not even take from them their memorial character. But never did
England in all history touch a Cemetery within a few years of her last interment, and never touches
any great historic ground. You could not conceive of London destroying Westminster Abbey, or
of Edinburgh rooting up Grey Friars, of Paris destroying the Cemetery of Pere-la-Chaise, and the
Old Cemetery is to us what these cemeteries are to their respective cities; they appealed also to
the Sydney Cemeteries. These were older than ours, interment had probably long ceased, you
could judge of their moral and historic value. They belonged to the convict era, and as Melbourne
was unstained by transportation, our Cemetery has a different signification to us. These Sydney
Cemeteries were on George Street, in the direct line of the traffic, and if the Old Cemetery were
on Bourke Street it would be a parallel case. A. G. Foster recently (1919) read a paper before the
Australian Historical Society, Sydney, on the Cemetery which was destroyed to make room for the
Redfern Railway Station.

He said in introducing the subject: “Tis true that they left England for reasons vastly different to
these which animated the breasts of their kinsmen in The Mayflower,” but if they were not
Puritans they were at least patriots, for in a famous familiar poem we are told:-

“They left their country for their country’s good and who will doubt but that their emigration
has proved most useful to the British Nation.” I think the fact that such a passage could be
given in the presence of Sydney’s historians is a proof that there is no comparison between the
ground given over partially to murderers, forgers, and perjurers, and our own, where the anti-
transportation men were buried. Moreover, it was not Sydney’s first Cemetery; it did not open
until 1820. The first interment is put down at 1819, that was over thirty years after Sydney originated,
while ours came with our first survey.

Ours commenced as an undenominational cemetery, while theirs in the beginning was consecrated
only by the Anglican Church, although later it became undenominational. Instead of it constituting
an argument for the destruction of our ground, it is an argument for its preservation, for the historical
record of the Sydney Cemetery is practically destroyed. The Father of the Australian Press, George
Howe, the man who printed the first paper in Sydney, was buried there, but no one can say with
certainty to-day where his grave is; it is believed that he was buried in the grave of Edward Wills,
so with many others. Moreover, the Cemetery was only one of Sydney’s burial places, and never
did represent the life of the beginning as our ground does. Still we must be grateful to Mr. Foster
for trying to preserve its record, because all Cemeteries are historic, but ours the most historic in
Australia. Several names that we find in theirs are in ours, such as Stephen, Balcombe, Squire
and Kemp. Squire was the first to cultivate the hop in Australia, and to erect the first brewery.

There is the name Balmain in our Cemetery, but we cannot think that the family is related to
the Balmain after whom the suburb in Sydney is named. There is no doubt a resemblance in the
names on our stones to these in different old Cemeteries in Australia, but as we were peopled
more from Tasmania in the beginning than from New South Wales, we should trace our family
connections in the Cemeteries of Hobart. J. W. Lowin was buried in the Sydney Cemetery; he
accompanied Grant to Westernport in 1801. He was an artist and a naturalist, and as Liardet painted
pictures of old Melbourne, so he painted pictures of old Sydney; his are in the Mitchell Library, Liarde’s in the Melbourne Public Library. Allan Cunningham, the botanist, was in that Cemetery, but his body was transferred and placed under the obelisk in the Sydney Botanical Gardens. Thus the destruction of the Cemetery has been the ruin of its record, as it was of the first Cemetery, in George Street, Sydney. When Bonwick went into it only twelve stones were still standing, he wrote, and yet to the historian and antiquary it is one of the most interesting places in the colonies. It is now recognized that the Redfern Railway Station, which took the place of the Cemetery, was an engineering mistake; it is too far from the shipping, and the records given by these old Cemeteries partially lost through removal, shows how history suffers by touching our memorial grounds.

Bougainville, the son of Bougainville the Voyager, came to Australia from France in 1825, and restored the grave of Recuever, the French Naturalist, on La Perouse’s voyage. Bougainville claimed that England had ceded to France that strip of land with the monument to La Perouse as a memorial to the visit of the French explorer; the history of New South Wales therefore does not justify the vandalism of the Victorian Government.

The new law (1917) provides that the bodies be disinterred and then re-interred in one of the suburban Cemeteries, and where known relatives desire. That is, they should dig up ten thousand bodies, and divide them among the fifteen Melbourne Cemeteries around Melbourne, destroying the historic grouping of families, names and conditions of early Melbourne. They will root up the last memorial we have of 1837, and by dividing it destroy it for ever. The value of this association of the dead was seen by standing at Batman’s Monument and thinking of his contemporaries buried around. This historic surrounding of events of early Melbourne will come out in succeeding chapters.

We have seen that the Cemetery was opened in 1837; it was temporarily closed in 1854 by Act 14 Victoria, No. 19, Sec. 18, which gave power to John V. Foster to close the Cemetery on June the 1st, 1854. By order in Council, April 18th, 1864, Richard Hale Budd, Alex. Brock, J. Cosgrove, J. Phillips, Robert Smith and Moses Rintel were appointed trustees of the Old Cemetery. This order ignored the previous trustees, and presumed that the provision of the Cemetery Statutes of 1864 were applicable. The original trustees to these of 1837, I will give in my Chapter on Great Missionaries.

The Cemetery under the new trustees remained open until 1867; then by an Order in Council, On October 28th, 1867, it was again closed, and burials were discontinued except by these who held land there. This seems to have been the last opportunity to buy land. I take it that all the available land had been bought up, because the Melbourne General Cemetery was opened to the public on June 1st 1853. William Kerr was the man who first saw the need of more burial ground, and he asked the City Council to move in the matter. This culminated in the setting apart of the Melbourne General Cemetery (Fawkner). The first person buried there, Mr. Pratt informs me, was John Alexander Burnett, chief clerk in the original firm of Dalgety & Co. Burnett Street, at St. Kilda, is said to have been named after him; his body was brought from Geelong and buried in the New Cemetery. Since then there have been created fifteen New Cemeteries within a radius of ten miles of the Post Office.

In 1869 the present fence, with its bluestone foundation and iron railings, was put around the Old Cemetery. Miss Cole tells me this was done through the instrumentality of her father, Evelyn Sturt, and John Thomas Smith. In 1877 the markets encroached on the Cemetery, and part of the Jewish ground, the whole of the Quaker ground, and of the Aboriginals was taken over. The fence was removed from the northern end and put around Murchison Square, where it still stands. This was intended to be the last attack on the historic ground, and was excused on the plea that there were not any Jews in the part of their ground taken, that no one was particularly interested in the bones of the Aboriginals, and that there were but very few members of the Society of Friends in their ground. Longmore, when introducing the Bill, affirmed that there were only three. The Bill passed, and all the bodies considerably more than it was thought were then exhumed, so everyone believed, until 1892, when the Metropolitan Board of Works were making some improvements.
there, their men came on the body of a man buried with his clothes on, and some other discoveries were also made; therefore if the work of exhuming ten thousand be done in the same careless way there will be perennial discoveries, and unsavoury revelations near where we buy our food. We continued burying in the ground right down to the passing of the Act (1917). George Walstabs was secretary to the trustees from 1866 to 1884, and said that there were 217 interments from 1866 to 1881 inclusive.

The public believed that the Cemetery was to be preserved, and thus in 1881 a successful movement was initiated for the erection of the monument to John Batman; that monument is in itself an evidence that Melbourne believed that the ground would be untouched. Two thousand people subscribed for the erection of that monument, and four thousand people attended the service of unveiling it. When the Cemetery was set apart in 1837, it was worth ten pounds; the price of land then according to Kerr’s Directory of 1841 was a pound an acre outside the township; the graves, however, were sold at a pound a grave, which is proven by the receipts which are in the hands of citizens at this time. This means that the first graveholders paid a thousand times more for their graves than the natural value of the land. They did this on the same principle that Abraham bought the Sepulchre of Machpelah to bury his wife in; it was sold to them forever; that word appears in the trust deed of each denomination. After a lapse of eighty years a great city has grown around the graves of its founders, and the value of the land has tempted the cupidity of our Council, and they think the land they sold is their own, and they appropriate it, saying they will transfer the bones to suburban cemeteries, where the land is worth a tenth of the value that it is in the city; thus they confiscate nine-tenths of the property of the graveholders, and compel them to pay train or tram fare to see a second-hand grave. There is a moral as well as a commercial obligation to leave the land untouched. Melbourne is still in its youth. Its buildings are incomplete, the dome has not been placed over the Parliament Houses, the Public Library is lacking a wing. Both our Cathedrals are devoid of spires, and the unfinished state of many urban and suburban buildings is an evidence we have not arrived at maturity. Old cities value their history, and it was men coming from the older cities of the world who put the word forever into the constitution of our graveyard. The young men of the young city are not sufficiently impressed with the value of history.

In Parramatta, Sydney, is St. John’s graveyard, in which Samuel Marsden is buried, also the wife of Governor Bourke, as is the wife of Governor Fitzroy, who was killed in Sydney in a carriage accident; there, too, is a simple grave to William Batman, died 28th December, 1833, aged 60, and another to Ann Evelyn Liardet, the daughter-in-law of Liardet, the Founder of Port Melbourne. New South Wales is taking care of the grave of the father of Batman, while we are thinking of destroying Batman’s grave here.

While it was always my intention to write a Chapter on Melbourne’s History for a book I was writing on the Empire, yet it was Mr. Padley’s proposition that made me convert that chapter into a book. He was a promoter of the Old Colonist Movement, and the originator of the movement to preserve this Cemetery. We could not work harmoniously together; he was unable to see the historic side of the question, so I formed the Memorial Union.

It seems strange that such a movement should be needed when it is not ten years since four thousand citizens gathered around Batman’s monument, led by the Governor of the State and the Mayor of the City, to place a wreath there. They looked back to that which this book directs you, too the age of Lonsdale and Latrobe, These two men’s lives, like the Old Cemetery, cover the first twenty years of our history. To-day you turn to Sands and McDougall’s Map, and see sixty beautiful parks and gardens within the limits of Greater Melbourne, and you credit your first Governor with the foresight which led to the creation of these breathing places and parks of beauty. With all his indecisions, Latrobe held to three projects: fresh water, the Yan Yean supply; our public parks, fresh air; and our University, good education. Strange that we should carry out this policy in all its largeness, and neglect only the historic spot, the place wherein rest the remains of relatives of at least three Governors or Administrators, Lonsdale, Fitzroy and Brisbane. Surely here is the spot on which to erect our national memorial to the heroic men who fell at the front, to
bind up the older and newer history together, associating the story of the men who created our city with that of those who defended our Empire; then there would have been in the heart of Melbourne an Old and New Testament, sanctified and sealed by the ministry of the pioneers, and the sacrifice of immortal men and women who gave their lives for the liberty of the world. I proposed to build here a tower of strength and a hall of fame, in a garden beautified by the flora of Victoria. There appeared in The Argus of January 20th 1852, a letter purporting to come from the spirits of the people buried in the Old Cemetery; it commenced:—

"The memorial of several poor remains interred in the Old Cemetery."

These memorialists dwelt on the fact that for some time they quietly mouldered, occasionally disturbed by the coming of some new tenant, but as their graves were being neglected they thought it time to speak. They represented themselves as having been messengers of peace and goodwill and claimed, as we do to-day, that they had founded the institutions of Melbourne. The Argus inserted their long letter, recognizing that the neglect of the ground was a reason why the public should be called on to care for it. To them it was then the historic ground of the city. To-day, when we are so much nearer our centenary, when we will look back to our oldest memorials, the press allow writers to put forward neglect as a reason for abolition rather than amendment, and deny us the right to state fully the other side. The Act was introduced into Parliament with a misleading title, and carried through by misrepresentation. How much have the memorials of the past given to the present? A circle of monoliths at Stonehenge, England, is the memorial of Ancient Britain; a few stones over old graves have stood in England untouched for two thousand years. We respect these broken cromlechs of the Druid, and neglect our own.

What a loss India would sustain by the destruction of the Taj. When Napoleon conquered Egypt his soldiers dug up the Rosetta stone, and Champollion saw that on it was an inscription written in three languages, Greek, Demotic, and Hieroglyphic. The world had forgotten the hieroglyphics, but Champollion, knowing the Greek, set to work, deciphered them, restored to the world a knowledge of the old Egyptian language and thus the scholars of the world re-read the history of Egypt on its monuments, and were led to do so by one old stone. Rawlinson, in the East Indian Service, read the inscription on the Behistun rock which is on the high road that stretches between Ecbatana and Babylon, the road traversed by the conquerors of Bible times and by our armies of today in the world war; there, on that road stands the sacred Rock of Dagestan or Behistun, and five hundred feet up from the ground is an inscription in Cuneiform the world never knew what it was, no more than the old stones in our Cemetery.

Sir Henry Rawlinson climbed the rock and at the peril of his life made impressions in damped paper of the inscription, and found that it was in old Persian, Elamite and Babylonian. He knew the old Persian, and from it read the Babylonian and Elamite, and restored these languages to the world, and to-day we read a memorial tablet in Cuneiform as formerly our scholars read one in Greek; and we have not only read the books in the old Libraries of the Assyrian and the Babylonian, but we have found the history of a forgotten nation, perhaps an empire, the Hittite. As we value the memorials of antiquity, let us not despise these of our time. I can conceive that written over the graves in France are Epitaphs in English, French, and other languages, and when these languages have passed out of use we will know them once again by these trilingual inscriptions.

How thoroughly the world values an old memorial is seen in the strife of the German and French savants for the possession of the Moabite Stone. The Arabs, astonished at their rivalry and eagerness to possess it, broke it to pieces, and then offered the pieces for sale; the French bought the pieces and put it together, and it is now in the Louvre in Paris. We could not believe in Greece if we thought she had not erected a column or a trophy of some kind at Thermopylae.

Greek literature is in the Greek Epitaphs, such as these that were on the tombs of Plato and Sophocles. Pettigrew wrote the Chronicles of the Tombs, saying: "By epitaphical records, the antiquary, the historian and the biographer obtain legitimate sources of inquiry, and are enabled to do justice to the memory of deserving individuals." He saw in the sepulchral monuments of different
countries, the material of the history of the showing and how man develops his workmanship, first the mound, then cairn and so on until he produced monuments like these of the Greeks. How a memorial has corrected a serious error in Australian history is shown by James Blackburn in a paper he read in 1885 before the Historical Society of Australasia. Historians had all said that Port Jackson was named after a sailor who discovered its entrance from the masthead of Cook’s ship, until an Australian travelling in England went into a Church in Hertfordshire, and there saw on the wall a tablet to the memory of a former Secretary of the Admiralty, with the fact stated that Port Jackson was named after him. This led to inquiry, and it was found that there was no man with the names of Jackson on Cook’s ship, while there was such a man in the Admiralty, and we now accept the fact that the port was named after him.

If we want some true pictures of the past, we turn to the medals collected by Mr. A. Chitty. The Exhibition Building of 1854 is shown on the medals issued at the time, and a true picture of our old signal station on Flagstaff Hill is given on our old pennies. These coins, like our Cemetery stones and our native curiosities, like stone implements, are a part of our archaeology. Only in March 1920 an exhibition of these medals was held in Melbourne.

A specimen of the tokens in use in early Melbourne. Mr. Alfred Chitty, the Numismatist at the National Museum, affirms that this coin was one of our truest representations of the Old Flagstaff.

The old plan was to put into every large building, a foundation stone that should be a memorial stone. Under the stone they placed the current coins and the current newspapers, and often on the stone an inscription. Garryowen says that shortly after the stone of St. Francis was laid it was turned over and the contents stolen, and John West relates the same thing of the foundation stone of the Church of England High School, at New Norfolk, in Tasmania. These thieves are held up to opprobrium, because they were the meanest of all thieves; they were robbing a building of its records. To that class belongs our City-Council, and the Historical Society in this city has come very near to being an accomplice.

Our Memorial Union has aimed to foster a love of the memorial stone, whether it be the cairn of the wild savage, the memorial stone to a noble building, or a symmetrical tomb over a man of science, and we recognise the true value of each coin laid under a foundation stone without the spirit of cupidity that moves our City Council.

They cable to us that there is to be a cross for every man lost, and thousands of photographs are taken of these graves. There are four main Cemeteries:-

The Adelaide Cemetery, near Villiers-Bretonneau;
Crucifix Corner Cemetery;
Heath Cemetery, on the Amiens-St. Quentin Road, between Laflaque and Warfusee;
And the National Memorial Cemetery on the Corbie-Villiers Bretonnoux Road.

None of these Cemeteries are wholly Australian, but it is said that there will be one on Mont St. Quentin, which cables declare will be made permanent, contingent, I presume, on the Frenchmen never wanting a vegetable market in that district. Fifty Australian returned soldiers have been appointed caretakers of the Australian Cemeteries in France. The world is more than an army, and the great men who have fallen in our industrial battles might well sleep in Melbourne beside their militant brethren.

Four times we fought in old Pozieres
Old shell-scarred, shattered, ruined town;
Where wearied men to death lay down.
The bravest men who ever were born,
Fell like those meteor stars that shine;
The truest souls in hope forlorn
Fell cheering in the battle line.
They bore the burden of the day;
The crosses white, to strangers tell,
They entered first the bloody fray,
And so were buried where they fell.
We backward borne by odds too great
Left the old graves within the wood,
And prayed that none would desecrate
The mounds of men so great and good.
The tide of battle turned again,
And in the morn, across the land
We rush to victory, not in vain
So well is this offensive planned.
We found the Lone Hill undisturbed
Heroes are loved by friend and foe,
If otherwise then soul were curbed,
Sorrow and mourning all must know.
Then sleep in peace, old pioneers,
Your children fought the tyrant Huns;
These heroes of the Great Pozieres,
were such, because they were your sons.

A Mr. W. Candy, whose name was on several tombstones, wrote to The Argus in August, 1884, and said that when he came to Melbourne in 1849 there was only one tombstone maker, and that was John Hughes, who was employed at Edmund Westby’s timber yard in Collins-street. I was told by a relative of McKindlay that McKindlay himself cut the stone that was over his wife’s grave, and I doubt not but that many of the wooden slabs were erected personally by friends and relatives. Candy says that he made many of the monuments out of stone that came from Hobart. He knew William Willis, the first grave-digger. When he wrote his letter, in 1884, Willis was hale and hearty, a man of about 77 years of age, a familiar face in Collingwood, where he lived in comfortable circumstances. Candy’s letter was called out by an article that appeared in The Argus on the 2nd of August. In that article there was a statement that when the exhuming took place in the seventies, it was said that a man was found with a rope around his neck, and another with his clothes on and 2 shillings in his pocket. J. W. Brown is now 90 years of age, but he is the earliest monumental mason alive (1922).
CHAPTER 2
JOHN BATMAN,
AN EMPIRE BUILDER

Real empire comes not by war but by social contract; for four hundred years England fought France for a Continental empire, and came out of the struggle without a town on the disputed territory. England lost her American empire by war. She expanded by negotiation, purchase and settlement. India came to her by commerce and by her protecting its people from the tyranny of the Mahratta and the Mogul; South Africa by her restoration of the Independence of Holland to the Dutch people; by saving Europe from Napoleon. Australia came by colonization, and Canada was given to us by France as just a few hectares of snow. Just as America bought Florida, Louisiana, California, Alaska, and the Philippines or entered into willing communion with the Hawaiian, so has England, by mutual understanding with the residents of a country, extended her empire. Blackstone laid it down as part of British law that we must buy the territory of the natives, and in settling America Penn was not the only one to compensate the Indians for the use of their land; that idea underlies in all our States and settlements, and when John Batman bought 600,000 acres from the tribes around Port Phillip he took the only course open to a true builder of empire.

Teacher, Author and historian, James Bonwick, says Batman had the manners of a gentleman and the simplicity of a child; that singleness of heart that is so often the attribute of genius and greatness was his. He was a man above the average height in both body and soul. His father, William Batman, was a fruiterer, a godly man and a contemporary of Marsden and Crook; his remains lie undisturbed in St. John’s Churchyard, Parramatta. Bonwick made a mistake in saying in the first edition of Batman’s Life that his father came out with the earlier missionaries to Tahiti; that statement he withdraws in the second edition. The missionary spirit, however, was in Batman; he was born in Parramatta in the first year of the Nineteenth Century, or more correctly the last year of the Eighteenth, the year 1800; he belonged to the century of science, and was animated by the spirit of men like Captain Cook. His heart was moved with the hopes of discovery, and his mind with the spirit of enterprise, thus he proposed at an early age to leave home. Hamilton Hume knew him as a boy; both lived in Parramatta together, and when Batman had passed away, he said of him: “John Batman grew up a steady, active, persevering young man, and honest. He was the real Founder of Victoria.”

Batman was the eldest of four children, John, Henry, William and Maria. Both John and Henry were buried in the Old Cemetery, William settled in Sydney, and Maria married in New South Wales to a Mr. White, and died rather early in life. John learned the trade of a blacksmith, and remained in Parramatta until 1821 both he and his brother in conformity with the law then in existence advertised their leaving New South Wales.

Recently I went to Parramatta and walked along Macquarie-street, and saw the house that Batman lived in when a boy. His relatives are no longer in this district, they seem to have gone to Sydney. I wandered over to the Old Cemetery behind St. John’s Church, and found the grave of William Batman, the father of our Founder; on it were three stones, the centre one had this inscription:

Sacred
To the Memory of
WILLIAM BATMAN,
Who Departed this Life March 30th, 1833.
Aged 68 Years.
Also to the Memory of Mary, wife of the above,
Who Departed this Life April (day of month not decipherable) 1840.
Aged 71 Years.

On the stone to the left was the record of the death of Charles Batman, who died April 10th 1818, aged 9 years, and on the stone to the right that of a Douglas William Batman, who died on December 12th 1851, aged 29 years. The grave is not far away from that of Samuel Marsden, and in the same
graveyard is both the wife of Richard Bourke and that of Sir Charles A. Fitzroy; the one that was Governor of Australia when Melbourne was founded, and the other when Victoria became a separate Colony. Elizabeth Jane Bourke died May 7th 1832, aged 56. Some think that Elizabeth-street Melbourne was named after her. Lady Mary Fitzroy is buried some distance behind the Batman’s, but Ann Evelyn Liardet, the daughter-in-law of the Founder of Port Melbourne, is just within the entrance. So the Parramatta graveyard has its revelation of Melbourne.

Two or three years after his arrival in Van Diemen’s Land, he came to know John Helder Wedge. He proposed to Wedge that they should cross the continent of Australia, taking the opposite route to that afterwards taken by Burke and Wills. He thought that it would be better to land at Carpentaria and travel south to Sydney. A perfect bushman like Batman, supported by a surveyor like John Helder Wedge, would have accomplished it without loss of life. Through the in-attention of Governor Arthur, the project fell through. If Burke and Wills deserve a monument in our city, certainly a man like Batman does.

It is said that Batman received a tract of land in Tasmania as a reward for his services in hunting down bushrangers; if so this was not his estate at Kingston at the foot of Ben Lomond, for he was in possession of that when he captured Brady. His knowledge of the bush was associated with his love of law. He closed the reign of terror from the bushrangers in Van Diemen’s Land, under Governor Arthur’s rule. Single-handed he captured Brady. Historian James Bonwick says Brady would never surrender to a soldier, but when Batman, the bushman and farmer, faced him, and called out Stand! Brady lifted his gun and said: Are you a soldier officer? Batman replied, I’m no soldier, Brady, I am John Batman; surrender for there is no chance for you, the Prince of Bushrangers gave in, saying, You are right, Batman, my time has come; I yield to you because you are a brave man. Mr. Weir says that this statement is not correct, that Brady opened by saying: Are you John Batman? I would surrender to you but to no one else. Bonwick possibly got the statement from the bushranger’s friends. This arrest proves Batman to have been a courageous man, but we may count this work as inferior to the rescue of the Tasmanian natives. He and George Augustus Robinson sought to save the remnant of that extinct race, and although this was impossible, they brought the Native War to a close, and therefore Batman’s name is forever in Tasmanian history. Our two earlier Histories of Tasmania are John West and Melville’s, and both of these acknowledge the special faculty that Batman possessed for dealing with the aboriginals. West has written one of the greatest histories of early Australia ever written, and he says: “To Batman belongs the praise of mingling humanity with severity; of perceiving human affections in creatures he was commissioned to resist.” Melville said: “he proceeded not with the sword, but with the olive branch.” Many know his journal of his visit to Port Phillip, but few are familiar with the journal he wrote while bringing in the Tasmanian natives. One quotation I give from it:-

Monday, 5th April.
Native women arrived here about 12 o’clock;
made them tea and gave them bread.
Tuesday, 6th April.
The women here all day. This evening the young
child belonging to one of the women that suckled at the breast, died. I put it in a box, and buried it at the end of the garden; she seemed much affected at the loss of her child, and cried much.

Wednesday, 7th April.

This morning I found the woman that lost the child over the grave crying much. This is the man thinking on the emotions, aspirations and sentiments of the lowest of the native races, and sympathising with them in their affliction. His purchase of land from the natives of Port Phillip has been ridiculed, yet it was based on the experience of six years specially spent in the work of their elevation, and a life-knowledge of their habits. His interest was exhibited in three colonies, New South Wales, Tasmania and Victoria. It will be remembered that when he came to Port Phillip he had Sydney natives with him.

A man without interest in native races does not have a dozen natives on his estate voluntarily working for him who have come from a country five hundred miles away; they loved him so much that when the native War was over, and they were compensated and had returned to New South Wales, they voluntarily came back to him. All men knew that it was possible to get at the natives through their children, and squatters would adopt native children with that intent, but it was very much a failure. Batman held that the proper way was to treat kindly their women, without having them demoralised, and they would bring the men to the white man, and so when he founded his Port Phillip Settlement, he resolved to have none but married men in it, so that the natives would not be corrupted and alienated by the immoralities of the white man. He pursued this policy in the Native War, and succeeded with George Augustus Robinson in bringing it to a happy conclusion. And what was his reward? He had found while roaming in the wild places a beautiful woman, a fugitive from justice, and he wished to make her his wife, and he asked the Government that they might reward his services by pardoning this woman. They did so, and she became his wife, and bore him seven daughters and one son. A good woman. Captain Hobson gave her name to a mountain near Mornington, and it bears that name to this day Mount Eliza, and its neighbour, Mount Martha, he named after Captain Lonsdale’s wife.

The season when he came here is significant. We often found ourselves celebrating Empire Day and John Batman’s arrival in Port Phillip on the same Sunday. Empire Day is the 24th of May, and John Batman passed through the Heads on the 29th of May, and Sunday sometimes came in between the two events; they are always related. the growth of empire and the foundation of a State. William Westgarth speaks of Australia Felix as an empire, and recognizes that Batman and his colleagues laid the foundation of one which under his direction grew in this corner of the earth in kindliness, in friendship to the natives, and in a true relationship to mankind.

Shortly after settlement, Backhouse, the Quaker Missionary, came here. He had read the story of Batman’s settlement in the Sydney July papers, The Herald for the 6th of July, 1835, and two years later he came here and called on Batman and asked him why the natives killed Gellibrand. Batman picked up a native man’s skull with a bullet in the back of it, and said that is why they killed Gellibrand. John Batman, by his treatment of the natives, rightly stands by the side of Backhouse’s great Quaker brother, William Penn, the founder of Pennsylvania, to whom he is so often likened. I came especially to think of him in the Old Cemetery, so I now turn to his monument, let us read the inscription:-
JOHN BATMAN.
Born at Parramatta in N.S.W., 1800
Died at Melbourne 6th May, 1839.
He entered Port Phillip Heads 29th May, 1835,
as leader of an expedition which he had organised
in Launceston Van Diemen’s Land to form a settlement,
and founded one on the site of Melbourne, then unoccupied.
This Monument was
ERECTED
By Public Subscription in Victoria.
1881
CIRCUMSPICE.
(Latin:- If you are seeking a pleasant peninsula, look around you.)

This is the truth, Batman is the conqueror who conquers the waste, who depastures his cattle in the
wilderness and puts a house where there had never been a house before. He is a hero and a martyr, He
died four years after the settlement had been founded, in the meridian of life, not quite forty years old.
We never did him justice and today we would rob posterity of his grave. He built the first properly
constructed dwelling in Melbourne. If Fawkner did build one it was a public house. This was the first
house gladdened by the care of a good wife and the happy laughter of children. He built the house on
ground that had to later bid for against all comers; his purchase from the natives was never respected.
He found the land unoccupied as the inscription says; and Arden tells us of the first book written and
published in Port Phillip, that in 1837 there were 250 people and 36 homes in Melbourne. In 1838 1800
people and 300 houses; in 1839, 3000 people and 560 houses, in the 1840s 5538 and 925 houses and
it has gone on developing until it has a population of 700 000. This progress has gone on the initiative
of Batman; For nearly forty years the Home Government subsidised that of New South Wales, while
we paid our way from the first and left considerable balance on our revenue when we separated from
New South Wales and yet when batman died his widow was only allowed to live for a brief time in the
house her husband built in the town he created. She went out into the wilderness with her fatherless
children; People sometimes say “Who is the Founder of Melbourne, Batman or Fawkner or Evans, and
Hepburn has added the name of Buckley and claims the wild white man as the founder of our city.”
Our monument unequivocally affirms that John Batman was the founder, and there should be no
hesitation in making this statement. It is more reasonable to call Buckley the founder than Fawkner,
because Buckley did precede them all, and Fawkner came last on the scene. The real founder of any
place is the man who first has the idea in his brain and the will to execute it, and who with that
intent chooses the spot. It was Batman’s intention to cross Bass’s Strait as early as 1820; he had then
the vision of settlement, and along with Gellibrand applied to the New South Wales Government
for land at Westernport. Their letter to Governor Darling is dated 11th January, 1827; he was
refused, because no determination had then been come to regarding settlement. He followed in
thought his old friend Hume, when with Hovell, Hume in 1821 came overland to Port Phillip, Batman
had his map and pored over it and thought that that was the place for a settlement. He fixed the
spot. For instance, Napoleon leans over his maps and calls his secretary, Bourrienne, and says: “See
where I will beat Wormser in the next campaign.” He says to Talma, the actor, that on a certain date he
will give him a pit of Kings in Frankfurt, and he promises Josephine that on a certain date: “he will meet
her in a Palace in the territory of the enemy.” He arranges his forces; he marches to victory, and
on the dates and in the places he promised he fulfilled his pledges, and all the world acclaims a conqueror.

So it is with Batman, he dreams over his maps, goes and makes his treaty with the natives, and before
Fawkner ever put foot in the land, has five hundred sheep here. Coltish, his captain of The Norval,
whose name is on one of our tombs to honour a man, William Stephenson, for the faithful discharge
of his duty. Stephenson was his first mate when he commanded The Heroine. Coltish has five hundred
sheep on the banks of the Yarra in October, 1835, the month that Fawkner arrived here. We have
neglected Batman; we are ungrateful. With wicked hands we have dug up his grave and taken it out of the city. What are our authorities for his life?

Firstly we have Batman’s own journal. Batman had cultivated the habit of giving reports of his work; he had to do so in the Native War, and in the capture of Brady, and therefore it was natural for him to do so in this venture when operating for an association of fifteen gentlemen.

Secondly, James Bonwick’s Life of Batman, and his books on the discovery and settlement of Port Phillip, and Melville’s History of Van Diemen’s Land.

Thirdly, the speeches and writings of Fawkner.

Fourthly, contemporaneous literature. Gellibrand’s statement, John Holder Wedge’s letters, Arden and Kerr’s books, the Tasmanian papers, Gurner’s Chronicle. Dr. Lang was in Tasmania at the time, and Rusden in Sydney, and both have written of him.

Fifthly, Buckley’s narrative given by Morgan.

Sixthly, the original treaty with the natives, extant in the Public Library, and such documents as this.

Seventh and lastly, incidental evidence from letters preserved in the Archives of New South Wales, Backhouse letters, Coltish narrative related by James Bonwick and others, and the Story of Batman and his Contemporaries given by descendants. Batman had everything to inspire him; neither he nor Dutton nor Henty were the first to put foot in Victoria. The whalers and sealers had long been about the coast. Probably there were many earlier than Dutton, and these men’s stories, Hume and Hovel’s travels, and George Augustus Robinson’s inspiration to save the native races, all prompted Batman to action. Fawkner claimed to be the Founder of Melbourne, because as a boy of eleven he was present at Sorrento, with Captain Collins. William Pascoe Crook could set up a similar claim, and certainly Buckley’s argument would be stronger than either. So our Cemetery speaks the truth in making Batman the Founder of Melbourne.

Batman set out in The Rebecca, on Sunday, May the 10th 1835. His home at Kingston was thirty-three miles from Georgetown at the mouth of the Tamar river, and Mrs. Batman drove down in her gig and saw him off. His vessel beat about the coast owing to contrary winds, and he landed and posted Mrs. Batman four long letters. He also put in at Hunter Island. This island interests me because in the fifties it was a rendezvous of Garibaldi. Few people know that he was ever off our coast, but driven south in his vessel, he passed into Bass’s Straits and landed here and found a lonely house untenanted; the vegetables in the garden were ready for use. Here was everything with which he might support and revive his sailors after a long voyage, and no one to take payment. He found a slab in the garden, it was over the remains of a lonely settler’s wife. The settler, who had buried her here and trusted that none would desecrate her grave, and wrote on the slab that life on the island had now become unbearable, and therefore he had left for the mainland. Garibaldi, in his autobiography, says that when in Italy he had found himself hunted and harried by the police and the priests, he would throw himself down, and going into a state of day dreaming would be back in that lonely island, and would listen to the ripple of the stream among the trees, and would again drink of its water, and there among scenes primeval refresh his mind. Batman, too, landed on this lonely island, and then securing a favourable breeze made for Port Phillip, passed through the heads on May the 29th 1835. His journal is the fifth gospel. His description of the fauna and flora of the land is as we know it. You can still see the swans at Queenscliff, and wherever you follow in his footsteps you find his narrative correct. Mr. Ham, who was Mayor in 1882, the year Batman’s monument was unveiled, bought his journal for forty pounds and presented it to the Public Library. It was on a Friday that Batman came into Port Phillip, and the first thing he heard was the bark of a dog, presumably one of our wild dogs, and the new settlers repaid his welcome by shooting the dog, or if not that one another of the breed. He walked twelve miles. On Saturday, May the 30th his vessel was at St. Leonards, and he walked twenty miles and climbed the Bellarine Hills. On Sunday, May 31st he was in Gellibrand Harbour at the mouth of the Werribee river and met the natives for the first time, and names Mount Collicott.
He claims to have walked thirty miles on that day, and on the next day, June 1st, climbs the Barrabool Hills and looked out over the Werribee plains. He calls them Arthur’s Plains, and says a gig could ride 30 miles without finding any great obstruction, a fact testified to by old pioneers who afterwards settled there. They describe the place in the same language in their letters to Latrobe. He named certain mountains, Mt. Cotteril, Mt. Connolly, and Mt. Solomon.

Tuesday, June 2nd was a rainy day, and not much is done, but on Wednesday he is at the Saltwater River, and follows its course for 26 miles. On Thursday, June the 4th he arrives at the Keilor Plains, and reflects on the fertile soil, the long grass, and the marshmallow. On Friday, June the 6th he crossed three streams that he thought may be one. He calls it Eliza, after his wife. On Saturday, June 6th he is, James Bonwick thinks, at the Merri Creek, which he calls Batman’s Creek, and here he makes his treaty with eight natives, whom he calls chiefs; a memorable day when he buys from the tribe of Doutagalla six hundred thousand acres of land. He induced them to cut their marks on a tree, and then transferred a copy of these to his document, arranging to give them £200 worth of goods down, and a further year’s tribute to the value of £200. Later writers say this occurred not at Merri Creek but on the Plenty River. Batman’s manuscript reveals the fact that it was written en route, but later some notes were written across the page, and there the name Plenty occurs, and other names such as Yana Yana, Melbourne, Queenscliff, Hobson’s Bay. These notes must have been written after the places were so named, and in the beginning of the journal Mr. William. Weire has pencilled this note: “The fresh writing on some of the pages was done by the late Dr. Alexander Thomson; William Weire, T.C.K, Geelong.” James Bonwick, in copying the journal, makes no allusion to them.

One of the natives whose name is attached to the Treaty was Jika Jika, who is now remembered by virtue of the district near the Merri Creek being now called by that name. Batman leaves the Creek and strikes the Darebin, Creek which he calls Lucy Creek; he then travels 12 miles South West and came on the Sunday to the banks of the Yarra Yarra river, and on Monday he wrote in his note book ‘This will be the place for a village.” On the Tuesday he arrives back at Indented Heads, which he calls Indented Heads. We now follow Flinders and call them Indented Head. He leaves there three white men and five Sydney natives, and he sails away at 8 p.m. on Tuesday, June 9th for Van Diemen’s Land. A favourable wind carries him across the strait, and he arrives back at Launceston on the Thursday. He meets Mr. Sams, and they ride home together on horseback, and in the small hours of the morning he tells Sams the whole story of the discovery.

Some time ago a critic visited us from Sydney, Alexander Wilson. He addressed the Historical Society of Melbourne, and challenged the whole of this story, under the title of The Fable of John Batman’s Discoveries. He likens this fearless and energetic man to Tichborne, who laid a fraudulent
claim to the estate of another man, and that in the face of the fact that Batman’s journal was in use in his own lifetime, and could have been challenged then by hundreds of people who knew the whole facts of the case. Arden used it in the production of his book in 1840. Wilson made this statement in the face of the fact that the Life of Batman had been written by Bonwick, a disciple of Niebuhr, the great historical sceptic, the man who challenged Roman History. He asked how could Batman communicate with the natives. Batman himself says by the Freemasonry of Signs, and he had with him his Sydney natives, who helped him, and he had been communicating with them all his life. When Buckley came among Batman’s people he said the natives thoroughly understood the obligation, and looked for the yearly distribution. In the following year, on June the 10th 1830, George Stewart, a Magistrate, was sent here by the New South Wales Government to make inquiries, and he has a conference with the natives, and distributes the blankets himself; he in his documents spells the word Yarra Yarrow, as Mrs. Batman does in the letter to her daughter. Wilson thought Batman’s ride home with Sams was apocryphal, because after doing thirty-three miles on horseback he carried on a conversation, and no man, Wilson held, could do it. This to an audience of stockmen and stockwhips was a little absurd, and one ventures to remind him that some Americans threatened to prosecute Theodore Roosevelt for cruelty to animals after his famous ride of ninety miles on horseback.

Batman was always on horseback; it was a comparatively little matter to him. Gellibrand and Buckley afterwards did that distance together. He laughed at Woodhouse’s picture of Batman and Buckley meeting on Batman’s Hill. It is a work of imagination, but it is very hard to think of any other place in which they met. The reprieve of Buckley in itself is an evidence that Batman was here in June, for Buckley received his reprieve in August. The date of the pardon was August 25th 1835. The news of his entry into the white man’s camp had to reach Tasmania, and later the petition by Batman for his reprieve had to be presented to the Government.

All this occurred and Buckley was informed in August in Port Phillip that he was a free man; this was six weeks before Fawkner arrived. A letter from Wedge is still extant, describing Buckley. It was addressed from Bellarine Point and dated July 9th, 1835. Wedge says that he knew Buckley had not seen white men since his exile, because when he took him to the people he had lived with they all wanted to look his body over, never before having seen any white man but Buckley.

Who was the founder? Surely this man who had sufficient interest in a fellow-creature who had spent thirty years among the natives to secure his liberation from convict life almost immediately on his entrance into the white man’s camp. This is the action of the father of a settlement.

On his departure to Van Diemen’s Land to secure supplies, Batman left three white men here and five natives; the white men were Gunn, Thompson and Todd, and Todd was directed to make a daily report. He kept a journal, and it is extant and part of it a few years ago was published in *The Argus*. It is proof positive that Batman was here in June; when later Gellibrand came he had with him as he went over the ground Batman had traversed, one of Batman’s Sydney natives, who spontaneously on coming to a certain place, pointed it out as the spot where Batman first saw the fire of the natives and he identified other places. It was also so in the case of John Helder Wedge. To put Bacon before Shakespeare, as some students of literature have done, to challenge the existence of Napoleon, while he was still alive on the Island of St. Helena, as Archbishop Whately did, is a small matter compared to this diatribe against Batman, who so nobly lived and has met with so much ingratitude. Puerile criticism can never create a doubt of Shakespeare, and Whately never intended to shake public confidence in the existence of Napoleon, but this criticism by Mr. Wilson seemed not only to injure, but with our action in regard to the Cemetery where Batman’s bones were buried, tended to bring a city into contempt.

Fawkner never challenged Batman’s presence here in the June of 1835, in fact Fawkner was one of the first whom Batman saw on his return, and he applied to Batman later for the help of his Sydney natives to make a bargain with the Victorian Aboriginaals, such as he had made with the tribe of Doutagalla. Fawkner wished to adopt Batman’s land, and had made no arrangement himself
for negotiating with the natives. Batman on the other hand had the whole vision of settlement in his mind.

In *The Argus* of August the 29th 1865, Fawkner wrote: “In May (1835) John Batman, for the company of fourteen squatters, had landed and settled on Indented Heads, near the Swan Ponds. The company required only squattages, they did not want to found towns, nor to invite people to settle; they only wanted shepherds and rough builders.” Here Fawkner admits that Batman was here, but tries to disparage him by making him a squatter. We will see how in his first printed paper, Fawkner denies that he thought of settling on the Yarra, and that his taste was Indented Heads and not Batman’s. *The Advertiser*, March the 5th 1838, contains a leaderette in which Fawkner uses these words: “Melbourne was wild, and as far as Europeans are concerned, uninhabited, when the establishment of the proprietor of this journal arrived there in August 1835, but his taste led him to select Indented Heads.” Long years afterwards he accused Batman of wishing to establish a settlement at Indented Heads, but his own paper extant to-day shows that this was his own position, and that in 1838 he believed that Melbourne had been put in the wrong place.

Mr. Wilson said that the sailing of *The Rebecca*, the boat in which Batman came to Port Phillip, was not mentioned in the shipping news of the Tasmanian papers; yet the sailing of the vessel was reported in the *Launceston Advertiser*, and her return in the *Cornwall Chronicle*, and the Sydney papers at the time copied the information. What a wretched quibble it is to say the news was not in the shipping column when it was in probably every Tasmanian paper, and copied into the Sydney papers; this is not historical criticism but play. Dr. Lang was in Tasmania at the time, and Rusden was in Sydney, and in his *History of Australia* refers to the ferment that the news created. Bonwick anticipated with his critical mind all these actions, and silenced them by his complete record of the events. The *Launceston Advertiser* of May the 21st 1835, had this paragraph: “Mr. Batman, with a number of attendants, including some Sydney natives that have some time resided here, left George Town this week in a small vessel for Port Phillip.” It must occur to you that such native names as Geelong, Doutagalla, and Jika Jika came in vogue as names of places through Batman’s association with the natives. Wilson thought Mercer never signed the articles of the association, and that at the time he was in Scotland, but we have only to turn to the old pioneers letters to Governor Latrobe and see from their testimony that he was in Van Diemen’s Land at the time. David Fisher, in his letter, says he knew him and saw him there in 1835.

Now why did Mr. Alexander Wilson come all this distance to vilify Batman We want Sydney to help us with history, and Wilson might have told us something about the Nazareth-like home of John Batman at Parramatta. He could have shed light on the association of Batman’s father with Marsden, the Missionary, and his contemporaries. The house that William Batman lived in is still extant, and the father’s grave we have seen is still in St. John’s Churchyard. We remember that Batman was born in Parramatta only twelve years after the first settlement was founded in Australia; the story of this family therefore takes us back to the very beginning of settlement on this continent. Did Mr. Wilson think of Alexander the Great and see in John Batman as a rival? for it is questionable whether the old city of Alexandria was ever as large or as wealthy as Melbourne. But they did keep the tomb of their founder, and for two thousand two hundred years, and when we overcame Napoleon, we put it in the British Museum.

Batman’s first tomb is now on Batman Avenue. When the public built that monument no man was pressed for more than a shilling; it was a peoples spontaneous act. The Emperor of Egypt, who succeeded Alexander, brought the Macedonian conqueror’s body from Babylon, and buried it in the city he had built by his despotic will. As a democracy is greater than a tyranny, so should it be more grateful to these who advance its interests.

Alfred Clarke, an early settler, compiled a booklet, *A Year’s History of the Settlement of Port Phillip* in 1836. This he published in Geelong in 1867, and has in it what purports to be the shipping notice of the sailing of *The Caledonia* from Van Diemen’s Land. It runs thus:-
“On April 5th, we sailed in the Caledonia for Port Phillip and King George’s Sound. Passengers: Major Wellman, Mr. H. Wellman, Mr. and Mrs. Batman, Miss E. Batman, Miss H. Batman, Miss Newcombe, H. Herskith, Mary Dobson, Mary Hyland, James Simpson, Esq., Robert Marsden and a prisoner, with permission from the principal superintendent. The cargo on board was 300 sheep, 20 horses and 50 head of horned cattle.” Batman had been back and forward in The Norval before he brought his wife over in The Caledonia.

Lieutenant-Colonel T. M. Evans, of Hobart, recently (1920) gave a dozen or more documents relating to Batman and the Port Phillip Association to the Public Library; among them were letters of John Holder Wedge, telling how he met Buckley with the kangaroo skins thrown over him, and how that he forwarded his petition for pardon. There are rules, signed by members of the association, relating to the forwarding of sheep to Port Phillip from Van Diemen’s Land; also a letter of Fawkner’s, the original of Todd’s journal, and in all these documents there is an acknowledgment that Batman was here in May. Among them I found this letter of Batman to Lieutenant-Governor Arthur:

Launceston, November. 23rd, 1835.

To His Excellency Lieutenant-Governor Van Diemen’s Land.

Sir, I had the honour in the month of July last of transmitting to you a report of my proceedings at Port Phillip for the purpose of effecting an amicable settlement with the natives of that part of New Holland, and of the treaty concluded by me for the occupation of a certain tract of country, under a certain annual tribute, and to be used for pastoral purposes, and in that report I communicated to your Excellency the names of the gentlemen associated with me in forming the settlement.

At that time it was considered by the members of the association that the territory in question was beyond the jurisdiction of His Excellency the Governor of New South Wales, and the report was therefore addressed to Your Excellency for the purpose of being transmitted to the British Government under the expectation of the Crown confirming the land thus ceded upon such terms as might appear equitable and just, and for that purpose full instructions were transmitted by the gentlemen of the association to responsible agents in London to represent their interests with the British Government, and to fulfil such conditions as they might agree with the Crown for a full confirmation or grant of the territory in question; but as it now appears by the Governor-in-Chief’s Proclamation, that His Excellency exercises jurisdiction over the territory in question as part of New South Wales, I have the honour to solicit that you will be pleased to fully inform His Excellency Governor Bourke of the proposed plans of the association, their capacity to carry them into execution, and the principles under which they wish to establish a colony at Port Phillip.

I have the honour to inform Your Excellency that the association does not possess any community of interest, but the stock will be the separate property of each party shipping, and be placed upon separate establishments, and that so soon as the pleasure of the British Government is known, with respect to the terms upon which the territory may be granted, that a division of the lands will be formally made, and from that period each party will have a separate and distinct permanent establishment, furnishing a proportion of quit rent or tribute payable for the same, and also of other expenses which will be necessarily imposed in carrying the objects of civilization into effect.
The parties have engaged two ships for the transmission of stock and supplies, and in the course of six months they will have property there to the value of twenty-five thousand pounds at least, and there can be little doubt, that in a very short space of time, a colony of great importance, not only to the Mother Country, but to both the colonies, will be established.

The association has already felt some inconvenience by individuals who have recently acquitted the Port of Launceston, and in defiance of our occupation of the land from the natives, have fixed themselves on part of the territory, and serious apprehensions are entertained that they will materially check, if not destroy, the principles of civilization, unless controlled by a competent authority, and I am therefore requested most respectfully to suggest the propriety of proper authority being given to some individual for the purpose of enabling the members of the association to carry on the principles of colonization and civilization until the pleasure of the British Government may be communicated and more mature plans be adopted, and I am authorised to add that the members of the association will most cheerfully defray such portion of the expense attendant on the measure as the local Government may consider fair and reasonable.

I propose immediately to proceed with my family to Port Phillip, to take with Mr. Wedge the direction of the affairs of the association, and the arrangements with the native tribes, and as the vessels will be engaged for the next six months in conveying stock from this Port to Port Phillip, the association will be happy to carry into effect any arrangements for buildings for such persons as the Government may think fit to send.

I have the honour of reporting the progress made by the association since July last with the native tribes, from that period up to the commencement of this month. When Mr. Wedge left Port Phillip, the intercourse [with the natives] has been kept up upon the most friendly terms, and from eighty to one hundred natives have been clothed and supplied with daily rations at the expense of the association. The natives have been partially occupied in habits of industry, and I have not the least hesitation in affirming that if no unforeseen obstacles occur, a gradual system of civilization will obtain.

In the report the association communicated their intention of engaging a surgeon and a teacher of the principles of Christian religion, the pledge has been realized, and Dr. Thomson proceeds with me to execute these duties.

I have, etc.,
(Signed) JOHN BATMAN.

In a memorandum of the rules signed by members, it is affirmed:—“that they shall have complete information on all the land Batman had purchased before they divided it, as the land might be unequal; they were to avoid shipping sheep during the lambing season, and in no season were they to take out of Van Diemen’s Land more than five hundred sheep each. Large shipping like twenty thousand sheep in one season, might injure Van Diemen’s Land.” If you judge Batman by his original journal and letters of this kind, and he stands out as the ablest man in an association of able men.

Mr. Greig, the Secretary of the Historical Society, seems to be one of those who has been influenced by the recent reflections on Batman’s visit in 1835, and he said in The Argus of July 3rd, 1920, that it was doubtful, if Batman on his first visit, was on the actual site of Melbourne; he thought that the remark, “This will be the place for a village” referred to Port Melbourne, and the reason he gave for this was Batman’s map. This we give here. Rusden said: When lithographing this map I found it convenient to
have the names written at right angles to these I found in the Parliamentary paper, in order to present it in the form familiar to people now.

He said that it had been made by John Helder Wedge from Batman’s journal. He quotes Wedge’s words, “I laid the route down from his journal;” therefore the map has to be interpreted by the journal, and not the journal by the map. And as Batman was writing of the northern bank of the river, it is obvious that the remark about the village refers to it. The original map was coloured, and both sides of the Yarra were coloured for settlement; the north bank of the Yarra is represented as Batman’s territory as far as the heart of Richmond. The map is proof positive that Batman was here in June, for it was posted to England by Lieutenant-Governor Arthur, on the 4th of July, 1835, and Arthur then looked on the settlement as a certainty, for he sent a statement with the map in which he said: “The company will probably proceed at once to take possession.” By this map you will see that the angle formed at the junction of the Saltwater River and the Yarra is reserved for a common.

A. B. Weire, the grandson of Batman, was present at our gatherings, and defended the claims of his grandfather before the Historical Society. Mrs. J. Bingley was present at one of our open air meetings at the monument; she was a daughter of Captain Robson Coltish; she was a tall woman with character in her face, and had come to find the grave of Stephenson, a favourite officer of Coltish. I pointed out his grave to her, and she told me that when her father brought the first sheep over in The Norval there was no thought then of Fawkner having any claim to the foundation of the settlement. Fawkner himself, in an early number of his paper (March 5th 1838), we have seen deprecates the settlement having been fixed on the Yarra. He thought it should have been at Indented Heads, just as Lonsdale wished it had been at Gellibrand.

“She told me that Bonwick was deeply indebted to her father for much that appeared in his book; this would seem to be corroborated by James Bonwick’s publication of Coltish’s letter; in that Coltish declares it to be absurd to identify Fawkner with the foundation of the settlement He said when he was bringing over the sheep and the cattle in 1835, Batman returned with him and they went up the Yarra, and Batman showed them the way, and pointed to special spots on the banks. Coltish writes: “I firmly believe that had it not been for his individual exertions Port Phillip would have been many long years in possession of the aboriginals, and to him only is the honour due of founding this colony, a fact well known to every person who came here at the time I am writing of.”

I know the descendants of some of these people; several have been at our gatherings in the cemetery. For instance a daughter of the lady who prepared Batman’s body draped it and made it ready for the coffin and a relative of a nurse who lived in his house; also Mrs. Hill who was a member of the Church to which I ministered in Lygon-street, Carlton, told me her father was Mr Wilmot, one of Batman’s shepherds; the first shepherd’s hut was near old St. James but Mr Wilmot tended the sheep where the General Cemetery is situated. Others have borne similar testimony, and thus tradition adds to the volume of verification from the written word.

II * came with her family in The Caledonia in April 1836. Coltish thinks that Batman had been here at least three times before her arrival. On that vessel were Batman James Simpson, Major Welman and son (on their way to India), the Reverend Mr. Orton, Miss Caroline Newcombe, Dr. Thomson, and the shepherds and farm servants in the employ of Batman.

Batman’s statement of his mission is that he “looks to relieve the town of Hobart of her surplus cattle and the Mother country of her half-starved peasantry” I quote his words which show that his was the ideal of Empire. There is some discrepancy in dates between batman’s journal and Robson’s log, but Batman is evidently right and wrote the last part of his journal on board The Rebecca. Doctor Alexander Thomson afterwards wrote the notes across the pages of the journal and he thought that Batman had made the treaty with the natives at the Plenty river: However I prefer to take Bonwick’s view, that it was the Merri Creek. That he did not make it on the Plenty River, proven in a statement of Gellibrand in the letters of the Old Colonists to Latrobe: Gellibrand claims he discovered the Plenty Riverland named it. Batman therefore could not have made the treaty there, when it was discovered some time afterwards.
The Batman party saw Gellibrand off after he had traversed the Plenty district, and there was no challenge to this statement in Batman’s lifetime. Gellibrand says he called it “Plenty” as it is the only stream except the River Barwon deserving the name River” He was comparing it with the rivers he had been examining flowing from the north, and not the Yarra. Batman called Indented head in his journal “Indenture Heads”. It was natural he should make this mistake: Indenture was in his mind. His agreement with members of the Port Phillip Association was called an Indenture. Thus Labilliere tells that an Indenture of the 29th of June, 1835, provision is made ‘that no liquor of any description shall be landed’.

If Batman fell a victim to alcohol he certainly intended to safeguard the natives against it. Here the error found in James Bonwick’s work and copied by Henry Gyles Turner, of calling Todd, Dodd, is in Batman’s journal, but the man signed his name as Todd to the treaty with the natives. It is argued by some that Doutagalla was only the native name of the wife of Jika Jika.

The original journal was presented to the Trustees of the Public Library by Alderman C. J. Ham, Mayor of Melbourne, in 1882. He secured it from William Weire, the son-in-law of Batman, who at that time was Town Clerk of Geelong. I am pleased to record that A. Batman Weire, the son of William Weire, and grandson of Batman, was present at our meetings in the Old Cemetery, and took the deepest interest in its preservation. The name on the front of the journal is like the rest of Batman’s hand-writing, and bears the date May the 10th, 1835. It was natural, I repeat, to Batman to keep a journal, he had kept one when gathering in the Tasmanian natives, and having to make periodical reports, it became necessary for him to put notes in his pocket book, and the nervousness of some lines would suggest that it was sometimes written as he camped for the night; such seems to me to have been the case when he wrote the account of his having met the natives on Saturday and Sunday, June the 6th and 7th. This note is completed with a steadier hand, suggesting that the first part was written on the banks of Merri Creek, and the second on board The Rebecca. The open spaces left between the account of each day’s work or walk, especially when he turns and writes on the next page, is just what we all do in writing in our note books, and therefore we feel that it is an honest diary, and Batman, on Monday, June 8th wrote in his journal amid the primeval surroundings of Port Phillip: “This will be the place for a village.” Little Johnny Batman, the boy who was afterwards drowned, scribbled in his father’s journal, and sketched a picture of a three-masted schooner under which he put the name Norval. Apparently the boy was thinking of the vessel in which his father came. There are also marks of the aboriginals; whether these were made by the boy, by the girls, or by Batman himself we cannot say. It seems as if Batman tried to make the marks in the journal before putting them into the documents. Fawkner admitted that when his party settled on the banks of the Yarra, John Helder Wedge called on them and handed a paper to Lancey, one of the party, warning them that they were trespassing, and he advised them to go south of the Yarra river.

Fawkner, when speaking on the matter, said Lancey handed the paper back to Wedge, saying he might want such a piece for some necessary occasion. When Fawkner made this remark in 1853, and again later, Wedge was a Member of the Legislative Council of Tasmania, and he wrote to Bonwick saying that it was altogether untrue; that Lancey met him with politeness and civility, and apparently assented to the proposal to go south of the river, and we know that Fawkner did so, but returned when he found that Batman’s treaty would not be recognised by the Government. All the early settlers seemed to agree that Batman was the founder, even Fawkner’s associates. George Evans, a quiet old man, originally a bricklayer, came here and built the first hut in Melbourne. He said he was in Fawkner’s hotel when Batman came in after his first visit to Port Phillip, and he remembered that Batman facetiously declared himself, in the presence of Fawkner, the largest landowner in the world. It was then that Fawkner resolved on immediate action. George Evans is buried in the Melbourne General; there are two Evans graves in the Old Cemetery, a William Evans and a George Evans; there was more than one Evans family in the beginning; George had one employee, Evan Evans, and William Evans kept the Builders Arms Hotel. Sams told James
Bonwick that Batman had discussed the idea of settlement with him at Ben Lomond in 1834. All who knew Batman respected him. William Robertson, of Colac, wrote: “I had so many opportunities of forming a judgment of what kind of man he was, that I have not the slightest hesitation in assuring you that his character for veracity and probity cannot, with regard to the truth, be in the slightest degree impugned.”

Batman's strenuous life, combined probably with his growing love of drink, brought him to an early grave. Conviviality was the voice of the age, and the besetting sin of early Melbourne. Lonsdale, in his letters to the New South Wales authorities, alludes to his death in these words: “After a protracted illness Batman died last night” Liardet says his widow became Mrs. Willoughby, and that Mr. Montefiore, who seems to have a child buried in the Old Cemetery, was the first tenant of his house.

Mr. Paine, one of Melbourne’s earliest Freethinkers, was the tenant of Batman’s last house, a cottage that stood in Little Bourke-street, where the Money Order Office stood behind the Post Office. Mr. McNall drew up Batman’s will; he was a butcher, who had obtained a little legal knowledge, and this imperfect will muddled up the Batman estate.

The funeral of Batman is described in Waterfield’s journal, and finds a place in another part of this book. Mr. Waterfield's son took an interest in our work in the Old Cemetery.

On Friday morning, June 27th 1919, I called on Austin Batman Weire, at his residence, Bon Lomond, Bay-road, Sandringham. It will be seen that the house is named after the mountain in Tasmania which overlooked the Batman estate, an estate sacrificed in the interests of the settlement of Melbourne. I remarked to Mr. Weire that I thought he ought to be a rich man, being the only grandson of Batman living, and the only line of Batman left to us. The neglect of Batman’s descendants by the people who have made so many millions out of his enterprise is on a par with the ingratitude that is allowing us to mutilate his old burial ground, and even to dig up his bones. Mr. Weire showed me a copy of Woodhouse's picture of Batman meeting Buckley, and he regarded it as a true portrait of his grandfather. This was brought home to me when he showed the photograph of his mother, who was Elizabeth Mary Batman, one of Batman’s daughters. Mr. Weire said his mother could remember Buckley when she was a little girl; he took her in his arms and lifted her on to his shoulder. Therefore there can be no dispute about Buckley’s meeting Batman, although the picture is only imaginative. It was in the possession of Mr. Hull, of Caulfield, and he kindly invited me to go out and see it (the picture in this chapter is taken from it; it was painted by Frederick Woodhouse, and is wrongly called The Settlers First Meeting with Buckley, because Batman himself was not present at the first meeting; they would meet, however, on Batman's Hill. Batman’s portrait was taken for it from a drawing by Nuttall, a Native-and-white artist, which was in the possession of Batman's son-in-law. The painting received the first prize from the Government. They offered in 1861 a prize for the best picture on a subject of local historic interest; Woodhouse produced this one, and the Honourable William, Hull, M.L.C., bought it, and it has remained in the family. A certain number of engraved copies were made of it years ago, and were sold for a guinea each at what was known as The Art Union of Victoria. It is one of these that is in Mr. A. B. Weire’s possession. Mrs. Weire (Elizabeth Batman) always said it was a remarkable likeness of her father, and it is the only authentic portrait of him. The late Mr. Hull told me that the Alfred Hull buried in the Old Cemetery was his uncle. Mr. Weire showed me a photograph of Lucy Lomas, nee Lucy Batman; she gave it to him on his first birthday in 1850, and therefore it is one of the very earliest of our Victorian photographs. She is a sweetly beautiful woman, a recognized belle of early Melbourne, and a revelation of that Arcadian scene, when Mr. and Mrs. Batman went to our first church, accompanied by their seven daughters: the children’s names were: Maria, Lucy, Eliza, Elizabeth Mary, Adelaide, Ellen Gray, Pelonamena, John Charles, their little boy.

Maria married Mr. Fennell, Elizabeth Mary became the second wife of Mr. Weire, of Geelong, Lucy married Mr. Lomas, Pelonamena, Daniel Bunce, the Botanist, Eliza, Mr. William Collyer, and Adelaide, his brother, John Collyer, and on his death she married Mr. Bertram, while Ellen
Gray died at the age of twenty-one.

The following is from the Register of the Burials in Melbourne which is to be found in the Victorian Government Statist office, Queen-street: “John Batman, of Melbourne, died May on 6th buried May 8th, 36 years of age, gentleman, buried by the Reverend J. C. Grylls.” The registration is in Grylls handwriting, and he makes a mistake in writing that Batman was 36. Batman was 38; errors of that kind often occur in the Register. The Minister in making his returns has to guess at the age of the person he has buried. Batman is the 37th entry under Church of England Burials in the Parish of St. James, and presumably the 33rd burial in the Church of England ground in the Old Cemetery; Garryowen is therefore wrong in making his interment the thirtieth after Skene Craig’s child, for Presbyterian and other burials have to be added. Henry Batman was buried the same year by the same Minister, and it is said by the side of his brother. He died on October 8th and was buried on October 9th. A. Bailey was the undertaker who conducted John Batman’s funeral, and the Mitchell Library, Sydney, has the only known copy of the circular sent out; the copy there was sent to G. A. Robinson, and ran thus:

The friends of the late John Batman, Esq., are respectfully informed that his remains will be removed for interment, from his residence, tomorrow at 11 o’clock a.m. Aged 39 years.

A. Bailey
Melbourne,
May 7th, 1839.
Undertaker.

John Charles Batman, Batman’s little son, was drowned on January the 11th 1815, and was buried over his father, and is entered by the Reverend A. C. Thomson, who buried him, as Son of the late J. Batman, Settler. It was in this year that Mrs. Batman wrote the following letter to her daughter, concerning the death and funeral of her son:

Market Square,
30th January, 1845.

My Dear Elizabeth,

I am sure you were very much distressed when you heard of the death of your dear brother. I wrote a hurried letter to your aunt acquainting her of the sad event, and also sent a letter with the particulars; it seems that he was catching small fishes, which are left by the tide amongst the stones at the falls, and in getting up in haste he was immediately carried away a considerable distance by the current, into the middle of the unlucky Yarrow Yarra, and before any assistance could be procured my lovely boy had sunk. Every effort was used to get the body, but to no purpose until next morning, when several of the natives dived in different parts of the river and was successful in finding him. Oh, my dear child, had you but have seen him you would never have forgotten his countenance; no person would have thought he was dead, he looked as if he were in a quiet sleep, with a heavenly smile on his sweet face. I am almost heart-broken when I think of him, and believe me, Elizabeth, all my happiness in this world is buried in the grave with him; I loved him to excess. The only thing that reconciles me to this bereavement is that I am sure he is now in Heaven, the Lord has taken him from the evil to come. He gave him to me and He has in the order of His Divine Will taken him from me. Blessed be His Holy Name.

I send you a piece of his hair, which I cut oil myself before he was put in the coffin. He was buried very respectfully; several gentlemen attended; they wore white bands and scarfs. He was carried in a hearse, and about one hundred and fifty children followed, carrying flowers in their hands, which they strewed over his grave. He was buried in the vault with his father, and placed on the top of his coffin, which looked as fresh and as new as the first day it was placed there, although six years have nearly elapsed since the unfortunate occurrence. Lucy has been living
with Mrs. Solomon for some time, and intends to remain until they return from Van Diemen's Land: they go over in the next Shamrock. The wax candles Lucy has now in her possession are very good. Give my affectionate love to my sister and Mr. Stevens, and accept the same.

Your loving
But Afflicted Mother.

A few years ago (1919) Mrs. Eliza Woods (Mrs. Woods was one of the children who attended little Johnny Batman’s funeral), a daughter of Abraham Searle, she was an old lady living in a very old house in Davis-street, South Yarra, wrote to The Argus, stating that she attended a school kept by Lucy Batman, in William-street; she gave me the names of Batman’s daughters in the order in which I have placed them, and she corroborated Mr. Weire’s story she came here in 1840 when she was three years of age.

Mr. Weire thought Liardet’s pictures reliable. He showed me one that he had copied of Batman's first house, that on Batman’s Hill, where the Spencer-street Railway Station now stands. He writes of Batman's last tenant, a man who had the house at the back of the Post Office: the premises were leased for the sum of 10 shillings per year; seven years of the lease had elapsed; three pounds ten was the amount we received. This for Little Bourke-street!

He was with his father when the grave was opened in 1881, and the skeleton of Batman was identified, and when the citizens of Melbourne erected the memorial over the grave (his son Leslie has a piece of the coffin then taken out in his possession), and he was also present at the ceremony of placing a wreath on his monument in 1814, and was surprised that after such an enthusiastic gathering and such definite promises the grave should now be put in jeopardy.

It seems strange to us, for nearly all writers admit that had Batman not taken the initiative, settlement would have been delayed for many years, and the end might have been a penal settlement, and then for a long era a sleepy village.

Mr. Weire told me that his father called on Fawkner and invited him to debate the question as to who was the founder of Melbourne; he offered to engage the hall and pay all the expenses and he asked Fawkner to meet him on a public platform. Fawkner would not, and as Fawkner was accustomed to platform work, the only reason we can assign for his not meeting Batman’s son-in-law was his inability to make good his claim.

Batman’s grand-son recently passed away; he was a retired civil servant, who had received honourable mention for putting his own life in peril to save another from drowning. While we were conversing, a fair-haired little girl came in, and asked us to have tea; she was his granddaughter, one of the fifth generation of the Batman family that has lived in the village by the Yarra. He showed me his father's (Mr. Weire's) hand writing, and it seemed to me that it was the same hand which wrote some of the notes in Batman's journal. Three original copies of the treaty with the natives were drawn up; one is in the British Museum, one in our Public Library, and one in the possession of the firm of solicitors, Taylor, Buckland and Gates, Geelong. The British Museum bought theirs from a dealer for twenty-five pounds. It had passed into the possession of Sir R. Mac Donnell, who was Governor of South Australia in the fifties. On his death, Lady MacDonnell disposed of his library, and the deed went with his books to the second-hand merchant.

It was submitted to criticism, and the Museum became satisfied of its genuineness, and bought it. St. James Gazette in 1893, commenting on the purchase, drew attention to the fact that it was signed by Gunn, Thomson and Todd and that each signature had its distinct characteristics; that of Gunn was the rough hand of the pioneer, that of Thomson was that of an illiterate man, while Todd wrote a clerkly hand, and seemed to be the best educated of them all: this is demonstrated to be true by the publication of his journal in The Argus a few years ago. While he says there were three originals of the treaty, we mean of each treaty, three of that for the 100,000 acre block at Geelong, three of the
500,000 acre block of Melbourne. It is from these documents we learn that Iramoo was the native name of Port Phillip. Mr. Armstrong says he can locate the six.

The deed the British Museum bought was the Melbourne deed; in our Library is the deed for both Melbourne and Geelong; that in the possession of Taylor, Buckley and Gates is the Geelong deed for one hundred thousand acres. We give the Melbourne deed at the end of this Chapter.

Batman was more than a bushman and farmer; romance and love were in his life. We have seen that the natives loved him. He was the recognized leader of the fifteen brainy men who constituted the Port Phillip Association, and when you look into the old deeds of this City, you have evidence of his benevolence in his encouraging settlement and advancing money to newcomers.

His friends seemed to stick to him. Gellibrand was his personal friend as early as 1827, and together they appealed for land in Westernport. His father, who was much respected, died in Parramatta at the age of 68, in the year 1833. John, after visiting Port Phillip in 1835, went to New South Wales to see his mother, and he made provision for her maintenance. It was then that he made the people of that colony aware of the resources of this country, and initiated the movement there that led to so many New South Welshmen coming here; so Batman was the father of the immigration that flowed in both from Tasmania and New South Wales. This fact makes him completely the founder of Melbourne. William Howitt, among others, acknowledges the felicity of Batman’s methods, and testifies what a pleasing sight it was in old Melbourne to see Mr. and Mrs. Batman, accompanied by their seven daughters, walk to St. James Church on Sunday morning; although devout himself, he tolerated the opinions of others, and his first tenant was a Jew and his last a Freethinker. His literary merits were not small. Some of his letters are models of good composition, and there is a touch of poetry in his nature; when looking over the expanse of Port Phillip after buying the ground, he says: “I am monarch of all I survey.” We cannot be ashamed of the man who tried to found here a free settlement; we must tremble at the thought of what might have been if Collins had founded it instead of Batman.

John West, in writing his History of Tasmania, says that the history of the early years of Hobart are so full of tragedy and horror that there was much that he dared not put on paper; all that vice, crime, and rule of terror would have been ours. Batman started with a community of married men, and sought to build on a moral basis from the first, resolving to feed the natives, but to keep strong drink out of their hands. Fawkner, in his letter to Mr. Ferguson, charges Batman with buying drink from him and consuming nearly all himself; it is these kind of statements made by Fawkner that weaken our regard for him. Towards the end of Batman’s career, it may be that he imbibed over freely, but that was the besetting sin of early Melbourne, and the vice of the entire civilized world at that time, and Batman does not seem to have been overcome by it, but retained his virility of mind to the last. He gave the first subscription to the church of England, and by his influence the first Magistrate, the first cleric, the first medical man, and the first school teacher came here.

History, it is said, repeats itself. Yes, in a general way, but in a special sense never. Only once a blind Homer sings on the streets of old Grecian cities; only once does Socrates stand barefooted in the market place in Athens giving utterance to his wise and beautiful sayings; only once is Jesus crucified on Calvary, and only once the world sees John Batman making a treaty with the aboriginals at Port Phillip. Therefore to destroy the memorials of that visit is a crime that negates the idealism of history, and destroys that which we can never again reproduce. Some time ago Dr. Brooke Nicholls, a Collins-street dentist, wrote a poem showing how unreasonable it was to put money into a monument to Joan of Arc, like that in front of our Public Library, and not to have a statue of Batman; if this be wrong, how much worse to violate his grave? The Historical Society induced our City Council to name the way along the northern bank of the Yarra the Batman Avenue, and here it was proposed to erect the Batman statue; instead of which his old tomb is put there, but recently Cartier’s statue has been erected in Montreal. In the same spirit, let us remember our founder, and in erecting the Old Pioneers statue will be associated with his contemporaries and with the figure of the aboriginal. When they buried him a group of aboriginals
gathered around his grave. One race he sought to save. The Tasmanian native has gone, and the other is almost extinct. Banish the materialism that is leavening our community, banish the prevailing ignorance of the work of the pioneer. As we honour these men, we breed respect for all good men, and thus the community needs the Old Pioneers Memorial.

Copy of Batman’s Treaty with the Natives for the possession of Melbourne.

Know all persons, that we three brothers, Jaga Jaga, Jaga Jaga, Jaga Jaga, being the principal chiefs, and also Cooloolock, Bungarie, Yan Yan, Moowhip, and Mommarmalar, being chiefs of a certain native tribe called Dutigallar (Doutta Galla) situate at and near Port Phillip, called by us the above-mentioned chiefs, Iramoo, being possessed of the tract of land hereinafter mentioned, for and in consideration of twenty pair of blankets, thirty tomahawks, one hundred knives, fifty pair of scissors, thirty looking-glasses, two hundred handkerchiefs, and one hundred pounds of flour, and six shirts, delivered to us by John Batman, residing in Van Diemen’s Land, Esquire, but at present sojourning with us, and our tribe, do for ourselves, our heirs and successors, give, grant, enfeof and confirm unto the said John Batman, his heirs and assigns, all that tract of country situate and being at Port Phillip, running from the branch of the river at the top of the port about seven miles from the mouth of the river, forty miles north-east, and from thence west forty miles across Iramoo Downs or Plains, and from thence south-south-west, across Mount Vilaumarnartar to Geelong Harbour, at the head of the same and containing about 500,000 more or less acres, as the same hath been before the execution of these presents delineated and marked out by us, according to the custom of our tribe, by certain marks made upon the trees growing along the boundaries of the said tract of land, to hold the said tract of land, with all advantages belonging thereto, unto and to the use of the said John Batman, his heirs and assigns for ever, to the intent that the said John Batman, his heirs and assigns may occupy and possess the said tract of land and place thereon sheep and cattle, yielding and delivering unto us, our heirs or successors, the yearly rent or tribute of one hundred pair of blankets, one hundred knives, one hundred tomahawks, fifty suits of clothing, fifty looking glasses, fifty pair of scissors, and five tons of flour. In witness thereof, we, Jaga Jaga, Jaga Jaga, Jaga Jaga, the above-mentioned principal chiefs, and Cooloolock, Bungarie, Yan Yan, Moowhip and Mommarmalar, the chiefs of the said tribe, have hereunto affixed our seals to these presents, and have signed the same.

Dated according to the Christian Era, the sixth day of June, one thousand eight hundred and thirty-five.

Signed, sealed and delivered in the presence of us, the same having been fully and properly interpreted and explained to the said chiefs:-

Jaga Jaga (his mark)
Bungarie (his mark)
Jaga Jaga (his mark)
Yan Yan (his mark)
Jaga Jaga (his mark)
Moowhip (his mark)
Cooloolock (his mark)
Mommarmalar (his mark)

(Signed) John Batman
(on the Banks of Batman Creek).
James Gunn,
Alexander T Thompson,
William Todd.

Be it remembered that on the day and year within written possession and delivery of the tract of land within mentioned, was made by the within-named Jaga Jaga, Jaga Jaga, Jaga Jaga, principal chief, and Cooloolock, Bungarie, Yan Yan, Moowhip, Mommarmalar, also chiefs of the tribe of Natives called Dutigallar, (Doutta Galla) to the within named John Batman, by the said chiefs taking up part of the soil of the said tract of land, and delivering the same to the said John Batman in the name of the whole.

Jaga Jaga (his mark) Bungarie (his mark)
Jaga Jaga (his mark) Yan Yan (his mark)
Jaga Jaga (his mark) Moowhip (his mark)
Cooloolock (his mark) Mommarmalar (his mark)

In the presence of:
(Signed) James Gunn
Alexander Thompson
William Todd

the 6th of June, 1835.
CHAPTER 3
THE ABORIGINALS AND THE PIONEERS.

Melbourne is the second youngest capital in Australia; Adelaide is the youngest. These two arose nearly contemporaneously. Melbourne had settlers in 1835; the emigrants to Adelaide arrived in 1836. But while we are one of the youngest capitals, Victoria is old; it was the first part of Australia seen by Captain Cook. True, William Dampier landed in the north of Australia before this, but his book disparaged settlement. He condemned everything in the land, and declared that the Hotentot was a gentleman compared with the Australian aboriginal. Captain Cook, on the other hand, by his books, led to the creation of a British settlement here, and the first part of Australia that he sighted was Cape Everard, called by him Hicks Point after Lieutenant Hicks, the man who first sighted land; that was on April the 19th 1770. At that time they thought that Van Diemen’s Land was a part of Australia; Cook, however, seemed to doubt this, and in his chart the coastline between the two countries is only dotted. Furneaux who had accompanied him, and who on separating from him had visited Storm Bay, near what is now Hobart, argued that the land was one, and Cook accepted his statement.

Following in the footsteps of Cook came Governor Arthur Phillips, who settled with his convoy in Sydney Cove, thus laying the foundation of Sydney, and of the Australian Commonwealth, on the 26th of January, 1788, and thus every January we celebrate Foundation Day (Australia Day). The first white people to land on the eastern coast was Cook’s party. Cook’s wife’s cousin, Isaac Smith, sat in the part of the boat that first touched the shore, and Cook said to him: “Now Isaac you go first,” and Isaac Smith, afterwards Admiral Smith, was the first to set foot on the shores of Botany Bay, and the first burial was that of one of this party, Forbes Sutherland, a seaman. It is a striking fact that Francis Drake sailed by the Golden Gate without entering the Bay of San Francisco, and James Cook by Sydney Harbour without entering it. Cook was a scientist; Phillips a scholar; both were humanitarian. Cook thought that when all his discoveries might be forgotten, still he might be remembered for having taken his men around the world and only lost one, by sickness, in a voyage of three years and eighteen days. Phillips followed his example, and brought his eleven ships freighted with over a thousand to this faraway land with very little loss of life. We contrast his work with La Perouse, who buried his priest and naturalist, Receveur, in Botany Bay, and whose vessel was never again heard of.

Phillips, following Cook’s example, protected the aboriginals, brought out two hundred and fifty females with him and encouraged marriage among the whites, so that the native women might not be debauched: He gave the convicts land, and always set free men over them. He organized constitutional government in Australia, and we have need to respect the man after whom out Port is called. He was Governor from 1788 to 1792. He died in March. 1823, in the 71st year of his age. Before dying he was made an Admiral of the Blue, and was buried in Bathampton Church (Bath), England. Cook was killed at Keale Kekua, and what remains of him which could be obtained were buried in the ocean he loved so much, February 14th 1779. His wife and children lie in St. Andrew’s, Cambridge, and she left a part of his little fortune to be distributed among the poor, and another part to her sister Anne, who married her cousin, Captain John Smith, Royal Navy. His life is sketched in Marshall’s Naval Biography, and one of his grand-daughters is in our Old Colonists Home. In the biography given in Marshall’s book, it is stated that this family received the charts, documents, and other relics of the Cook Expeditions. From this family Professor Morris received a log kept by Cook when he was only a First Mate, an astronomical atlas used on The Endeavour, and other souvenirs.

Shillinglaw borrowed Cook's prayer book and never returned it. Recently I came to know the family, and two of these grand-nieces of Cook took an interest in our memorial work the two Mrs. Mittons. They placed in the hands of our Fund for sale, a little tablecloth which belonged to Mrs. Cook, with a C for Elizabeth Cook, marked in the border in marking ink, three knives, a fork and a spoon used on The Endeavour on Cook’s expedition to Australia, and the picture of
Isaac Smith, a copy of which we give here, painted by their father. The Cook relics given by Mr. Ham to the National Museum came from this family.

Arthur Phillip was succeeded by Governor John Hunter. Hunter thought from the currents of the sea that there was a strait between Van Diemen’s Land and Australia, a view entertained by Captain Cook, but Cook yielded to Furneaux, who thought Tasmania was a part of the continent. Bass entered the strait in a small vessel, and put all doubts at rest. It is said that he was the first white man to land in Victoria. Marcus Clark, however, gives that honour to Clarke, one of the shipwrecked men of the Sydney Cove. This vessel was wrecked on the Furneaux Group in 1797. Some of them tried to reach Sydney in the longboat, and were wrecked at Cape Howe. In this second misfortune only Clarke, the supercargo, (The ship owners representative) a sailor and a Lascar (An Indian Military man) reached Sydney.

While Bass found Westernport, he did not know of the existence of Port Phillip. He would have discovered it but his provisions ran out. That discovery was made by Lieutenant John Murray in the Lady Nelson, a vessel built under the direction of Captain Schanck, whose name is now attached to a Cape to the east of Port Phillip. Grant, who preceded Murray in the command of the Lady Nelson, had previously named Cape Otway after his friend, William Albany Otway. John Murray came into Port on February the 15th 1802. The first white man to enter Port Phillip was Bowen, who at Murray's request went in a fortnight earlier in the launch to ascertain if he could bring in the larger vessel. Bowen therefore was the first European on the bosom of the Port. He was a man who has been left without a memorial in Port Phillip. Some of our new watering places ought to be called Bowen. Governor Hunter had been succeeded in his turn by Governor Philip Gidley King, our third Governor, and it was under his rule that the port was found, and consequently named Port King by the discoverer, but King refused the honour, and altered the name to Port Phillip. Six weeks afterwards, on April the 26th 1802, Flinders entered and some books call him the discoverer. Murray gave the name Arthurs Seat to the hill near the entrance of the Port, overlooking Dromana and Rosebud, and Point Nepean he named after Sir Ivan Nepean, of the Admiralty, while Flinders named Indented Head and Station Peak, one of the peaks of the You Yang’s. His map of the Port is given here. Through their joint report, Charles Grimes, the Surveyor-General of New South Wales, was sent to survey the Port. He arrived here on January the 20th 1803, and was the first white man to walk over the site of Melbourne. He walked round the Port and mapped out the district, and on his return to New South Wales it was decided to plant a penal settlement here.

The tendency of most Australian writers is to magnify Flinders. Doctor Sutherland, I remember, used to give a splendid lecture on him. G. W. Rusden introduced him life size into his book on The Discovery, Survey and Settlement of Port Phillip, and Professor Scott has written his life, and recently before the Historical Society placed him before Captain Cook as the denominator of Australia. It seems to me that in the study of Victoria this eulogy is altogether out of proportion.

Certainly it was he who was the first to circumnavigate Australia and who spent 6 years in prison in Mauritius, who suffered a martyrdom for science and has a right to be remembered, and we know that if Murray had not found Port Phillip, Flinders would have done so ten weeks later, and as Captain Cook only named two places in Victoria and Flinders many, we are led to think much of his work, but Cook by the originality of his names, with the wide Pacific for his arena, naturally takes first place in this respect, among all seamen.

Flinders was remembered by Victoria, and in 1853 we followed the example of New South Wales and voted his widow a hundred pounds a year. His grave is not with us, but his memorial names remain forever, and the Geographical Society, now amalgamated with the Historical Society, is about to erect a monument to him, probably in Flinders-street. G. W. Rusden wanted Arthur’s Seat, which Murray named after the celebrated spot in Edinburgh, renamed and called Flinders Bluff. Here however, we would be the loser in history by such an act, for Murray is entitled to the honour, having hoisted the British flag in that locality on March 9th 1802, and taken possession of the Port in the name of George the Third.
To Captain Cook is the great honour of having used Polynesian names and thus prepared us for Dr. Lang’s and later writers plea for native names. Frederick Goulburn was Colonial Secretary in Dr. Lang’s time, and Dr. Lang accused him of having his name attached to places where native names should have been employed. I hate your Goulburn Downs and Goulburn Plains, and Mount Goulburn, and Goulburn Vale; One’s brains are turned with Goulburn’s, Vile continually seeking immortality. Had I the reins of Government a fortnight I would change these Government appellatives and give the country names that should deserve to live.

We, too, can hope that the memorial, historic, and native names shall be preserved. The historian of discovery and of the earliest attempts at settlement in Port Phillip was Francis P. de Labilliere; he was born here, but on arriving at manhood he became a Barrister-at-Law of the Middle Temple, London, and grew to be an enthusiastic Anglo-Australian, became a Fellow of the Royal Colonial Institute, and gave himself to the problem of Colonial and Imperial Federation. In that spirit he told the story of discovery, and reflected on the development of the self-governing mind in the British Colonies, and especially studied this colony. He went to London and had access to the Record Office, and found the log of the Lady Nelson, the first vessel that ever entered Port Phillip. His is a historic family, an old Huguenot family from the south of France, whose history runs almost to the days of the Albigenses. Certainly they were Protestant in the first days of the Reformation, and upheld its standard in Languedoc.

In his story of the Cevenol family, he gives an account of his ancestry. He family came from Vigan, a small French town a little to the west of Nimes, in the Department of Gard; he traces them back 12 generations. They came to England with William of Orange. Only one of his ancestors sleeps here; Peter Labilliere, his grandfather, is buried in the Old Cemetery. In going over the Register in the Statist’s Office, I came on its registration, and found that the body had been brought from the Upper Werribee, and buried on February the 25th 1847. He is described as a settler, 80 years of age. When Labilliere was a boy he was taken to the Old Cemetery and shown the freshly-made grave. He says: It was quite a walk in these days out beyond all houses. His love for these early days is shown in the dedication of his book to his father, Charles Edgar Labilliere, an early colonist. Some of his books in the Public Library were presented by himself, and have his handwriting in them, such as With the writer’s comments. He says his grandfather came out to the infant colony in 1839. The historian was an only child, although he himself was the father of six children. His father died in London on the 2nd November 1870, and I presume that Labilliere died in the same city; his history was published in London in 1878. The number of papers relating to the colony that he found in the Record Office is surprising. These relating to the Collins settlement at Sorrento, 1803, and to the Wright and Weatherall Settlement at Westernport, in 1826, original papers relating to Hamilton Hume’s expedition, and to the works of Sturt and Mitchell. He was disappointed in not finding Bass’s journal and that of Grimes, and seems to have been on the track of the latter before Shillinglaw found it in the office in New South Wales. At Deptford, to find Woodriff’s log of The Calcutta, he turned over the logs of two thousand British men-o-war. It arrested his attention by its clear handwriting. He regarded The United Empire as one Nation, and wrote from that standpoint. He was in communication with Flinders Petrie, the grandson of Matthew Flinders, and in my judgment for original research and suggestion his book is the best we have on early Victoria. He tells us that it was with no ordinary interest he read the log of the Lady Nelson, containing the first writing ever committed to paper made in the Port within which now stands his native City. We cannot too much acknowledge our indebtedness to Labilliere, Rusden and Bonwick; they have laid broad and true the foundation of Australian history. All these were Melbourne men, and all educated men, who were more or less like Lang, the eyewitnesses of the events they wrote of.

However, we look back beyond the discovery of the Port to the men who surveyed the coast. Captain Cook first sighted it, the first point he saw, as already stated, being Cape Hicks.
Captain Grant first surveyed our southern coast line, and named the promontories, such as Cape Otway. He has told the story in his book, The narrative of a Voyage of Discovery performed in Her Majesty’s vessel The Lady Nelson.

When he was leaving England, the Duke of Portland wrote to him, saying Set up some proper inscription as first discoverer and possessor, and when he came off our coast he called a spot in the Western District, Portland, after the Duke, and this became the first spot permanently settled on in Victoria.

The Heads were first entered by Bowen on February the 1st or 2nd 1802, but the bay had been sighted as early as Tuesday, January 5th 1802, so says Labilliere. It is customary to say February 15th the day the Lady Nelson anchored inside the Heads. This, however, is six weeks after the discovery. Flinders entered in The Investigator on April 26th 1802, but does not devote more than thirteen pages in his book to the Port. His great aim seemed to be to perfect Flinders Journal. Labilliere reports, says that he entered the port in the Investigator on April the 27th 1802. His book says April the 26th 1802. His Atlas; he was essentially a map-man, and in his maps he distinguishes between surveys made by night and surveys made by day. He affirms that he was the first to do this. The winds are shown by single arrows; the currents by double ones, and the hills are shaded to show elevation. Withal he did not do much in encouraging the settlement of Port Phillip. He obtained a bird’s-eye view from two elevations, Arthurs Seat in the South, and Station Peak in the North.

He came in one Monday and went out the following one, and he published his account over ten years after the event. It seems to me that much that he wrote is from memory, and that he relies a good deal on the work of other men who preceded him and who followed him. The original map of Port Phillip was made by Grimes, who walked right round the Port. Flinders left a scroll of paper under stones on Station Peak. He called the Swan Islands the Swan Ponds. He raised an objection to the entrance to the Port, and although he referred to plains around Geelong as grassy, and said the land was agreeable, but the land around Nepean Point was sandy, it is questionable if his narrative would have ever encouraged anyone to come here. While we honour him with a monument, we have no right to be misled in regard to facts. The most of the original work was done by other men.

When Flinders came, the sealers were off the coast, and he hardly touched on the resources of the country. Tuckey gives the zoology and botany of Port Phillip, while Flinders mentions four or five trees and four or five animals. His vessel was never in Hobson’s Bay; it ran into Corio Bay, and apparently he never saw the Yarra. He called our natives, Indians, we know Cook called them Indians, and named a place on the Coast of Queensland Indian Head, and said they lived, among other things, on boiled rice, and this 40 years after Cook’s time, and 26 years after the foundation of the first settlement in Sydney Cove. He named Station Peak, and also Indented Heads, but the most of our names along the coast were given to us by other mariners.

It is said he suggested the name of Wilson for the promontory, but Otway, Schanck, Westport, Phillip Island, Bridgewater, Northumberland, recall other men. He, however, not far from the shores where Adelaide is now built, met Baudin the French Explorer, and called the bay Encounter Bay, yet strange to say he never discovered the Murray. His boats never entered Lake Alexandrina, although he carefully explored other parts of that coast. The Murray River was named after a military man, a different man to the Murray who discovered our Port; he was a naval man, and no one seems to know what became of him.

Writers from George Arden to Anthony Trollope called Flinders the discoverer of Port Phillip, and thus Murray was overlooked.

Finder’s great work is not here; he justly claimed that he had proved that there was but one land. The West of Australia had been called New Holland by the Dutch, while the east was known as New South Wales by the English. Flinders circumnavigated the continent and proved that there was but one land, but this had been acknowledged, in the edition of Cook’s last voyages, Flinders admits this. Cook’s editor says: “It is no longer therefore a doubt that we have now
a full knowledge of the whole circumference of this new body of land, this fifth part of the Globe (if I may so speak) which our late voyages have discovered to be of so amazing a magnitude," that to use Cook’s words, it is of a larger extent than any other country that does not bear the name of continent. Thus Cook’s editor, in 1784, had no doubt about the oneness of Australia. We have been in the habit of saying that Flinders christened us Australia; undoubtedly through his use of the name we became officially recognized by that name, but others used it before Flinders. This has been demonstrated by Professor Morris, in his work on Austral-English. Flinders charts were acknowledged by Governor Macquarie in 1817, in a letter to Lord Bathurst. Flinders was then dead. He underlines the word Australia, and this Labilliere affirms was the first time the name was officially recognized. Twenty-five or thirty years ago I looked over in our Public Library a little French book by Jacques Sadeur. It was the story of a voyage to Terre Australe, published in 1693. It was evidently a work of fiction relating to the manners and customs of the Australians. This, as far as we know, was the earliest use of the word Australian, more than a hundred years before Flinders used the word Australia, and he had been anticipated in the use of that name for the land by an Englishman of the name of Smith. He called the continent and islands Australia in a paper given before the Linnean Society, and in Shaw and Smith’s work on the zoology and botany of New Holland he speaks of the vast island or continent of Australia. This was in 1793. The word in some form seems to have been used by others. Callander, in his Terra Australia, written in the Eighteenth Century, speaks of the Australian Natives, and De Bross, an earlier French writer to whom Callander is indebted for much of his information, called the continent and surrounding islands Australasia. This was in 1750.

Flinders refers us to probably the earliest memorial of Australia, the map of Australia inlaid on the pavement of the City Hall, in Amsterdam, before the year 1053. Probably the first pictures ever made of our coast were these made of the eastern heads by Westall, of Flinders Expedition. Our ocean coast line can be seen in Flinder’s Atlas. It must, however, be remembered that Flinders did not publish his work owing to his infamous imprisonment until after the maps of Grimes and the work of Collins and his party had readied England.

I say that imprisonment of six and a half years in Mauritius was infamous, because Franklin had forbidden American men-o-war during the war of Independence from touching Cook's ships, and England had pursued the same course to French ships on scientific expeditions; therefore this French Governor violated principles accepted by the civilized world. It was a peculiar thing that the vessel which Flinders commanded when he was taken prisoner was The Cumberland, the vessel which brought Grimes, the surveyor, to Port Phillip, and which was the first vessel ever in Hobson’s Bay. Flinders entered our Port in The Investigator, but went to Mauritius in The Cumberland. When he was commander of The Investigator, Sir John Franklin was on board as a midshipman.

There is no comparison between Cook and Flinders as seamen; Cook was probably the greatest nautical mind the human race ever produced. Flinders sought to follow him. Cook took his people all round the world on a cruise of several years, and never lost a life. Flinders, going round Australia, loses several lives through diarrhoea and has a large body of men down with sickness, he himself being afflicted with scurbutic sores. He was a most unfortunate man.

The Investigator, on his return to Port Jackson, after he had sailed around Australia, had to be destroyed. On his first trip his names are often a memorial to his disasters. Thus we have Cape Catastrophe and Memory Cove, near Port Lincoln, Spencer’s Gulf, where he lost the boat with Thistle and his companions in it. He put up a memorial to them there, engraved on copper, and set it up on a stout post. Flinders had known Thistle since 1794; he was with Bass in the whaleboat, and accompanied Flinders on his voyage around Tasmania on The Norfolk, and was in the succeeding expedition to Glass House and Hervey Bay, Queensland. He was promoted from before the mast to be a midshipman. It was his zeal for discovery that prompted him to go on these expeditions. He had made a study of nautical astronomy. He is one of these great souls you meet on the lower walks of
life. His boat was found turned over and stove-in as if it had been beating about the rocks; there were eight in her, and none of them were ever seen again.

The island near where she was lost is to this day known as Thistle Island. This was Flinders luck right through. He sets out to go to England in the Porpoise, accompanied by the Bridgewater and The Cato. The Porpoise on one W Wednesday struck Cato’s Bank, a reef between New Caledonia and Australia. The Cato tried to avoid the disaster, but she, too, struck it two cables length further, and The Bridgewater sails on and leaves them to their fate. The officers of The Bridgewater, objecting to this, leave the vessel at India, and she is never again heard of, while Flinders faces the difficulty as a hero always does, and is saved. It was not his fault; though the vessels were subject to his direction, they were under the control of their captains. They got all the men on the bank with the exception of three, and he with a few men went back to Sydney in an open boat, and gets The Cumberland and two other vessels, and saves every man left on the bank. Cato’s Reef will always be remembered, but The Cumberland never carried Flinders to England. He is made a prisoner by the French at Mauritius. When he does get to England and writes his book, he dies on the day his book is published. I cannot help thinking that George Bass was the greater man of the two. Flinders never believed that there was a strait between Tasmania and the Mainland; Bass did, so did Vancouver, although Vancouver never had the chance to test his speculations. Baudin had gone into Mauritius some time before Flinders, and died there. It was an unfortunate place for these two men who were off our coast. The French explorer dies there and the Englishman is imprisoned.

To sum up, Bass discovered the Straits, Murray discovered our Port, Grimes was the first white man who went up the arm now called Corio Bay, and Tuckey was the second; Flinders only crossed it. The first vessel to anchor in Hobson’s Bay was The Cumberland. It brought Grimes, and in that same vessel Flinders sailed to Mauritius. The first man-o-war in Hobson’s Bay was The Calcutta. She took in water from the Yarra. Lieutenant Collins was appointed commander of the expedition to plant a settlement there, and he had under him the man-o-war The Calcutta (a vessel of fifty guns) and the transport The Ocean. The Calcutta came into Port Phillip on October the 9th 1803. He found that the Ocean had preceded them by two days. The Ocean came in October 7th. The Calcutta was commanded by Daniel Woodriff; The Ocean by Captain Mertho. Collins fixed on Sorrento as a suitable place for the settlement; the idea of forming a settlement was to frustrate any attempt on the part of the French to settle on this coast. French Island in Westernport is a reminder of their visit. Earl Russell was the Minister, who finally asserted the claim of England to the whole of Australia. Labilliere says that “the French Government asked how much of Australia Great Britain claimed, and his reply was, the whole of it.” Therefore we have well named Russell-street after him. Death, it is said, dogged the footsteps of this settlement at Sorrento in 1803 from the first, and that twenty-one left their bones on the Nepean Peninsula. Of this there is a doubt. Presumed graves are shown to the visitor to that watering places the graves of the first settlers, but some have challenged the statement. We know that the first death was that of John Skilhorne: he was a free settler, who had been ill at sea. and died the first day after they landed, October the 10th, 1803. One writer has affirmed that not more than two died in the
settlement, and that their graves are unknown. However, we know that one of the greatest men among these who came out in this expedition was in our Old Cemetery, William Pascoe Crook, who returned to Port Phillip after Melbourne was founded. The first marriage in Victoria was on Thursday, November the 17th 1803. Richard Garrett, a prisoner, was married to Hannah Harvey, a free woman.

In October, 1878, John J. Shillinglaw wrote: “At a little village a few miles from Hobart Town there still walks about a hale and hearty old man who was born at Port Phillip Heads on the 25th November, 1803. His parents had landed there with the rest of the intended colony six weeks before.” He was alluding to William James Hobart Thorne, the first born of Victoria. In another month Hobart Thorne was with Collins at Hobart Town, and the boy and the town grew together.

William Buckley escaped, was abandoned, and lived for thirty years among the natives, and returned to civilization when Batman and his party settled here; he died in Hobart, and was buried in St. George’s Churchyard.

Crook and Buckley I propose to sketch and contrast. The one called Crook with a few colleagues, taught Polynesia to read and write, and the other man Buckley sank down to the level of the savage; a friend of mine says he returned to the condition of primitive man. When Captain Cook was killed in Hawaii by the natives in 1779, his officers carried his ship home to England in the following year. England heard the narrative and awoke. England saw a southern world, blessed with Nature’s rarest gifts, yet peopled by a race with a childlike mind enveloped in darkness and ignorance. The London Missionary Society was formed, and volunteers for service in Polynesia were called for. Among these who enlisted in the first eighteen was William Pascoe Crook, then a young man of 21. The Society bought a missionary vessel, The Duff. There were no other means of getting to the South Seas in these days, and Crook, with seventeen others, set out for the islands. That was in the year that John Williams, the Martyr of Eromanga, was born, 1790. Most of the Missionaries were set down at Tahiti, but Crook and a comrade were left at the Marquesas. His comrade soon deserted him, and he worked on alone, and in twelve months could speak the language. After a time a vessel called at the islands, and he resolved to go to England and seek help. This he seems to have sought very much in vain, and in 1803, apparently alone, he again sets out, this time on board The Ocean, one of the two vessels which carried Captain Collins and his party to Port Phillip. They left Spithead, England, on April the 24th 1803, and
The Ocean, we have seen, came in to Port Phillip two days before her consort, on Friday, October 7th and The Calcutta came in on Sunday, October the 9th.

On board one of the vessels was Johnny Fawkner. I am not belittling him in calling him Johnny, for then he was only a boy eleven years old. Afterwards when he grew old they called him the Father of Melbourne. And there was also this convict, William Buckley.

Collins was not able to form a permanent settlement at Sorrento; thus we were saved from the stain of being a penal settlement. Buckley escaped, and Collins went to Van Diemen’s Land and laid the foundation of Hobart Town; while in the meantime Crook had shipped to Sydney. There he laid the foundation of the Congregational Church in Australasia. That is, he started the first congregation. Then he went into the Mission field in Tahiti, and with three others translated the first Polynesian Bible, and also put a code of English laws into the Tahitian language. How great a work he did we cannot sufficiently tell in our brief sketch teaching the savage not only to read and to write, but also to skilfully work, filling his mind with ideas, and his soul with great hopes of immortality. In the course of years he spent eighteen years in the Mission field, he wandered back to Sydney, and heard that a village has been built on the Yarra. Johnny Fawkner, the boy on the ship, has grown into the enterprising Fawkner, owner of a tavern, a ship and a newspaper. He, was buried not in the Cemetery by the side of Batman, but in a later Cemetery, the Melbourne General, and some say that his tomb has been built to remind you of an early settler’s hut, but others say it reminds them of the mia mia of the Aboriginals.

Joseph King, the historian of Congregationalism, draws attention to the fact that both Fawkner and Crook have the same second name as John Pascoe Fawkner, William Pascoe Crook. They met again in Melbourne; both are Congregationalists. Crook spent his last years in the new settlement, and having fought a good fight and kept the Faith, at the age of 71 lay down and died, and is buried by the Baptist Minister, Air Ham, in this Old Cemetery in 1840. His red gum slab is more eloquent than Pendelikon marble, and this man, who triumphed over the savage, I would contrast with Buckley the wild white man. Someday the whole world will yet turn to his grave as they have turned to the grave of Shakespeare, and ask us why we sacrificed it.

Before thinking about Buckley, let us observe the people he lived amongst. Latrobe, in writing to the pioneers, told them to tell him the story of settlement and of the country under the Aboriginals. These two subjects go together. This land with the peculiar fauna and flora, was inhabited by one of the poorest varieties of the human race; Buckley’s education had been sadly neglected, and when found by the white man he could not count more than ten. He had no numerals to express a higher number; he never cultivated the soil, and was without domestic animals. Once when I was in Coolgardie, just after the mines had started there, I wandered away into the bush, in search of a native who might sell me a boomerang. I came on a family lying under some brushwood, and all of them were stark naked, their habitation only some branches heaped up behind them, with a little fire before them. They do not make a large fire. One is reported to have said: “White man a big fool, he make big fire and cannot get near it, black fellow make little fire and get all round it.” Some bark shelter, the bark is leaned against a tree, and held up by a branch, and is called by some tribes a gunyah and by others a mia mia. This illustrates his language duplication and re-duplication, Mia Mia, Yarra Yarra. The language has been described as a succession of doubles, with here and there an interregnum Woolloomooloo, Wallaroo, Kangaroo, and so forth. The Missionary tells me that I am wrong, that some of his nouns are systematically declined, and his verbs regularly conjugated, but Missionaries become infatuated with their disciples, and are anxious to show how they are endowed. However, to be grateful to them, the Missionaries gave us much of our knowledge of the native languages.

When Hoddle, our first surveyor (some of whose family are buried in the Old Cemetery), wanted names to put on his map, he went to the Mission camp, which in the thirties and forties was where our present Botanical Gardens are, and got them from George Langhorne, the teacher of the Aboriginals. He asked for a name for that district, and the Protector said, it is a district almost
surrounded by water, and that in the native language is Puraran. We didn’t seem to be able to pronounce it; some called it Poor Ann, but it has crystallized into Prahran. The language of the Aboriginals represents a low condition of speech. It is in a state of liquidation. Like the Turanian dialects, it flows to and fro, and words are used to day which to-morrow will be discarded. When Captain Cook came here, they had the word kangaroo, but they ceased to use it, and not until recently was it restored, yet they had its cognates all through, such as Wallaroo.

Philologists represent this as a low stage in the evolution of language. Yet aboriginal names have been freely adopted Jacka-Jacka, Doutagalla, Geelong, Yan Yean, Yarra-Yarra, Darebin, and Ballarat, and so on. Garryowen says Yan Yean means a young man, and he thinks the district from which our city gets its water supply was named after Yan Yan, one of the natives who signed Batman’s treaty.

John Helder Wedge got the name Yarra-Yarra from the natives. Some think he made a mistake, but probably the word is Yarra. Lang gives it as a native word; it means flowing, or running. Liardet says that when the natives first saw a man on horseback they called him a Yarra-man. Garryowen argues that the proper name of the stream is Birra-rung, which refers to the tree-fringed stream running through the mist, and is about as poetic as Gordon’s Yellow-haired September.

The idea of trying to trace this primitive man to the lost ten tribes of Israel, because they live in booths all the year round, as some Jews do during the Feast of the Tabernacles, or because some tribes practise circumcision is absurd. It is not clear that there were any lost ten tribes; Jesus never referred to it, but addressed a United Israel.

While the whole continent is peopled by one race, different customs exist among different tribes; some have a custom of knocking out two front teeth, and only some practise circumcision. We have among us a very distinguished student of them, Professor Baldwin Spencer, and he shows that, like the American Indians, they have a system of totemism. Say the totem of one tribe is the emu, and that of another is the kangaroo. Then two kangaroos will not marry together; these of the emu must marry with the kangaroo, or some other totem; this prevents inter-marriage.

They will eat anything from a grub to an emu, and are not particular about their cooking. Some natives eat nardoo fruit; those of Queensland eat the large beans of the Bunya Bunya tree, and those among the mountains near the sources of the Murray and Tumut feast on the larvae of a large moth. Feasting and fishing bring the tribes together, and then they have corroborees, and sometimes tribal fights. William Westgarth reports that there was a large encampment of them in 1843 in Royal Park, and that in 1844 a corroboree was held at the north east of the town. William Thomas gives a description of the battle fought, a little to the north of Melbourne, on the 5th December, 1844, between the Barrabool and Buninyong tribes. I gather from it. Brough Smyth and others that we were not troubled very much with them after this. During the first twelve years there were not more than fifty white people killed by them, while there were seven times as many natives slain by the whites.

Their battles are not massacres and often mean that only one man is killed. Their weapons of warfare are the boomerang, the spear and the club or waddy. Their boomerang their greatest invention, in warfare has this advantage over other missiles the enemy can never tell where it will hit him, therefore cannot be on guard; it passes over his head and returns and strikes on the back. The spear is propelled with a throwing stick; this stick has a ledge on it which takes the end of the spear and acts as a lever to drive it. (Woomera) When I saw them throw the spear it glided along a great distance just about three feet from the ground.

They have made a friend of the European dog, but I doubt if they ever did much with the dingo. I have seen the Aboriginal in nearly all the States, and was once present at a corroboree in Bundaberg, Queensland, about thirty years ago. A number of natives met together, and at night we heard an uproar, and immediately raced to the outskirts of the town, and found the natives tramping around a fire, in a circle, each man holding up in his right hand some object, a piece of paper
or a bright stone, and as they tramped around they chanted some kind of native rhythm. I stepped up to one in the circle, and said, What are you doing that for? In very clear English he replied, for fun. He told the truth. Philosophers and Theologians have been perplexing their brains to find out the hidden significance of a corroboree, but it is simply a spree that the natives have when two or more tribes meet together.

The next day they were paying for their fun, just like Europeans. They had managed to get some drink, and the Chinese had given them opium, and the next morning found them lying around in an invalided condition, some sleeping off the intoxication of the night, and others under the influence of opium. Here we see them taking the worst from two civilizations, and so they are a dying race.

In Western Australia I saw the other side of the matter, where civilization had exalted a black fellow. Our ship, in leaving for England, had been delayed, and I spent the last evening in wandering away into the bush seeking natives who would throw a boomerang for me. I found a small knot of them just outside of Albany; they were lying about in their rude aboriginal state, but none could throw a boomerang. Among them was a woman advanced in life, almost naked and very sick. After talking to them for a time I returned towards town, and I was overtaken by a well-dressed native chap with an armful of boomerangs. The contrast was so great I began to talk to him about it, and he said, you saw that sick woman in the camp? I said yes. He replied, that was my mother. How, then, is it that you are so different?

He said, the Europeans took me when I was a child and brought me up on a station; they were good people, and saw that I got an education, and I am the Government Native tracker. I remarked that I had seen a western tribe who called a boomerang a kyle, but who did not seem to be able to use it. He said, probably, as if reasoning the matter in his mind, they cannot find the wood that makes a good boomerang. They have been living in regions where it is not easily obtained, and consequently did not come to the use of it. He knew some tribes of that character, and in that thoughtful vein he talked to me. Civilization had made a man of him, and he held a trusted position, yet he was the offspring of that mother lying in a nude state in the camp, a representative of perhaps
the lowest race of men on earth, and he told me that just as his mother was dying through lying out in the bush sick, so all his race was dying. He had not lost his native cunning; we went into a park, and there in the moonlight he threw the boomerang for me. You can domesticate the wild beast, and you can civilize the lowest savage, and redeem the worst convict."

There is a difference of opinion regarding the religion of the Aboriginal. I notice that Professor Flint argues against the position taken by John Lubbock, that the Australian is an Atheist, without any conception of God or any hope of immortality. Flint argues that the Australian native mother when she has lost her child will go into the bush and cooey as if calling to the spirit of the child, and this action, he thinks, shows she believes her child is not extinct. Certainly they have a strong belief in Witchcraft, and one has often been known to kill another because he believed he had bewitched a relative who recently died. Some natives think they will rise up after death as white men. It was this belief that led the Victorian natives to take care of Buckley, the wild white man. They believed he was one of them who had arisen from the dead, but it is probable that this idea entered their minds after the advent of the white man. Missionary work has been successfully conducted among them, and one of my earliest recollections of Victoria is seeing some natives on the Murray in their bark canoes fishing in front of the Mission. They worked for the surrounding farmers, and were taught to cultivate the earth, but nothing can save them, they are sentenced to death; there are not two hundred full blooded natives left in Victoria, and similarly in all the States they are passing away. The Tasmanian native population was confined to Flinders Island in 1834, collected together by George Augustus Robinson, John Batman and others.

The last Tasmanian native to die off among them was Truginini, a native woman; her companion, "King Billy, died in 1869). She lingered on until 1876, and yet when the white people went to Tasmania there were 8000 of them. They had the unhappy habit of mistaking the cattle and sheep of the pastoralist for kangaroo, and the farmer in turn often mistook a native for a kangaroo. To-day our only study of the Tasmanian is in the graveyard. Convicts gave them drink and destroyed their women, and Batman resolved that the Port Phillip native should not be supplied with drink, and that only married men should come into his settlement. He was unable to carry out his plan. I have no doubt that there are men still living in Tasmania who have native blood in their veins.

The Melbourne University sent forth an expedition to the interior of Australia to make a thorough study of the native tribes that are left in their natural state, and the late David Syme, proprietor of The Age, gave a sum of money to pay the expenses of sending it forth. They went equipped with cinematographs, phonographs, and other up-to-date instruments and appliances for faithfully representing the corroborees and other features of native life.

The bush for ages has been their Bible, they are as distinctly Australian as the kangaroo. This leafy scripture they searched daily, and came to know when a log had been turned over by human hands or a leaf had been clipped from a tree, and if they saw a footprint they knew whose foot it was that made it, for they knew the footprints of the different members of their tribe as we know each other's faces, and thus when settlement came, they were useful as trackers, bringing the fugitive convict back to justice, the lost child to its parent, and the strayed cattle to their owner. They contrast with the Polynesian, are different in character and origin; the Maori comes into partnership with us, but this race must end in extinction. The Polynesian faced the sea in great canoes. Nothing is better on the gulf in New Guinea than the Lakatoi of the Motuan.

The Maori built himself a splendidly carved council house; whereas the aborigine paddled on a piece of bark, that you cannot dignify with the name of canoe, and ventured only on sluggish streams or very near the shore. He knew not enough to cover himself or to build a comfortable shelter. Many valuable books were written on the Aboriginals. One of the earliest I ever read was Taplins. He ministered to them at Point Macleay, Lake Alexandrina. L. K. Threlkeld was one of their first Missionaries, and has a grammar of their language. William Thomas, Assistant Protector to George Augustus Robinson prepared a careful account of their habits and customs for Governor Latrobe, and his work is
published with the letters of the old pioneers. John Mathew, Presbyterian Minister, in Eaglehawk and Crow has shown that the Australian Aboriginal and the Tasmanian native were of the same race.

In the aboriginal state the tribal chieftain has hardly come. When Batman bought the land from the natives, certain of them put secret marks of the tribe to them; they were not the marks of the chief, because there were no chiefs: they were in the patriarchal state, when the family predominated. The steps in evolution are, first the family, second the tribe, third the nation, fourth the empire, fifth the race federation, lastly the universal republic.

Go into the Museum, there, and in the graveyard, in future, must we study primitive man; there you see his stone implements, weapons and utensils. The men of our own Stone Age are represented in our National Museum. But when in London I went into the British Museum and saw the same thing there, they were the remains they had found of the man of the Stone Age in Great Britain. And when I went to America and passed through the Museums of its great cities, I saw the same thing there, but they were the men of the Stone Age in America, and I saw that everywhere, man had climbed up from this primitive man.

The last of the Yarra Yarra tribe was Derrimut. Cooper tells us he was a well-known figure in Prahran, that he wandered about the streets with two Aboriginal women and a number of miserable-looking dogs. J. P. Fawkner frequently befriended him, but nothing could induce Derrimut to give up the freedom that was his savage heritage. He, however, died in the Benevolent Asylum, but was taken there in a dying condition. He was buried in the Melbourne General Cemetery, and this stone put over his grave:

This stone was erected by a few Colonists to commemorate the Noble Act of a Native Chief, Derrimut, who, by timely information given in October 1835 to the first Colonists :- Messrs’ Fawkner, Lancey, Evans, Henry Batman, and their Dependents, saved them from a massacre planned by some of the up country tribes of Aboriginals. Derrimut closed his mortal career in the Benevolent Asylum May 28th 1864. Aged about 54 Years.

George Augustus Robinson, the Protector of the Aboriginals, built a house in Chapel-street, Prahran, but when he was leaving Melbourne he sold it. He resigned in 1852, and retired on a pension. He died in Bath, England, in a house he had called Prahran on October the 18th 1866, at the age of 78.

Buckley came into association with this Aboriginal race and sank down to their level, but whether, as my friend thought, he unconsciously reverted to man’s primitive state is open to doubt. He escaped with three others, one of whom was shot by the sentry, what became of the other two is unknown, they either returned to the ship or were killed by the natives. Buckley wandered around the bay, and passing the grave of a native, drew out of it the spears his sorrowing friends had stuck into it. Even the native wishes to be remembered, and pays some respect to the graves of his friends. Buckley used the spears as a walking stick. He fought battle with hunger for a time, trying to subsist on what he could pick up, but finally, wearied and exhausted, he lay down to die.

It was in this condition that he was found by the natives. It is said that they believed it was their leader who had arisen from the dead; they remembered putting the spears that were in Buckley’s possession in his grave. So they cared for him, and brought him around, gave him a Native wife, and he adopted their mode of life. He seems to have done nothing to elevate them, nor has he left us anything that will help us to know the primeval state of Victoria. He grew expert in the use of the spear, and became familiar with their language, and dwell among them for thirty years. Being unable to write, he dictated to Morgan the story of his life, and that is known as his autobiography. When the Batman party were at Indented Heads, opposite Geelong, one day he walked into their encampment, and sat down, but was unable to express himself. At length He pointed to the letters W.B. stamped on his arm, and it dawned on the new settlers that he was a white man. Thirty years of absence from his countrymen had temporarily taken from him the faculty to express himself in his own language, gradually the words returned to him, and he told them his story. For some time he was employed as a native interpreter. He was a very
tall man, six feet, five inches, of very low mental endowment. Fawkner called him a mindless lump of clay.

He has left us no description of the native tribes. Even an average man might have done something to help. Both Crook and Buckley were born in the 18th century, Crook 1775, Buckley 1780; there was but five years difference in their ages. Both came from the working classes. Crook was a gentleman’s servant, Buckley a bricklayer. Both were in the expedition commanded by Captain Collins, Crook going to his Missionary work in Polynesia, Buckley under sentence of penal servitude for life. Crook spent eighteen years among the natives of Polynesia, and Buckley nearly 32 years among the Australian Aboriginals, deserting in 1803, and coming into Batman’s camp in 1835. Crook was communicative; he enlightened and amazed his friends by his vast fund of information.

James Bonwick lived for eight years beside Buckley in Hobart, and could never get information from him. Crook taught Polynesia to read and write, and when Buckley was found he had forgotten his own language. Crook gave the natives an industrial education, and put European implements into their hands. Buckley, although a bricklayer, never taught them to build a house; although able to cultivate a garden, never taught the natives to do so; he never induced them to build a boat, or to make a bridge, or domesticate an animal, and never seemed in these thirty years to do so himself. In Crook we have knowledge and truth. In Buckley ignorance and deceit. Crook is buried in our Cemetery, Buckley in St. George’s Churchyard in Hobart.

Fawkner, Crook and Buckley were in the expedition of 1803, and all three are identified with the early days of our settlement. People have said Buckley was the founder of Melbourne. Even Hepburn thought this, because Buckley built the chimney to Batman’s house, and therefore put down the first brick. But a community comes with a fellowship; a man who has not drawn others into association with him has never founded a settlement so he formed the first association, the Port Phillip Settlement Association. William Waterfield, our first Congregational minister, met Buckley in Hobart in 1838; Waterfield was on his way to establish the Congregational Church in Melbourne, and in his diary he mentions that meeting thus: “After dinner today I was introduced to Buckley, who had lived so long with the Aboriginals at Port Phillip. I read to him the statement in the Van Diemen’s Land Almanac, and found that it was true; asked him many questions and found that the natives had no idea of a supreme being, or a God of any kind, that all the future state that they believed in was that when they died they would be turned into white people, and visit again their own land.” Buckley was a man about six feet six inches. He informed me, “that the native fruits were very few, and were something like the Native and white currant. He thought the native people were quite harmless. They avowed no chief, but were on an equality with each other. He would not acknowledge to having been at Gibraltar; he denied it altogether. He was originally a bricklayer, but did not attempt to teach it to the natives. I was pleased with the interview.

The allusion to Gibraltar is a reference to the charge that Buckley when a soldier mutinied at Gibraltar. One of the Regiments Buckley was in was the King’s Own, the same Regiment which, afterwards, Lonsdale commanded, and a fraction of which was quartered in Melbourne. Buckley was sent out not for mutiny, but for receiving stolen goods.

In those convict days the barbarity of the life reacted on the natives, and John Batman contrasts with all the founders of States in his benevolence to them. Rusden, the historian of Australia, writes: “In one sense every Governor except Phillip had subscribed to the massacre of the natives, which he did not check or punish, and Darling was no exception to the rule. Today there is a desire to be philanthropic, but we are not saving them, and their extinction has been likened to Euthanasia, a pleasant form of death for incurables.”

We were happy in not having Captain Collins buried here, not because of his character, for he was one of the best of Governors, but because that period in the annals of Van Diemen’s Land is one of the blackest in the history of mankind. Had he settled here, Melbourne would have been a New Norfolk Island, and one of our watering places would have become another Port Arthur. John
West was so appalled by the record of infamy that he must not tell the story, but wrote: “You who would load the Colonial fame with details, from which the eyes of mankind turn with natural disgust, or blend them with the fabric of Tasmanian history, etc.” Collins was a grandson of Arthur Collins, the antiquarian. He was a contemporary of Bligh, of Bounty Mutiny fame, and when in New South Wales, Macarthur, Johnstone and others deposed Bligh from his position as Governor. Collins seconded their discipline in Van Diemen's Land. He wrote a book on New South Wales, and started the first newspaper in Van Diemen’s Land, The Derwent Star, and Van Diemen’s Land Intelligencer. He saw the country in its primeval state, and even in Hobart lived in a cottage that a mechanic of to-day would not think too good for a home. He died on the 24th of March, 1810, in the fifty-sixth year of his age, having been administrator for six years and thirty-six days. He died suddenly, apparently the result of a cold, while sitting in his chair talking to an attendant. His funeral was celebrated with all the pomp that the colony could allow; six hundred people attended it, and his body was buried in St. David’s Churchyard, Hobart.

A wooden Church was erected to shelter the grave, and the altar put over the spot. A tempest blew the church down, and, says John West, the resting place of Collins was long exposed to the careless tread of the stranger. But Sir John Franklin, always generous to men of science and letters, had the present monument put over it, and this inscription placed on it:

```
Sacred
To the Memory of
DAVID COLLINS, ESQ,
Lieutenant-Governor of this Colony and Lieutenant-Colonel of the Royal Marine Forces. On the first establishment of the Colony of New South Wales he was employed as Judge Advocate, and in the year 1803 he was entrusted by his Majesty’s Government with the command of an expedition destined to form a settlement at Port Phillip on the South Coast of New Holland, and which was subsequently removed to Van Diemen’s Land.
```
Under his direction as Lieutenant-Governor, the site of this town was chosen, and the foundation of its first building laid in 1804. He died here on the 28th March, 1810. Aged 56. And this Monument, long projected, was erected to his memory in 838 by direction of His Excellency, Sir John Franklin, K.C.H., K.R.

The Journal of George Bass, one of the first white men to put foot in Victoria, has been lost to us. The navy remembers him by a memorial at Rhyll, Phillip Island, Westernport, but there is no memorial in Melbourne to him, no street named after him, and no monument erected to him, yet in an open boat he made the first chart of our coast. When Flinders met the Frenchman in Encounter Bay, before he entered Port Phillip, he found Baudin criticising the map, and he reminded him that Bass had laid it down from an open boat. He saved us from being called Terre Napoleon. He was the pioneer of the work completed by Flinders. Collins, in his History of New South Wales, places him before Flinders, and speaks of Bass and his fellow Voyageur, Bass and his companion. He was also the pioneer of inland exploration one of many authorities say he died on the 21st of March, 1810.

He was one of the first to climb the Blue Mountains. He was a surgeon by profession, and yet handled a boat as successfully as a seaman. The sea was his first passion, but his mother would not let him go. He has, it seems to me, been unfairly overshadowed by Flinders. Flinders had the opportunity to publish his book, but Bass went down to death in an unknown world, yet he was a good writer, the earlier writer of the two men. Collins says of his journal, that it enabled him to write his history of the work done in The Norfolk well, because he had the accurate and pleasing journal of Bass before him. He belonged to that great body of medical men that numbered Dr. Balmain and Dr. Redfern in their ranks, who tempered the severity of convict life, and sought to save the men exiled from society. Through Collins, after whom our principal street is named, we can see Bass, our first explorer. Victorian history has neglected him, but that is hardly true of Australasian history. He is in the History of New South Wales and New Zealand. Both Flinders and Bass were born in Lincolnshire. Bass was born at Asworthy, near Sleaford, Flinders, at Donnington, near Boston. Bass, on the death of his father, a farmer, was taken by his mother to Boston, Lincolnshire, and there was apprenticed to a surgeon. He took his Diploma in London, and was appointed surgeon to H.M.S. The Reliance. Flinders was on the same vessel as midshipman. It was ordered to Sydney in 1795. Hunter, the second Governor of Australia, was a passenger on this trip.

Bass had hardly arrived here before he displayed his passion for exploring, he and Flinders first embarked in a little boat the Tom Thumb, eight feet long; their crew was a small boy. In this cockle shell they made their way round from Sydney to Botany Bay. Cook had made a general survey of the coast, but it was left to these young men to particularise the peaks, points, coves, inlets, and even rivers unobserved or unmarked by him. For instance, on entering Botany Bay they ascended St. George’s River, and followed its windings for twenty miles; their survey led to the establishment of a new settlement there under the name of Banks Town.

A voyage to Norfolk interrupted their exploration. Then in March, 1790, they again went forth in the same little boat, and got as far as Illawarra. Cook had seen a peak that he said resembled a hat, so Flinders commenced his work of giving names to Australian places by calling this Hat Hill.

On this journey they met the natives. Their powder had been wet by the swamping of their boat. Bass, with great presence of mind, entertained the natives by getting them to help him to mend an oar, while Flinders dried the powder by spreading it in the sun. This the natives treated with indifference, but when they commenced to clean their muskets, the natives became so alarmed that they had to give it up. The natives were increasing in number, and Flinders, to keep them entertained, until they got in sufficient water, and the powder was dry, commenced
with a pair of scissors to cut their beards. When all was ready they worked the boat out of the reach of the natives, and moving down the stream they had entered set out for home. A gale arose, and they had a trying time in the boat. George Bass’s sea craft seemed to save them; he held the sail in his hand, while Flinders steered with an oar. A single wrong move, Flinders tells us, would have sent them to the bottom. They pursued their way in this critical manner for an hour, when they ran into a sheltered cove, where they stayed for the night. This they ascertained was called by the natives Watta Moweo, and it appears by that name on the map attached to Collins History. The next day they ran into Port Hacking, an inlet to the south of Sydney Harbour, and the following day they had The Tom Thumb alongside The Reliance in Port Jackson. Bass tried to cross the Blue Mountains in 1707, and failed. In December of that year he got permission to explore the coast in a whaleboat. In this cutter he discovered Shoalhaven, Barmouth, Jervis and Twofold Bays, and got round to Westernport. He found seven escaped convicts on an island in the straits, two of whom he took into his boat, because one was old and the other diseased, and humanity prompted the act, the others he transferred to the mainland. He saw Wilson’s Promontory, which later Flinders called the corner stone to a new continent, and which was named Wilson Promontory by Governor Hunter, out of compliment to a friend of Flinders, Thomas Wilson. This district is now set apart as our National Park. The five convicts Bass transferred to the mainland were met at Corner Inlet, but were never again heard of. Bass re-entered Sydney Heads February 24th 1798. He took away with him six weeks provisions, and stayed away eleven weeks. He took two convicts as passengers on the way back, and helped the others he left on the mainland; this he did by supplying his crew of six with petrels, fish, geese and swans. When they found food in abundance, they salted it down, for the less plentifully supplied part of the journey. He traced the coast for 300 miles, was the forerunner of Flinders work. Bass himself entertained no doubt of the existence of a wide strait. The ocean swell, he argued, could be explained in no other way. He demonstrated it to his own satisfaction by this journey in an open boat for 600 miles, with the return journey 1200 miles. Flinders himself doubted if the record of this journey could be equalled in the annals of the maritime history of the world. He was here in Victorian waters on the tenth anniversary of the foundation of Australia, and two years later the whalers and sealers were in the straits.

On February 1st, 1799, Flinders was off the straits in The Francis, seeking the wreck of The Sydney Cove, but still he was not convinced that there was a strait there. He thought that the smoke ascending in Tasmania argued a junction with New South Wales. Hunter and Bass, following Cook, and relying on ocean currents, thought otherwise. Flinders said it was difficult to believe that men could reach such an island and yet not be on the intermediate islands, therefore he contended that it was only a deep inlet, so he and Bass were sent out in The Norfolk to make sure. This vessel was a 25-ton sloop, that had been built on Norfolk Island, and they went through that inlet to the Southern Indian Ocean, and demonstrated the existence of the strait.

On the way Bass speculated on the geology of the coast, and argued that iron ore could be found in the island adjacent to the Furneaux Group. He had found coal already on the coast of N.S.W.

Bass was a hero, and a scientist like Cook, he kept his men on fresh meat, and when he could not get swan he shot the Barunda Geese.

On The Norfolk they sailed right round Tasmania. A sealer followed and secured 7000 seals. Flinders regretted that this industry could not be sustained, as it was building up a noble body of seamen in Australia; these were the first settlers in Victoria, who have gone down to unknown graves. These sealers were the first squatters and probably the first overlanders. It will be seen that Flinders three vessels in Victorian waters were The Francis, The Norfolk, and The Investigator, while Bass did his work in the cutter, and accompanied Flinders in The Norfolk.
I think Flinders made a mistake in saying so little about Bass, but he justified this by pointing out that Collins had used Bass’s journal in his history. Where is that journal to-day? One of the most remarkable things observed during the voyage of The Norfolk was the flight of sooty petrels over the ship. Flinders reckoned that there were 151,500,000 in this flock: the stream was fifty to eighty yards deep, and three hundred yards wide, and it took them an hour and a half to fly by. As these birds burrow, it would mean, he calculated, 75,750,000 burrows. Bass was interested in land as well as sea, and he landed to examine the bush, which in one place he described as impenetrable. While Flinders gave us many names, it must be remembered that the places down the east coast of Australia from Sydney, mentioned in Flinders narrative and not in Cook’s, were named by Bass. Mt. Heemskirk and Mt. Zeehan were well named by Flinders as a memorial to Tasman, who first saw them, but an equally lasting memorial is in the name Storm Bay; that name preserves the memory of a storm encountered there by Tasman, a hundred and fifty years before Bass put foot in Victoria. While we magnify the science of the English and the French, we do not forget the navigation of the Dutch, and we still call our boats yachts and our captains skippers. I am inclined to think that Bass was a more capable observer than Flinders. Flinders sailed along our southern coast and never discovered Port Elliot, the entrance to the Murray River. I doubt if it would have escaped Bass. Bass’s great memorial is the straits that now separate us from Van Diemen’s Land. And all the men associated with the discovery are there remembered.

Governor Hunter, in the Hunter Islands, and Governor King, who was Governor shortly after they returned, in King Island, and Flinders in the large island of the Furneaux Group. Bass was always the great brainy surgeon carrying his science with him, studying the Aboriginals of Tasmania; he contrasts them with these on the mainland; they had benignity and intelligence rather than ferocity or stupidity; in this they equalled our natives, but they were behind them in all the conveniences of life, such as weapons, houses and canoes. He saw petrified trees on one island, and tried to arrive at the reason for the petrifaction. The geology of the coast was especially studied, such as the basaltic columns on the coast line of Van Diemen’s Land. He tried to take a snake alive, in order to perform experiments with snake poison, and with that intention played with it, until the snake, in sheer desperation at being unable to get away, bit itself to death.

He would calculate the number of native swans he saw in one place; he mentioned that he saw 300 swimming in a spot a quarter of a mile square. He made a careful study of the wombat and other animals.

He left Australia in 1799 in The Reliance. He seems to have been in England in 1800, and to have married there, but he only lived three months with his wife, when he seemed to find it necessary to go out again. He purchased the brig Venus, an Indian teak-built vessel of 140 tons. A Mr. Bishop was his captain; Bass acted as the supercargo. (ship owners representative) The total value of the cargo was £10,890. Others apparently were interested in the venture. Coming to Sydney he found the market glutted, and seemed to have made a loss. He then ran down to New Zealand, and was in Dusky December 5th, 1801. He picked up iron from the wreck of The Endeavour. This vessel is not to be confused with Cook's vessel, The Endeavour; it was an East Indiaman that had gone in there and was wrecked.

This iron he converted into tomahawks, and ran down to Tahiti. He was in Tahiti on January 24th 1802. There he exchanged his tomahawks for pigs. He returned to Sydney and gave New South Wales a supply of meat that lasted them for three years, and made a big profit. When Baudin came in his wretched condition into Port Jackson, the Governor, to help the distressed stranger, killed the cattle of the colony when he would not kill it for themselves; this contrasted with the Frenchman's action in imprisoning Flinders, and with that of the Spaniard in seizing Bass. Bass brought in his pork just when the colony's supplies were about exhausted; he sold his pork at six-pence a pound, and put the settlement on its foot. He mapped out his programme for the
future, and got King, the Governor, to go in with him. He reported that there is fish in abundance in New Zealand, and he asked for a lease of the southern part. He said a man could get Letters Patent for a corkscrew, and he therefore ought to get one, when he could draw up from the sea, where it was lying unknown and useless to the world, abundance of food. If he got the concession, it was never any good to him, but he was right, and it became the greatest whaling and sealing station in the world, with the best oyster beds in Australasia.

He likens his dream himself to the basket of eggs. Some of his letters are extant, and Volume I. Of Australian Historical Records, should be consulted. A writer, Robert McNab, has given the story of his work in New Zealand, and expressed the view that he was the discoverer of Foveaux Straits in New Zealand. But this is pure speculation.

Science lured him to his death. Bass sailed away to get Alpacas and other stock for Australia, and was never again heard of. He left Sydney in a vessel for Valparaiso, but owing to the insanity of the captain he was pressed by the crew to take command. This he did and carried the vessel to its destination, but the authorities in South America would not allow him to trade.

He compelled them to do so by threatening to bombard the town. When the barter commenced, the Spaniard awaited his opportunity, and seized him when he was not expecting it, and carried him off. Whether he was liberated when England came to terms with Spain, or whether he died in the mines no one seems to know. We can see the mind of the man in the name Wollamai, which he attached to a point at Phillip Island, Westernport. Wollamai was the native name of a fish at Port Jackson, and Bass thought that the Promontory at Westernport resembled the head of that fish, which was called by the settlers The Light Horseman. First he must have known the fish, and secondly, the natives, and his intrepidity carried him around our coast to enter this port, therefore the very name remains to us as a memorial of his intelligence, science and courage.

Bass seems to me more the explorer and man of science than Flinders. But Flinders is humanitarian. Looking at the slave trade, which was an institution in his time, he says: "Humanity must expect no weak struggle to accomplish its suppression." This would suggest to us that he was an abolitionist. We find him deeply interested in memorials. In the introduction to his book he mentions one of Australia’s earliest memorials, the Chart of Australia done in inlaid work on the pavement of the City Hall, Amsterdam. While confined on the island of Mauritius he saw a plantation, and a laid-out garden around the house formerly occupied by La Perouse; everything about it was an object of curiosity to him. It was nearly in the centre of the island, and he resolved to have a memorial erected there; he arranged for the erection of a Cairn with the single word LAPEROUSE on it. And when at Coepang he was interested to find a monument erected by Baudin over the remains of his chief gardener. At the Recherche Islands Flinders buries Charles Douglas, his boatswain, and he names what he calls Two lumps of land to his memory, and engraving an inscription on a copper plate puts it over his grave.

Some considerable work was done in the old Sorrento Settlement. This settlement, was called in Collins time Hobart Camp, lasted for seven months. Collins himself was only here for four months; some of the party took three months longer to get away. We are familiar with the fact that at the commencement casks were sunk to secure water. They overlooked other sources of supply. Murray found water, and said there was enough there to water the British Fleet. Other works were commenced; a stone storehouse was erected for the ammunition; a jetty was built 380 feet long. Nor did the party dwell entirely in tents; some of them erected huts. The first printing ever done in Port Phillip was done at this settlement. A week after their arrival they commenced to put Collins orders in type. It has been argued that The Calcutta did not water at the Yarra, but that is absurd, because the Chaplain, Robert Knopwood, who kept a journal, says she did, and tells the story of a man who walked right
round from the Yarra, a distance of fifty miles, to the Sorrento settlement, and he said he went across in his own boat, a distance of about thirty miles, in a direct line to The Calcutta when she was in Hobson’s Bay, the first warship ever there. Governor King sent Collins Grimes Map, with the fresh water river marked on it, and called his attention to the river. His own surveyors, Harris and Tuckey, with the maps before them, could not have overlooked the river. Collins says: There is a run of fresh water in the north east part of the harbour. King did not like the entire abandonment of the settlement, and suggested that a small establishment be left there, but Collins resolved not to stay. Some think, that the fact that the British Government had promised five hundred pounds for a new settlement, led him to leave such an exceptional place for settlement as Port Phillip. However, his not planting a convict settlement led to this place being the first free settlement on the continent. Buckley was not the only convict who escaped. A young man, George Lee, described as a man of education and ability, had been allowed to build a hut. Collins held that he was abusing his privileges, and breeding dissatisfaction among the prisoners. Lee foresaw that his disgrace was coming, and obtaining a musket by some subterfuge, escaped, whether in the company of Buckley or not Collins does not make clear. The little we see of this settlement shows how we would have fared as a convict community. The convicts were certainly more secure on an island. Collins knew of the Yarra as early as November 14th five weeks after landing, but probably did not see it himself. He wrote to Lord Hobart: “There is a run of fresh water in the N.E. part of the harbour, where Captain Woodruff is proceeding with The Calcutta to recruit his water.” G. P. Harris, the surveyor, also confirms this.

The second settlement in Victoria was in 1826, at Westernport. It came twenty-three years after that at Sorrento, and failed as signally. It was preceded by the overland journey to Port Phillip of Hume and Hovell.

Hume made Victoria in 1824. He and Hovell travelled overland to Corio Bay. The route he took is the route pursued by the railway to-day. Hovell disputed with him and left him, but had to return to him. The River Murray, which he found, was originally called the Hume river.
e continued to cross the rivers, using the cart as a boat, and afterwards made one out of wicker work, covered over with a tarpaulin. He swam the rivers, and proved himself a great bushman. They went south with the intention of crossing from Lake George in N.S.W. to Westernport. When he got to Corio Bay, Hovell thought they had arrived at Westernport; Hume says he did not, and writers since have said that he was as mistaken as Hovell, because he uses the word Westernport in his letters to the Governor; but it is probable that he did not know where he was, and preferred to use the word Westernport, as the expedition was then understood to be a Westernport expedition. I believe Hume when he says that he did not think it was Westernport. He afterwards went with Charles Sturt on his first expedition. Sturt acknowledged his help, and was apparently inspired to explore the country further by Hume. When in his second expedition Sturt went down the Murrumbidgee, and entered the Murray and traced it to the sea, he only traced the river that Hume had already discovered.

Hume and Batman went to the same school, and Batman was probably influenced by Hume. Hume’s brother-in-law, Dight, was buried in the Old Cemetery. He made Victoria known as a suitable place for settlement. He, with Hovell, discovered the Tumut, the
Hume, the Mitta Mitta, the Ovens, the Goulburn, and Hovell Rivers. Hume published in 1855 a brief statement of facts in connection with an Overland Expedition from Lake George to Port Phillip in 1824, and in that denies that he thought Port Phillip was Westernport. Sir Thomas Mitchell came later than either Henty or Batman, and confined himself chiefly to Western Victoria. He carefully surveyed the country he went over, yet we can only regard his work as supplementary. Sturt had gone down the Murray before he came, and he only confirmed and extended the discoveries of Hume. In crossing certain rivers he says The Map of Hovell and Hume seemed wonderfully correct. He named mountain ranges, like the Grampians, the Pyrenees, and rivers like the Fitzroy; one peak he called Mt. Byng which later was renamed Alexander, after he has named Mt. Macedon, because there could not be a Port Phillip without a Macedon. When on his return journey he crossed the Murray, he found that someone had driven there before him in a gig with one horse. Piper, the Aboriginal, pointed out to him the marks of the wheels. When he arrived at Portland, he found that the Henty’s had been settled there two years. He walked into a well-ordered station, and ascertained from one of the servants that it is Henty’s; he went over to the blacksmith shop, looked in and saw a man at work, and said: “My man, can you tell me where I can find Mr. Henty?” It was Edward, and he said “Yes, I can, he is in the blacksmith’s shop mending bullock chains.” When he arrived on Mt. Macedon, he took up his glasses and looked down on Port Phillip, and saw the white objects which denoted the vessels, huts and tents of the Batman and Fawkner parties. He never mentioned how long they had been there.

It was Hume who crossed the great rivers and revealed the vast extent of agricultural and pastoral land. He was the Mungo Park of Victoria. Labilliere tells us that Mungo Park proposed to explore Australia. He wished to work with Flinders, leaving Flinders working the coast and picking him up while he explored the interior, but that fell through, although Mungo was willing to do the work at twelve shillings a day. Hume, I believe, did it at his own expense. The settlement in 1826 at Westernport is as interesting as that of 1803 at Sorrento. It, too arose chiefly out of the fear that the French might settle on the coast. French Island in Westernport is a memorial of this fact. The French had surveyed the coast and named a portion of it Terre Napoleon. Flinders had met Baudin in Encounter Bay. The story of Wright and Weatherall, therefore, is as interesting as that of Collins and Woodriff. It verifies Hume and Hovell hung onto the belief that they had discovered Westernport, therefore he was sent with this party, the Governor declared his services of little value; his report is ambiguous. He admits that it was not the place they visited in 1824. He gives an account of his trip from Westernport to Port Phillip, and says that he ascertained the spot where he and Hume came to, but one doubts his statement. Certainly from Brighton he could see the You Yang’s, but if he had come near enough to the spot to identify it, he must have crossed the Yarra, and he never mentioned that river. Therefore I favour the simple and direct narrative of Hume of the overland trip in 1824.

In Melbourne from the beginning an effort was made to preserve the Aboriginals, but while Batman represented this spirit, and George Augustus Robinson was appointed as Protector, with a staff of assistants, yet many were bent on their extinction, entirely without reason, for the old pioneers testify that the dingo did more injury to the squatter’s sheep than over the natives did. One squatter testified that when in difficulties he left a flock of sheep in charge of an Aboriginal man for nearly two days, and the native fellow faithfully guarded them until his return.

The Aboriginal Protectoracy was divided into four provinces, Geelong, Mount Macedon, Goulburn, and Westernport, and an assistant protector placed with the natives in each district. Robinson four assistants were Sievwright, Thomas, Dredge and Parker. The first man they accused of murdering the Aboriginals was buried in our Cemetery, Sanford Bolden. The case was brought before Judge Willis, our first Judge, and he was friendly to Bolden, and summed up in his favour, saying that it was perfectly right to kill Native or white in defence of your property. Bolden was acquitted.
Sympathy for the native comes in the case brought against a native called Billy. He was charged with stealing 150 ewes, 30 lambs, and 30 sheep, the property of Benjamin Boyd. William Kerr was foreman of the jury, and he seems to have been associated with every humanitarian movement in the beginning. They brought in a verdict “That the prisoner had not sufficient mental capacity to understand the proceedings,” and he was acquitted.

It is a striking fact that both the second burial on Flagstaff Hill and the first in our Cemetery were men who had been murdered by the Aboriginals. These on Flagstaff Hill are Franks and his shepherd, and the first in the Old Cemetery was John Smith; there is not any memorial to mark his grave. When Franks was killed John Helder Wedge wrote to Charles Swanston, saying that he thought it was the act of only a few natives, that Franks had encouraged it by his unguarded way of going about, and the natives, tempted by plunder, had taken advantage of his defenceless state. He advocated securing the guilty natives and shipping them to King Island. He held that prompt action at the commencement would save a deluge of blood, and he proposed to at once communicate with Bourke and secure a resident magistrate.

There was a very distinct memorial in the Old Cemetery over the grave of Alexander Moffat Allan. We are told in the letters of the old pioneers that Allan had a small cattle station in the Loddon district. After being speared by the natives he died quickly. One day I met an old man in the Cemetery, William Reid. He came here in 1839, and I take it he is the oldest Colonial in Melbourne, and probably in Victoria. He had been present as a boy at the funeral and burial of Alexander Moffat Allan. Allan was a shipmate of his father. The natives had intended to kill Allan’s brother, who disliked them, but they did not care to do it themselves, and therefore called in three men from another tribe, and arranged with them for the murder. That day Alexander Allan took his brother’s place and was murdered by mistake. He had always been friendly to them, and the mistake irritated the natives, and they resolved still to kill his brother, so the brother left the colony. Norman Simpson purchased the estate, and he too, found the natives troublesome. They broke the legs of sixty of his sheep.

The first executions in Victoria were these of Bob and Jack, Van Diemen’s Land natives. It is interesting to know that natives were the first to receive the full penalty of law, and that they had come from Van Diemen’s Land, where our original white settlers came from. They murdered the whalers. They were hanged outside the old jail in the presence of the public, and were buried outside of the Cemetery under the present market. This was in 1841.

We read in the Minutes of the City Council that in the early forties the aboriginals had become a nuisance in the streets of Melbourne. They would come into town in numbers, followed by mangy dogs, and the Council resolved to put a stop to it.

One of the most interesting events in the history of the relation of the aboriginals to the earliest settlers was that of Beveridge. Andrew Beveridge had an estate near the Coghills, (Tyntynder) and one morning he was murdered by the aboriginals. The police resolved to bring the murderers to justice. Beveridge had a tract of country on the bank of the Lower Murray. Six natives remained at the station during the night of August 22nd 1840, and on the following morning, while Mr. Beveridge was at breakfast, they commenced cooeeing. Beveridge heard the cooey and went out to see what was the matter, and Booby and Ptolemy threw their spears at him; one of them entered six inches into his body and he died instantly. Three of the Western Border police, assisted by Messrs’ Kirby, French and the brother of the murdered man, took the matter in hand, and disguised as bushmen, proceeded to Coghill’s station. They represented themselves as white men looking for land. A fire was made and a large pot put on it, and the natives were invited to dine on one of their specially favourite dishes, a mixture of flour, sugar and water. The murderers came to the feast, but all were told that only six would be permitted to eat at one time owing to the lack of accommodation. They feasted in relays. At length in came Booby, Ptolemy and Bullet-eye. The police, when they commenced to eat, rushed by them suddenly, threw cords
around their necks, and pinned them to the ground, and having secured them took them to a hut, which was besieged by the whole tribe, and a troublesome fight commenced, when a party of horsemen rode in, who had come from a distance of seventy miles, and the natives decamped. Booby and Ptolemy were brought to Melbourne, and were hanged.

Like the story of Buckley, is the legend of the wild white woman of Gippsland. Garryowen gives the names of two women whom he thought might be the captives, Mrs. Capel, of Sydney, and Ellen McPherson, a barmaid of the Scottish Chief’s Hotel, kept by John McDonald. Everything about this story is doubtful. George Gordon McCrae was in Melbourne at the time. He says he remembers the incident well. Latrobe was urged to take action, and finally resolved to put the native police under European officers on the track of the tribe who were supposed to have captured the woman. They pursued the natives through Gippsland, and at length came upon them. When asked for the white woman they frankly admitted they had her, but as she was valuable, a quid pro quo was required in blankets, food, trinkets and things essential to native comfort. The police agreed, and then they set out and were taken over a wild and tangled country. Fatigued and broken up they were brought to a spot where they were shown the figure-head of a vessel which had been wrecked on the coast. This, however, does not satisfy some; they assert that the vessel was wrecked, and the woman came off the wrecked vessel, and was held in captivity by the natives; that she had children to one of them, and that when they found themselves menaced by the whites they murdered her, and her body was found on the Gippsland Lakes. Which is the right story is still unsettled. George Gordon McCrae is emphatic in declaring it a legend.

There were never more than a hundred and fifty Aboriginals in the Port Phillip district, and never more than five thousand in Victoria. In the first ten years £45,000 were spent on them. I think that John Batman’s offer to Doutagalla was a fair one, two hundred pounds of goods down and a yearly tribute to them of two hundred pounds. He only negotiated with eight of them, and would probably think that there was not more than forty in the tribe.

While Edward Henty was the founder of Portland, yet we would be unfaithful to the historic spirit if we did not acknowledge his pioneer work in a story of Melbourne. He died in Melbourne. His father, Thomas Henty, was indifferent whether his sons settled in Western Australia, Tasmania or here, providing that they made a home for themselves in Australia. He had developed the Merino sheep on the Sussex downs, and desired to see his pastoral experiments worked out on a larger scale in a new country, and Edward was sent forth to select the land for the family. In the memorial spirit we set down the fact that he was the first permanent settler and pastoral pioneer in Victoria. He encountered great difficulties at the commencement, and the family came too near to losing their fortune. First of all Edward tried Western Australia, where they had a grant of 80,000 acres. This they gave up as unsuitable. They could not get the land they wanted in Tasmania, and thus finally pioneered in Victoria. They had been preceded in Portland by the whalers, and they combined whaling with pastoral pursuits.

Mr. Thomas Henty died in October 1839, just as the prospect was opening before his family, and in the same year as Batman. It is remarkable that Thomas Henty had seven sons and one daughter, while John Batman had seven daughters and one son. Edward, the eldest son of Thomas Henty, read the address of the colonists to the Duke of Edinburgh when he visited us.

Richmond Henty gives the story of the origin of the settlement in his book on Australia. He was the first white child born in Portland, and was a son of Stephen Henty.

Recently I read the diary of George Russell; he was a man who had received a good education in Scotland, and came to Tasmania in 1831. He crossed to Melbourne in 1836, and laid the foundation of the Clyde Company. In his earlier days he would have been glad to be sure of a hundred pounds a year, yet he grew to be one of our wealthiest pastoralists. He or his company is mentioned eight or nine times in The Letters from Victorian Pioneers.
to Latrobe. Mercer, McLeod, Manifold, Learmonth, Dr. Thomson and David Fisher claim to have known him. He was one of the first in the Geelong district, and his name and that of the company appears in Kerr’s Directory of 1842. A friend lent me his Diary, which is a story written from memory of the origin and settlement of Victoria. Mine was a type-written copy of 258 pages, and I draw from it here because it corroborates Batman’s journal and other accepted historical documents. He came out in the days when slavery was in existence at the Cape, (South Africa) and the Island of Mauritius was a slave colony, and arrived at Hobart after a voyage of seven and a half months. Tasmania was then a convict colony, and the Native War was raging. Natives frequently murdered the settlers. He saw that war brought to an end, and Robinson bringing through the town of Bothwell 60 to 70 Tasmanian natives to re-settle them on the Island the Government had reserved for them. In 1833 or 1834 John Aitkin suggested to him that they should migrate to New Holland, and when Batman’s report came in he resolved to do so. He sold sheep in 1834 from 30 shillings to 40 shillings to the father of Edward Umphelby. Russell’s brother, Phillip, had preceded him to Van Diemen’s Land, and was succeeding in life. He sold a farm on terms to George, and thus gave him his start in life. Among his friends was James Brodie, one of that family is in our Old Cemetery. J. H. Patterson was another of that time. He resolved to sell out in Tasmania, and he joined his forces with George McKillop: The Hettie was chartered, and they sailed from George Town at the end of March 1830.

They never lost a single sheep in crossing, owing to McKillop’s personal attention to them, but when they arrived in the Bay they were shipwrecked not far from Brighton, the vessel ran ashore, however the sheep, were safely landed. In the same ship was Kenneth Clarke. They secured a ship’s boat and rowed along the shore towards the settlement. When they came to what is now Williamstown, they saw Edward Wedge standing on the shore, and on rowing up the Yarra to the falls, the first man they saw was Buckley. Here are Mr. Russell’s own words:- “We pulled up the Yarra as far as the falls, where Melbourne now stands. A large party of natives assembled on the south side of the river, while the white man, Buckley, was keeping up a conversation with others on the opposite side, talking at the pitch of their voices in the native language.”

This man Buckley was one of the convicts who landed in the year 1803, to form a settlement on Port Phillip Bay, which in consequence of the difficulty, etc., etc., was abandoned.

“He was a tall ungainly man, about six feet four inches in height, and altogether his looks were not in his favour; he had a shaggy head of Native hair, a low forehead with overhanging eyebrows nearly concealing his small eyes, a short snub nose, a face very much marked by small pox, and was just such a man as one would suppose fit to commit burglary or murder; he was a very ignorant, uneducated man, etc. A few weeks after we arrived I saw Buckley building a brick chimney for the new house of Mr. John Batman, which was being erected on the slope of Batman’s Hill, and he seemed very well pleased with his work, asking if I did not think it was pretty good for a man who had lived thirty years with the natives. He remained in Melbourne for a few years, and was employed by the Government; he afterwards went to Hobart Town, and got into the police there, and I heard he was also married there. His wife was as remarkable for her short stature as he was for his great height, and the difference was so great that when they walked out together she could not reach his arm, but Buckley got over the difficulty by tying two corners of a handkerchief together and fastening it to his arm, the wife put her’s through the lower end of the loop so made. It is interesting to note that Buckley had not forgotten his trade, and yet he never used his knowledge while among the Aboriginals; he preferred to live in a cave at Fyans Ford, near Geelong, rather than erect a turf hut.”

Mr. Russell proceeds:-- “Mr. John Batman was allowed to choose any block he preferred, and he chose the one where Melbourne now stands.” The settlers who at the end of 1835 and the beginning of 1836 arrived with sheep respected the claim of the members of the Association
to the land (*the Port Phillip Association*), and many of them would not settle down on it, and either went beyond the boundaries or made some arrangement with the reputed owners to be allowed to occupy a portion of their land for a certain time.

The Barrabool Hills were not included in the boundaries of the Association, but it was reported that Buckley claimed this tract of country, he stating that the natives of the Geelong tribe had presented it to him, and that Buckley had again given it to William Robertson, of Hobart Town, and afterwards of Colac. It was said that when a party of gentlemen from Hobart Town, which included Mr. Robertson, Mr. Gellibrand and several others, came over to examine the country the previous summer, they started on a walking excursion about Geelong, having Buckley as their guide. Mr. Gellibrand, not being accustomed to such long walking, got knocked up, and then Mr. Robertson carried his knapsack as well as his own, at which Buckley was well pleased, and with Mr. Robertson’s fine tall figure and great strength, that he gave the latter the country of the Barrabool Hills as a present. For some time many persons respected Mr. Robertson’s claim to the fine tract of land, and would not occupy it without his consent.

When Mr. Russell first arrived, Dr. Cotter was there living in a primitive wattel and daub hut, and was representing the Port Phillip Association in the capacity of storekeeper; although he hadn't any patients to attend to he had a few native boys for servants. Already Henry Batman had his wife with him. Russell says:

> ‘*Melbourne at this time consisted of three or four wattle and daub huts, a few turf’ huts and about twelve or fifteen tents.*’ Henry Batman took an interest in him as soon as he arrived, and at once accompanied him to the wreck of *The Hlectic.*

Then he resolved to walk around the district to Geelong. In this he says he was assisted by Wedge’s map, and that Buckley, by pointing out places, had helped Wedge to make this map. It seems to me that Wedge made first of all a map from Batman's journal that we call Batman’s map, and then after he visited Port Phillip made another, or revised it. Russell walked to Geelong and stood on Golf Hill, where he afterwards built his house. He tramped around the district for seven days, and then walked to Westernport. When at Mount Eliza he met John Aitkin, who also had been shipwrecked or had run aground; he was with a flock of sheep which he had landed at Dromana. He had lost nearly half of them. Captain Swanston also had landed sheep at Westernport, where the wild dogs destroyed many, and from this and other causes he nearly lost them all. It was at this time that Mudie was drowned, a very promising son of Dr. Mudie.

He and the chief officer went out in one of the ship’s boats, and were overtaken by a sudden squall, the boat being upset and Mudie drowned. As Russell journeys on he describes the Werribee Plains and the country in that district just as Batman does in his journal. He says Batman had three flocks of sheep grazing in Melbourne, one in North Melbourne, right out to Moonee Ponds, another on Eastern Hill, and a third on what is now the Sydney-road. The shepherds brought them in at night, and put them in yards situated about where the Law Courts now stand. That was in April 1836. At that time *The Enterprise*, Fawker’s vessel, was not on the Yarra. She had been wind-bound, and was in Westernport. But when he went to Tasmania to arrange for closing up there, he came back in her in the November of 1836, and as they passed out of the river from Launceston, he saw *The Stirlingshire*, the vessel which had just carried Lonsdale’s party, the first Government establishment, to Port Phillip. Lonsdale himself arrived a few days earlier in *The Rattlesnake*. While Russell was away winding up his affairs in Tasmania, Charles Franks had been murdered, a native had struck him a deadly blow on the back of the head with a tomahawk, which killed him on the spot. Russell says he was well-known in Tasmania as a respected and intelligent man of kindly disposition, and was one of three brothers settled in the Green Ponds there. Attacks were rather frequent that winter. John Aitkin was attacked, but escaped.
Russell knew the natives well, and could speak to them in their own language. A title later came the death of Gellibrand. He described Gellibrand as a lawyer of some eminence, and he believed at the time that he had drawn up a legal document, when he prepared the treaty that the natives accepted, and he said that they all thought so. We know how Richard Bourke dispelled all these ideas of ownership by making the lands Crown lands, granting, however, to the Port Phillip Association £7000 for their work and expense. George Russell’s testimony to the validity of the belief in the deed is from a man who had no connection with the Port Phillip Association. He met Gellibrand at Geelong as he came on shore to start on his last unfortunate journey. He sketched out that journey to Russell, and said that on returning he would make his way across the country by the Anakie Hills. Russell told Gellibrand that he could see the Anakie Hills from the decks of the vessel he had come in, but Gellibrand denied it. Russell writes: ‘I formed the opinion that he knew much less about the country and the landmarks than he supposed he did.’ Gellibrand went on, passed the junction of the Barwon and the Leigh without seeing it, camped in Barwon Park, and took his own course, disregarding the advice of his guide, and was never heard of again. Fortunately he had insured his life for £10,000. The first party that went out to search for him were chiefly squatters, and they found Lake Colac.

These graziers and pastoralists were the real explorers of Victoria; they went in search of stations, and mapped out the country. One party of them spent an unpleasant evening at the foot of a hill, which they called Mt. Misery it is still Mt. Misery on our maps, as Mt. Aitkin and Cowie’s Creek are but the names of old settlers. Russell says Gardiner was the first overlander. He was but a man selling cattle. On his second trip in 1837, Russell bought from him a hundred cows at £10 each. He bought them in Melbourne. Gardiner had erected near the creek that now bears his name his cottage, and from there they swam the cattle across the Yarra. They bred fine cattle from these in Geelong; one bullock weighed 1300 lbs. In 1836 Russell met James Malcolm, the greatest pastoralist in Australia-Felix, whose wife was buried in the Old Cemetery.

Dr. Thomson was in the Barrabool Hills at this time, and Ebden and Coghill were spying out the country. C. H. Ebden buried a child in the Old Cemetery in 1847. There most of these old pioneers are represented, although their names do not appear on the stones. Mr. Russell attended the first land sale in Melbourne. They expected the sections to sell at an average price of £12 each, whereas they went up to an average of £35 each; a condition of the sale was that the buyer had to fence the allotment. The first sale of country lands took place in Sydney in 1838. When land around Geelong went for 5 shillings an acre his agents did not buy, because the land they wished for went up to 23 shillings an acre. He thought C. H. Ebden preceded Gardiner as overlander, but did not bring cattle with him, but the other old pioneers say Gardiner. Among the places that Russell stayed at while in Melbourne was the Lamb Inn, where he says a great number of squatters stayed.

He refers to James Watson, of Watson and Hunter, as the son of an agriculturist well known in Scotland, who brought a considerable amount of capital to the colony. He said that Hunter was also a man with a large capital to start with. The firm came to grief financially, and Hunter died before reaching middle age, and was buried in Victoria, and an important firm in Melbourne passed into oblivion, chiefly, he believed, because of the extravagance of Watson.

George Russell is not the only one who establishes the kinship between early Melbourne and early Geelong. Melbourne merchants, like R. W. Welsh and W. F. A. Rucker, opened branches there, this at a time when there was hardly a well-defined track between the two places, and no such thing as a properly constructed road. He mentions a Mr. Champion as a pioneer of Geelong; he opened a store there in a tent on the beach, near where Yarra-street now is. Mack’s Hotel was started about the same time in a slab building with four small
One of the earliest pioneers was John Aitkin; he arrived with Jackson and Evans in the September of 1835, to explore the country; that was before Fawkner himself put in an appearance. He landed sheep there in 1836, and Mount Aitkin was named after him by Governor Bourke.

Aitkin affirms in his letter to Latrobe that Batman was here in the May of 1835. He said that Jackson, Evans, and himself surveyed the land in September; Fawkner came later. He calls him the first Cain because he was a tiller of the earth, but he said he made the mistake, of putting his wheat in swampy ground, and thus he affirms that he threw Port Phillip back by creating the belief that it was not a wheat country. After Fawkner's crop failed, wheat rose to £1 a bushel. As a matter of fact, Fawkner was not the first tiller of the earth, but Todd, who planted wheat and all kinds of vegetables at Indented Head. He was left in charge from the 9th of June to 7th August, 1835.

I thought I had found a treasure when I came on the grave of John Hart, aged 60 who died in 1851. I believed this to be John Hart who was off the coast in 1831, and who in that year landed on Lawrence Rocks, off Portland Bay. Dutton was his first mate, and later he carried one of the Henty’s to Portland Bay. He was a trader in pelts, and one season obtained 1180 seal skins; in a previous visit he had secured a much larger number. This season he also secured 12,000 wallaby skins from the Islanders, the sailors who lived like marooned men with the Native women, and traded with visiting vessels. However, when I turned to the Old Pioneers Letters I found that John Hart was alive in 1854, and living in Melbourne. Still there may be some relationship to the man buried in the Old Cemetery. There are names in our Cemetery like Aitkin, Mouat, McIntyre, Munro, and Orr that recall the old families. To which branch those who sleep here belong too we cannot always say, only when their Christian names are identical; therefore I generally refer to the work of the family in our early life. Mr. James Mouat, a Scotchman, landed here in the spring of 1837 apprenticed to a sheep farmer, Captain Charles Hutton; Mr. Munro, a son of Professor Munro, took up land in 1837; these three and a few others occupied the outermost point of settlement in 1837. They were near the Campaspe river which was the faraway outer circle of Melbourne. Pastoral Melbourne was the village of the farming community of Australia Felix. In 1839 Orr was with them, Allan did not get so far until 1841. Mouat although a squatter, was a democrat; from the first he would not join any squatting association. He contrasts with Curr, whose remains were in the Catholic ground, and with Isaac Buchanan, whose wife was in the Presbyterian ground. In his later days he was at Sandhurst, and was known there for his devotion to the Presbyterian faith. John Orr led a party through Gippsland in 1841, and confirmed the reports of Strzelecki and McMillan. These men, whose names are represented on our roll, fought and conquered the wilderness, and God spoke to them out of the burning bush. Mr. Coghil, of Coghill and Haughton, supplied me with the following sketch of Hepburn: “About the middle of 1837, a perfect mania took place; the price of sheep advanced to 60 shillings per head. On 16th of January, 1838, we started from Strathallan, New South Wales, with 1400 ewes, 50 rams, 200 wethers, 2 drays, 18 bullocks, 1 cart and horse, 1 saddle horse, 2 brood mares, and 10 men. In travelling we found the greatest hospitality from the settlers. Mr. William Coghll had mustered his sheep on the Murrumbidgee to accompany me to Port Phillip. After joining Coghill’s party one of my drays broke down, and while delayed Mr. William Bowman overtook us, and arrangements were entered into for three parties to keep company until all were settled in the new country. After leaving the last settlement on the Murrumbidgee, we took a route more to the eastward of my former track, several parties having preceded us on this route, Ebden, Howey and Hamilton. We crossed the Murray at the spot where Hume and Hovell had crossed in 1824 (Albury). At this point we overtook W. Hamilton, who had been eight days in crossing his sheep, and had suffered some small losses, Bowman had 5000 sheep, Coghill 2000, making with mine nearly 9000
sheep, and we crossed the lot in 2 hours without the loss of a sheep. We followed the track of those before us, and in a short distance came on the Major's line (Mitchell's), which was easily recognized at the time. At the Goulburn we met a large party of natives. Mr. David Coghill and myself being in advance, came suddenly on them. In an instant a hundred spears were pointed towards us. We halted to consider what to do. We got boldly off our horses, took our guns in one hand and a bush in the other and advanced slowly towards them.

The women and children fled, but the men stood their ground. After a short parley, in which not a word was understood on either side, the natives began to lay down their spears, and approached us without fear, put their hands on us, and felt the horses skins. After spending an hour amongst them my cart with Mrs. Hepburn came in sight. Shortly after the sheep appeared; the shepherds were dreadfully alarmed at first, but this soon wore off. I had nets for the sheep.

I set these up, pitched the tents, and sent a man back to inform Bowman that we came to an stop for the night. Next morning, March 1838, we crossed the river all safe without any molestation from the natives. There we overtook Mr. John Harrison and Mrs. Hamilton, who had pushed on to get the choice of the country.” Sir. William Coghill died at the age of 76, as gather from his stone, on 19th July, 1800, and was buried in the Old Cemetery. George Coghill, his son, was buried on the 23rd March, 1864. His funeral is reported in The Age of the 24th March. He was killed at the intersection of Swanston and Collins Streets. He was crossing and stepped aside to avoid an approaching cab, when another coming from the opposite direction knocked him down. He was taken into an hotel and found to have seven ribs broken on one side; and four on the other. After crossing Australia-Felix he was killed in crossing a street.

Senator Guthrie in our own time was killed almost on the same spot, and in much the same way by the tram-cars. After Coghill’s time the cabs were compelled to walk over that crossing, and it became known as the walk over.

Several overlanders were buried in the Old Cemetery, among them Graham and Worster. The first overlander was John Gardiner, the father of our Eastern Suburbs, whose story will be told in a later chapter. The second was Hepburn, then came Ryrie and Ebden. Ryrie is a name associated with settlement and recently with the great War. Ryrie’s Post at Gallipoli.

John Murchison came overland in 1838. He was the first overlander to drive a tandem and pair into Melbourne. After Sir Roderick Murchison, one of his relatives, Murchison Square in Carlton is named.

Robert Jamieson reversed the process of travel; he returned overland from Port Phillip to Sydney. He came to Melbourne in 1838, and in 1839 took this journey. He was the first man to settle on the coast between Arthur’s Seat and Cape Schanck. He tells us that his nearest neighbour was Edward Hobson, whose station was at the base of Arthur’s Seat. Jamieson later removed to Yallock, at Westernport, and then sold out to Henry Moor. Among the earliest settlers in Melbourne was Edward William Umphelby. We find him mentioned in the list of the first licensed victuallers, the licenses granted in 1838. He was born on the 15th of March, 1812, and sailed from England in July 1828. The exact date of his arrival in Melbourne is not known, but he bought land at the first land sale in 1837 the corner of Queen and Collins Streets, now occupied by the English, Scottish and Australia Bank, the Stock Exchange and the Safe Deposit. For this he paid sixty-one pounds, but lost it through the dishonesty of his agent. He also purchased land in Bourke Street, the block on which a part of Buckley and Nunn’s premises now stand; this he bought from John Pascoe Fawkner and later exchanged it with Allan Macdonald for a horse and a foal. He also had station property in Port Phillip.
To-day the world asks, how came there are buffalos in the Northern Territory? Because this man, after leaving Melbourne, traded in the seas to the north of Australia and brought the original herd from the Island of Timor, stocking both Melville Island and the Northern Territory. There was a military settlement both at Melville Island and in the Northern Territory about this time; they may have had buffalos as well. He led a most eventful life, but when only thirty years of age contracted small-pox, died and was buried at sea. He was the first here of a family that has given Melbourne several distinguished men. His brother, Thomas Letts Umphelby, emigrated to Australia with his father in 1830; they followed the track of the elder brother. Thomas intended to come here in 1837, but only visited Melbourne in 1840, and did not settle here until 1851. They knew the Marzetti’s in Tasmania in 1831, and Marzetti assisted the father in selecting land. He visited Melbourne in June, 1840; he intended to open a store here. Webb and Allen had put up a wooden building in the eastern part of the village. Before entering into it, young Umphelby called on J. P. Welsh, one of the merchants of that time, and he said the proposed store was too far from the business part of Melbourne, which was from William Street and about the wharf to Elizabeth Street.

This shows that at that time West Melbourne was Melbourne. He refers to several men whose epitaphs we read in the Cemetery, thus:- “I got Mr. Allen to take the affair off my hands, and he transferred it to a Mr. Donaldson, who had just arrived from Sydney, and wanted a store. It afterwards became Donaldson and Budge, subsequently Henry Budge, and then Budge Bros. I went into Mr. Welsh’s office and remained about three years.” Donaldson and Budge are represented in the Cemetery. Then he left Melbourne and travelled to different places, and returned again in 1851 and settled here. The father of this family died at Lothan Cottage, East Melbourne, on the 2nd October, 1871. The Reverend A. M. Henderson conducted the service; he is in the Melbourne General. The interest circles around Edward and this Thomas Letts Umphelby, who came to Melbourne in 1851 from Tasmania. In Tasmania, when a boy, he knew John Batman. He was in the employment of Henry Reed, and Reed purchased wheat from Batman’s farm at Ben Lomond, and in return supplied Batman with stores. I have seen the original letters, and Thomas says: “I well remember John Batman and his Sydney natives, which with himself were employed by the Van Diemen’s Land Government in capturing the natives of the island. He was a tall dark complexioned man, of rather small features, and generally dressed in a green cloth shooting coat, being rather of a sporting turn of mind.” He says Batman and Massie had a wattle-bark chopping station at Westernport in 1830 and 1831, in which his employer, Mr. Reed, was also interested. This Mr. Reed he declares was the first settler in Victoria, or at least preceded Henty, Batman and Fawkner, and it is apparently true that Henry Reed was here but not as a permanent settler, as the following letter shows:-

Melbourne, 25th Sept., 1877.

Dear Sir,

A few days since I made the assertion to a few friends, that as an old colonist I could, of my own knowledge, say that neither Batman, Fawkner, nor Henty was the first who had been connected in commerce with this place (now Victoria), but that I could name a gentleman who was some years before either of them in that respect. They were very incredulous, and challenged me to name anyone who was before either of the three. I named you, as of my own knowledge knew that you sent men to Westernport to chop bark (wattle) and then sent a ship (I think The Burrell) to load it for London, calling at Launceston to fill up there with wool; this was in the end of 1830 or beginning of 1831, at which time I was in your employment.
as a boy of 13. I further asserted that you had whaling parties at Portland Bay and Kangaroo Island in 1831 before Henty who was then at Swan River, as I well knew your schooner Henry, Captain Jones used to go from Launceston to take the men and stores to these places and bring back the oil, and that what was called the Native Store, near Wharf, Launceston, was in beginning of 1831 full of your whale oil. Although I am so clear in my mind upon this, yet I cannot convince my friends I am right, but they think I must be under a delusion, and to quite confirm me that I am correct upon the subject, will you kindly be at the trouble of sending me a few lines in confirmation of what I have stated being correct, as I do not like to be beaten when I know well I am right.

Trusting that you will excuse the trouble I am giving you, and hoping you enjoy good health.

I remain, dear Sir,
Yours truly,
Address Thomas L. Umphelby,
c/o Charles W. Umphelby,
60 Collins Street, W.
Melbourne.

Here is Henry Reed’s own letter, which I have copied from the original-

Launceston,
1st October, 1877.

Dear Sir,

You are right about my whaling at Kangaroo Island and up Spencer’s Gulf, also at Portland Bay before the Henty’s arrived, to whom I afterwards sold the station, and I have no doubt you are right about my sending men to Westernport for bark, and I think the vessel’s name was Burnell; your friends can ascertain the fact about Portland Bay from the Henty’s in Melbourne. I also preached the first sermon in Melbourne in the Spring of 1835; there were only two huts, Batman’s and Fawkner’s, and I think a shepherd’s. My congregation, Henry Batman, Batman’s brother, Buckley and three Sydney natives.

I do hope you are living for Eternity; meet me in Heaven.

I remember you as a little boy.

Yours truly,

Henry Reed.

n.b. Go and hear Henry Varley, whom I know well.

To Mr. T. L. Umphelby.

None of the Umphelbys seem to be buried in the Old Cemetery. This man was buried in 1895 in the Melbourne General beside his father, but they are related alike to the Marzetti and the Patterson’s, both of which families have relations buried there. A Lieutenant-Colonel Umphelby went to James Bonwick’s school; another, E. W. Umphelby, married Sarah Letts, daughter of Thomas Letts, publisher of the Letts Diary. When the Imperial Forces were sent to New Zealand in 1860, during the Maori War, the Yeomanry relieved the soldiers here, and among them was W. J. Clarke (Sir William), C. W. Umphelby, W. H. Tuckett, J. S. Butters, W. Close, and J. Jamieson. These mounted guard at the Treasury. Major Thomas Frederick Umphelby served in the Boer War, in the Victorian Rangers. I am indebted to Harold Marzetti Umphelby for the loan of the family records. His mother was a Marzetti; they were represented in two graves in the Old Cemetery. The wife of Robert Patterson buried there was a sister of the mother of Harold Marzetti Umphelby. They are an old English family with an Italian name, because they are descended from the Dukes of Milan. For this plan I am indebted to Mr.
Hutchinson, the bookseller, and The Argus newspaper. The lands of Melbourne on which we now stand were originally sold for four thousand pounds; they are now worth eight millions. Surely the men who created this wealth were entitled to their 8 f x 4 f t graves in the Old Cemetery.

The first land sale was on the 1st June, 1837. Four months later came a second sale in November when all the religious denominations secured land, and among the purchasers were Dr. P. Cussen, Sylvester J. Browne, A. Langhorne, Joseph Shaw, and Jane Stephen, whose remains are in the Cemetery. Later in Sydney several bought land, and among them were William Cowell, Henry Smythe, S. A. Donaldson, Betts & Co., Alex, and Matthew Orr. J. Patterson, John Wooley, Henry Ward Mason, James McIntyre, Charles Dutton, J. Montefiore, J. O. Denny and others who are represented in our Old Cemetery. A fuller story comes later, when we give the Lands Department’s Map of early Melbourne, showing all the Crown grants and land sales from the first sale to the present time.

As a nation, we rose rapidly in 1840. We were sending wool to England and food to Tasmania, and we had 140,000 sheep, 25,000 head of cattle, and 450 horses in the Port Phillip district, yet it was only four years before this that Francis Henty transferred the Batman party from Indented Heads to the banks of the Yarra. Francis Henty said, in writing to one of our newspapers in 1888 “It was in September 1835, on my way back from Launceston to Portland in the small cutter the Mary Ann, that I first saw the site of Melbourne. We called in at Port Phillip and removed Batman and his party from Indented Heads to the Yarra Yarra falls, now the Queen’s Wharf. Batman had been round the coast to the spot before, and I found Fawknor’s party located on the south bank of the river, but not J. P. Fawknor himself, he not having arrived until the middle of October, as his own signature to the Old Colonists Address to Prince Alfred will testify.”

I have treated with Hume and Hovell’s journey overland from Sydney to the mountains overlooking Port Phillip. They were not certain whether they had seen Westernport or Port Phillip, Hume maintaining that it was Port Phillip, and Hovell affirming that it was Westernport. However, all doubts were settled by Hovell visiting Westernport, and finding that it was not the port he saw, and their map was before Batman when he drew up his plans for coming here. It is argued that there were no settlers in Victoria before Batman. The sealers and whalers were along the coast; some of them had settled on islands and lived with the native women, and William Dutton had built a cottage at Portland as early as 1834. That can be proven from Hart’s letter to Latrobe. He preceded Henty in that district, and was in Victoria some time before Batman. There was a tomb to William Hampden Dutton, in the Old Cemetery; this was certainly the Dutton who attended the first formal Royal reception in Australia-Felix, that given by Governor George Gipps, but apparently not Dutton the whaler. G. H. Haydon in 1844 found at Ladies Bay the grave of Captain Wishart, the old sealer; he was killed by a blow of a whale’s fluke in 1830. His crew buried him there, and put posts at each corner of his grave. They nailed a board with carved letters on it to a gum tree. These graves were to be found in early days in quiet places along the coast of Victoria.

In 1833 Edward Henty visited Port Phillip, but did not go up to the site of Melbourne. He preferred in 1834 to settle at Portland. He bought his seeds in Tasmania from Fawknor, and may have awakened in Fawknor’s mind the memory of his visit as a boy to Sorrento, and perhaps inspired him with a desire to settle on the continent; but as Fawknor directed his party to go to Westernport I cannot think he ever had the vision of settling in Port Phillip.

We can all see Fawknor, his bust is in the Public Library, and good pictures have been made of him; he was small in stature. He was the son of John and Hannah Fawknor, and was born in London on 28th October, 1792. His father was transported, and his mother accompanied her husband, bringing the boy with her. They came out in The Calcutta, and Fawknor celebrated his eleventh birthday in the first settlement in Port Phillip, then called Sullivan Bay and Hobart.
Camp, on whose site Sorrento now stands. When in 1804 Collins moved the colony to Van Diemen’s Land, Fawkner went with it, and arrived in the Derwent on 10th February of that year.

He lived with his father on a farm eight miles from Hobart, but did not confine himself to farming; he became a sawyer. In 1814 he got into trouble through being implicated in a plot to secure the escape of a party of convicts, two of whom betrayed him; he was flogged and had to leave Van Diemen’s Land. He went to Sydney, but soon returned and engaged in business in Hobart Town. In 1819 he went to Launceston and started a public house called the Cornwall; later he commenced a newspaper, the \textit{Launceston Advertiser}, and sometimes as an amateur solicitor conducted cases in the local police court. In those days a man need not be a certificated attorney to plead the case of another in the Lower Courts. It was while Fawkner was keeping the hotel that Batman returned from Port Phillip, and entering it, threw up his arms and declared himself the greatest landowner in the world. It was this, we are told by both Evans and Jackson that led Fawkner to resolve to come here. Evans and Jackson tried first of all to come in a vessel owned by Henty. Henty, however, broke with them, and put back on shore their goods. They took him to court, and he had to pay expenses. It was then Fawkner secured \textit{The Enterprise}, a schooner of fifty-five tons burden, and the expedition sailed from George Town 27th July, 1835.

\textit{The “Enterprise” at Fawkners house}

Fawkner suffered so much from sea sickness, after three days in the Strait, that they had to put him ashore and leave him behind. They pursued the journey as he suggested to Westernport, where they arrived on 8th August. They found the place unsuitable, and resolved to follow in the wake of Batman. They entered Hobson’s Bay and arrived in the Yarra at the end of August. There they were met by Wedge, and politely ordered off as trespassers. It will be seen that they were very much longer in getting to Port Phillip in \textit{The Enterprise} than Batman was in \textit{The Rebecca}, and that they had a similar experience of the difficulties in crossing the Strait. It was this party, it is reported, who erected the first sod hut, and who ploughed the
History of Melbourne - Revisited

first field in Melbourne. Five acres were ploughed in September, the first ploughing being done on 8th September. Both Jackson and Evans wrote to the press repudiating Fawkner’s claim. Samuel Jackson claimed that William Jackson was the founder, after Batman, and George Evans set up his own claim against that of Fawkner. He held that if Henty had taken them they would never have been associated with Fawkner. It is clear that Batman led them to decide on this expedition.

Fawkner did not choose the spot, yet he claimed in the Hobart Town Courier, as early as 1836, to be the founder. One is therefore surprised at this writing in the first printed copy of his paper that his taste led him to select Indented Head. I here give Lonsdale’s letter to Bourke reporting on his claim:

Port Phillip,
3rd Feb., 1837.
Sir Richard Bourke.

Sir, I have the honour to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of 6th December, 1836, with its enclosure from Mr. Fawkner, with directions to report upon the allegations contained therein which I will answer in detail.

I never before understood that Mr. Fawkner executed a survey of Westernport and Port Phillip. I have communicated with some of the first settlers, who are equally ignorant that such is the case, and I should think if a work of the sort had been completed that it would have been published, if it contained additional information to that already before the public, as such a thing was much required. The vessel was doubtless purchased by him, and is a trader between this and Launceston. The site of the present settlement which Mr. Fawkner alludes to had been previously chosen by Mr. Batman, but Mr. Fawkner, becoming aware of his plans, hastened to commence operations there, and took the other by surprise, whilst he was engaged in another part of the Bay. But I believe he was a very short time without neighbours. A large tract of land, I believe, was appropriated by Mr. Fawkner. I cannot ascertain what was expended on the natives by Mr. Fawkner, but I have no doubt he did so to some extent, as did most others either from a feeling of humanity or to ensure their own safety by making friends with the natives, and I believe he has a friendly feeling towards them. I do not perceive that the natives are more domesticated by Mr. Fawkner than in most other families, there are commonly some who attach themselves to particular people, and some appear to have done so with Mr. Fawkner, but I cannot perceive that they are more useful than others. I believe Mr. Fawkner brought to Port Phillip horses and cattle enough to work a dray or cart, but I have no means of knowing the amount of goods he may be in possession of.

A house was built by Mr. Fawkner, but I cannot make out that it contains more than half the number of rooms mentioned in the memorial. Upon leaving Port Phillip some time ago he let it, and it is at present occupied as a public house.

I believe thirty acres of grain were sowed by Mr. Fawkner, which were afterwards let with the rest of his Port Phillip property.

There is a lad with Mr. Fawkner who can speak something of the native language, and he took two of the natives to Van Diemen’s Land in his
schooner and brought them back again. Since I have been here I am given to understand and heard of the circumstances before I read the memorial, that upon the first arrival of the white people at the site of the settlement, they were in some danger from the natives, and that on one occasion they made an attack upon them in considerable numbers, which was repelled nicely by a show of firmness and preparation on the part of the whites, but the heroism of the act I have heard attributed to another individual. I have not heard anything of a coal mine being discovered.

I believe the above to be as near the truth as it is possible to collect at this moment. Mr. Fawkner was among the first who came to Port Phillip after the project was made known by members of the company, and I have no doubt endeavoured to turn the speculation to the best account; in doing so he must no doubt have contributed to improve the country in common with other squatters.

I have the honour to be, Sir, your most obedient humble servant,
William Lonsdale,
Police Magistrate.

Three other letters were written by Lonsdale in reference to Fawkner; one refers to his request to be recognized as a newspaper proprietor, another to his wish to take his affidavits in Melbourne instead of going to Sydney, and lastly, one regarding The Patriot newspaper, (1839).

Fawkner's first hotel in Melbourne was called The Royal. David Fisher describes it in his letter to Latrobe. “He says that it had six rooms and was built of turf with a portion of wood.”

Lonsdale received instructions from Richard Bourke dated 6th December, 1836, directing him to enquire into Fawkner’s claims. This he did and sent the letter to Bourke, negating nearly all of them. It seems that Fawkner had sent a memorial to Bourke. Fawkner has many things to his credit, without claiming what properly was not his. He founded the first newspaper here, one that in the first instance he personally wrote himself on four pages of foolscap, and which a few months later he brought out as a printed paper, the type having been sent to him from Tasmania.

In 1842 he was elected one of the Market Commissioners. In 1843 he was made a Town Councillor in the first Council. In 1851, when we became an independent colony, he was elected to the first Legislative Council, and in 1856 to the Legislative Council under the New Constitution. He took a leading part in nearly all the early movements, that led to the election of Earl Grey to the New South Wales Legislative Council. As a Melbourne man he was interested in the Eureka rising of the miners. Sir Charles Hotham nominated him as a member of the special commission appointed to enquire into the grievances of the gold fields; and as an old man he went about speaking on his claims as a founder. Rusden said his claim was preposterous, but that he repeated it so often he came to believe it, and deluded himself into the belief that he had done something he had never done. He died on 4th September, 1869, and I have told the story of his funeral in my chapter on the Triumphant Life.

Batman had the vision, and with it the will to act, before other men either dreamt or acted; he was therefore the founder of Melbourne, although Fawkner has over his grave the representation of the hut of the pioneer, on which are the words the Founder. Of Melbourne, yet he was only the third man on the scene. His will was discussed in court as late as 23rd April, 1908, before Justice a Beckett.

He had appointed the Reverend John Clenie McMichael, Congregational Minister, of Gore Street, Fitzroy, Mr. George Button Hailes, of Fitzroy, and Mr. Cornelius J. Ham, then of Fitzroy, his
trustees. He left a life interest in his estate to his wife, and an annuity of a £100 to his servant, William Shapter. At his wife’s death his estate was to be sold and divided into twenty-two parts and distributed among certain persons. He died in 1869, and his wife survived him some years, and the liquidation was not completed until 1908, when Ham was the only surviving trustee, and he had been a long time out of Fitzroy. We had hoped to build to all these old pioneers a temple of fame in the Old Cemetery.

It might have been a Hall of History, wherein our leading lecturers would have periodically given popular lectures on Victorian History. In a city where thousands of acres are set apart for parks and gardens, due to the pre-vision of Latrobe and the early settlers, it would not have been extravagance to have given eight acres and a quarter to the memory of the pioneers. They had already taken the burial ground of the Aboriginals and of the Society of Friends and had encroached on the Jewish ground. That should have ended the matter. Men are forming Old Pioneers Associations, whose aim they tell us is to assist old colonists and promulgate facts relative to the early history of the colony. The Old Colonists Association of Victoria aims specially at this, and it has built and maintained ninety-one homes for the old colonists.

In its annual report are six In Memoriam pages, giving the names of deceased members. Among them is the name of Edward Henty, the first permanent settler in Victoria. He signed their registration book, and by his signature are these facts: “Pastoralist and agriculturalist; came to Victoria from England 19th November, 1834; born in West Tarring, Sussex, 28th March, 1810; died at St. Kilda, South Yarra, 21st August, 1878.” The Association only admits these who have been twenty-five years in the country or over that time and the sons of pioneers. Anyone who has been fifty is counted as an old pioneer. It originated in 1869. George Coppin was its founder, and at the first meeting which he convened and which was held in Menzies Hotel, the following gentlemen were present: Messrs’ G. S. Coppin, J. C. King, Peter Davis, William Hull, Michael Lynch, Henry N. Hull, Thomas Moubray, David Ogilvy, E. S. Montefiore, Joseph Sutherland, D. S. Campbell, J. Cosgrave, Robert Turnbull, J. P. Bear, (John Pinney Bear) John Mackenzie, Alfred Wooley, Benjamin Williams, Thomas Strode, James Stewart, Doyle, Dr. Thomas and Dr. Barker. The most of these are represented in the Old Cemetery as you can see by turning to our Index and Map. Judge Pohlman was made president, and Coppin vice-president. Their president for 1919, their first Jubilee, was James Grice, whose four young brothers were buried in the Old Cemetery. Francis Graham, a son of the Honourable James Graham, and Herbert Power, J.P., are trustees. The homes were built on a spot believed to be near the place where Batman met the natives, and made the treaty by which Melbourne was ceded to him. In 1870 the ground for the homes was secured; it is not only near to where Batman signed the treaty on the banks of the Merri Creek, but is an old battle ground of the aboriginals.

Within the memory of the whites on this ground the Goulburn tribe fought the Yarra natives. In 1886 during the time of the Colonial and Indian Exhibition in London, Coppin arranged for a reunion of the Old Colonists from the different colonies. They met in the Town Hall, Kensington. The Right Honourable H. C. Childers, who was an English Statesman, who had served his apprenticeship in our Parliament, and whose memory of Melbourne went back to 1851, presided at the banquet. The theme of all seemed to be Federation or Confederation until Coppin spoke; he specialized on the old colonist movement, especially that in Victoria. He told how Sir Saul Samuel visited Melbourne before one Government allotment was sold. We have had the visit of many distinguished children of Israel from that of Saul Samuel in 1837 to that of Hannah Rothschild, who accompanied her husband, Lord Rosebery, on his trip round the world. More than one cottage has been built by Jews, Coppin told how that in one of the old homes a man died who was the first to carry sheep to Victoria. He brought them for the Henty’s, and in his day he had been a well-to-do merchant. When he said this there were only five cottages The Founders, erected by Coppin; The Clarke’s, erected by Sir W. Clarke; The Goldsbrough, erected by Richard Goldsbrough, the man who did so much to extend our wool industry; The Campbell, erected by the Honourable W. Campbell; and The Association, erected by the Old Colonist’s Association.
Now they have ninety-one generous provision made chiefly by the old colonists themselves. Mr. Roland Woodward is their present secretary. 1919 was their Jubilee year. It is fifty years since the Association commenced, and it is rather ominous that in this year it was finally settled to dig up their bones. Mr. James Thomson represented the Old Colonists at the dedication of Batman's new tomb at Fawkner, 1824. The plan of the pioneer village is shown in this chapter, and the location of the houses in 1838.

George Mackillop, after whom, I take it, Mackillop Street is named, wrote two articles on Melbourne, as it was in 1838. They were published in the Journal of Agriculture in Scotland in 1839. Like most of our early writers, he gives full credit to Batman for founding the village. Reference is made to Fawkner, as the owner of a reading-room, but he plays no conspicuous part in the narrative, though he mentions two papers then in existence, and apparently refers to that of Arden and Strode, and Fawkner's new paper; both of these printing houses are shown on our plan. He said we had four butchers and three bakers; this seems to correspond with our plan, three butchers and a meat store being given on it, and two bakers and an eating house. He gives three saddlers and harness makers, who are not shown on our plan, but they would be there, and may have been working in the stores. The business houses would be provided chiefly with goods for farmers, and many industries were absent that relate to the leisure of life; for instance, there was no watch maker, watches had to be sent to Sydney, Hobart or Launceston to be mended.

Liardet says that Coulstock, who is given on the plan as the keeper of the Melbourne Hotel, Elizabeth Street, also had the first livery stables in Melbourne. Mackillop says there was no cooper, but our plan shows that Born's Cooperage was on Collins Street. Mackillop, although he had interests here, was writing from Hobart, and was relying on what his agents told him. He agrees with our plan in saying that there was only one Master wheelwright; the key to the plan gives his name as Coombs. He could not find in the village any journey men wheelwrights, so he employed carpenters. They were, with the blacksmiths, the most useful mechanics in the beginning. Up to January 1838 he says there were no undertakers; if so they came very soon afterwards, and the carpenters would do their work, but Frost is marked on our plan as working as an undertaker in a long wooden skillion in Elizabeth Street, and Crook would commence business about this time. He mentioned four tailors, but only one is given on the plan, Willie Robertson, and I do not doubt that others were here, working in stores or on the outskirts of the village. early in our career we had a gunsmith; the gun was almost as essential to the farmer as the plough. In this year from 700 to 800 men left Hobart for Melbourne, and nearly all of them were shepherds. From 150 to 200 vessels arrived in port from various places, and our plan shows ample provision for shipping even at that time. Mackillop and others were thinking of establishing a steam shipping company in Melbourne, a work left to Arthur Kemmis and George Ward Cole, but Cain already had his store here, it was made of brick and had three stories. The brick field where the bricks for such houses were made was then in Flinders Street, and it seems as if the only two houses south of the Yarra were these of Robert Russell and Le Souef.

Melbourne bought £86,000 worth of goods that year from abroad, and already there was a Custom House in Flinders Street, and ten thousand pounds were collected that year by the Customs. Buckley had gone to Hobart, and Mackillop knew him. The little village clustered around the old St. James Church. Was this village the first settlement on the Yarra? Someone had been here before us, says Mackillop, for we found their cups and pannikins. Perhaps the earliest surveyors left them. Did Watts, as James Bonwick suggests, walk over the district previously, or did folk come here from the Westernport settlement of 1820? The old pannikins and broken pottery are memorials of Prehistoric Melbourne. We can look on the pioneer township later than Mackillop through the eyes of Dr. Clutterbuck, who wrote a booklet on early Melbourne. He was one of our first Collins Street doctors, and recently The Argus published an authoritative statement of Melbourne in the Forties, Fifties and Sixties, by Edward C. O. Howard. He repeats that Batman's house was at the corner of William and Market Streets, and that Fawkner had the Shakespeare Hotel, at the corner of Collins and Market Streets.
West of Batman’s house, on the same block, were the residences of Messrs’ Wickham, Kelsh, Erskine, and Skene Craig. I know not if Wickham and Kelsh be represented in the Cemetery, but I think so, and I know that the others I will mention are. Miss Cole tells me that her father's residence was in William Street, opposite the Mint, where the first Exhibition formerly stood. The Honourable. T. T. Beckett lived at the corner of William and Collins Streets. The Family Hotel, the Southern Cross already alluded to as erected by J. S. Johnston, was in Bourke Street; Bishop Perry lived there for a short time, when he first came to Melbourne. General Howard had a fine villa in Lonsdale Street, on the site afterwards occupied by T ankard’s Temperance Hotel; in this street were several fashionable residences, one of Mr. P. Turnbull, whose grave is surmounted by a noble Roman Column. On the same street also lived Mr. Dunn, of the Customs. Mr. Sievewright, the solicitor, and Mr. James Moore, of the Savings Bank, were in the same street. Sievwright lived down to our own time, but his relatives are in the historic burial ground. Dr. P. Cussen lived near to General Howard, Dr. McCrae lived in Bank Street, and Dr. Cotter in 1838 had a chemist’s shop in Queen Street. Cotter’s name is not on our list of the Cemetery. H. F. Gurner, the Crown Solicitor, lived in William Street, and when he vacated the house it was occupied by the widow of Commissary Goodsir. Goodsir was in our Cemetery, but Gurner was buried at St. Kilda. In Queen Street was the first four-storied building ever erected in Melbourne. In the same street was the Queen’s Theatre; the building was, until recently, occupied by Fallshaw Brothers. Judge Barry, Robert Russell, and Robert Hoddle all lived at some time in their lives in Bourke Street West. Our Government offices, barracks, courts and gaol, post and telegraph offices were in this western district, so, too, our first newspaper offices.

The first flagstaff erected on Flagstaff Hill was put up in 1840, but being too short was soon replaced by another, which was removed in 1857. Behind the flagstaff stood an octagonal building used as an observatory. Flagstaff Hill has had a precarious existence; it has not only been threatened by the Market Committee, an institution with a very bad history, but it was converted into a quarry in the early days, and in the early fifties, through the conduct of some practical jokers, who put brass filings in the soil, was rushed to as a goldfield, but the quarry was filled in, and the hill converted into a garden. If the west had remained the fashionable west, with St. James as a social centre, this beautiful garden would have adorned one of the loveliest suburban areas in any city in the world. But it was too near the business centres and has been subverted to the interests of trade. All these statements can be verified from old maps and pictures. From this official centre, the home of the State servant, Melbourne grew. A picture of Melbourne from Flagstaff Hill, made in 1858 by Rowe, is preserved in our Public Library, and is given in our chapter on the Triumphant Life.

The pioneer township needed no breathing places with the forest around it, but our pioneers saw that this would not last, and Sutherland says that Melbourne had a Botanic Garden when she was three years old. With the advent of Latrobe came the idea of open spaces. The village was so centrally situated that the first settlers might readily look forward to its development into a city. The bight which terminates in Port Phillip runs so far inland that much of Victoria like the Otway Ranges and Westernport is south of Melbourne, while looking at it from east to west it is situated midway between the South Australian and New South Wales border. To see how all things fit together, let us look briefly on the geology of Melbourne, so ably treated by T. S. Hall and others. It is an undulating piece of country surrounded by plains. The Old Cemetery is one of its wave-like eminences about one hundred and thirty feet above the level of the sea. It is surrounded by different types of plains the delta of the Yarra, the heath-covered land of Brighton, and the treeless western expanse, commencing beyond Batman’s swamp. Sandstone is the all-prevailing stone, hence all our old tombstones made here are of sandstone. We see it from Spotswood to Cheltenham. There is no evidence of volcanic action in the city, although Victoria had many lava plains and fossil volcanoes; these volcanic regions stop at Essendon. Water has operated more than fire in the formation of Port Phillip; that sheet of water bears evidence of having been an old river valley, modified by subsidence. The drifting sands created the hills that narrowed the
entrance. Melbourne thus formed has not been subject to earthquakes; few people have personally felt one, but they have been made known on the delicate instruments at the University or Observatory. One was felt in early Melbourne in 1841, and others are reported in McCombie's History of Victoria, one in 1847 and another in 1855; that in 1855 was apparently felt all over Melbourne, and somewhat severely in Brighton, St. Kilda, and the Boroondara district. Scores of shocks are reported by our scientific men since the early eighties, but these are unknown by the inhabitants. We sympathise with shocks felt elsewhere; thus after the volcanic explosion of the 8th of May, 1902, the instruments showed that for nine hours the ground around Melbourne trembled, although the city very seldom feels the vibrations of an earthquake, yet out on the Saltwater River all the evidences of former lava flows from volcanic rents. The bluestone of Footscray has all been formed in that way, and near Sydenham is a cliff with magnificent basaltic columns rising to the height of 50 or 100 feet, reminding us that under the tertiary or recent deposits on which we live is an older bedrock of which Kew and Toorak are the outcrop.

While we do not now look for earthquakes, yet in far-off times they have been serious, as is attested by great breakages in the rock. Bass Strait was probably formed by subsidence; under such circumstances earthquakes felt here are often also felt in Tasmania. Geologists say that the earth waves seem to travel to such different spots that if a line be drawn round them they form an ellipse, with the major axis over Bass Straits, that the earth sank and the sea rushed in and formed the strait, and the sinking may be still going on.

The Yarra has made us in more senses than one. When they cut the Coode Canal we had a chance to see what she was doing before the arrival of Batman, and the finding of marine shells demonstrated that the stream had always been leaving behind it deposits from the primeval hills and pushing the land out into Hobson’s Bay. It may be that although Melbourne is one of the youngest cities in the world, yet geologically her territory is of the oldest. Kensington is recent river formations, but Kew may be Palaeozoic. Our Botanical Gardens were probably built by the Yarra. Our first Botanical Gardens were to have been on the Melbourne side of the river, but the exigencies of trade, the market in the proper sense, took that open space away from us. The abattoirs were built there. Mr. G. B. Pritchard, in his little book on the Geology of Melbourne, tells of many changes, and thinks that Melbourne is still materially changing; that three times she has been rebuilt, and that just as the Aboriginal has left the evidence of his encampment on the Saltwater River by the quartz points of his spears found there, or on the Red Bluff by the shells that he threw aside after his meals, so has the European left some geological as well as archaeological record of his successive building of the city. They have drained the swamp on the south side, and left a beautiful lake, the lake at Albert Park. Regions have been denuded of native trees, the gullies filled in and noble gardens formed like the Fitzroy Gardens. As the railway cut its way through Royal Park, there dropped from the embankments of the cutting fossils that told of a life-long past; even the digging of the sewers had their revelation. Near Kensington Hill, in Arden Street, a depth of 35 feet, they found the remains of the Diprotodon -australis, one of the extinct giants, an animal resembling a wombat. The quarry also has its story. One of the oldest quarries is the Corporation Quarry at Clifton Hill. They were working in this quarry in 1846.

The Melbourne Corporation has taken stone out of it since 5th January, 1855. Another is in Quarry Hill, near the Maribyrnong Bridge, Ascot Vale. A peak on this hill is called Raleigh’s Look-out. Boring for minerals has gone on around Melbourne, and seams of brown coal have been found under Newport at a depth of 190 feet. Melbourne floods have had a geological effect; the flooding of the land by the Saltwater river has had the same effect as the inundation of Egypt by the Nile. After one flood the low-lying land was raised one foot. Great floods have occurred within the memory of the present residents, floods in 1870, 1891, 1900. The voice of the storm has had its word of promise, as well as its word of warning and wrath. Melbourne proper is washed by the waters of Hobson’s Bay, a bay within Port Phillip, extending from Point Gellibrand to Point Ormond, and the waterfront of this bay has been
entirely transformed by human endeavour. Point Ormond used to be called Red Bluff; it was coloured by the presence of mineral, but the original Bluff has been cut away and a retaining wall built, and the whole face of nature transformed, and when the iron oxides could no longer colour the point, the name was changed from Red Bluff to Point Ormond. And as on the waterfront so within the city. The old creeks like the Enscoe River no longer run down through the city, but under it; this in itself modifies our conditions of life. With the disappearance of old streams and old ponds and swamps, the Native swan and the wild duck have gone, and now the naturalist goes to the Botanical, Treasury or Carlton Gardens, to the Cheltenham Swamp, or the lagoons in the Yarra Valley. He secures there forms of the protozoa. Haeckel explored the oceans and seas of the world, and studied myriads of microscopic forms in order to prove that the stomach was the first organ developed in animals. He could have obtained like evidence in the pools around Melbourne, especially after a rainfall.

Our Gardens help to keep the fauna and the flora of early Melbourne; they are the one thing that qualify the tense life of the city with the rural spirit of the country. There was as great variety of birds found in and around Melbourne before the destruction of its trees as in any district in Australia. In the Dandenong Ranges were the lyre bird, and rose breastled robin; waders and swimmers in abundance were at Mordialloc; the plains of Keilor were frequented by the bustard and the Native-breasted plover; and the gum-tree forests of Ringwood and Heidelberg and the Malice scrub at Melton, says G. A. Keartland, are filled with honey-eaters. In Melbourne the seasons are regular, and hence the birds with security and system built their nests and brought forth their young eagles, hawks, falcons. Eagles would prey on the young kangaroos. They have been shot at Fairfield Park and Heidelberg. A white-fronted falcon was killed at Brunswick carrying a pigeon two ounces heavier than itself. The hawk stayed and fought us, carrying off our poultry. Mr. Keartland says he saw a white goshawk scatter a flock of white pigeons, wounding one, and then rest on the roof of a church in North Fitzroy. Kites, crows, harriers and owls abounded. The delicate owl is sometimes seen in the Melbourne Cemetery, and the Old Cemetery to this day is quite an aerodrome for the migrant birds, and a general resort for the home ones. For this reason alone it might be kept. The boobook owl, which Gould, our great Ornithologist, called Winox Boobook, is a nocturnal bird, and Keartland says that it is to be still seen in our parks and gardens and even in the streets; he says he shot one at Baywater in the act of devouring a freshly-killed pyenopbilus. Swallows, swifts and fairy martins haunt the city, and the laughing jackass comes and hunts the goldfish in the ponds.

The insect and worm eating sooty crow shrike often pays a visit to Heidelberg, and will occasionally rob an orchard of some good fruit. At this season when Alliance is in the air, we may mention the allied harrier, which builds its nest in the corn or among the tall rushes, and preys on lizards, frogs, and insects. Birds white-shouldered, white-throated, red-breasted, fantailed, and sometimes harmonious in song, live in the Dandenong Ranges or by the banks of the Yarra and the River Plenty. If we were without our noble parks and gardens they would never visit us. Although the old mail coach is gone, the coach whip bird remains and is still heard in the vicinity of the Dandenong Creek. The wren, the finch, the lark, and the reed warbler are all in the neighbourhood of the great city, and are seen on the banks of the Yarra and at Melton, Oakleigh and the Yan Yean. We need not go a long way out in our holidays to see these features of early Melbourne. In the very outer suburbs the parakeets, the cockatoos and cuckoos are still seen, and sometimes the parakeets and cockatoos are in great flocks; and along our coast the sea fowl still remains, although the seals which called our first settlers here are nearly all gone. In the islands in Bass’s Strait Le Souef tells us there is a birds paradise. Dr. J. A. Leach is now our great authority on Victorian sea-birds. He is a nature lover, who has recognized that the pioneers were such. He has lectured for us and as he took us to sequested places he acknowledged that the pioneers had been there before him.
Melbourne has a land and a climate suitable to develop the noblest city. There are twenty-nine hot days in the year, twenty-nine when the thermometer rises over eighty degrees in the shade. R. L. J. Ellery has told us that the average temperature is 57.4 degrees in the shade, that the hottest day was 112.2; and that the coldest was 27 degrees. He based his statement on an observance of the record for 32 years.

Our first Nautical Almanac was published in 1855 by Murray. Port Phillip in that year was the greatest port in the Southern Hemisphere. Ships from all countries had been landing passengers bound for the diggings. It was then George Higginbotham came, and went to live in Canvas Town, on Emerald Hill. Twice there has been a Canvas Town, once in 1840, when Richard Howitt lived in it, and again in 1854 when George Higginbotham pitched his tent in Melbourne.

The incoming of ships led to the study of the bay and the weather. The Almanac reported that the rainfall in Melbourne was about the same as that of London, although the temperature was so different. In early Melbourne the thermometer was taken on Flagstaff Hill, which is 130 feet above the level of the sea. It was read in the morning, afternoon and at sunset. How we have progressed since that time is attested by the fact that in November 1910 our daily papers commenced publishing weather maps of the continent, and we have daily forecasts.

This shipping of 1855 also brought in its train a careful study of the bay its channels, currents, places for lighthouses and floating lights, and the finding of suitable places for anchorage; then our signal system developed and shipbuilding grew. From 1850 to 1853 nineteen vessels were built on the Yarra. Navigation had become a science among us, and the Heavens were revealing their story. By the seventies we were well advanced in meteorology. A magnificent Aurora Australis was visible in Melbourne on 5th April, 1870; nothing nearly so grand had been seen since 1859; it was visible from a little after sunset until 11 p.m.; the papers discussed its electrical properties, showing how the telegraph wires were affected while it lasted.

It was said in the early days that Rome, Constantinople, Moscow and Melbourne were seven-hilled cities, and to prove it they cited these seven hills:

1. Batman’s,
2. Western,
3. Eastern,
4. Emerald,
5. St. Kilda,
6. South Yarra,
7. Richmond.

However, there are no such places; there are some bumps and undulations still bearing some of these names, but, who would call South Melbourne, Emerald Hill? this is like other picturesque comparisons. One of the most eminent spots is the Old Cemetery, a singular spot for a great city to sacrifice when the world is struggling to make every city a garden city, and progress and town planning societies are being formed for the development of a healthy civic life and beautiful city surroundings.

In this chapter we have, while treating with the first comers, aimed to know their influence on the original inhabitants. The Yarra Tribe and the Western Port Tribe are gone, and therefore we must learn their history from the discoverer, explorer, whaler, sealer, surveyor, settler, convict, police, protector and Missionary. A strong feeling of making something bad, better was found alike in the protectors, Missionaries and police, but convicts who escaped are said to have shot them for food for their dogs, and some of the squatters acted malevolently towards them. The natives, however, passed away as an extinct species of animal dies when brought under new conditions. The fault was in themselves. They were possessed of the spirit of unenlightened revenge, which decimates any race. They hardly believed in natural death. When dying they
thought that they had been bewitched by a member of another tribe, and this led to tribal fights. Haydon, a writer in the forties, who lived in Melbourne at that time, says he went to see a sick native whom he knew well, and the native said to him that someone had put a hot brick in his stomach, whereas he died of inflammation of the kidneys. An idea like that led to murder, and sometimes to a massacre, and this was done treacherously, and brought retaliation. The same spirit operated in their dealings with Europeans, and bred distrust and loss of life at the hands of the white man. Major Mitchell, the explorer, distrusted them, and intimidated them, rather than encouraged them. The first shot fired at them by an Englishman was that fired by Captain Cook’s party in landing in Botany Bay when they challenged him, none, however, were killed.

With the discovery of Port Phillip by Murray, Bowen had a brush with them; a crowd were seen on shore, and Murray sent him to confer with them. He gave them bread and showed them how to eat it, and put shirts on them, and gave them other articles. They pretended to be friendly and then commenced spearing the party, and Bowen’s men replied with their guns, and thus at the very discovery of the port, blood was shed. This was repeated when Captain Collins came. Lieutenant Tuckey was attacked by a large party of them on the eastern coast of the port. Grimes, when he was surveying the district, met them, but does not seem to have entered into collision with them.

When we consider the extermination of the Tasmanians we are astonished at its rapidity. Collins went to Van Diemen’s Land in 1804, and in 1834, thirty years afterwards, the remnant are on Flinders Island. They fared better with us because we were a free colony. Robinson did not wish to take the native women away from the sealers, where they were being well treated, because the sealers helped them to locate the Tasmanian natives; yet he secured thirty Tasmanian women in the camps of the sealers, and put them on Flinders Island. King Billy, the last of the male Tasmanians, died of drink. Drink, impurity, change of food and other such conditions brought about their painless extinction. Grimes said that they seemed to have had the small pox among them, or a kindred disease, before the discovery of our port. The Protectors did all they could to save them; taught them to feed themselves under the new conditions, and kindly squatters gave them work. Probably their last corroboree near Melbourne was that in 1852, described by William Thomas. It took place some thirteen miles east of the city, and ended in a drunken revelry and the death of some of the natives. There are now only 450 natives in Victoria, and of these only 100 are full bloods; 350 of them are on the reserves. A. E. Parker is the secretary and superintendent under the present Board of Protection. He is distantly related to Parker, one of the old protectors.

He tells me that Parliamentary sanction is being sought for the abolition of all the native reserves except the one at Lake Tyers. Lake Tyers is named after Charles J. Tyers, the first Commissioner of Lands in Gippsland. He wrote for Latrobe a description of Gippsland in 1844. In this district the natives were more secure than anywhere else in Victoria, and thus this is their last home. There are about 100 outside the care of Government, and thus occasionally a family is still seen in Melbourne. The reserves were as follows, I give two dates because the entire reserve was not formed at once:-

Lake Tyers, 4000 acres, 1869-1886  
Coranderrk, 2450 acres, 1884-1893  
(Healesville) Condah, 2043 acres, 1869-1886  
Framlingham, near the Hopkins River, 540 acres, 1892  
Carlyle, near Wahgunyah, 22 acres, 1891  
Ellimyte, near Colac, 20 acres, in the eighties.

Some of these grew out of old missions, and our pioneers from the first compare favourably with all others in their benevolent treatment of the original inhabitants.
CHAPTER 4
STATESMEN AND STATE SERVANTS

When Melbourne was founded, Richard Bourke was Governor of Australia. He arrived on 2nd December, 1831, and left on 5th December, 1837, so his visit to Melbourne was in the last year of his Governorship. Roger Therry knew and described him in his book on New South Wales, and says that General Sir Richard Bourke, although he spelt his name differently, belonged to the same family as Edmund Burke, the celebrated orator. Bourke temporized with Batman, allowed him to treat with the natives, but finally proclaimed that every such treaty, bargain, and contract with the natives is void. The idea is expressed by one author, “that it is not the man who founds a State, but the community from which the man comes.” In spirit, Bourke approached Batman's treaty and settlement; and thus arranged for a sale of the lands of Melbourne by the Government. Batman and the others who had chosen sites for settlement had to compete with all comers for the possession of a few small town allotments in the very township he had founded. We have seen that our Old Burial Ground took us over the age of Lonsdale and Latrobe. Lonsdale came in September 1836. The first land sale was on 1st June, 1837, but some little time prior to Lonsdale’s coming, an official, George Stewart, came from Sydney apparently just to spy out what the first settlers were doing. He christened us Bear brass; some people think that he meant to write bare grass. From his report, Governor Bourke came to the conclusion that we needed a Police Magistrate, and that Captain Lonsdale was the right man. Charles Joseph Latrobe took over the reins of Government from Lonsdale on 1st October. He arrived in the bay on 30th September, 1839; that is, Lonsdale had full authority here for three years, and Batman’s Port Phillip Association for one year. When Latrobe arrived, Batman’s remains had been five months in the Old cemetery, yet in the year and four months that we were without either Police Magistrate or Superintendent we can see the natural dawning of civic life. To study the civic life of any country you must commence with the village, the village is the unit. In England in Anglo-Saxon times you had first the Family Moot, then the Hundred Moot, then the Folk Moot, and then the Witanagemot the wise men of the nation at the supreme council.

This represents graded self-government, which is the birth right of a British community. The Town Meeting and the Town Council saves the village both from Anarchy and Dominion.

Batman signing the Treaty with the Aboriginales
First Land Sales in Melbourne - 10th of June 1840.

So valuable was the Moot Meeting that to-day we have the phrase, A moot point, a point that can be only settled by a meeting. During our first twelve months the social contract prevailed.

Fawkner’s party came on 30th. August, 1835, and they agreed with Batman’s party to go south of the Yarra, and when they came back and a dispute arose between Batman’s brother, Henry Batman, and John Pascoe Fawkner, they called a public meeting, and appointed arbitrators, James Simpson, Dr. Thomson and John Aitkin, and so James Simpson, taking the lead, became our first Arbitrator or Referee, and then later a Magistrate. Several of these in Batman’s Association had been or were civil servants, and Batman's opponents ridiculed him as just filling the office of Lieutenant-Governor Arthur of Van Diemen’s Land. Nothing could be more unjust. Governor Arthur never treated Batman with partiality, and Batman always approached him as an applicant and a suppliant rather than as a partner in a company.

The idea was helped through by Mr. Henry Arthur, late Collector of Customs and nephew of the Governor, being associated with the company. Gellibrand was a solicitor, and was at one time the Attorney of Van Diemen’s Land. His name would rather suggest hostility to Governor Arthur, for Arthur not only dismissed him from the office of Attorney-General, but in a later dispute sought to remove him from the Bar; and he and his father were connected with a rival bank to that supported by the Government. John Helder Wedge was a Government Land Surveyor; he resigned this appointment to come to Port Phillip, and then didn’t settle here, but some of the family did. Cotterell was a late chief constable of Launceston. Collicott was a postmaster in Hobart; Solomon a merchant of Launceston; and Sams a sub-sheriff in Van Diemen’s Land. Some of these men never settled here, although promoting the association.

Duncan Mercer was in Van Diemen’s Land at the time Batman came here, and later, as the Letters from the Old Pioneers show, he came over and took up land among the original settlers.

Recently (1920) Lieutenant-Colonel T. M. Evans, of Hobart, made a presentation of several original documents relating to the Port Phillip Association to our Public Library. Among them is a List of Members forming the Port Phillip Association, signed by C. Swanston. The name of
George Mercer occurs three times, and there is a note saying that he had two shares in the association. The list is as follows:-

(1) Charles Swanston,
(2) Joseph Tice Gellibrand,
(3) William Gardiner Sams,
(4) James Simpson,
(5) John Batman,
(G) John Helder Wedge,
(7) John Sinclair,
(8) J Anthony Cotterell,
(9) Henry Arthur,
(10) Michael Connolly,
(11) George Mercer,
(12) Joseph Solomon,
(13) John William Robertson,
(14) Thomas Bannister,
(15) John Thomas Collicott,
(16) George Mercer,
(17) George Mercer.

George Mercer was an Indian Officer who spent some time in Britain and acted for the Association there. Michael Connolly was a dealer; John Sinclair an overseer of convicts at Launceston; J. & W. Robertson were drapers; Thomas Bannister was a sheriff, and James Simpson a Police Magistrate. Charles Swanston was a Captain in the East India Company’s service, and at one time a member of Governor Arthur’s Council, also a banker.

Organisations are sustained by bye-laws, rules, or articles. The Australian Natives Association (ANA) drew up theirs in 1873, the Institute of Architects theirs in 1872, the Old Colonists theirs in 1869, the Melbourne Athenaeum in 1868, but the old Mechanics Institute would have rules. In 1868 the St. Kilda General Cemetery drew up rules; the Melbourne General had made theirs in 1860.

The Law Institute of Victoria made theirs in 1859, the Chamber of Commerce theirs in 1855. The Melbourne Club had rules in 1839. Building societies, insurance societies, athletic clubs become constitutional when they frame their memoranda or their articles of faith. So from almost the first the Port Phillip Association had rules; these referring to land and sheep I have mentioned in the chapter on Batman. They were drawn up in Van Diemen’s Land. Melbourne received her first constitution at a public meeting held at Port Phillip 1st June, 1836, and among the papers given to our Public Library by Colonel Evans was a copy of the minutes of that meeting. They report that the following rules were adopted. I abbreviate them:-

(1) That James Simpson take the chair.
(2) That James Simpson with two assistants be appointed arbitrator on all questions excepting land questions.
(3) That they have power to impose fines.
(4) That all residents be united to become parties.
(5) That they bind themselves to no action at law against the arbitrator or arbitrators.
(C) That all parties bind themselves to communicate to the arbitrators all acts of aggression on aborigines or by aborigines at the earliest opportunity, and that the Arbitrators are empowered to act.
(7) That all parties protect aborigines but never teach them the use of firearms, or allow them to possess firearms.
(8) That the arbitrators collect the fines.
(9) That five shillings be given to every person who kills a wild dog.
(10) That Governor Bourke be asked to send a Magistrate.

Apart from the fact that the civil servant started with us from the beginning, and had fellowship in the communal understanding of the first year, many of our statesmen of the future commenced as civil servants. This was true of both Lonsdale and Cassell.

The mere fact that a man is associated with the civil service does not necessarily make him servile to the Governor. The familiarity with authority often makes a man sensible of the need of improvement, and civil servants have been identified with radical and progressive movements.

Moreover, Swanston, the banker, was in the Legislative Council of Tasmania, and voted against Arthur’s emigration scheme; so, too, Sams was identified with reform movements that aimed at trial by jury, and a Legislative Assembly for Van Diemen’s Land and a public meeting in Hobart commissioned him to carry their grievances to the King, as he was then paying a visit to England. He, however, entrusted that task to another. Batman really contravened the aims of the Government. They aimed to centralize population, in order to control the criminal population. Arthur held this view, and was indifferent even to free immigration to Van Diemen’s Land, lest the influx might lessen the demand for the bond-servant. John West asserts such in his History of Tasmania.

Bourke took this position, but held that the Port Phillip settlement should be placed under the authority of a Magistrate, because they could not keep people from there. I think this helps to explain his ungenerous treatment of Batman. Governor Arthur made it up with Gellibrand after the Port Phillip Association had been formed. One Sunday they met at what the Church of England calls the Sacrament, and before taking it, Arthur extended his hand to Gellibrand.

Gellibrand thought he wanted a prayer-book, and was about to pass him one, but Governor Arthur let him know that it was friendship he wanted, and they shook hands after an estrangement of years. Arthur a few months afterwards went to England, and Gellibrand along with Hesse, the Barrister, came here to die in the bush. His memorial is the Gellibrand Lighthouse at Williamstown. Not only was he a distinguished lawyer, but one of the most eloquent men in Van Diemen’s Land. Idealism and the call of Empire associated him with Batman. Some think he was killed by the natives, and others that he was lost in the bush. We know not where his bones are, but some of his relatives left their remains in our Old Cemetery.

Lonsdale, proceeding under directions from New South Wales, brought with him the Chief of Police, Joseph William Hooson, who in the course of time took his place in the Old Cemetery, and now sleeps in an unknown grave.

William Lonsdale was not only the first Chief Magistrate in Port Phillip, but also the first Commissioner-in-chief of the Military Forces here, a captain in the Fourth Regiment, the King’s Own. He was such when he came to New South Wales, but he entered the civil service holding the position of a Police Magistrate until Bourke sent him here. When Latrobe arrived he was transferred to the Treasury, and made sub-Treasurer. When Victoria obtained Separation, and Charles Joseph Latrobe, C.B., became Governor, Lonsdale was made our first Colonial Secretary. All the offices of Government started out of Lonsdale’s room, and secretaries and ministers multiplied as we evolve. He held the position of Colonial Secretary until the selection and installation of Forster, on the 30th August, 1850. And although his life represents our early history, we cannot fall back on a single biography of him. McCombie gives a sketch of him. Backhouse, the Quaker Missionary, visited him in 1837, and refers to the visit in his letters. Captain Fyans makes reference to him in his letters to Latrobe, and Blair has a short life of him in his Encyclopaedia. And in the care of our Chief Secretary are two or three massive volumes of his official letters that treat with all public events coming under the awareness of the Government in the beginning. But his letters are his best biography, and the best
history of his administration.

On his family grave were three stones, one of which was over a brother-in-law, H. W. H. Smythe. The wives of Lonsdale and Smythe were sisters. George Gordon McCrae informs me that Smythe was a very tall man, and known among the early settlers as Long Smythe.

When Backhouse visited Lonsdale, he proposed to him that an inquest should be held over the bodies of the natives, the same as over the bodies of the whites. This appealed to Lonsdale, and he acted on it. He had an all-round sense of justice, and in writing to Bourke, he urged that the right principle was to protect the aboriginals from injury, and then to punish them when they did wrong. McCombie says that he was always actuated by the purest of motives, and retained the love of the people throughout his administration.

We see a difference between these times and our own; then a State servant could be a Member of Parliament, now he cannot. Sir Thomas Mitchell, the Surveyor-General, contested Port Phillip at our first election (1843), but was rejected; however, he was returned later, but gave up his seat. He seemed to see something wrong in a man being both man and master at the same time, although it must come under a system of socialism. Therefore he retired, and very soon afterwards the law was made forbidding State servants to enter into politics. The Police Magistrate was our first ruler, and then came the Justice of the Peace, and the Civil Magistrate.

Lonsdale saw that they were appointed, and one of the earliest was Arthur Kemmis, J.P., whose grave was not far away from that of the Lonsdale family; his rather unique monument fell down in 1919 on the anniversary of his death. J. D. Lyon Campbell and Dr. Farquhar McCrae were also J.P’s, and are also in the Episcopalian ground. Lonsdale’s first letter runs as follows, and is sent to the Colonial Secretary, Sydney:

*Port Phillip, N.S.W.,*  
30th Sept.,  
1836.

*SIR, I have the honour to report for the information of His Excellency Major-General Sir R. Bourke, my arrival at Port Phillip, having entered the heads of the port in the morning of the 27th inst., and anchored yesterday at its northern extremity, near the entrance of the river, upon which the principal settlement has been formed. I have also to report that I proceeded this morning to the settlement and caused the Government notice dated 9th inst. to be posted and distributed about the place. The only persons of any respectability there are Mr. Batman and Mr. Thomson, who not only expressed themselves delighted with the protection that would be thus afforded them, but congratulated themselves upon it, and appear desirous to give me any information or assistance they can.

*No circumstance of any consequence appears to have happened since the last report that has been made to His Excellency; indeed I have not had time to make particular enquiries, but a brig sailing to-morrow for Launceston, I have availed myself of the opportunity to make the present communication, without waiting to make it more perfect. I have delivered the letter entrusted to me by you to Mr. Batman. I have the honour, etc.,*  

A. W. Lonsdale, PM.

Skene Craig came over with Lonsdale as a contractor to the Commissariat, and while not properly a civil servant, yet he derived an income from the service, and his work came
directly under the service in 1837, when Charles Howard arrived to take charge of the Commissariat Department. Craig’s story was given to me by Edward S. O. Howard, son of the Commissary, who was born in Melbourne in April 1839, and who is probably the oldest living Melbourne native. He is a grandson of Dr. Cussen, and Skene Craig was his god-father. He knew the Old Cemetery familiarly in the late forties, and attended Mrs. Craig’s funeral there. He says the first Post Office was in Batman’s house; the second was run by Baxter in March 1839. Craig was asked by the Government of New South Wales to take up the work, which he did at his house in Collins Street, which was situated where the Rialto is to-day, and which in the last few years, by a strange turn in fortune, has again become a post office, in the Collins Street West Post Office. Mr. Craig gave the letters out in his store. A month after his taking up the work he published a list of 300 unclaimed letters. He was one of the earliest merchants in Port Phillip. In the early fifties he carried on the whole of the Government contract for provisioning the gaols, police hospitals and kindred institutions. He was one of the first trustees of the Melbourne Savings Bank. Skene Craig was also elected to the Committee of the Mechanics Institute, and at last sailed for England in the large paddle steamer the Golden Age. He died at Woodburn, Torquay, on the 8th of December, 1879, in his 77th year. It is his son’s memorial which had on it the earliest date in the Old Cemetery. He did not have the Post Office for any length of time, but was soon succeeded by David Kelsh, who shortly after taking office had a letter carrier to assist him, and the delivery of letters by a postman commenced. It is said that postage stamps were not used in Melbourne until 1850. Captain Hepburn originated the overland post by a letter to The Colonist newspaper in Sydney. Bourke took up the idea, and the overland mail came.

First Overland Mail

Salaries were not high in those days. Lonsdale when he came only got £300 a year, Russell, £220, D Arcey and Darke, the other two surveyors, £200, Webb £200, McNamara £100. They contrast with the men sent on large salaries to New Guinea and the Northern Territory
to-day. Some of them got a little outfit money, so that they wouldn't go without proper provision to make a decent start.

Lonsdale was constantly in touch with Sydney; everything of importance had to be considered by the authorities there. An affidavit in The Patriot newspaper was sent; Arden and Strode, the publishers, changed their residence, which had to be reported to Sydney.

In July 1838 Lonsdale granted certificates of license to eight hotels, J. P. Fawkner, Michael Carr, G. W. Umphelby, Geo. Smith, Peter Scott, William Harper, Robert Fleming, and Will Sharp. This had to be ratified in Sydney.

Our first Chief Constable, Joseph Hoonon, was reported as guilty of corrupt practice, for allowing himself to be bribed by a prisoner whom he discharged two days before his sentence expired.

Lonsdale wrote to his superior that he had appointed Buckley at £60 a year and rations. Henry Batman is made District Constable and then recommended as Commissioner of Crown Lands, 28th March, 1837. In less than three years after this he is buried beside his brother in the Old Cemetery.

Every event was reported to Sydney, from the engagement of an assigned servant or the absconding of a prisoner, to the paying of Peers for the building of the Custom House, and the burning down of the prison by the Aboriginals. This, with the desire of New South Wales to make Melbourne a penal settlement, led to the cry of separation. It came as early as 1840. It is advocated in the first book ever published in Port Phillip.

Lonsdale grappled with the organization of the township, saw it rise and noted its immediate wants, such as its constables, courts, prisons, hospitals, slaughter-houses, means of preventing cattle stealing, buildings, and even the appointment of clergymen. When he landed he put his soldiers in Batman’s store, but continued to live on the vessel until a house was erected for him.

Occasionally he dined with Batman, but he pursued a dignified course from the first, and thoughtfully laid the foundations of our civic institutions.

If we haven’t the grave of Charles Joseph Latrobe in a neglected condition, we have the ruin of his villa at Jolimont; a portion of it remains at the back of Bedgood’s factory, and I presume will not much longer endure the attacks of age and vandalism. Latrobe brought the chalet with him. His wife was from Switzerland, hence the French name Jolimont, and the Chalet. He bought the estate at a sale here for £500. Fawkner asked no one to compete against him, but one man did so. Richard Howitt was present at the sale in 1840, and briefly reports it.

A writer of 1857 says that Latrobe came to us when our exports were about £100,000, and left us when they were about one hundred times that amount; that he saw the colony with 3000 inhabitants and before he left it had risen to 300,000 inhabitants; that on his arrival there were two schools, but when he left there were three hundred. He is described as a tall man, with good deportment and of a kindly disposition. His writings prove that he possessed a most interesting mind. His book, Alpenstock, which is in our Public Library, shows not only his rare powers as a descriptive writer, but reveals his deep interest in nature and in literature, which led him to desire open spaces, plant trees, and found our Library and University. He has been called spineless, but according to my reading of the minutes of our City Council, he seems to meet criticism with real character, but he had accepted a view of Government that led him to doubt whether Port Phillip was fit for self-government.

The Council desired to put slaughter-houses at the foot of Batman’s Hill; this he held was creating a nuisance, and when he conceded to them, it was found to be so. They wished to control the Yarra, but he rightly held that the Yarra was not under their jurisdiction, and after they had petitioned for his removal they felt that they had to carry a unanimous vote of
thanks to him for his firmness in refusing to allow convicts to land in Victoria. Kerr moved and Nicholson seconded. That the grateful thanks of the Council be presented to His Honour the Superintendent for his noble conduct in saving this city and province from the degradation of conversion into a penal settlement, which would have been the inevitable consequence of the landing of the convicted felons by the ship Randolph. Yet such was the mercurial condition of affairs that the very next month the City Council, learned that he had written to the Home Government that Port Phillip was not fit for self-government, in these words. No doubt the erection of the district of Port Phillip into a colony will at once remedy much that is anomalous in the present state of things, but one fact, if not clear before, seems to be demonstrated beyond dispute by the past proceedings of the district, that any form of constitution which may be proposed for the future colony, for some years to come at least, which takes the Government out of the hands of a Governor, executive and nominee council, and substitutes for the latter, a representative body, will be ill-suited to its real state and position, and will render the administration of its government as a district colony upon whomsoever it may devolve, a task of exceeding difficulty and responsibility.

The City Council carried an emphatic denial to this, and asked for all the rights and privileges of free-born British subjects, and expressed astonishment and regret that any attempt should have been made by the chief officer to prevent the colony of Victoria from obtaining a representative Legislature, and such an extent of civil liberty as had previously been promised to the colonies by Her Majesty's Government. We will see that first as Superintendent and then as Governor he frequently comes into our narrative. He was a religious man and belonged to the Moravians, and tolerating all religious belief the spirit of religious liberty grew during his administration. He underrated the disputes between St. Patrick's and the Protestant Hall. He came in The Pyramus on the 30th of September, and was officially received in Melbourne on 1st October, 1839. For eleven years he was Superintendent and for over three years Governor. He first controlled a few thousand pounds, and then handled three millions, at least that passed into the Treasury on the discovery of gold in Victoria. He saw our merchants insolvent in 1842, watched the great Separation and anti-transportation movements, and saw us rise to affluence, and demand the revision of the constitution; that came a year after he left us. His wife left just before the close of his office, and died soon after her arrival in England. The news of her death cast a shadow over his farewell. He left in The Golden Age, on the 5th May, 1854. He lived to be seventy-four years of age, dying on the 4th of December, 1875, in London. And at that time we had become one of the large cities of the Empire. He was not only our Superintendent, but in 1846 he practically ruled over both Port Phillip and Van Diemen's Land at least he was appointed by the Home Government to go to Tasmania, and report on the state of that colony after the suspension of Sir J. Eardley Wilmot, and in that capacity administered the affairs of the sister State for a few months. His salary at first was £800 a year, which later was increased to £1500. The sale of Jolimont, after he left Victoria, helped to give him a small fortune in later life.

The word Joey is said to have originated on the gold fields with its proclamations, they were called Charles Joeys, and eventually the word Joey became a term of barrack, as in Hotham’s day Toorak became a word of reproach.

Our City Council originated in 1842, but some writers say that it was prior to 1840 that it was proposed to divide the township into wards; if so the names were given to them sometime afterwards, for they were named Lonsdale, Latrobe, Bourke and Gipps ward. Wards existed in 1841, when the Market Commission was elected. Their names seem to express our development, our rise from the administration of Lonsdale to Latrobe, and above them from that of Bourke to Gipps. On Saturday, the 23rd of September, 1841, the Reverend Mr. Waterfield writes in his diary, “at about 8 a.m. His Excellency Sir George Gipps, arrived in the bay by the Sea Horse, from Sydney. May his visit be useful to the district. At 12 o’clock he landed in Melbourne, and was well received by the people. He seemed highly delighted. I went
to see him cross, and then returned and spent the day in preparation for the Sabbath. He came across in the punt because there was not as yet a bridge across the Yarra.” Garryowen describes the formal reception he held while here, and gives a hundred and fifty names of these who attended, and I have seen thirty of them on the stones which were in the Old Cemetery. I give some of them:

- T. E. Boyd
- W. H. W. Baylie
- George Airey (his wife is buried in the Cemetery)
- G. W. Cole
- J. D. Lyon Campbell
- Oliphant Denny
- Reverend James Forbes, (his body is now in the Melbourne General Cemetery)
- James Graham
- William Kerr
- Locke, r.
- C. McArthur
- J. H. Patterson
- Edward Sewell
- G. A. Robinson
- James Ballinger
- Dr. P. Cussen
- J. Cavanagh
- Skene Craig, James
- W. H. Dutton
- Arthur Kemmis
- the Lonsdale's, and their nephew
- Alfred Langhorne
- F. McCrae
- J. Orr
- J. J. Peers
- J. Stephen
- H. W. H. Smythe

and I think several others, but do not care to introduce debateable names. Many who were present went to England and died there. Many were only here for a time connected with the military or in some other itinerant work, and they went on to other colonies. Then we only know five hundred graves out of several thousand. These names show how many representative men were buried in the Old Cemetery. It is asserted that the wife of G. A. Robinson was buried in the Old Cemetery. In 1842 our City Council came and here also I can do no better than quote the Reverend William Waterfield: “on the 1st December, Thursday This was the day of the election of the first Town Council for Melbourne.” It was not ushered in by a ring of bells, for this plain reason, there were no bells to ring. The whole town was early alive to the important duties the electors were about to discharge. Two bands paraded the town, and enlivened the proceedings of the day.

Gipps ward and Latrobe ward were the most riotous, especially the former. Lonsdale and Bourke wards were the most orderly. At night the town sank down to its usual quietness. Friday: “Today Henry Condell (brewer) was elected the first Mayor of Melbourne, and Messrs’ Condell,
"Russell, Kerr, and Mortimer were elected the first Aldermen."

You will see that in these times West Melbourne was orderly and represented the aristocratic part of the city. Now it is all reversed, and our Cemetery, as we knew it, was a lung in a working man’s area. Twelve councillors were elected, from which four Aldermen were chosen. The greatest among them, William Kerr, who slept in our Old Cemetery. John Orr topped the poll for the Lonsdale ward. We find his name on the first roll, with the address St. Helier’s, Abbotsford; evidently three well-known men at different times lived on that estate, Orr, Curr, and Snowden. The grave of Orr was a heap of stones, its monument broken all to pieces. How many councillors of different epochs lay there, as great as the men who to-day appropriated their graves for a vegetable market. Orr was an early horticulturist. Dr. Patterson was a short time a councillor and our first immigration officer. J. S. Johnston was a councillor in 1844, and later he was promoted to our first Parliament. He established our first family hotel, and his wife, Henrietta, the companion of his labours, was buried in the Old Cemetery. Then as Armistead topped the poll for Lonsdale ward in 1847, and his monument stood in front of that of Batman. He was an auctioneer at the time of his death; in one account of him he is represented as a builder. Probably he was both. While in the council he took an interest in framing our building bylaws. William Clarke was a musician, and he ran against O’Shanassy when that gentleman an put up for a second term and defeated him. Several of Clarke’s family were buried in the Old Cemetery, and over their grave was a stone with the Masonic symbols. Westby was the first English Catholic, and the first of all Catholics who went into the City Council, and O’Shanassy was the first Irish Catholic. One day I met the Historian of the Roman Catholic Church in Melbourne, searching for the grave of Westby. Some think that he was buried there, if so it is in a nameless grave.

When John Pascoe Fawkner became insolvent, Adam Pullar succeeded him in the council, but died the same year, and his remains were buried in a peculiar oblong tomb. Timothy Lane represented Gipps ward. He was a popular publican. He did not find in his spirits the elixir of life, but in due time he found his way to the Old Cemetery, and his family built a quaint antique tomb over his grave. His only surviving child is Mrs. Dr. McCarthy. John Fogarty, a baker, living in Condell Street, was returned unopposed for Fitzroy when it became a ward, and the word Collingwood was on the stone, which dated back to 1854.

We, however, find that word is in the Register in the Statist’s office in the early forties. Francis Clark, two of whose children were in the Old Cemetery, ran for Collingwood along with William Kerr and others; Kerr was at the top of the poll and Clarke at the bottom. Charles Callow at one election ran against McCombie, and was hopelessly defeated; his name is also on the stones. Michael Cashmore was the first Jew in the City Council. No Mayor or Lord Mayor that I know of died in Melbourne until the Melbourne General Cemetery was opened. Condell and Moore went to England.

The name of Thomas Nicholson was in our graveyard, he was a cousin of William N Nicholson, the father of the ballot, and our Mayor in 1851. He was also related to Germain Nicholson.

Two Town Clerks were buried there, the first, John Charles King, who took office after the first election, that in 1842. Gurner had filled the office while the corporation was being organized, and King completed the work that Gurner began. King’s book of Corporation Bylaws is in our Public Library. Garryowen accuses him of having plotted for office, but the community regarded him very highly, sending him to England during the Anti-Transportation movement. He was one of the earliest members of St. Patrick’s Society, but withdrew from it when it showed a desire to support the Roman Catholic Church. We will see him again.

In the creation of wards Elizabeth Street became the dividing line running north and south, and Bourke Street the dividing line running east and west, thus Bourke Ward. Gipps
BOURKE STREET
Lonsdale Ward
Latrobe Ward
YARRA RIVER

The first minutes of the City Council is for the 9th of December, 1842. Waterfield’s journal gives Thursday, 1st December, as the day of election, and the press reports show that he has given the correct date. On Friday, 9th December, the first council met and elected the Mayor and first Aldermen. They held their first meeting in the Royal Hotel, in Collins Street, owned by J. W. Cowell. Two Aldermen were elected for six years, and two for three years; an equal number of votes were cast for Condell and Dr. Patterson for the Mayoralty, the presiding officer, who was Dr. Patterson himself, and the scrutineers decided in favour of Condell. On the motion of Fawkner it was resolved that the chamber in future be open to the public.

One of the earliest acts of the council was to carry a vote of congratulation to the Queen on her providential escape from assassination. The allowance of Mayor was placed at £350 a year, but during the first ten years it averaged £300 a year. The Town Clerk’s salary was fixed at £250, and also that of the Town Surveyor. We have seen that John Charles King was elected Town Clerk. William Weston Howe was made Surveyor. The Market Commissioner’s servants were all taken over and placed under the Market Committee appointed by the council. The byelaws of the Market Commission were at once revised. Mr. Simpson accepted the office of Town Treasurer on the condition that the Bank of Australasia became the Bank of the council.

At their third meeting, the council resolved to build the Town Hall, and a committee was appointed to consider the matter; the feeling was that one could be built for six hundred pounds. It was not till seven years afterwards that they commenced to build. For their temporary accommodation they considered the Mechanics Institute, the Lamb Inn, St. John’s Tavern, and S. McDonald’s Auction-rooms. The Mechanics’ Institute was chosen, and they remained there until the Town Hall was built. Latrobe submitted five sites on lands where grants could be had from the Government for the hall. The present site was chosen at once, but the council wavered; Kerr wished the hall built near St. James and suggested the garden of the Reverend Adam Compton Thomson, the incumbent of St. James. The Government grant of the land was made in 1849. The first rate struck by the council was one shilling in the pound.

The seal of the City of Melbourne is a shield, on which is the red cross of St. George, and in the centre of it the Imperial Crown. It is surrounded by a wreath of wattle, and surmounted by the kangaroo. In the four divisions, formed by the cross, are the symbols of Melbourne’s early industry. First oil, second wool, third tallow, fourth overseas trade. First the whale, second the sheep with the golden fleece, third the bull and fourth the old sailing ship. Judge Willis gave us the motto which is on the scroll beneath, vires acquirit eundo. One day as Willis was returning home he met young Condell, the son of the Mayor, and asked if he knew the passage in the fourth book of Virgil’s Aeneida fama malune quo non aliusd velocius allum, mobilitate viget, viresque acquirit eundo, and he gave the youth a paper with the three Latin words written on it, saying that he thought them a fitting motto for the seal. The youth gave the paper to his father and the passage became the motto of the city. The words mean that every stop in our history shall be marked by an increase in our strength. It is the message of evolution to a young community. The seal was engraved by Thomas Ham, a son of the Reverend Mr. Ham, a brother to the man who in the eighties became Mayor of the city. The seal was slightly altered in 1852, when the word City was substituted for Town, but the symbolism was not changed, and this alteration came nearly five years after we had become a city. The seal itself was decided on at the third meeting of the Town Council, 20th
December, 1842, and arrangements were made at once to engrave it. The report of the committee was presented on 2nd January, 1843, and ran as follows: Your committee have given much attention to the carrying out of the trust imposed in them, in such a manner as to give satisfaction to the council and at the same time conform to the established laws and usages of heraldry. With this view they have availed themselves of the assistance and advices of several gentlemen of acknowledged taste, and they are happy to say that they have succeeded in obtaining a device, which they feel assured will meet with general approbation.

The device which the committee recommend for the adoption of the council is the following Shield Argent, St. George’s Cross, Gules surmounted by the Royal Crown of Great Britain, Quartering, Whale, Golden Fleece, Bull and Ship proper. Crest, Kangaroo demi coupe regardant shield ornamented by wattle branches proper, the whole encircled by a wreath. Town of Melbourne incorporated 1842 Motto Vires acquirit eundo. Your committee were so fortunate as to meet with a young gentleman, a son of the Reverend Mr. Ham, from Birmingham, here, on his way to Sydney, who is by profession an engraver, and from the specimens of his workmanship submitted for the inspection of your committee is evidently a very superior workman. To this gentleman and your committee has entrusted the engraving of the town seal, in accordance with the device now submitted. In this your committee have overstepped the bounds of their commission, but the vessel by which Mr. Ham is a passenger, being on the eve of sailing, time did not permit of awaiting the decision of the council, and it was considered of the greatest importance that the seal should be engraved in a style which will be creditable to the council and to the corporation, which could scarcely otherwise have been the case. The seal, as designed by the committee, will not be in the hands of the council for probably a month or six weeks. Your committee therefore recommend the adoption in the interim of a temporary seal so that there may be no hindrance to the operations of the council.

The first rate struck was a shilling in the pound. A committee was appointed not only to report on a town rate, but also a police rate, a water rate and a lighting rate. It was the intention of the council to secure for the town at once good streets well lit and an abundant supply of pure water. Their ideal, however, only came gradually, and the water cart and the pumps on the Yarra remained down to the fifties. At the time the council was formed the support of the police was divided between the Government and the Town Council. The council thought, however, that they should control them, and early turned their attention to the prevention of criminals entering Port Phillip, and they not only aimed to keep Melbourne free from convicts, but commenced to fight for a free continent. In February 1843, we read in the minute book of the council that they have resolved that all assigned servants shall be removed from private employment, and all prisoners who are servants of Government. They practically put a stop to the employment of any convict servant from another colony in Melbourne.

The Mayor and corporation, which was the only representative body in existence then, entertained the first anticolonial conference ever held in Australia. John West, the Tasmanian Representative, speaks of our splendid hospitality. William Nicholson was Mayor, and one of our delegates. Our ladies made the banner, the first Australian flag, almost the same flag that we have now. Evan Evans has slightly modified it. It had a deep blue surface, spangled with the stars of the Southern Cross. The colours of the Union Jack were in it as today, but in addition it had a white border, with the date of the conference in letters of gold. When the Mayor presented it to them, he said: “Gentlemen, I pray that you receive it in the name of the people of Port Phillip, and may it remain nailed to the mast until these colonies are emancipated from convictism.” The Raven, commanded by Captain Bell, first hoisted this flag of the league, and soon it was carried over every sea. This conference sat in Melbourne February 1851, and was succeeded by the conference of the united colonies held in Sydney on the 1st of May, 1851. May Day, by a strange coincidence, to-day stands as a trade and labour
day throughout the world. Mr. Young, a mechanic in Launceston, put labour in to this movement by maintaining that free mechanics should not be called on to compete with convict labour. This was the beginning of Trade unionism in Van Diemen’s Land, and it was the first effort to protect labour here. The Australian native also joined his forces to the League. Its watch word was Australians are on hence The Australasian League. At there only five colonies corresponding number to the stars in the cross, and New Zealand was one of them. Their favourite song was, Rule, Britannia, Britons Never Shall be Slaves. Britain was addressed as The Mother of Nations, and most of the expressions that have come into our later plea for Federation were in use then. Transportation, it was held, might be a fair means of destroying crime, but it was not fair to put all the deported men on to one community; they should be scattered throughout the Empire, where being absorbed into new communities ignorant of their crimes there was real hope for their regeneration. A large sum of money was raised to carry on the movement, and each of the Melbourne delegates subscribed a hundred guineas. It was a league and solemn engagement, to achieve the freedom of their common country. They said: “We cast ourselves on the goodness of Almighty God, and dare all hazards that our children may be virtuous and our country free.” Long before the conference this movement was at work in Melbourne, and King and Kerr were actually engaged in it. While Fitzroy was on his visit here The Randolph came in, loaded with convicts, and the people resolved to oppose their landing. To the eternal credit of Latrobe he stood by them, and Fitzroy saw that he could not force convictism on Melbourne; so the vessel sailed away to another place. The word memorial had a different sense in these days to what it has just now. early settlers memorialized Government for land, and memorials were used to stay transportation; thus King went home to memorialize the British Government on the evil of the system. John West says: It was the most important colonial agitation of modern times. And yet they dug up the bones of King and the other fearless men who stayed the current of colonial degeneration.

At a public meeting £2000 was raised, this sum later on being increased to £20,000, and of the two thousand at least seventeen hundred pounds was given by the men buried or directly represented in the Old Cemetery. Jackson, Rae & Co. gave one hundred guineas, W. M. Bell one hundred, Joseph Raleigh, James Graham, George Ward Cole, Fulton and Smith, Heape and Grice, Turnbull Bros., J. Murphy, George Urquhart, G. S. Brodie, McCombie & Co., Nelson and Johnson, also gave a hundred. David Young gave fifty, also David Ogilvie and Henry Budge, George Haskell, Sayce and Cheetham, James Gill, D. S. and M. Benjamin, A. Broadfoot, William Patterson, and John Hunter, gave twenty-five pounds. Robert Kerr, Smith and Kirk, and Henry Jennings gave ten pounds; Thomas James Everist, John Maclehose, William Smith, Brisbane, Thomas McIntyre, five pounds; John Fogarty three pounds, and probably others of whose names I am doubtful. Many of our sleepers in the pioneer ground gave later. John Jones Peers was a leader in the agitation. The anti-transportation question was revived in 1863, with the intention of the Imperial Government to send convicts regularly to Western Australia. The second Anti-Transportation League was formed on the 9th of October, 1863; it only lasted two years. Edward Cohen was then Mayor of Melbourne, and was succeeded by John Thomas Smith; both of these men took an interest in the movement. So also did Fawknner, Dr. Cairns, Sir Francis Murphy, John Charles King, John O’Shanassy, Honourable Haines, and many other leading men. E. G. Fitzgibbon, Town Clerk, was secretary. Edward Wilson while in England brought the matter before the British Government, and on his return to Victoria was testimonialised by the League. Its minute book is in the possession of Edward Lyon, bookseller, in Fitzroy. The League entered into communication with C. E. Childers, who was at that time a member of the British Parliament, also Henry Moor, formerly of Melbourne, who represented Brighton, Sussex, in the Home Parliament, and he offered his services to the League. William Westgarth was in England organizing the colonists residing there to bring pressure on the Government. One member of the League, Mr. Embling, said that 600 men in Collingwood were prepared to go to Western Australia and prevent the
landing of the convicts, but the League resolved to adopt only constitutional methods.

John Charles King, the Town Clerk in 1851, in taking up the work of representing the anti-transportation movement in England, gave up his position as Town Clerk, and was succeeded by William Kerr, who had resigned his position in the City Council.

The following are all our Town Clerks, and the dates of their terms of office:-

1842-1851; John Charles King;
1851-1856, William Kerr;
1856-1890, Edmund Gerald Fitzgibbon;
1891-1915, John Clayton;
1915-23, Torrington George Ellery;
1923, W. Valentine McCall.

Henry Field Gurner, our first Crown Solicitor, filled the office of Town Clerk while the council was being organized. The civil service prepared the community for incorporation. Lonsdale was appointed Mayor during the time that the Elective Council was being chosen. Major St. John, Alderman for Lonsdale Ward; J. D. Pinnock for Latrobe Ward; Robert Hoddle, for Bourke Ward; and Samuel Raymond for Gipps Ward; and with them were appointed temporary assessors and roll collectors. All were Government servants with the exception of the roll collectors, and they prepared the machinery for the first municipal election.

William Brunton Smith was seven times Mayor, and Hennessy five times Lord Mayor. You can see how many of them gave their names to streets in the city. Each year the Mayor is voted an allowance, just now about £1500.

A quaint altar-like tomb stands over the grave of an infant in the Old Cemetery, George Murray Nankivell, and recalls an old family, one of whom is a partner in the firm of Mallesson, Stewart, Stawell and Nankivell; recently James Cooper Stewart, the senior partner, died, aged 83; he had served the City Council for 50 years. He entered it in 1870, in 1885 he was Mayor, and to his own surprise was re-elected in the following year. He declined to sit, and was fined one shilling. In 1895 he retired from the council, and became City Solicitor, and was regarded as one of the best Common Law solicitors in Melbourne. He came here in 1857, when 21 years old, having studied law in Edinburgh, and although belonging to the second and third periods of our history, he comes in touch with the first by his association with Nankivell and other old pioneers, and he served the city in a leading position longer than any other man.

The man who held the Mayoralty the longest was the Honourable John Thomas Smith. He was not only an old colonist in Victoria, but a native of New South Wales, born in Sydney in 1810. He came here in 1837 under an appointment as teacher in the Church of England Aboriginal Mission Station, then on the site of the present Botanical Gardens. On leaving the station he took the advice of Captain Lonsdale and devoted himself to business, and in a few years made a fortune. He built the Queen’s Theatre, where Coppin performed. He was seven times Mayor of the city. On one occasion Sir Charles Hotham said to him: There is no person in this country to whom I am more indebted than to you, Mr. Mayor.

In 1853 the first fancy-dress ball in Victoria was given by him in the Queen’s Theatre, and it was a great success. The many benevolences of the city received his support, and the London Indian Relief Board sent him an illuminated address for his services in collecting money for famine relief works in India. He was made a town councillor at the first election in 1842, and in 1851 he was elected to Parliament. He remained long enough in Parliament to be known as the Father of the Legislative Assembly.

He resigned his seat in 1853, and was out for a year or two, but from 1850 to 1875 he was continuously a member. He was the first man initiated into the Masonic Order in Victoria. On one occasion he offered a silver cup for the best essay on “Reducing the Working Man’s
Hours of Labour,” the prize being won by A. T. Best, of Fitzroy. Condell was a brewer, and Moor a solicitor. Dr. Palmer is well known as an eloquent Statesman. He opposed the cutting of the Hawthorne Railway through his property. Peter Davies was an advocate of temperance. Dr. Eades is depicted by a writer as a small man, always in a good humour, and apparently a capable man. He is represented as lecturing on the human body, and using a red handkerchief on a skeleton, so manipulating it as to show the movements of the stomach. Cohen, like Ham, was an auctioneer. Wragge was a Collins Street chemist. Amess a successful contractor. Paterson was a coal merchant. Pigdon was one of the contractors to Parliament House. Meares was a draper in Bourke Street. McEacharn, if I remember rightly, was a merchant. C. Smith was a financier, Hennesy was a baker, Aikman a merchant, Stapley an architect, and Swanson was a builder.

One of the earliest servants appointed by the council was the Town Surveyor, William Weston Howe. He started levelling down the hills. At one end of Collins Street there was an Eastern Hill, and at the other the Western Hill; and rivulets ran through the township; one was called the River Enscoe, which has been diverted into our drainage system. His plans gave form to the contour of the town. He thought out most of our problems that appear on the physical features of the town, such as the first wharves, the first bridges. As early as 19th January, 1843, I learn from the minutes of the City Council, that he is to call for tenders for a foot-bridge over the Yarra. He presented the first plan for supplying the town with water. He proposed to pump the water up from near Dight’s Falls; the rapid current there purified the water, which was to be conducted to reservoirs on Eastern Hill and Flagstaff Hill. Thus the town would not only be supplied with water for domestic purposes, but would have abundance for extinguishing fires. Howe was succeeded by Laing, and Laing by Blackburn, who was identified with the initiation of the Yan Yean supply of water. William Weston Howe made our first maps. He was ordered to make a plan of the town with a scale of two chains to the inch, and he made one of the first plans of Collingwood for which the council specially rewarded him. There are a dozen different classes of maps of Melbourne. Melbourne is divided into political, judicial, and military districts. The political districts are three-fold, Federal, State, and Civic, thus you may have many maps of Melbourne and all different. Men like Broadbent and Moulton bring out road and street maps, and there are railway maps. The sheriff’s district is a Bailiwick, and there is a political division called a county that has very little relation to politics, but appears in our school maps; the cartography of Melbourne is therefore a study in itself with a distinct history. We, by the reproduction of maps in this book, have aimed to show the development of the city.

There is no municipal map for 1842, when the town was incorporated, but the first roll is still extant, which reveals to us the geography of Melbourne as it then was; for instance, there was a grave in the Old Cemetery of William Laney Brodie. I often wondered who he was, because there were other Brodies at that time, and I got a clue from the roll when I read that he resided at Moonee Ponds. Moreover, I had authority for saying that Moonee Ponds was one of our earliest named places. Similarly on the grave of James Malcolm’s wife is the name Olrig, the name of his estate. Knowing him to have been our greatest pastoralist, I wondered where this was, and found from the roll that it was his Melbourne residence near Merri Merri Creek.

Pentridge was then more in evidence than Brunswick, for Brunswick is put on the roll as near to Pentridge. Coburg as a name did not come until 25 years later. Then there is no Brighton and Middle Brighton. Brighton is designated geographically as Big and Little Brighton. Our present divisions of the suburb are comparatively recent. Pascoe Vale is Pascoeville, the Werribee is sometimes Weirabee, and sometimes Werriby, and the Yarra is always duplicated Yarra Yarra. Williamstown and Richmond are on that old roll. The names on it are biographical, they are the same as these on the stones in the Old Cemetery in hundreds of cases. I am afraid
that if that roll is called at the Resurrection from every grave some representative will come forth to join the sheeted dead of the forties.

In the second year of the City Council’s existence, tenders were called for boundary marks, so that the exact boundaries of the council’s jurisdiction might be clear. John Dowling and Martin Tracey were the successful tenderers. They agreed to put up these land marks for £12 15 shillings, and periodically we find the Mayors tour the boundaries of the town, and report to the council “that they have done the boundaries.” On the stone of the wife of Steven’s Butcher, is the phrase, Batman’s Swamp. That swamp is akin to the stream that ran down Elizabeth Street in the wet weather, and the other features of our primitive village; it kept the city from developing westward. We come to a full stop at Spencer Street, and when Lonsdale came with his body of civil servants, they built on the blocks bordered by King Street and Spencer Street, Collins Street and Lonsdale Street. Here were our first Government quarters, here Smythe who is buried in the Lonsdale grave had his establishment. Here our first Clerk of Works pitched his tent. Here was our temporary hospital and our temporary prison barracks, our government work shop, military barracks, surveyors officers and soldiers huts, police, guard-room; all these congregated together chiefly on two blocks facing Spencer Street. This you will observe on Hutchinson's map, which is inserted in another part of the book. The City Fathers seemed to think that when they had struck Batman’s Swamp they had gotten to the end of their town world. There too were other swamps, in Brunswick and Collingwood, and a gully ran where are now our Fitzroy Gardens, The story of the draining of the city and the development of its sanitation has never been told; pure water comes with deep drainage. The Yan Yean water works were opened in 1857. That long period in which we were evolving a good water scheme and a good sewage undoubtedly told on the health of the community. Now when you look on Melbourne, with toilet houses and subterranean conveniences at every crowded point, you forget the old night man, the water tank, the water cart, and the laborious way by which we came to the Yan Yean water supply and to deep sewage. Captain Cook argued that the Maoris could keep their pahs clean, while in Madrid they emptied their slops in the middle of the street.

Prior to the foundation of the Metropolitan Board of Works, all these things were vigilantly attended to, and the health of the community protected by the councillors, who now slept in the Old Cemetery.

It was prior to the formation of the Board of Works that Mr. James Mansergh, one of Britain’s greatest authorities on sanitary engineering, submitted several alternative schemes to our council, for deep sewage for the city. William Thwaites examined them, and we started work in May 1892, on a scheme which was completed in 1897, and which provided deep drainage for a city of a million people. The penstock or pipe allowing the discharge of sewage from the centre of Melbourne was opened by Lord Brassey in February 1898. When piercing the main under the Yarra, the water broke through into the air lock chambers where men were working and six lives were lost. The pumping station is at Spotswood, and the sewage farm at the mouth of the Werribee, the Gehenna where the offal of the city is made to do service in fertilizing one of the formerly barren spots of Victoria.

One day while wandering in the Old Cemetery, I met Mrs. White, the sister of Mrs. William Thwaites. She told me that three of the Thwaites (children) were buried there; her grandfather had come to Victoria in 1841. They had been friends of the Crossley's since that time. Her brother was Engineer-in-Chief of the Melbourne and Metropolitan Board of Works from the inception of the Board; he had known both Coode and Mansergh. He received his degrees M.A. and M.C.E. in the Melbourne University. He had oversteered the formation of our roads and railways, and the building of our bridges before the Board came into existence and being profoundly interested in hydraulics, had anticipated the work of Coode and Mansergh. He became Engineer-in-Chief to the Board in 1891 at its creation. Thus did this
cultured woman, versed in our literature, and familiar with our history from its commencement, talked to me in that old graveyard of her eminent and learned brother. Her grandfather on his arrival lived in one of Batman’s houses.

We have seen in our day the rise of this great public body. Board of Works organizations come and go. Garryowen tells of two defunct bodies, The Market Commission and the District Council of Bourke. Probably our first board was a road board. Our first surveyor was Robert Russell, who came here on 5th October, 1836. The instructions given to him by the Surveyor-General of New South Wales are in the Library of the Victorian Institute of Surveyors. They are dated the 10th of September, 1836. He is to familiarize himself with all documents already in existence and to co-operate with the officers of The Rattlesnake in their survey of the basin.

To survey rivers, report who occupies lands, and where they have sat down. Trace the ranges and give the heights, shapes and inclinations of the mountains. Report on atmospheric influences and temperatures. Note where roads, ferries, and bridges should be placed. Describe the flora, especially the timber. Describe what land is suitable for agriculture; and make his working maps on a scale of two inches to the mile. His map of Melbourne is in this book. Our next surveyor was Robert Hoddle, to whom we often refer. He arrived here with Governor Bourke in March 1837, and lived to the advanced age of 88. He died on the 24th of October, 1881 in his house in Bourke-street. His only daughter was buried in the Old Cemetery.

He conducted our first land sale. He is represented in our picture standing on a fallen tree conducting the sale. His commission was fifty-six pounds, and for this he took a block in Elizabeth Street, extending from Little Collins Street to Bourke street; it is said that he lived to see it worth a quarter of a million pounds. There were the Government surveyors who are distinct from Howe and Laing, who were appointed by the city. Their maps are in the Land Office, and I have to thank Mr. A. J. Marshall, in that office, for placing them at my disposal. The record of every allotment sold or granted by Government in Melbourne is given at the end of the previous chapter of this Book.

Captain Clarke, better known as Sir Andrew Clarke, while as interesting a man as Hoddle, yet he cannot have the same place in the history of Melbourne as either Russell or Hoddle, but I think his successor, Alexander John Skene, might; he became Surveyor-General in 1868, an office no longer in our Ministry. He laid out our first railway, and gave us our first reliable map of Victoria, and later one of Australia. He came out to Melbourne in The Clyde in 1839, and for a long time worked in obscurity. In his earlier days he laid out Queenscliff. It was said of him in these days that he knew every tree from the Werribee to the South Australian Border. He retired in 1886. One of the greatest of our civil servants was James Blackburn. Clarke and Skene were State servants, Blackburn a servant specially of the city. This surveyor sleeps in a nameless grave in the Old Cemetery, beside some others of his family so says his grandson, who sat for a time as M.L.A. for Essendon. He was killed in 1854 through his horse colliding with a tree during the old ceremony of doing the boundaries. He had entered into the Government service in 1853, and was now succeeded as an engineer by Matthew B. Jackson, who developed his plans.

There were two Blackburn’s, this pioneer hydraulic engineer, and James Blackburn, the well-known surveyor of later years. In 1851 he proposed the straightening of the Yarra, a proposal afterwards seconded by Coode’s report, and which has found materialization in the Coode Canal. Blackburn’s propositions, Garryowen affirms, were:-

(1) A railway to the port.
(2) An improvement of the river.
(3) A canal, but the canal was to commence at Princes Bridge,
and was to come out into Hobson’s Bay at Port Melbourne, and would be 4928 yards long.

All his proposals are now realities. His work providing for the sanitation of our growing city, and his plans for pure water from the Yan Yean, entitle him to our everlasting gratitude, and although he is denied a monument over his remains, yet every fountain in the city is a monument to him. However, the railway to Hobson’s Bay is on Hoddle’s earliest maps. Hoddle apparently preceded him in that.

You may approach the Yan Yean Reservoir either from the Yan Yean station, 22 miles from Melbourne, or from the Whittlesea station, 25 miles from Melbourne. It is about 600 feet above the level of the sea, among the foothills of the Plenty Ranges. An artificial lake of great beauty 10 or 11 miles in circumference, there are few places and no other sheet of fresh water comparable to it within the vicinity of Melbourne, and not only is it one of the finest sheets of water, but one of the grandest sights within two hours journey from the Post Office. It is situated on the old estate of Thomas Hutchins Bear; Bear is a name familiar to these who know our graveyard. There are the remains of his house or castle, built by his overseer mistaking his instructions, just overlooking the reservoir. Settlers were in this district eighty years ago. Thomas Wills is said to have been the first land owner, then followed the Bears, Sherwins and others; around this district roamed our earliest bushrangers,

(Bears Lagoon in northern Victoria is named after John Bear who held the Serpentine Creek Station)

The first of them was taken on a farm at Glen Vale, two and a half miles from Whittlesea; the farm is now owned by Mr. Hughes, a North of Ireland man. The great reservoir is fed by an aqueduct that runs between two rows of pines for four or five miles to the Toorourrong Reservoir, which collects the water supply from the Plenty Mountains by means of the Wallaby, Silver, and Upper Plenty streams. Again to the south at Reservoir a place 14 miles nearer to the city there are distributing reservoirs, which were built in 1864, and Watt’s River in recent times has added to our supply, entering into the system at this point through a long aqueduct, this work was completed in 1891.

The Yan Yean Reservoir is being beautified by plantations of forest trees, and is therefore not only the centre of our water supply, but a nursery for the reafforestation of Victoria. It is partly surrounded by an embankment 3200 feet in length, and 30 feet in height; its area is 1360 acres; they commenced to build it in November, 1853, and the water from it first flowed into the city on 27th December, 1857. It cost about £000,000. Its volume has recently been considerably increased by the O’Shanassy Water Supply, a weir on the Yarra, near Warburton, whose water is conducted to the Surrey Hills Reservoir.

We have never had a broken reservoir, and a deluge from it, but in the general flood of 1878, the bridge over the Plenty, carrying the Morang aqueduct, was broken, and the news being late in reaching Melbourne, we were three days without water. Such trouble is not likely to occur again, as the water supply of the city is being further safeguarded by the creation of suburban service reservoirs in the higher districts. The first of these was built at Essendon. It was completed in 1881, and is 210 feet above the level of the sea.

The city did not seem in a hurry to dispense with its old water works on the banks of the Yarra. We read in the minute book of the City Council that Mr. F. Cooper, of the Water Works Company, is given permission in 1853 to erect an additional establishment east of Princes Bridge, to supply water eastwards. And about the same time pumps were erected on the south bank of the Yarra to supply Prahran. The Yan Yean water supply led to the creation of fountains; they were first proposed in 1859. In 1861 Thomas Napier gave the city three. Earlier than this a fountain had been erected at the corner of Swanston Street and Collins Street, but being in the way of traffic about the year 1861 it was removed to the Carlton Gardens. With the drinking fountains came also the street urinals; they were proposed in 1858, and were in existence
in 1859, erected in the leading streets such as Bourke Street and Stephen Street. It is interesting to remember that the streams that feed our Yan Yean water supply come from Mount Disappointment, a mountain mass in the centre of the Plenty Ranges, discovered by Hume and Hovell, and so named because they failed to see from it the ocean. Edwin Gill, whose grave was in the Old Cemetery, was Superintendent of Stores in the Lands Department; he died at his residence, Hasselburg, East St. Kilda. He came to the colony in 1849, and was the first Government storekeeper and superintendent of immigrants; later he became a member of the firm of Turner & Gill, wholesale stationers, Flinders Lane. This firm was dissolved, and Mr. Gill established a fuse factory on the banks of the Yarra. In 1870 he re-joined the public service, and at the time of his death, which occurred suddenly 4th June, 1891, he was arranging a system and making plans for the reconstruction and amalgamation of the various store departments of the civil service. For thirty years he was a Justice of the Peace. The Reverend Dr. Strong conducted the funeral service. His brother, the Reverend Win. Wyatt Gill, B.A., LL.D., translated the Bible into the Mongolian language for the British and Foreign Bible Society, and was the author of the *Myths and Songs of the South Pacific*, a book to which Max Mueller wrote the preface.

Our early police were represented in the Old Cemetery by Joseph William Hooson. He, with two others came over with Lonsdale. William Wright, Henry Batman and H. E. P. Dana were also buried there. There was a broken stone, on which were the right. I have often wondered whether this stone was over Wright’s grave. He succeeded Henry Batman on 5th August, 1838. He was a transported man who on release had entered the police service.

He was nicknamed the Tulip, because of his dress. No nicknames appeared on our tombstones. They will not count in heaven, however much they are appreciated elsewhere. Joseph William Hooson was one of our first constables. He seems to have been a valiant man. He fought in the Peninsular wars under General Moore and the Duke of Wellington, but it was not until 1849 that he received his medal; on one side of it was the image of Victoria crowning the Iron Duke with a laurel wreath, and a representation of the British lion couchant, and the names of the battles of Vimera, Corunna, Badajoz, Vittoria, St. Sebastian and Nive, the battles which Hooson took part in; and on the other side of the medal was a relief of Queen Victoria. This is reported in the *Port Phillip Gazette* of 22nd November, 1849, a day after the veteran received his medal. Hooson, Henry Batman (our first chief constable) and William Wright, our third, were all buried in the Old Cemetery, and their remains rest in unknown graves.

The history of the police, like all other institutions, turns into three periods. In the first we have only constables and chief constables. Mr. O’Callaghan, in his list of the police, records that Robert Day was our first constable (1830). Henry Batman is chief in 1837, William Wright 1838, F. Falkiner 1841, Charles Brodie 1842, Joseph Bloomfield 1848. In this period they are much concerned about the aboriginals, and Villiers, with the authority of Lonsdale, the Chief Magistrate, forms a body of native police. In 1842, Henry E. Pulteney Dana organizes the native mounted police; he is a brave and interesting man, who died of pneumonia at the Melbourne Club in November 1852. He had been out hunting bushranger’s, and the exposure and fatigue brought on pneumonia. *The Argus* of 20th November, 1852, thus notices his funeral:-

“*The remains of the late H. E. P. Dana, Esq., J.P., were yesterday borne to their last resting place. The funeral procession left the Melbourne Club shortly after 12 o’clock. The body was placed in a hearse, the mourners following after on horse-back and on foot comprising the relations and friends of the deceased gentleman, amongst whom were many heads of departments in the Government. The horse of the deceased, led by a trooper, followed the remains of his master, and was immediately succeeded by a body of the mounted patrol,*
of whom Captain Dana had been the commandant. About thirty of the cadets and the gold police and a company of the 11th Regiment concluded the mournful cortege."

Latrobe’s letter on Dana appears in the Old Pioneers Letters in the Public Library. He affirms that Dana triumphed where Villiers and the protectors of the Aborigines failed, and that his Native police only degenerated, when the whole of the Aboriginal tribes had done so, with the discovery of gold, and when there had ceased to be any particular need for them. That was the time when the police were being reorganized. In future, instead of reading of constables and captains, we read of lieutenants, inspectors, superintendents and commissioners. The first commissioner was William H. F. Mitchell. He arranged for fifty London police to come here; they were under the superintendency of Samuel Freemen, and the last of them in the service was Henry Pewtress. Many of us can remember his work.

One of the most sensational stories of crime in the history of early Melbourne is the brief career of Curnerford. We find his crimes reported in our early papers and mentioned in the letters of Lonsdale, although I doubt not a much fuller and more correct narrative of his crimes could be found in the records in New South Wales. One feels sorry that a tall, handsome young man should have sacrificed his life by committing the most atrocious of crimes, and that he should have paid the full penalty, while a hardened criminal and murderer like Dignum should have escaped the gallows. The horrible murders that he was guilty of were committed in 1837, on the route between Melbourne and Adelaide.

In that year some convicts escaped from the district of Yass, in New South Wales. With a few of these, a man named Dignum took to the bush, and became leader of a gang that eventually numbered nine. Curnerford was a mere youth, yet his influence was nearly as strong as that of Dignum. They committed a number of crimes around Melbourne, and then resolved to cross the country to some seaport, from which they might make their escape from Australia. They thought that if they got to South Australia they could mix with the free immigrant people there, and thus evade the police and eventually get away.

They had travelled as far as Mt. Alexander, when their provisions commenced to run out. One night as they lay sleeping around the fire, Dignum resolved to kill them all. Curnerford had been uneasy that night, and was observing Dignum. Before Dignum lay down, he had secured an axe and three guns, and placed them within his reach, and when he thought all were asleep he arose with the intention of despatching them, but Curnerford also arose; it is thought that probably he had the same idea in his mind, because after a conference he agreed to join in the horrible murder of his comrades. Four of the sleepers smitten never moved; they seem to have been killed outright; three others staggered to their feet, but were quickly despatched. The bodies were then burned, and Dignum and Curnerford made their way back to Melbourne, and were engaged by a squatter. They worked with him for a time, and then left him and hired with another in a different part of the district. Their first employer, however, followed them, and had them arrested for breach of agreement. They escaped and again took to the bush, and having secured arms committed daily robberies, and then resolved to resume their journey to Adelaide.

On this journey Dignum determined to kill Curnerford, fired at him, but missed him. Curnerford fled, and made his way back to Melbourne, surrendered himself, and made a full confession of the murder. It was discredited both here and in Sydney. However, Dignum was arrested, and both men sent to Sydney. Our Supreme Court had not then come into existence. The Sydney authorities resolved to send Curnerford in charge of an infantry sergeant, Tomkins, and two soldiers and two policemen to the scene of the alleged murder. Curnerford guided them to it, Alexander, and showed them the exact place where the murders were committed. They found skulls and bones, and even some of the clothing, and they knew that Curnerford had spoken the truth. They had kept him handcuffed, but now they relaxed, and became more lenient in their treatment of him on their return journey. On the second day, when they began to camp for
the night, they found that their tea and sugar had been left at their last camping place. It was then arranged that the two privates should return and get them. The soldiers were so long away that these in the charge of Curnerford came to the conclusion that they had lost their way. One of the police therefore set out to find them. The sergeant, the other constable and Curnerford then commenced and prepared a meal. The sergeant thinking that Curnerford was behaving well, removed his handcuffs, so that he might have freedom while eating. While the meal was going on, the constable got up and walked to a hill to see if the others were coming, and the sergeant arose, put his gun against a tree, and moved a few steps away to get some water. Curnerford sprang to his feet, seized the gun and pointing it at Tomkins, said: “Now by God I am a free man once more, I don’t want to hurt you, sergeant, but stand off or I’ll blow your brains out, for no man shall stop me.”

The sergeant represented to him that it meant his ruin to let him go; Curnerford would not yield, therefore the sergeant rushed at him, and was shot dead. The other policeman, hearing the report, hastened back, but Curnerford had escaped. For several weeks he ranged around Melbourne; the Government offered a reward for his arrest.

Driven by hunger he entered the men’s hut on a cattle station; there were five men there, and Curnerford ordered them to provide him with a meal, this he ate with his gun between his knees. He then asked for tobacco, and an assigned servant, Kangaroo Jack, handed it to him. As he was in the act of lighting the pipe, Jack gave him a terrific blow with his fist and knocked him off his balance, and immediately he was seized, and after a furious fight was overpowered. He was brought to Melbourne, and was then sent to Sydney and hanged. Kangaroo Jack received a pardon, and in the absence of any living witness they could not convict Dignum, but sent him for life to Norfolk Island.

The first gang of bushrangers around Melbourne were John Williams, Charles Ellis, Daniel Jepps, and Martin Fogarty. They formed themselves into a gang and robbed the stations in the surrounding district. They robbed Captain Watkin, Frederick Pittman, Mr. Northcote, Mr. Bear, Mr. Fleming, Mr. Rumboldt, and others. Latrobe, on hearing of it, proposed to Fowler at the Melbourne Club that civilians go out after them. Henry Fowler, Peter Snodgrass, Oliver Gourlay and James Thomson, agreed to his proposal. Fowler is chosen leader, and they then set out, find their men in the Yan Yean district. A strong fight ensues. John Williams is shot dead at the outset. On the other side both Chamberlain and Fowler are wounded. The bushrangers retire to a hut and fight from behind walls, but finally surrender. Jepps was 27 years old, Fogarty only 19, Ellis about the age of Fogarty. Both Jepps and Ellis had come overland from Sydney. This was in 1842. They were found guilty and seven thousand people witnessed their execution. They were buried outside of the Old Cemetery.

The last of the bushrangers is Ned Kelly. Old (Red) Kelly, his father, was originally transported from Ireland. He died in 1865, leaving four daughters and three sons. The sons grew reckless, and were wanted for horse stealing. Ned and Dan associated themselves with Hart, Byrne and Sherritt. Four troopers went after them, and three of them were killed. One of them escapes and rides to Mansfield, and at once the Government offer a heavy reward for the capture of the Kelly’s. They rob the National Bank at Euroa. They cross the Murray, and rob the Bank of New South Wales, at Jerilderie. Aaron Sherritt, tempted by the large reward, communicates with the police and was shot dead by the gang. They are found by the police at Glenrowan. For two years they had run their course in the North-Eastern district of Victoria and on the borders of New South Wales.

Ned was 24 years of age; Dan only 17. Both Hart and Byrne were under age. They retired to the hotel to fight it out; thirty police surrounded the hotel and Byrne is killed on the first volley. Hart and Dan are soon wounded. The hotel is fired and Ned comes out in rudely made armour to fight the police. He is shot in the legs, captured and brought to Melbourne and executed. An effort was made to save him. A public meeting was called, at which 5000 were present, but it
failed, and the last of the bushrangers was executed on the 11th November, 1880.

The first and last of the bushrangers are an evidence that violent crimes are committed by young men. Robert Hillard, formerly inspector of the police, in 1882 secured a conviction against Robert Frances Burns for the Deep Lead murders. Hillard found the headless body of one of the murdered men, and succeeded in sheeting the murder home to Burns.

The second age in the history of the police has the story of the escort, which was especially interesting from 1852 to 1858, and stretched down to the time when Ned Kelly was captured. Many of the murders in the bush were never detected.

On the 2nd April, 1852, the robbery of the ship The Nelson took place in Hobson’s Bay. A number of men boarded her and carried off the gold that was being sent to Europe.

It was in this second period of police history that the Stockade at Pentridge came into existence; the first prisoners sent there were conducted there by Mr. Barrow on 5th December, 1850. The City Council even then had an interest in the police and the prisons, and rubble was being sent by them to the stockade to be broken into road metal. The rubble came from what was called Wells quarry.

In the minutes of the City Council for 2nd October, 1851, I read that the old police office and watch-house in the western market had been let to William George Grave, a sail maker, for twelve months. In 1856 Charles McMahon succeeded Mitchell as Chief Commissioner. On his resigning in 1858, F. Standish is appointed, and remains chief until he is pensioned in 1880.

Pall Bearers at Captain Standish’s cortage were Reginald Bright, Calder, Thomas Fitzgerald, Herbert Power and Frederick York Wolseley.

Sometimes we can get an insight into the working of an organization by looking on one man. The life of Peter Henry Smith covers a generation in the history of the police; to-day he would be unknown but for a brief reference in Wither’s History of Ballarat, or the dates given by Thomas O’Callaghan in his list of the police.

Smith was born in 1828, in County Mayo, Ireland, and came to this country in The Vimera in the year 1852, and was going as a pioneer into the country. He was stuck up by the bushrangers along with another settler. They resolved to kill him, and when he was about to be shot they asked him if they released him would he inform on them. He said he would. He was so astonished at his bravery, that they gave him his life. He had resolved to bring them to justice, and he did so, and was so successful that he at once entered the police as a detective. His entry is dated the 10th of February, 1853.

He is especially interesting to us, because he was in the police during the Eureka Stockade, and was constantly in court during the trials of the men implicated in the rising. He also laid down plans, his wife told me, for the crossing of the Continent, and he would have accompanied Burke had he not been marrying Miss Sawyers that year. I have seen Burke’s letter to him, written in April 1861, from Castlemaine, when apparently the explorer was on his journey. He congratulates Smith on his coming marriage, and regrets that he cannot do likewise himself.

Entering the police as a superior officer, he rose rapidly. He is made sub-inspector in 1854, and on the 5th of November, 1855, he was appointed Inspector of the Detectives. In the beginning of 1856 (January), he rises to be Superintendent of the Police, and in the beginning of the next year he is appointed as their Inspecting Superintendent. We find him inspecting the Customs, and there is no branch of information in the service he is not familiar with. At one time he seems to have been a warden or like officer on the gold fields. He starts his work as an inspector at £700 a year, and just before his death he was receiving £1100 a year, and living in his own beautiful house, Yarravale, at the corner of Bruce Street and Grange Road, Toorak. I have read Hotham’s authorization of his appointment as inspector, it bears the Governor’s signature and that of the Acting Colonial Secretary, Moore, and is dated the 7th of August, 1855. Although he died before he was forty years of age he had his triumph. He courageously
performed his duty to the end. King, the constable who captured the flag at the Eureka Stockade, came from the same county in Ireland as Smith, and he gave the flag to him. It remained in the family after his death. He died on the 8th of July, 1868. The letter of condolence written to his wife by Captain Fred. C. Standish, Commissioner of the Police, is still in the possession of his daughter, Maud Smyth, and it attests the high opinion held of him by the police in Victoria. They followed his remains to their last resting place in the General Cemetery. In the month of March, 1923, an old lady (Mrs. Martha Mitchell), was buried one Saturday afternoon in the Fawkner Cemetery; she had been born in a cottage at the corner of Russell and Little Collins Streets in 1844, and was the daughter of an old pioneer, Robert Sawyers, who was buried in the Old Cemetery in 1850, and who had had a child buried there as early as 1842.

His body and the others in the grave had been transferred to the New Cemetery, and his daughter desired to be buried near to him. Her first husband was Peter Henry Smith. She was encyclopaedic in her knowledge of Victoria. She knew personally many of the members of our first Parliament, and as a girl often sat and heard the debates in St. Patrick’s Hall. She was full of reminiscences and could give the traits not only of her valiant first husband, but many of the men of early Melbourne. A generous woman, one of her latest acts was to give three guineas to the Old Pioneers Memorial, which we hope to build on Flagstaff Hill. She died at the home of her daughter by Peter Smith, in Douglas Street, Toorak.

Captain F. C. Standish was Chief of the Police in Smith’s time. He had been preceded by McMahon, and was succeeded by H. M. Chomley. He entered the police as a cadet in 1852, and retired in 30th June, 1902. These early police, especially Captain Standish, are described by Robert Hillard as men of good breeding, dignified in their dealing with the public and courteous to subordinates. Both Mitchell and McMahon went into politics, and were knighted. Mitchell became President of the Legislative Council, and McMahon Speaker in the Assembly. Captain Frederick Charles Standish, their successor, came from a good English family, received a military education, and after service in Britain came to Victoria in 1852, and entered the Government service in 1854 as Assistant Commissioner of Goldfields, and afterwards was Chinese Protector at Bendigo, and then Chief Commissioner of our Police. H. M. Chomley, we have seen, was associated with the police for fifty years, rising from the position of a cadet to that of Chief Commissioner. Robert Hillard says that by common consent Detective Considine was acknowledged without exception to have been the most brainy, resourceful and capable man that has ever graced the ranks of the detective force in Melbourne. He, with Detective Cawsey, brought the Ringwood murderer to justice.

In the third period, the present age, the duty of the police rises to higher levels than that of hunting down criminals. Recently a constable (Mr. Dyson) retired from the service and the community presented him with a purse of sovereigns for his work in simplifying and systematising the direction of traffic. I can conceive that in the future a policeman will be more valued for his labour in securing the observance of the city bylaws than for the arresting of small offenders or even for the detection of larger crimes. The day is coming when crime will almost be no more when the police office will be an information office. Certainly since Federation its character has been changed. The men who have been Commissioners in this period are:

- T. C. O’Callaghan (still alive but retired),
- Alfred George Sainsbury, who died on the 27th of February 1920
- Sir George steward, who died suddenly
- Sir John Gellibrand, grandson of the pioneer, Retired
- Mr. A. Nicholson is now Commissioner.

In his time we have witnessed the police strike and the unprecedented riots, when over a thousand special constables were sworn in. The earliest record I could find of special, constables was in the minutes of the Town Council, dated 28th March, 1843 when the council resolved
to enrol special constables for the races, who were to be paid by the Government. It is coincidence that this first enrolment was during race time, and the enrolment in 1923 to quell the riots was during the Cup festival.

In the eighteen forties the city raised the police funds and handed them over to New South Wales to disburse. Although the word police is derived from the Greek word Polis, a city and the police court is often called a city court. The policeman now is the servant of the State Government. But naturally he is municipal, in contradistinction to the soldier who is under the national Government.

In early Melbourne the policeman was subject to the council and was paid by them, but Latrobe did not readily concede to our council the control, and there seemed even in these days to be some sort of partnership between the Superintendent and Council in controlling them. The subject was several times debated in the council in the first few years of its existence. In what part of the Old Cemetery shall we find the remains of Roddy Monehan the policeman who one night in 1842 was set upon near the punt by the Brickfielders and thrown into the Yarra, where his body was found. The bridge builders offered a reward for information that would lead to the detection of the culprits, but none could be obtained and the ruffians escaped.

It is not only in the days of motor cars that criminals escape. The first Lock-up in Melbourne was a wooden structure at the corner of King-street and Little Collins Street, which was burnt down by the Aboriginals, who escaped. Later a stone gaol is built in Market Square; and in 1844 the Melbourne Gaol in Russell Street is completed. Both stocks and the treadmill were in use in these days. We have seen that the Pentridge Prison came in 1850.

It was William Kerr who proposed the seal and asked for a committee to secure the design. He, too, proposed that the portraits of the Mayors be secured to hang in the Town Hall, and this during the Mayoralty of Condell, the first Mayor. William Kerr took up separation from the commencement. It had been contended for by Arden, in the first book written on Port Phillip. Kerr was one of the first advocates of the ballot. Annand moved and Kerr seconded the first motion moved in the City Council. It came in the council and was used in the election of committees long before it was adopted by the State. Kerr tried to get a motion carried petitioning the Government to introduce it at the first election, that in 1851 for our first Parliament, but was defeated, and in reading the statements of the Councillors, is astonished at the sincerity of the opposition. They thought it would destroy character to vote in secret and lessen the spirit of honour in the community.

In view of the fact that it was advocated in council before Nicholson took it up, it is doubtful whether it be right to call him the Father of the Ballot, because he successfully carried it through Parliament. He was Mayor when it was carried in the council. He did not introduce it, nevertheless it was carried by his casting vote. And later when it was applied to the whole colony, it was not he who thought of writing or printing the whole of the candidates’ names on a slip of paper and giving the voter a chance to signify these he wished elected. That was suggested to him by a Mr. S. H. Chapman. William Kerr, as a councillor pressed the ballot, and in the first year that he was Town Clerk he saw the council adopt it for the election of committees. He seems to have been associated with every great movement that arose in early Melbourne. Dr. Lang took up Separation with a view to Federation, and I see a likeness in the mind of Kerr to that of Dr. Lang. Lang was the greater man, he worked for separation on democratic lines. We have seen his ideals realized, and Federation follow Separation. The reply that the Government made to the agitation was to give Port Phillip municipal government, and to offer her representation in the New South Wales Parliament. We have got to that stage in 1842, when Australia-Felix is represented by six members, one from Melbourne and five from the country, but Sydney being so far away we cannot send men, so Sydney men represent us until 1844. Even then Dr. Lang is chosen as our representative against the local man, Edward Curr. Lauchlan MacKinnon sits for a constituency. His wife, Jane Montgomery, was buried in the Old Cemetery; she
accompanied him to Sydney, where she died in the year 1849. He had her body brought back in *The Shamrock*, the first iron steamer that came from England to Australia, and buried here, and he put over her grave a casket, which was one of the finest works of art in the Old Cemetery, and which, as Mr. Lucas says, would adorn any Necropolis in the world.

After five years representation we began to grow weary; it was so far away, and there was no payment to members, consequently we often disfranchised ourselves, and in order to make Great Britain see this in 1847 Melbourne returned Earl Grey a Member of the British House of Commons.

Our business men thought it would be just as easy for Grey to go to Sydney as for many of them; he held office two years and was then succeeded by William Westgarth. Melbourne, in 1847, had a population of 14,000 people, and now comes fully the struggle for Separation. It had loomed up in that fight against the transportation of criminals, when the people of Port Phillip refused to allow them to land here, and when the captain of the vessel had to take his cargo round to Sydney. This protest was made by the City Council, and although Latrobe claimed to play second fiddle to the Governor of New South Wales, yet in this instance he supported Port Phillip. McCombie used Franklin’s illustration when objecting to criminals being sent out to America. He asked if England would raise objection if they shipped rattlesnakes to them. The squatters wanted labour, and then some of our Old Cemetery men suggested that if we formed an immigration society and the Government spent the money they made on the sale of land in assisting immigrants there would be sufficient free labour for the colony; both these schemes were carried out. In the Immigration Association was Arthur Kemmis, whose grave was not far away from that of the Lonsdale’s, and George W. Cole, afterwards the Honourable George Ward Cole, in whose grave there were cloven, five of whom were very distinguished, also James Graham, afterwards the Honourable James Graham, and Dr. Farquhar McCrae. Our Chief Immigration Officer was Dr. Patterson, who was elected a town councillor at the first election, but he did not remain long in the council. Questions like land and immigration were discussed in the town council because we were without a Parliament, and the council had a legislative committee to frame Acts to bring before the Parliament in New South Wales. They felt the need of independence, and separation grew largely through local action. Four thousand immigrants arrived in 1842. The spirit of separation grew, and one of the chief advocates of it was Edward Curr. He was an English Roman Catholic with an Irish spirit. He was a successful squatter, and introduced special breeds of cattle and sheep here, he was the first Secretary of The Van Diemen’s Land Company, a company formed by men of opulence and prudence. Their first ship was despatched from Tasmania in 1826; they owned the northern part of Tasmania, and Curr became known as The potentate of the north. He represented the Van Diemen’s Land and Agricultural Co. here and in the first instance went for cheap labour through transportation, but taking up the plea for separation he gave up this position and came out for a free State. The stone over his grave in the Roman Catholic ground showed he died on 15th of November, 1850, at the age of 52. His work was on the eve of its greatest success!

Like Moses, he led his people to the verge of the promised land, but was not permitted to enter it himself. On the very day he died it is said that Melbourne received the news that Australia-Felix was granted Home Rule. Said the play-bill of the *Port Phillip Morning Herald*. The long oppressed, long buffeted Port Phillip is at length an independent colony, gifted with the Royal name of Victoria, and endowed with a flourishing revenue, and almost inexhaustible resources. Edward Curr is in Garryowen, in Westgarth, and in Australian Men of the Times.

He is often written on, and by most writers is treated as a Statesman. The Bill of Separation was more than a Victorian question. When it came up in the House of Commons, it led to a review of the history of the Colonial Empire. It secured self-government not only for
us, but other Australian colonies. They separated to federate as self-determining communities. It was discussed by our greatest Statesmen in England” Sir William Molesworth, Mr. Roebuck, Mr. W. E. Gladstone, and Joseph Hume. Gladstone opposed the creation of the single chamber, but was defeated on that point; Sir William Molesworth at that early stage wanted colonial representation in the House of Commons.

While Curr died before the first election took place, yet several of these in the first Parliament were also buried in the Old Cemetery, among them Charles Hilton Dight and Wallace Dunlop.

Dunlop was a member of the Free Presbyterian Church in Geelong, and while on a visit to Melbourne he took suddenly ill, and died 21st of June, 1852. On the day that he was buried there were three funerals in the ground; his, however, was unique. He was a religious man, and was the Member of the first House who moved that its meetings should be opened with prayer. His funeral was attended by the elite of Melbourne; the pall-bearers were the Governor, the Mayor, the Reverend James Clow, Dr. Murphy, and Messrs’ Bradshaw, Bell, Mercer and Fawkner. Dr. Thomson and Dr. Palmer were also present. I could not find his grave, it was not memorialized or had been transferred. Curr was in the Catholic ground, Dight in the Church of England, and Dunlop in the Presbyterian.

The year 1851 is remembered specially for four great events:-

- The anti-transportation and first intercolonial conference in Melbourne;
- Separation
- the discovery of gold and
- Native Thursday, when the forest fires swept over Victoria.

Our Old Cemetery recorded all four. Curr and others reminded us of separation, as Graham and Cole recalled the fight against transportation. The graves of Frencham and Betts reminded us of the prophecy and discovery of gold. Here were the remains of the men who sought to extinguish the fires, and provide for the sufferers by them, and here also were the bones of the victims of the fire. There is no monument to separation. We have even ceased to remember the day on which it was proclaimed. A tree stands in the Botanical Gardens under which the Proclamation and public rejoicings took place. It is said that the founding of our Public Library was intended to commemorate it.

It would have been the right thing for public education to commence with self-government, but our Library and our University were established at the same time two years later. The plea for popular education, however, did come with our first self-governing institution, the Town Council. In 1844 Kerr moved for appeal to the Legislative Council for a comprehensive scheme of education for the youth of the colony. George Langhorne, one of our first school teachers although a Missionary, was a servant of the State, and his Native disciples were rationed from the stores of the commissariat. He did not stay in Victoria, but returned to New South Wales. Interest in public education thus prepared the way for self-government and for State education.

We started our new colony with only one chamber, in which there were thirty members, twenty elected and ten nominated by the Crown. These elected were chosen by electors who had freeholds to the value of £100, or householders who were paying not less than £10 a year in rent. In 1853 the House was increased to 54 members, 26 elected and 18 nominated. Among the nominees was James Horatio Nelson Cassell; he was a civil servant who became a Statesman like others of the beginning. The Legislative and Executive branches of Government in a penal community merge, and while Melbourne was never such, yet it originated with men who had been in a penal community and under the authority of New South Wales, therefore civil servants became rulers. Lonsdale, a civil servant, became Sub-Treasurer, and James Horatio Nelson Cassell a Collector of Customs, a Member of the Legislative and Executive Council.
William Westgarth sat beside him, and represents him as a man brimful of information, but not much of a speaker.

He died 21st November, 1853, at the early age of 39 while his friend William Westgarth was in England, but he left a message for him that they would resume their friendship in Heaven. The word honourable is on his tomb. There were no hereditary titles in the Old Cemetery, or those pertaining to social rank alone, excepting the words Mr. and Esquire but some educational and official titles. The Argus said that Cassell’s funeral was the most remarkable which had taken place in this or any other country. Cassell wished that it might be unostentatious, and only a single announcement appeared in the papers, and one advertisement from the undertakers, yet it was the largest funeral seen in Melbourne until the funeral of Governor Hotham.

His body was taken to Scots Church, and the funeral passed along Collins Street. The Reverend Mr. Clow, the first Presbyterian Minister in Melbourne, was one of the pall-hearers. The press had intended to give a list of all these who attended, but when the reporters arrived at the grave they found nearly every old colonist here, and every man in any position in Victoria was present, and the public put up to him the splendid monument that stood over his grave. It was destroyed in transferring the remains to the Fawkner Cemetery. Cassell’s nephew, Mr. Bruford, the late Auditor-General, told me that he was present at the funeral when a child, and that he could distinctly remember the gathering at the grave.

There is buried in a nameless grave in the Old Cemetery J.W. Stafford of the Customs, who came to Melbourne in 1830; both he and his wife are buried there. I saw his daughter, Mrs. Bissell, who was born in Melbourne on 17th October, 1839. Her father was twenty years in the Customs, a trusted man; he died on the 29th of February, 1848, aged 44. It is cases like these that make us regret so much the loss of the ground.

There was a stone in the old graveyard near to Batman’s monument, to George Frederick Belcher, infant son and namesake of the Honourable G. F. Belcher. He came to Melbourne in 1839, and that year attended Batman’s funeral. He knows Melbourne well, having compiled the Census in 1840. After being a civil servant he became in 1875 a Member of the Legislative Council, and when Batman’s monument was to be built pointed out his grave.

There were many civil servants buried in the Old Cemetery holding subordinate positions under our early Government who should be remembered, for we expand and develop through the labour of an effective civil service.

When looking over our Cemetery we came on a stone designed and made by Hahn. It had a carved wreath on the base of it, and it was erected by a numerous circle of friends, as a token of esteem and regards to the memory of Charles Jones, the Survey Department, Port Phillip. He died on 5th June, 1850, at the age of 36. Although Major Mitchell named us Australia-Felix, we seldom saw the name on the stones. The name is generally given to the country that was Port Phillip.
MacVitie, the first Clerk of the Treasury, came to grief. He was accused of embezzling a sum of money. When the case came up in court the jury could not find him guilty because of his known probity, but the evidence was all against him. He had received the money and it was missing. They, however, resolved to acquit him, and years after, when the Treasury was moving to the New Treasury buildings they found money which they behoved to be it, in an old pigeon box, where, in a moment of abstraction, MacVitie had put it and forgotten all about it. He, however, lost his position. It was the first case of embezzlement which came up in our courts, and of course ante-dates separation. The name MacVitie as a second name was found on one of our stones, MacVitie Buckley. The English Genealogical Society had a representative (Mr. Towend) studying the Old Cemetery, and he took several second names which were originally surnames, which materially help the genealogist in tracing descent.

The second Clerk of the Treasury was Reginald Penn, the man under MacVitie, who was more successful; he passed into his grave clothed with honour for his irreproachable character, and the stone over his grave was erected by his brother officials as an evidence of the high esteem in which he was held by the civil service.

The first Treasurer for the City Council was Mr. James Simpson, but he only retained the office for a few months, and was succeeded by Gilbert Beith, he died soon after taking office, and was buried in the Old Cemetery. Then the Council seemed to get a Treasurer whom they could keep for a time, John Patterson. He took the office at £100 a year. The first Municipal Loan was the Gabrielli Loan in the fifties. 1843 found us very poor. Working men on public works were getting two and sixpence a day. The squatters were facing bankruptcy, and tallow saved them. An office in the Council service, we ought to remember, was the Town Auctioneer. He was a useful servant, because when the citizens would not pay their rates he was at hand to sell them up. William Barrett was the first Town Auctioneer.

Dr. Palmer erected floating baths on the Yarra, moored to the northern banks above the Falls. He secured the sanction of the Government to this in 1843. They were in existence in 1852, under the management of Dr. Hunter. The Council ordered him to remove them, as
they held they were not properly conducted, but instead of this he sold them to John Ditchburn, who was permitted to continue them if he would conform to the Council’s conditions.

A good deal of bathing was done in the fifties in the Yarra, although it was always unsafe owing to its currents. The tenders for the baths at the corner of Swanston and Victoria Streets were received by the council in August 1859. The successful tender, that of James Thompson, Senior, was £4051 18 shillings. They were opened at the end of the year, and have since then been much improved.

One day, while wandering in the Old Cemetery, I met Richard Cleary at his father’s grave; it had a quaint stone over it, on which was the representation of a lamb holding up the cross. I was interested in trying to find out who Michael Cleary was, and he told me he was a despatch clerk on Governor Latrobe’s staff. Around us were the graves of the old civil servants. One of our earliest institutions was the pound. Lonsdale had only been here three months when he suggested to the New South Wales Government the propriety of establishing a pound, and accordingly one was arranged for not far from the banks of the Yarra, on the south side of Flinders Street, between Russell and Swanston Streets. March 13th 1839, George Scarborough was made pound-keeper, and Garryowen relates a story of a dispute between Mrs. Neave, the proprietor of a poultry farm, and the pound-keeper over 150 goats which were being impounded; that was in 1846, and we have the name Neave on the stones. Matthew Neave was our first poulterer. Several of his family are buried in the one grave, and their burials date back to 1848.

Afterwards the pound was transferred from the banks of the Yarra to Capel Street, just west of the Old Cemetery, and the proprietors of cattle were forbidden to allow them to stray into the township. Strange how these provisions seem now, when we have a population of over 700,000. A second pound was created for the south side of the Yarra, and the first of its keepers has mentioned the fact on his tombstone that William Maitland Atkinson, of the South Yarra Pound, died 5th November, 1852, aged 39 years. He was a faithful civil servant, and in the same grave with him was Ann Honeyman, wife of William Affleck, who arrived in July 1839, and died the next year.

Affleck and Atkinson had apparently married into the same family. Christiana Honeyman is buried beside him. The one was the keeper of the pound, and the other a butcher. early Melbourne is thinking of the cattle market; in 1843 the Town Council receives a petition from a local society for preventing scabby mutton being sold, and one of the great aims of the pioneer was to stock the land with clean cattle.

We cannot forget that Dr. P. Cussen was a civil servant, as were the medical men who came with the explorers, and also the physicians in the Hobart Camp at Sorrento in 1803, William Jansen, Matthew Bowden and William Hopley.

When Melbourne was founded, Dr. Thomson came first and was succeeded by Dr. Cotter, and then came Dr. P. Cussen. The first hospital was a hospital in Lonsdale’s time for the civil service, and later Dr. Neild says there was a hut on Bourke Street for patients, which he calls our first hospital. He is the historian of the medical profession. He was a remarkable man, who gave up for a time his profession to be a chemist in Melbourne: he gave up this for literature, and then later resumed practice, and secured the Chair of Medicine in our University. He records that a Medical Board for Port Phillip was appointed in 1845, when Dr. Cussen became president. On Cussen’s tomb were the words Colonial Surgeon. This is a reminder of our condition, before we had a University and a Medical School, when all our doctors were made in England.

He arrived by the first steamer that entered the port, the James Watt, 14th September, 1837. He built his house in 1840, at the corner of William and Lonsdale Streets. Liardet has left us a picture of the house. He conducted our earlier inquests and performed the first surgical operation in Melbourne. Dr. Neild says that there were 47 medical men in the district in 1848. Several
of these earlier physicians we have referred to elsewhere, such as Dr. Hobson, Dr. McRae, Dr. Godfrey Howitt. It was about this time that the first Government call for vaccination was made.

All the children born in the colony were vaccinated. There were three men of the name of Barker in early Melbourne, all of whom have gained a place in our history. Dr. Edward M. Barker, came in 1840, and was the first honorary surgeon of the Benevolent Asylum; Barker's Road at Kew is named after him. John Barker was a barrister, he also came in 1840, and was appointed a Magistrate in 1845. William Barker, a surgeon, came in 1844, and took up the Mt. Alexander run, where Castlemaine now stands; Barker's Creek was named after him. He finally settled as a surgeon in South Melbourne. Emerald Hill.

The Melbourne Hospital has a distinct date. Its creation was chiefly due to the efforts of Dr. Palmer; it is the Communal Hospital, and alike the expression of the spontaneous philanthropy of old and new Melbourne. Its memorials within its halls record its growth. Dr. Palmer and our Town Council secured £2000 from the Government for it in 1844; on 26th March, 1845, the first staff was appointed, and the hospital was opened on 15th March, 1848. In 1912 the Hospital Extension was built, and in 1916 the Walter and Eliza Hall Institute of Research created, which has proven itself of immense value to the medical profession.

The next hospital formed was the Lying-in Hospital, in 1856, now called the Women's Hospital. The third was the Eye and Ear Hospital, 1863 The Alfred Hospital commemorates the visit of the Duke of Edinburgh, it came in 1859, and the Children's Hospital in 1870. Dr. Cussen was the first president of the Board of Health. He held the position down to 1849. Dr. Sullivan was then chosen, and remained there until 1853. Then Dr. William McCrea became President, and held the position for 26 years. In 1850 there were 410 recognized medical practitioners in Victoria, some of whom it was believed were without a diploma, and in 1862 came a Medical Practitioners Act, which it was believed would dispose of the quacks. There were 861 registered physicians in 1883. At that time there was no such person as a Minister of Health. That office is a comparatively recent creation, yet our health has been up to the average.

Melbourne has never had a plague. There was a long grave in the Old Cemetery where tradition said one hundred and thirty-five persons were buried who died of fever. This was doubtful.

Life, however, was shortened by colonial fever, born of the insanitary conditions of early Melbourne, but we were not visited by epidemics, and these in the grave came in a fever ship.

The Free Dispensary began late in our history. The first was started by Dr. John Singleton, of whom I have a distinct recollection when I represented the Churches of Christ on the committee for disbursing the Hospital Sunday collection. He came into my study and asked me why his work was not subsidised. I could not give any satisfactory answer, but promised to vote for it at the meeting of the Committee, and did so, but I seemed to be alone. I believe that later on it was subsidised. He was doing his work in Collingwood, a working man's suburb, and deserved assistance.

The Austin Hospital is our second largest medical charity. It was founded in 1882, and is situated at Heidelberg, on a site of seventeen acres. It is the only hospital for incurables in Victoria. It memorializes Elizabeth Austin, of Barwon Park, and especially associated with her in this noble work were Amelia Brasch, William Drummond, Joseph Kronheimer, Matthew Davies and Aubrey Bowen. Many others have come to recognize that here is a home when; those tortured with pain may find alleviation, and these whose cases are deemed hopeless find life made bearable for them. It is undenominational, like nearly all our hospitals whose benefits are bestowed without regard to colour, creed or condition.

William Crook, surgeon, after being in the Tasmanian Legislature, came to Fitzroy to practice. He claimed to be the first member of any Legislature in Australia to introduce a protective
policy, which he did in Tasmania. He was a strong upholder of Richard Heales, and was returned to parliament for Collingwood. In 1870 he heard that an eruptive disease had broken out in the Immigrants Home. He went and examined it, and pronounced it small pox. His diagnosis was challenged, so he called a meeting of the medical men at the Port Phillip Club Hotel, and demonstrated to them that the disease was small pox. He was appointed a public vaccinator, and with his brethren at once stayed the disease. He is only one of many doctors who have taken an interest in public life, and the time is coming when in our Ministry we will as certainly have a. Surgeon-General as an Attorney-General.

The Medical School at the University began in 1857, but did nothing of moment in Materia Medica until 1860. Dr. Neild took up the work there. Dr. Anthony Colling Brownless I well remember; he came to Australia in 1852, but lived down to our own time. He pitched his tent in Canvas Town, and was besieged by patients. He was a Roman Catholic, and was knighted by the Pope, being made a Knight of the Order St. Gregory the Great. He was a Chancellor of our University. I used to watch him riding to church on Sunday on a tricycle. The Yarra Bend Asylum for the Insane originated in 1872, and was at first called the Merri Creek Asylum.

Kew Asylum was opened in 1872. Dr. James George Beaney did a good work in the Crimean War among the sick and disabled. He came to Melbourne in 1857. He had a distinguished career here; founded medical scholarships, and was the author of several medical works. In 1861 he was gazetted surgeon to the Western Battery of Royal Victorian Artillery.

The Port Phillip Medical Association was formed as early as 1846, when Dr. Cussen was President, Dr. Wilkie Vice-President, Dr. Thomas Native Treasurer, and Mr. Keating Honourable Secretary!

In 1852 a rival society was founded, but they later united and formed the Medical Society of Victoria; their hall is in East Melbourne. In 1879 a branch of the British Medical Association was formed, Dr. Neild being the moving spirit in its formation.

Some years ago, the Council of the Australian Natives Association (A.N.A) carried the following motion: That in the interests of the general community, it is desirable that a scheme for the Nationalisation of health be introduced into the Commonwealth Parliament.

Twenty years before this I had advocated the Nationalisation of medicine and law before a conference of the Churches of Christ. and in 1918 the annual conference of the A.N.A. at Bendigo affirmed the same proposition and urged the Victorian Government to take action. It must be part of any great scheme of social reform. The health and moral character of a community is the first thing that a State has to consider. Lloyd George, when contemplating the difficulties in the way of carrying out his national insurance scheme, said that he thought it would end in the Nationalisation of medicine. It will help the medical profession, and with the disestablishment of the church there will come in its place the establishment of the school teacher and the doctor. We have already partially nationalized, by the granting of Government grants to our hospitals, one pound to every two pounds subscribed by the public. During the time of the earthquake in San Francisco there were fifteen hundred destitute doctors. A diploma is more easily gained there than here, but our tendency here is to give some doctors a very large and lucrative practice and leave others but very poorly provided for, thus but very recently we had a strike, when they demanded more money from the Friendly Societies. When, therefore, we consider the amount of money put into these societies ostensibly for medical help, and the number of our hospitals sustained by charity, it is obvious that the Nationalisation of medicine would be not only a blessing in promoting the health of the community, but also an economic reform.

In Victoria there are seventeen hundred doctors, and there are 243 institutions devoted to charity, 174 of which are subsidised by Government. While we have no complete statistics, yet we can
say that over a million and a half is raised yearly for medical charities. The Government and the charities directly or indirectly employ, without counting war employment, 1026 medical men, 33 medical women, 3586 nurses, and 435 attendants, and yet the only hospital nationalized is the Lunatic Asylum. The private asylum became such a curse that the State was driven to take that course.

The doctors make harvests during epidemics; a small pox scare is gotten up, and the people rush in myriads to be vaccinated. And the only epidemic we ever had was the influenza, which came to us with the return of the soldiers from the war; it was but very slight, and the Government took every precaution to save the community, and practically we were placed under national direction. We had all and more than the restrictions under which the Nationalisation of health would place us, without any of its economic advantages. Instead of these periodical harvests for the doctors they would have a regular and permanent provision, and their income would depend not on the calamities of the community, but on its health. And instead of working for fees, the medical man would work for human salvation. It would mean trained and thinking men, and a better life for all. We admit its need, because we have a Board of Health. Deep drainage, pure water, good food, clean houses, proper clothes, would follow in the train of the Nationalisation of health, and with it would come a sound mind and a pure heart, and thus would we stay the Red plague. Our papers to-day are telling a pathetic story of the ravages of venereal disease.

The province of maternity we have striven to better by a maternity bonus of five pounds, but the maternity doctor and nurse would be far better. We have a right only to pay people for services rendered by hand or brain. The soup kitchen is a charitable and not a national institution.

It is not based on economic principles, but we can justly pay the doctor and nurse for services rendered. The private schoolmaster left the world ignorant, and the private doctor has not saved Melbourne from its first epidemic, and has kept us chronically diseased. The whole world is sick, and we only patch it up by putting men into the army or sending them to prison. Then there is a doctor in the army, the navy, the prison, on the Quarantine Island, in the asylum and the hospital, and educationally in the University, and if you die unexpectedly our City Coroner will sit and consider the cause of your death. If we were to take all the money we squander on bonuses, friendly societies, and charities, and place it under the general direction of Government, how much better for all. It would cost but little compared with the Nationalisation of education. And then the best appliances would be for all; the best instruments in the hands of every doctor; the deepest research made in disease; all forms incubated under the eye of the student, specialization in eye, ear, and every other organ without fear of loss of practice. Thus in America has the Government fought consumption, epilepsy, and various menial diseases; thus would we safeguard our children’s life, placing all our crèches under Government control, giving even to the pauper in painful operations the use of anaesthetics, and instead of imprisoning inebriates handing them over to the doctor for treatment. Just now our institutions are partly private and partly Government. The largest maternity hospital south of the line is our Lying-in Hospital, in Grattan Street, which we have seen was established in 1855; it was then situated in Albert Street. Its first annual meeting was held in 1850, at the Mechanics Institute. Thus it is only eight years younger than the Melbourne Hospital. On the list of the first contributors are names that we see in our Cemetery:- Mrs. Brock, Mrs. Cassell, Mrs. Williamson, Mrs. Wooley, Mrs. Sievright, and others. The first President was Mrs. Perry, wife of Bishop Perry, and the first patients were admitted 19th August, 1855. We have a general hospital staffed entirely by women doctors. The Queen Victoria Hospital, in Little Lonsdale Street, which has had a woman Secretary for twenty-one years.

The first female physician in Melbourne was Dr. Stone. Our largest hospital, that for infectious diseases, is part national and part municipal, and receives nothing from the Sunday
Hospital Fund. It was discussed in the municipal councils in 1891; they then saw the need of fighting infectious diseases, which must not be confused with contagious diseases. Infection is in the air, and in the water, but contagion comes by touch. Nothing was definitely done until 1897, the year of the 60th anniversary of Queen Victoria’s Coronation. This event so moved Lord Melbourne that he thought could be well commemorated by the erection of this hospital. A picturesque spot on the banks of the Yarra was chosen for the site, and the buildings were erected in 1901; but it remained a white elephant down to 1901. Then a revival took place, the work was reorganized, and on the 1st of October, 1904, the first patients were admitted. Forty municipalities are now contributing out of their rates to its support, and it is also subsidised by the State Government. During the past year, 1077 patients were admitted, and three hundred are constantly under treatment, while in January, 1905, there were only 12; and as many as six hundred have been in the hospital under treatment at the same time. They have their own motor ambulances and an efficient fleet of vehicles to transport the sick.

For peace or war our ambulance is organized: Melbourne has both a St. John’s and St. Andrew’s. Florence Nightingale and Coralie Cahen have in spirit lived among us, and we have seen them march many hundred strong with the red crosses on their breast down Collins Street.

No more waiting, the bandage is ready, and every boy in school can cure snake bite or save his comrade from drowning; the touch of the nurse is in the factory girl, and the miner knows how to help his brother in distress, for the democracy of medicine has come when Victoria is blessed by the Nationalisation of health.

The Australian Medical Journal came into existence in 1856, and was edited by Dr. Neild. Several other medical papers have been published here; one recently published is almost entirely devoted to questions of the Nationalisation of health, and is edited by Dr. Payne Philpott. The first inquests were held in public houses. In 1853 the City Council appealed to the Government for a Morgue. This was before we had a Board of Health. On the 14th of April, 1856, the Central Board of Health gave its first annual report to the council. At that time there was a Health Committee in the council.

As the civil service grew it differentiated. For instance, the office of Government Statist commenced with Henry Heylyn Hayter. Previously there had been no such office. Hayter was born in England in 1821, and came to Victoria in 1852. When he entered the service he was a statistical clerk in the Registrar-General’s office. His work widened, and he originated The Victorian Year Book, and became known not only in Melbourne but in all the world. It was in 1874 that statistics were placed in a separate department, and he was created Government Statist.

It was soon after accepting that office that he brought out The Victorian Year Book. This work has gone on in Victoria, and the Commonwealth Statistician, G. H. Knibbs, who resides in Melbourne, brought out a pocket compendium of Australian statistics, as well as his Commonwealth Year Book.

Latrobe watched over the young settlement, the evolution of civic government, the differentiation of public service, and the creation of the new colony, and although the City Council petitioned for his removal and were backed up by a public meeting of three thousand citizens, yet the British Government never lost confidence in him. He loved nature and native races.

He had been sent to the West Indies by the Lord Melbourne Ministry to report on the use of the funds voted for the education of the negroes. He was in full sympathy with their emancipation, and after being a servant of the Statesman Melbourne, he became superintendent of a province, with a city of that name, and the province itself took the name of the sovereign to whom Lord Melbourne was so much devoted. Our City Council seemed to turn in favour of Latrobe after his elevation to the Governorship in July, 1851. They sent him this address:-
To His Excellency
the Lieutenant-Governor of Victoria.

May it please Your Excellency, we, the Mayor, Aldermen and Councillors of the City of Melbourne, hail with welcome the arrival of the period when in obedience to the commands of our beloved sovereign, your Excellency enters on the administration of the Government of the Colony of Victoria, and the final indication is given us of the consummation of our most anxious hopes, the colonial independence of Port Phillip. We beg to assure your Excellency of our devoted loyalty to our sovereign, of our attachment to the institutions of the British Empire, and of our high gratification that Her Majesty has been pleased to confer her Royal name upon this young and nourishing colony. We hope that Her Majesty will never suffer that name to be sullied, nor our adopted land polluted by association with the outcast criminal population of the mother country. And we confidently trust that your Excellency will persevere in your endeavours to preserve this bright gem of the British Crown stainless and pure.

We assure your Excellency of our confirmed desire to promote as far as lies in our power all measures tending to the prosperity of our city and the public good.

The distinguished mark of the Royal confidence which Her Majesty has been pleased to confer upon your Excellency in appointing you her representative, with power and authority which is indispensable to good Government, combined with your Excellency's personal experience of the wants and wishes of the colonists of Victoria, lead us to hope that the future progress of the colony under your Excellency's administration of the Government will be commensurate with the unexampled career of the past.

(Signed) William Nicholson,
Mayor of Melbourne.
William Kerr,
Town Clerk.

The council was henceforth to have taken out of its hands the direction or suggestion of these larger matters, like lighthouses, the navigation of the Yarra, and public education; they were to pass under the jurisdiction of the Parliament of the new colony.

Latrobe replied to the address thus:-

Mr. Mayor and Gentlemen,

The expressions of loyalty to our gracious Sovereign and attachment to the British Constitution, which you are pleased to present me on this occasion, is the source of sincere pleasure to me, and will, I am sure, be appreciated by Her Majesty. It is gratifying, I am sure, both to you and to myself to reflect that the name by which this province will henceforth be designated is one which will ever remind us and our posterity of the love and duty we owe her and her children after her.

I fully participate in your anxiety to watch over the moral character as well as the physical development of the country, and am assured of your desire to promote as far as may be in your power, all measures tending to the prosperity of this city and the public good. I would like this opportunity of offering to the City Council my testimony to the advantages which the community has reaped by the introduction of municipal institutions, in the case of Melbourne, and to the ability which has distinguished the labours of the corporation for the last nine years. No one is better able than myself to appreciate and acknowledge the
disadvantage under which from circumstances it had to enter upon its functions.

Its claims upon the attention of Government are undeniable, and I shall always feel it a duty to attend to these whenever reasonably advanced and supported so far as the general interests of the colony and my power permit.

15th July, 1851.
(Signed) C. J. Latrobe,

Relatives of different Governors were reported to have been buried in the Old Cemetery: John Brisbane related to Governor Brisbane, and Garryowen reports that Fitzherbert Millar Mundy, a relative of Fitzroy, was buried there. Here is a list of these who have ruled in Victoria since separation:

Governors of Victoria.
1830, Charles Joseph Latrobe
1854, John Vezey Fitzgerald Foster (acting)
1854, Sir Charles Hotham, R.N. K.C.B. (died hen;)
1850, Major-General Edward Macarthur (acting)
1850, Sir Henry Barkly, K.C.B.
1803, Sir Charles Henry Darling, K.C.B.
1800, Brig.-Gen. George Jackson Carey, C.B. (acting)
1800, Sir. John Henry Thomas Manners Sutton, K.C.B.
1873, Sir William Foster Stawell (acting)
1873, Sir George. Ferguson Bowen, G.C.M.G
1875, Sir Redmond Barry (acting)
1875, Sir William F. Stawell (acting)
1879, The Most Honourable George Augustus Constantine Phipps, Marquis of Normanby
1884, Sir William F. Stawell (acting);
1884, Sir Henry Brougham Loch (retired 1889)
1880, Sir William Foster Stawell (acted from 1880 to 1889 in Loch's term)
1889, Sir Win. Cleaver Francis Robinson, G.C.M.G. (acting)
1889, The Right Honourable John Adrian Louis Hope, Earl of Hopetoun, G.C.M.G.
1893, Honourable John Madden, LL.D.
1895, The Right Honourable Baron Brasseys, K.C.B.
1900, Sir John Madden, Lieutenant-Governor (acting)
1901, Sir George Sydney Clarke 1903, Sir John Madden (acting)
1901, Major-General Honourable Sir Reginald Arthur James Talbot. Sir John
Madden filled up terms in addition to these already mentioned between
Governors Talbot, Carmichael, Fuller, and Stanley.
1908, Sir Thomas David Gibson Carmichael, Baronet
1911, Sir John Michael Fleetwood Fuller, Baronet
1914, Sir Arthur Lyulph Stanley
1920, Sir William Hull Irvine, K.C.M.G.K.C. (Acting)
1921, the Earl of Stradbroke. K.C.M.G., C.B., C.V.O., C.B.10., A.D.C.

We have had forty Ministers since separation, that is from 1851 down to 1923. The writs for the first election were issued on the 1st of July, 1851, and that day was always celebrated as Separation Day. The first constitution was not an unqualified success; that could not be expected. A chamber partly nominated and partly elective could not permanently satisfy a self-governing community, but the objection to the constitution came first from New South Wales, and we had ours amended at the same time, 1850. That second constitution has found expression in our consolidated statutes, and is at the basis of our present law. Robert Lowe, an Australian Statesman, who went to England and obtained a seat in the House of Commons, representing
Kidderminster, severely criticised this constitution. Yet there is nothing repugnant to the laws of England in it now, and it was less democratic then; some features have been modified. Then, the Lieutenant-Governor was a military man, now he is a judge. Sir William Foster Stawell was the first Lieutenant-Governor under the new arrangement. Then there was a surveyor-General; not so now. It is surprising that we never had a Government Geologist in the Ministry because of our output of gold, but the Minister of Mines met the case. Some hold that we are without Parliamentary Government, and are ruled by Boards: Board of Lands and Works, Public Service Board, Board of Public Health, that can go as far as to close up churches and theatres during epidemic scares, and lay down laws for human guidance; Railway Commissioners and City Councillors. Still these juntos, cabals and cabinets are subject to Parliament, and if we will it they in time will become subject to the referendum. The Chief Offices in our Government are the Premier, the Chief Secretary, the Treasurer, The Attorney-General, the Solicitor-General, the Minister of Railways, the Minister of Mines, Forests and Public Health, Commissioner of Crown Lands and Survey, the Minister of Water Supply, the Minister of Public Instruction, the Minister of Labour, the Minister of Agriculture. The old Collector of Customs went very soon, superseded by a Commissioner of Customs; now the office is Federal, and Customs are no longer a State matter. So with the Postal Department, that was intimately associated with our early life. These secretaries were originally clerks to the King, now they are the servants of the people. Offices change. Down to 1923 we had 40 Ministries and 26 Statesmen who became Premiers:-

(1) William Clarke Haines (Geelong)
(2) John O'Shanassy (Melbourne)
(3) William Nicholson (Melbourne)
(4) Richard Heales (Melbourne)
(5) James McCulloch (Melbourne)
(6) John Alexander McPherson (Dundas)
(7) Charles Gavan Duffy (Villiers)
(8) James Goodall Francis (Melbourne)
(9) George Briscoe Kerford (Beechworth)
(10) Graham Berry (Melbourne)
(11) James Service (Melbourne)
(12) Bryan O’Loghlen (Melbourne)
(13) Duncan Gillies (Ballarat)
(14) James Munro (Melbourne)
(15) William Shiels (Melbourne)
(16) James Brown Patterson (Castlemaine)
(17) Allan McLean (Melbourne)
(18) George Turner (Melbourne)
(19) Alexander Peacock (Creswick)
(20) William Hill Irvine (Melbourne)
(21) Thomas Bent (Melbourne)
(22) John Murray (Warrnambool)
(23) George Alexander Elmslie (Melbourne)
(24) William Alexander Watt (Melbourne)
(25) John Bowser
(26) Harry Sutherland Wightman Lawson.

It will be seen that only one-third of them came from the country. Gavan Duffy made his reputation in Ireland and returned to Ireland, and therefore is not properly an Australian. The longest-lived Ministry was Sir George Turner’s, and the next to Turner’s, McCulloch’s, and then Duncan Gillies; and the shortest-lived Ministry that of the Labour Government, Elmslie’s, which only lasted thirteen days. Brighton kindly remembered Sir Thomas Bent,
and on Bay-Road there is a life-sized statue to him, on which are recorded the facts, that he was a Brighton Councillor for forty-five years, and a Member of Parliament for 32 years, and that he had been both Speaker and Premier.

Among the earlier Statesmen, O’Shanassy, Fawkner and Nicholson would have rack-rented the pastoralist, while J. F. Palmer and Charles Bradshaw, while not standing for squattocracy, counselled a more moderate policy, as did also Charles Hilton Dight.

Mr. George Godfrey, one of the leading colonists of Victoria, was born in London in 1834. Early in life he took a keen interest in politics, and when a very young man became a member of the noted Whittington Club, and was associated with the Chartist movement. Commencing his business career in London as a law-stationer, he decided, after a few years, to settle in Victoria, and arrived in Melbourne in 1857. It was not long before Mr. Godfrey began to take part in local politics, and in 1859 he addressed the electors of Collingwood as a candidate for Parliament. Business reasons, however, prevented him from proceeding with his candidature. Mr. Godfrey, having decided to adopt the law as a profession, was admitted as a Solicitor of the Supreme Court in 1865, and soon came into prominence. In a few years he acquired one of the largest practices in Melbourne, and was engaged in many leading cases. In 1874 Mr. Godfrey contested an election for the Legislative Assembly at North Melbourne, but was defeated. In 1885 Mr. Godfrey became a member of the Melbourne City Council, retaining his seat for six years. He became a Member of the Legislative Council of Victoria in 1895 for the South Yarra Province.

Mr. Godfrey, while a Member of the Upper House, introduced in any democratic measures, and was recognized as an earnest and able politician. He retired from Parliament in 1904. As a man of affairs, Mr. Godfrey played a leading part in Victoria. In 1870 he became a member of the committee of the Benevolent Asylum. At one time he was chairman of directors of the old Princess Theatre Company Limited. He was also chairman of directors of the Mariners Reef Gold Mining Company, and a director of the Long Tunnel Extended Gold Mining Company. He was for many years a director of the Universal Permanent Building Society, and a promoter and director of the first motor-bus company in Melbourne.

Mr. Godfrey was elected a member of the committee of the Melbourne Hospital in 1885, becoming later on the treasurer of that institution, and remaining a member of committee till the time of his death. Amongst numerous other positions held by Mr. Godfrey was that of director of the Federal Mutual Insurance Company. Mr. Godfrey, who was senior partner in the well-known legal firm of Godfrey and Godfrey, died in 1920 at the ripe age of 86. His son gave us legal advice when we took action on behalf of the Old Pioneers Memorial against the City Council.

But few of these men are in the Old Cemetery; they belong to a succeeding age. Men die to-day with a long past behind them, and hardly seem to touch the period covered by the pioneers in the Old Cemetery; for instance, recently the so-called Father of the Legislative Council died, Donald Melville; he was 90 years old, and had been a Member of it since his election on 30th November, 1882, and sat continuously from that year. He was Minister of Defence and Minister of Health in Victoria in the McLean Ministry 1899-1900, and his last election was for Melbourne North province, in 1916. We see the flag half-mast high on the State Parliament, and reflect that this old man was quite a recent character compared with James Graham.

We walk the broken paths in the Old Cemetery, and turn down the grassy way that leads to Batman’s monument, and come on the grave of elative of William Nicholson, and we remember that Nicholson introduced that ballot system which has been adopted by the whole Democratic world. Manhood suffrage was introduced in 1859, and the life of a Parliament was reduced from five to three years. In the forties, when Town Councillors were being elected, a report would appear in the papers showing who each elector voted for. A poll tax was put on the
Chinese by the first Legislative Council, which was abolished in 1805, and re-imposed with restrictions as to the number any vessel could bring in 1881. The first factory Act was passed in 1873.

Payment of Members came in March 1878; it was proposed much earlier, but Graham Berry secured it after a hard fight for our Members of Parliament in this year.

Graham Berry’s dispute with the Upper House culminated in Native Wednesday, 9th of January, 1878, when the Governor, without notice, dismissed many heads of departments, even County Court Judges and Police Magistrates, on the grounds that the Legislative Council had not voted the money for their salaries.

We have gone on increasing our civil service, and to save it from another Native Wednesday, we must make it productive. Our Mining Boards, Wheat Pools, Shipping Commissions, and all these organizations which have come into being since the war, prove that the Government is gradually taking over monopolies. To-day one adult in every ten in Melbourne is in the public service, therefore it must develop the resources of our country and bear its own burden.

Old-age pensions were granted in 1901. During the sixteen years that Port Phillip was a district of New South Wales that colony had three Governors, Bourke, Gipps, and Fitzroy and all of them during their terms of office paid a visit to Melbourne: Bourke in 1837, Gipps 1842, Fitzroy 1849; and each have left us some memorial. The district in which Melbourne is situated is the County of Bourke, and our main street bears his name. Gipps has given his name to a ward, and a street in East Melbourne, Gipps Street, and the mountain division of Victoria in the East is called Gippsland. It was discovered by McMillan in 1839, and called by him the Australian Caledonia, and a little later almost contemporaneously surveyed by Strzelecki, the Polish Scientist, and named Gippsland. Strzelecki was in Melbourne in 1840. Kosciusko is his memorial. Fitzroy is a name of a suburb, a street, and the beautiful gardens in East Melbourne.

The name Fitzroy calls up great memories, for both Darwin and Fitzroy were associated with **H.M.S. Beagle.** But we must not confuse the Fitzroy of the Beagle, with our Governor-General; both became Governors. Darwin’s Fitzroy Robert Fitzroy became Governor of New Zealand; ours is quite another man, a half-brother to Darwin’s friend; ours is a military man who, as an officer of the Horse Guards, was present at the Battle of Waterloo, while the other was a seaman, the commander of a British man-o’-war. Ours lost his wife in a carriage accident in Sydney, and she is buried in the same churchyard in Parramatta that contains the remains of Samuel Marsden and William Batman, the father of our hero. He married again ten months after he gave up his work in Australia. When he came to Melbourne in 1840 he met with a similar accident to that in Sydney which resulted in the death of his wife; he was being driven through the city on the second day that he was here, in Latrobe’s carriage. When they arrived opposite the Mechanics Institute (Athenæum) in Collins Street, the horses were frightened by the fireworks, and bolted at full speed and struck a heap of bricks and stones. No one, however, was seriously injured, for the horses broke away from the carriage with the pole between them, and a severe shaking was the only result of the accident. Sir Charles Augustus Fitzroy, at Separation, became Governor-General, and when gold was discovered he proposed the Mint at Sydney, and thus commenced the Australian gold currency.

To summarize: In 1842 the Port Phillip district was granted representation in the Legislative Council of New South Wales to the extent of six members, but none but Sydney men sat until 1844. In 1848 Melbourne chose Earl Grey, who remained member until 1850, when William Westgarth was elected. In 1851 we separated, and we secured a One-chamber House; and in 1855 a new constitution and a Two-chamber House. On 23rd of November, 1855, the New Constitution was proclaimed in Victoria; the old one provided for thirty members, twenty elected and ten nominated, but it was amended and modified, and there were 66
members sitting in a single Chamber when the time came for a new constitution, and a double-
chambered Parliament. Then we had yet another constitution after Federation,

Adult suffrage male and female came with the first Federal Parliament. It belongs to the
twentieth century, although earlier than that South Australia had enfranchised women.

Women were admitted to the Melbourne University on the 22nd of March, 1880. Darwin’s idea of
pangenesis (Theory of Hereditarity) is repeated in the Empire. He thinks that the human
body in the act of reproducing itself or in repairing itself, contributes something from every
cell, from the hairs of your head to the nails on your toes, from the folds of your brain to
the joints of your vertebrae. Thus the child resembles its parents, and thus it is that any part
of the body is readily healed: all parts help. So it should be in building new England’s or
new Britain’s, or in repairing or defending the Empire.

The inhabitants of the remotest islands should be represented in the Parliament or Congress of
the Empire. The smallest village and the greatest city. Some people try to make universal service
conscription: they fail to see the civil service, and the civil service is always. To say that all men
should enter the army is as reasonable as to say that all men should enter the railway
service.

What we want is adequate service from all: each man voluntarily taking the position he is most
fitted for; to that end is liberty, and for that purpose is Statesmanship. First the seventy
million white people in our Empire will be fully enfranchised. Then we educate the three
hundred and fifty millions of coloured people to take their place beside us. Every step of
the way we have to watch. We cannot confer on the illiterate or savage man power until he
is a citizen in a Commonwealth; he understands. We want him to understand the value of
his share in the Commonwealth before he becomes a partner, therefore we removed his
illiteracy by educating his children. We commenced from the first, here in Melbourne, with the
Aboriginals, one of the lowest races on earth. That was George Langhorne’s work. The
basis of representation is population. If every 100,000 of the white people of the Empire sent
one man to the Imperial Parliament, then there would be a Parliament of seven hundred, and
the Empire would be more fully represented in London than the Republic is in Washington.
This is what I understand by National Federation. The ninth city of the Empire has a right
to speak on this subject. Our Statesmanship and State service covers first Foundation, second
Separation, third Federation, fourth Imperial or National Federation.

Professor E. Jenks has told the story of our Statecraft in his book, The Government of
Victoria. His idea is that Port Phillip commenced with Magisterial Government. He held that
the treaty that Batman made with the natives was without value, as he speaks of him and his
associates as so called grantees of the land of Douta Galla and Geelong, and he thought if a
contract were made Batman would have been a legal subject of Jaga Jaga, Moowhip and the
others; yet with all his technicality, he says Batman only bought 150,000 acres, whereas
the treaty says he bought 600,000 acres. Why not stick to the documents? We have seen
that Blackstone took the position that it was right to buy land from the natives, and we know
that William Penn, The Hudson Bay Company, and the East India Company were encouraged
by the British Government. Why, then, was the Batman Association so harshly treated? and the
squatters who came afterwards and jumped the land so leniently dealt with. Henry Dendy
can buy Brighton in London; there he purchases eight square miles of the Port Phillip
district at a pound an acre, and his certificate is recognized here. So valuable was that land even
then that on the day of his arrival here he is offered £15,000 for it, and on it to-day
stands our rich suburb of Brighton. Batman is unrewarded by the Government, which gives a
fortune to Dendy; and yet it was this man’s initiative that made Melbourne, and it was his
associates who had money from the land sales set aside for immigration. The Home
Government would have given them the men of Bentonville, and cheap convict labourers, but
they had sufficient character to insist on the principle initiated by the Batman Association. It was
this Port Phillip Association that sought to cover our pastures with sheep and cattle uncontaminated by disease, and not the least of their difficulties was trying to save their flocks from contamination; and this year Goldsbrough and Co. report that there are more sheep in Victoria than ever before. 15,770,000.

This commenced with Coltish bringing over Batman’s flock, and right then he sought to save the country from an invasion of diseased flocks and herds, and the Goldsbrough Company to-day appeal for help to stay the sheep plague and fight the depredations of the dingo.

While disagreeing with the presentation of Professor Jenks, in common with all his readers I recognize his range of vision, and the value of his presenting to us a view of our law in an organic form, but surely he is wrong in several details. He affirms that almost the first indigenous institution of Port Phillip was the market, which was neither first nor indigenous. If the original idea of the market had prevailed, much trade in Melbourne would have been restricted, and probably destroyed, because the aim of the Commissioners was to make everyone in the village buy in the market, and as late as 1845, when the market had come under the council our daily papers discussed whether it would be right to license hawkers to carry vegetables or fish, considering that the people could get these in the market. By a strange coincidence that very hawker question reoccurs to-day, and the council was doubtful whether they would license more barrowmen. After some discussion, it was held that a few more barrows would provide employment for the returned soldiers, so they agreed to an increase in the licenses, but it was a small number who were licensed, yet the street is one of our best markets and means of distributing food. We must remember that the meeting at which the resolution was carried to have a market was held on the 21st of January, 1841; that was nearly six years after Batman’s arrival. And when our city became incorporated in 1842, it came under the council, which appointed a market committee, therefore the first indigenous institution died very young. The committee took over the market commission, and it was no more indigenous than any other function of primitive society.

Nor did organization commence with the Magistrate, but perhaps with the meeting in Batman’s house to choose a referee, and arbitration may have been our first institution. I think organisation was a part of Batman’s plan, and law commenced with him rather than with Lonsdale.

Through Batman, Lonsdale came and was supported by him. One of our earliest governing institutions would be a Road Board. Our Governor has his duties defined for him now by instructions from the Home Government. He represents the Crown and can, without delay, sign most Bills, but there are some which he must reserve for the sanction of the Crown, such as these touching the Royal prerogative, or dealing with Imperial shipping, or the rights and duties of British citizens. Therefore I hold that Governor Stanley had no right to sign the Bill alienating our Cemetery; he touched the rights and property of people like the Jacksons, the Craig’s and the Fawcuses, who were residing in other lands. There are hundreds of such grave-holders residing in England, in New South Wales, and other British possessions, and the law therefore, without special authority from the King, seems to those who protested against the alienation of the ground beyond the powers.

While Melbourne naturally became a city with the arrival of Bishop Perry in 1848, yet she was formally converted a city that year by Letters Patent. Professor Jenks seemed to maintain in truth that we received representative Government in Victoria as soon as the people received it anywhere else in Australia. That measure of representative Government which came into Australia in 1842, operated here at the same time as it did in Sydney. Up to that time all the communities in Australia were governed by the nominees of the Mother Country, and even in the Chambers granted in 1850, one-third were nominees of the Crown. The Governor is the last vestige of that old nominee Government. Until we have National Federation we must retain some of the links that bind us to the Mother Country. Melbourne as soon as others looked
along the line of graded self-government to the day of Federation, a Federation that is to keep all these popular assemblies on which we have ascended to a Commonwealth Government.

We extend the realm of freedom,
We safeguard the rights of man,
We will educate and lead them
By a higher, nobler plan.
And the end is peace and plenty
When the world is one and free
By the happy suzerainty
Of the islands of the sea.

Suzerainty: A nation that controls another nation in international affairs but allows it domestic sovereignty.
CHAPTER 5
FOUNDERS OF TRADE AND COMMERCE.

Our complex system of trade and commerce commenced with the simplest methods of trading. Our vast agricultural system worked by all modern improvements, with Grant's coal shovel that dug up the garden on Churchill Island, and the implements used by Batman's men builder was George Evans, who erected a sod hut; and the father of our iron workers was Gilbert, our first Blacksmith. Hepburn argued that Buckley was the founder of Melbourne because he built Batman's chimney, and therefore put down the first brick. While we deny this we have to admit that our miles of brick and mortar commenced with that chimney. Our merchants were shopkeepers. Batman, it is said, put up the first properly constructed house and Fawkner the first public house; anyway Batman kept a store and Fawkner a public house, Fawkner seems to have erected a wooden house before Batman. Authorities differ on this, because Henry Batman had built huts before the arrival of Fawkner. Both men were shippers. Our shipping commenced with *The Rebecca*, *The Norval*, and *The Gem*, used by Batman, and *The Enterprise* owned by Fawkner. This was the beginning of commerce. Batman, in coming in *The Rebecca* came as an explorer, but when four months later Coltish brought over five hundred sheep in *The Norval* for him then it is commerce, and the foundation of our pastoral life and wool industry is laid, laid so well that in 1840 we are sending wool to England and helping to feed Van Diemen’s Land.

The complex system of each branch of trade and commerce commences with the unit. As our life advances, history loses sight of the individual, and deals with man collectively looking on the great and general causes that give life and form to society. But we can never understand the law of these forces or movements until we incarnate them. A man or an incident recalls a system and we look along a line of work. Batman grew the first potatoes, and now Warrnambool sends them to Melbourne by the millions. His eldest daughter made a linen shirt for Buckley, and thus commenced the white-working industry in Melbourne, that to-day is expressed in shirt factories and kindred places for making underclothing that are found in every suburb. Robert Marr was the first carpenter; that name as a second Christian name occurred on a stone in the Gilmore grave in our Cemetery. That first carpenter was the lineal progenitor of our great sash and door factories and building firms. Evan Evans made the first boots, a pair for Buckley. Kenneth S. Clarke sheared the first sheep in Melbourne, near the Saltwater River, for the Van Diemen’s Land, Great Lake Company. All our trade and industry date back to this Arcadian age.

A story is told of Tyson, the Queensland millionaire. He pleaded that his life had not been selfish or in vain, because he had extended the area of civilization. He had put sheep and cattle on plains and downs where they had never been before. He built houses and erected fences in the waste places of the earth, so his march was triumphal, and his life was not in vain. His is the glory of the pioneer. McCombie gives a list of the squatters of 1895. Turn to your maps of Australia-Felix and you find that the country at that time was divided into eight pastoral provinces, and McCombie gives the name of the settlers in each. And I went and read them on the stones in the Old Cemetery. Greater overlanders than Burke and Wills; men who drove their cattle in days when there were no roads from central New South Wales to Port Phillip, swimming the rivers braving the forest fires, and danger to their flocks and herds from dingoes and aboriginals.

I take from McCombie’s list of names some of these of settlers in each district that I have seen on the stones.

(1) Bourke Brock and Sons, Steel, Aitkin, and James Sceale, the Scotch merchant and magistrate, who left his home in Perth, the ancient Scottish Capital, to come and help to build an Empire here. He died in 1844, aged 65. His good wife had
gone two years before him, Grace McLaren. On his beautiful tomb were written the words: *Once I was young, but now I am old, yet never saw I the righteous forsaken or their seed begging their bread.*

(2) Grant Airey (an Airey is in nearly every district), J. Walsh, J. Bruce, H. Tate. Tate was not in the Old Cemetery, but Ann Tate was. Bruce’s wife, and she slept beside her husband. Tate had a run near to Bruce.

(3) Normanby, Coghill, McDonald, McIntyre. McIntyre bought land at the second sale in Melbourne. He was in Sydney, and Lonsdale allows him to pay for it there. Pioneers often had to do their business by proxy, getting a friend to buy for them, or to pay the money over for them. Thus they had to know each other. There had to be the spirit of honour in business among the land owners. In Normanby there is P. Lynch, John Kennedy and other names we saw in the Old Cemetery; but many of these original land owners were buried in the bush.

(4) Portland Relatives of the Henty’s by marriage were buried in the Old Cemetery. In this district were Mackinnon, Cunningham, Urquhart, Donaldson, Turnbull, Ritchie, Thomson, Anderson and Hamilton, names we became familiar with while studying the Old Cemetery.

(5) Westernport Balcombe, Patterson, Curr, Betts, Bear, Raleigh, Orr, Brierty, Hunter, and Dodds. On the pediment to the stone over Mrs. Dodds was an angel’s face, between out spread wings. Our architects saw in it a work of art; some pioneer artist had carved it out of freestone.

(6) Gippsland Hobson, Pearson, Purcell and Lucas.

(7) Murray District James Rowe, C. Ryan, Curr, Brock, Wise.

(8) The Wimmera Beveridge, Airey. Some of these were only represented there by relatives, but there is so great a number of names which I have omitted from ignorance of the localities in which they settled that the omissions will atone for the errors of commission.

For instance:- where did Harbin settle? We know that he was a squatter, and that he introduced the threshing machine into the Upper Plenty district, but where did he originally locate? He buried his son in the Old Cemetery. The Langhorne’s, who took up tracts of land in various parts of Victoria, also had their grave there. Land was booming in the early forties. A feature of the commercial life of that time was the auctioneer’s open house; free champagne for all. You knocked off the head of your bottle and drank like a nobleman.

These pioneer settlers made the market by their labours. We can buy and sell on a large scale. They were the fathers of trade. The pastoralist laid the foundation. The market of a country does not belong to one community, nor centralizes in one point. The market of a city is along its great thoroughfares. Only fools call a fair the market of the city, not statesmen.

Instead of these markets in Victoria Street having helped trade, they have checked its Development, and it finishes at the top of Elizabeth Street, and in the markets it is only carried on market days. A retail market is not properly city development. The city develops along its great thoroughfares, Collins Street, Elizabeth Street, Bourke Street, Lygon Street, Smith Street, and so on. These are the true markets of the city. When our fathers first laid them out broad and accessible, they laid the foundation of trade development. If a retail market were essential to city development then it would be proper to have one in Richmond, or in Collingwood. The working men’s suburbs are without them, and to their benefit, for the retail shop carries the food to their doors.
Political economy demands economical production and economical distribution. This is economic development. To the evolutionist the centralized retail market is a rudimentary organ of commercialism; it belongs to primitive conditions, and is seen to-day in New Guinea, at the Hiri, where the tribe that makes pottery meets the tribe that grows sago at a given place and makes an exchange. It belongs to the age of barter and bargain, and here in Melbourne it calls on working men to waste hours of time to get to a centralized market, where if they were getting things cheaper they would be ruining the retail trade.

The history of the market committee is interesting. The Age for the 29th of March, 1870, says that they proposed a hide and skin market in Elizabeth Street, alongside of the fresh-meat market; the smelly gas or vapour from which would not only have filled the meat market but would have a good chance of suffocating the thickly populated district around. When the motion was tabled the then Mayor refused to entertain it, and ruled it out of order. Our present committee seems to have inherited some of the bad traits of its predecessors, and in spite of the plea of the President of the Fruit growers for open air markets, and a general plea for the extension of the work of the hawker, it persisted in its determination to rob the city of this open space. The Victoria Markets were originally intended only to be temporary; they were opened with the idea that they would relieve the market business of Melbourne while the new Eastern Market was being erected, but having secured a footing it made for itself a permanent place here.

A wholesale centre or depot is a different thing. It should be situated near our railway station and our shipping. This market would restrict us to buying from Melbourne growers, while the Melbourne market should be open to all the products of Victoria. It was this that made Melbourne the trade centre in the beginning. In case of emergency, the suburban growers may not be able to meet the demand. And we have dug up the bones of the men who taught us the lesson of providence, and laid the foundations of trade and commerce and the true markets of the State.

The pioneers bought sheep at 20 shillings and 30 shillings, and sold wool at 2 shillings a pound. Sheep fell, said Captain Fyan, to 1 shilling. (id., and wool to 9 pence or 10 pence a pound. The squatters were broke, when an idea saved them. It was tallow. We followed the example of New South Wales and resolved to boil down, and two men in Victoria are credited with introducing this, Bolden and Brock. Bolden was certainly buried in the Cemetery, and the Brocks had two graves in which rest members of their family.

Nature and art combined to make our Arcadian life a success. Lonsdale (in 1837) writes to New South Wales for twenty men: sawyers, wheelwrights, carpenters, bricklayers, glaziers, quarrymen, well-sinkers and brickmakers. He grappled with the organization of the township.

The head of the engineers in Sydney is to send him a forge. He wants a water-cart; that was our primitive way of being supplied with water from the Yarra, which Grimes thirty odd years before called the fresh water river, but which in the eighties was an offence to every vessel that arrived here. Tanneries and boiling-down establishments first started upon its banks. Then came the chemical works and other factories; the primeval perfume of the wattle was replaced by various noxious smells, and the purity of its water polluted by the drainage, converting nature's provision for the health of a settlement into a source of fever and infection. Lonsdale faced all the initial difficulties; while nominally a Police Magistrate he controlled or became the arbiter in everything pertaining to life and trade. He saw the township rise and remained with it until 1853, when it took its place among the cities of the world. He organized the post office; the first delivery under his authority was 24 letters by an incoming mail from Sydney. The first court, the first prison, and the first hospital were organized by him. The Government became a trader: it not only fed the military and the convicts, but numbers of natives, and the Commissariat arose as one of the chief businesses in the village, and thus became a help or a hindrance to the development of trade and commerce. He even had the organization of the church on his hands, and consequently the employment of preachers. In his letter to The Lord Bishop of Australia, he gives the population of Melbourne on 24th November, 1830. He says the number of the inhabitants were 224, of which 210
were Protestant and fourteen Roman Catholic. Fifty persons had arrived since, exclusive of the Government establishment of 90, making in all, I take it, 304. Nature was not unkind. The seals abounded on the coast, and the trees furnished profitable bark.

One of the earliest overseas traders in bark was William Hull. Our first industries brought us close to nature, still they had to be financed. We wanted a bank, and William Frederick Augustus Rucker, whose white tomb with golden letters was in the Cemetery, gave us our first bank, a branch of the Derwent Bank from Van Diemen's Land. He is a pioneer Melbourne should remember with gratitude, for he was not only the father of our banking but also of our overseas shipping trade, and was associated in the origin of our first insurance company. On his tomb are the words “Inasmuch as ye did it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye did it unto Me.” These words are taken from Matthew’s Gospel, where Jesus represents that an act of kindness done to the least of his disciples is done to himself. It is one of the most animated appeals made by Jesus to us, to act benevolently. True, trade and commerce is philanthropic, it is man's effort to turn the earth to the needs of humanity. It was in 1838 that he acted as the Melbourne agent for the Derwent Bank Company of Hobart Town. The books of this bank are now in the Public Library. I was not allowed to examine them. It was held that we were not yet far enough away from the scenes, that people were still alive whose fathers had done business with the bank. Still I ascertained that both Batman and Fawkner had an account in that bank. Rucker advertised in Fawkner’s MSS. newspaper, The Advertiser. This bank was established at a time when the coinage included foreign coins, American dollars, and the advertising tokens of local Tasmanian firms, as well as pounds, shillings and pence. William Westgarth calls David Charteris McArthur the father of Victorian Banking. He had a fine tomb in the Presbyterian ground; Rucker was in the Episcopalian section. McArthur was the first manager of the Melbourne branch of the Bank of Australasia. He opened his bank in a small cottage in Little Collins Street, on the 28th of August, 1838. He was fifty years a resident in Victoria, and throughout that half century was honoured and respected by the community. Both he and Rucker were connected with the first Fire and Marine Insurance Company and joined together in the initiation of most of the social institutions of early Melbourne. We will see him again as a trustee to the Public Library. A Melbourne man, who compares with McArthur as one of the men who was longest in the service of the bank, was Prideaux Selby; he entered the bank in 1858, and was with them as an honorary director in the twentieth century. He belonged to the ancient family of the Selby’s, and his earliest appointment was as manager of the bank at Dunedin, New Zealand. He was the eldest son of George William Selby the pastoralist and pioneer of the Anderson's Creek district (Warrandyte). He came with his father in the ship The China in 1840. His father attained a very high position in the commercial and financial world, and died at South Yarra. Prideaux rose to be secretary of the bank, and when he retired became an honorary director. Prideaux wrote for the Melbourne Review, and is reported to have been an independent thinker on economic subjects. We are under a debt of gratitude to the Bank of Australasia. Of all the banks it was the only one that had money for the pioneers memorial, and was seized of the need of building it. Henderson, the superintendent, on behalf of this, the oldest continuous bank in Victoria, gave us twenty pounds. Up to the present that bank, with the exception of Theodore Napier, is our best giver, and through their gift and a few others we were able to embark on the publication of this book. Their sole desire was to encourage generous and spontaneous giving.

Old Cemetery was a stone, Sacred to the Memory of Cecil, the infant son of Charles and Ellen Bradshaw. One day I met a Mr. Bradshaw at this grave, and he told me that he was the nephew of Charles Bradshaw, and that Charles was the first manager of the Bank. This I found to be hardly correct. William Highett was the first manager, and the bank was founded here shortly after the Bank of Australasia in 1838. Bradshaw was manager from 1850 to 1852. He gave up this position to join his brother, Joe Bradshaw, in an extensive exporting and importing venture. Both brothers held large pastoral interests. The Bradshaw Railway Station on the Melbourne and Ballarat line is close to the site of the homestead, Bolwarrah, of Mr. Joe Bradshaw. Mr. Charles Bradshaw’s first run was Tragowel, after which another Victorian railway station is named; he was a nominee member.
of the Victorian Parliament, and was also an officer in the Mounted Yeomanry, a very select volunteer corps in the early days of the colony.

William Highett, the first manager of the Union Bank, was succeeded by Thomas Elder Boyd. He and his wife were buried in the Old Cemetery. Both the Bank of Australasia and the Union Bank assisted in financing the City Council during its first year. When our first Treasurer, Simpson, accepted the office, he only accepted it providing the Bank of Australasia became the bank of the council. He did not, however, remain treasurer for many months, and negotiations were then opened with other banks. The men of the beginning financed us without public debt, and we made tolerable progress for the twenty years that our revenue balanced our expenditure.

In 1850 the Colonial Bank commenced under the management of Thomas Elder Boyd, who had left the Union Bank. The Colonial Bank initiated a system of giving interest on current account balances, and apparently it was not until 1858 that the other banks encouraged fixed deposits at interest.

The name Boyd is deeply associated with the financing of early Melbourne. There is this Boyd of the Union Bank and George Boyd, a merchant, who was buried in the Old Cemetery. Then there was Benjamin Boyd, a man who transformed the finance of the young colony. He financed many stations, owned the yacht *The Wanderer*, and died in the Islands.

Next to Boyd's grave was the broken column to Renny, and I quote William Westgarth’s story of his death:-

"Renny, of Dundee, Scotland, aged 24, a remarkably fine young man, who died thus early to the grief of all his friends. He was one of the staff of the Union Bank of Australia. Although the favourite of everyone, he retained his unaffected simplicity of manner and character to the last. He died of consumption in the house of Mr. Cassell, who had invited him there, when he took ill, in order that he might be well attended to."

Cassell, James Gill, Alfred Ross and myself took the last night of the dying lad in relays of three or four hours each, and when the last breath passed from the fine face, Mrs. Cassell, who stood by with the rest of us, and who had nursed him with the fondest mother’s care, broke out into loud sobs of irrepressible grief. We decided upon a broken column as his monument, fit emblem of the life so early broken, and we settled his brief epitaph which Mr. Cassell drew up:-

*Erected by his friends in this colony in testimony of esteem and regard.*

The grave of a child, Elizabeth Austin Grey-Smith, arrested our attention, and we presumed that this child was related to Grey-Smith, the founder of the National Bank. The Bank of New South Wales was opened on the 2nd of April, in the year 1851. The present building was completed in 1858. I have referred to it in my chapter on Art and Architecture; the design was practically the work of Joseph Reed, although carried out by the firm of Reed and Barnes. William Crocker Cornish was the contractor and builder. Prior to 1858 the bank carried on its business at the corner of William and Collins Streets, on the site now occupied by the Widows Fund Buildings; the land on which the present building stands was bought for £6000 in 1852. The decorated stones and pillars were dressed and carved by Charles Summers, and they still bear his initials; the erection of the building cost £38,000.

Our important banks which have branches in the suburbs have varied in number from ten to twelve. All the banks I have yet mentioned were exotic in origin. The first bank created here was the Port Phillip Bank, projected in 1838, but wound up in 1843. Banking is Imperial or Federal. The London Chartered was founded in 1853, and the English, Scottish and Australian in 1854. The London Chartered Bank was founded in London in 1852, but it did not open in Melbourne until 1st July, 1853; its first general manager was Mr. Charles Falconer, who, like many other bank managers, was chosen from the stall of the Bank of Australasia. He was succeeded by Mr. John Bramwell, but it is said that the chief founder of the bank was Captain Duncan Dunbar, the shipowner whose name was given to the vessel that was wrecked at the Gap, near Sydney. He
was the first chairman of the directors. One day as Mr. Padley and myself walked through the Old Cemetery together we came to the graves of Boyd and Bennie, who both belonged to banks, and he remarked that our great bankers had nearly all been Scotch.

The London Chartered Bank, as The Argus observed, showed this feature, among its directors were James Balfour, John Guthrie, James McCulloch, James MacBain, William McCulloch and James Aitken, all apparently Scotch, while on its stall were a Machardy, John Russell Boss, William Reed, Thomas Kidd, J. L. Ballantyne, Alexander Brown and Charles Guthrie.

Last year, 1923, the English, Scottish and Australian Bank bought the London Bank. The building in which the London Bank was housed is referred to elsewhere; it was erected in 1805, by Terry and Oakden, and it is claimed that the lower part resembles the Theseum on the Acropolis in Athens; the upper stories are a different style of architecture. The English, Scottish and Australian Bank has sold the premises to T. M. Burke for £66,000.

The Colonial Bank commenced in 1850. The National in 1858. The National and Colonial amalgamated in November 1918, and they bought out the Bank of Queensland in 1921.

The Commercial started in 1806. It absorbed the Australian-European Bank, Melbourne, the Mercantile Bank, Sydney, and the National Bank of Tasmania. Henry Gyles Turner managed it for thirty years; he closed his work there in 1901. The Port Phillip Bank was not the only one that failed; the Federal Bank, the Provincial and Suburban, and others went that way.

Among these which started here which have held their own is the Bank of Victoria, managed by the late Honourable Henry Miller, who was the son of Captain Henry Miller of the 40th Regiment, and came to Australia in 1823, and finally settled in Hobart. Henry visited Port Phillip in 1839, and resolved to settle here. He, with Dr. Native and others, started the Bank of Victoria in 1852. He represented South Bourke, Evelyn and Mornington in the old Legislative Council, and continued in Parliament after the new constitution, and voted for the introduction of the ballot system. He is well known as Money Miller from his success as a speculator. He died on the 7th of February, 1888, and left behind him a very large fortune. His son is Sir Edward Miller, of Red Cross work, and his grandson, E. S. Miller, a man profoundly interested in history. The crowning glory of banking in Australia is the Commonwealth Bank, the Nationally-owned Bank managed by the late Denison Miller, who although a namesake, is no relation of Henry Miller.

The Savings Bank movement commenced here in September 1841, and the Melbourne Savings Bank opened in Market Street on January 1842; up to 1879 that was the only office.

Then it commenced expanding, creating the Collingwood and the Fitzroy branch. James Moore, M.A., is buried in the old grave of the Wattons; he was the third controller; his term was from 1869 to 1893. His father represented Dublin in the British House of Commons, James was intended for the church, but altered his course and passed in law. He was offered an important position in Sierra Leone, but preferred coming to Australia, where he commenced life; as a station-holder. Later he is in business in Melbourne as an official assignee, and in 1869 is appointed controller of our Savings Bank. He was always a benevolent man, and had a profound interest in letters, and was one of the choicest bookmen in the city. The following appeared in The Age recently: The death of a very old colonist, Miss Frances Hayes Watton, at the advanced age of 91, occurred on Thursday. Miss Watton was the daughter of Dr. Watton, at one time practising in London, where she was born in 1827. At the age of 12 she came, to Australia with her parents, who settled first in Tasmania. Subsequently Dr. Watton took up some of the first land in the Werribee district, known as Mount Rouse Station, but after some years he moved to Melbourne, where he practised his profession. Miss Watton was a descendant of Edmund Ludlow, whose name with that of Cromwell and others was attached to the death warrant of Charles I.

She was a cousin of John Malcolm Ludlow, the friend of Kingsley, with whom she was acquainted, as well as many other well-known men in the mid-Victorian era. A sister married Mr. James Moore, the Savings Bank Controller; her name was Harriet Maria Watton, and she is buried beside her.
husband. John Ludlow Watton is also buried in the same grave, and our old colonist who died a year or two ago wished to be placed there but the Cemetery had been closed against all further interments at the beginning of the year she died. The grave of Dr. Moore and the Wattons was well tended, and had been one of the best-cared for graves in the Cemetery. My authorities on banking are the Bankers Magazine, Henry Gyles Turner’s articles, Garryowen, and William Westgarth, but I have checked their statements by calling on some of the present-day managers, who have access to the books of the banks.

In Kerr’s Directory of 1841 are the names of all the men in business at that time, and when the trumpet of the Resurrection is sounded a host of them would rise up in the Old Cemetery. Kemmis, Locke, Orr, Pullar, Shaw, Wooley, Williamson, Williams, Turnbull, Jackson, Buchanan, and James Graham. As these men supplied the squatters, just as the bankers financed them, I ought to pause to sketch two or three of the man James Jackson, early Melbourne’s greatest merchant; James Graham, the first treasurer of the Chamber of Commerce; and Arthur Kemmis, founder of our steam navigation.

The story of James Jackson, I take verbatim from William Westgarth’s Early Melbourne: “James Jackson, of Toorak, who died at sea, aged 43, was Melbourne’s greatest merchant of this early time, although he died at so early an age. His house at Toorak, or rather second house, which he with his enlarging fortune built there, but which he did not live to enjoy, was long the finest of the place, and served for some years as the Governor’s residence. It supplies a striking illustration of the sudden needs of the advancing colony. After its golden era, a prominent trader had leased it at £300 a year, but in the mid-term of the lease a demand suddenly arising in 1854 for a Government House for Sir Charles Hotham, the house at Toorak was sublet at £10,000 a year. I recall the early happy Toorak home, where personal beauty in mother and young children lost its edge by being so common; the remaining family are now all in the Old Country.”

Several colonists placed the spire in the Old Cemetery to his memory, a picture of which we give in our general view of the Cemetery. A biographical sketch of James Graham is found in the Argus of Monday, 1st August, 1898.

In the same issue the cables announce the death of Bismarck. Bismarck died the evening before Graham, and indeed it is open to question which was the greater man. He who for sixty years worked to build up a British colony, by organizing industry and providing representative Government, or he who during the same period sought by iron rule and military power to extend the German Empire, in the forties crushing two revolutions, the Austrian and the German, and then in his later life devoting himself to the overthrow of Parliamentary Government.

Graham, the merchant politician, is greater than the Prussian Junker. He landed in Sydney in 1839, and a few weeks after landing came overland to Melbourne. He resided in a cottage in Russell and Little Collins Streets, situated on the land where the King’s Theatre now stands. He worked his way from that cottage to the mansion, Elibank. Latrobe made him a member of our first Legislature. He retired for a time, but returned to politics, and when under the new constitution a two-chamber Parliament was created, he was elected a Member of the Council. This was in 1856 and he was re-elected again and again until he retired in 1886.

To sum up, he was an 1839 man, a member of the Melbourne Club and the first Chamber of Commerce, one of our earliest merchants, and one who sat in the first Victorian Parliament, and finished his political career as M.L.C. He was the recipient of the Letters of the Old Pioneers from Governor Latrobe, and he deposited them in the Public Library. The Argus of Tuesday, 2nd August, 1898, gave an account of his burial and a brief sketch of the Old Cemetery as it was then. It was then thought that it would remain the memorial ground of the city.

The death of Kemmis is reported in the Port Phillip Gazette of 9th February, 1842. He was a merchant, a magistrate and the managing director of the local Steam Navigation Company; his sudden
death made a deep impression on early Melbourne. He took cold and died in seven days; both Dr. McCrae and Dr. Hobson attended him. After his death some superstitious people thought that his ghost haunted the house on Victoria Parade in which he lived while alive, and a singular incident occurred the year the council finally settled on the removal of the graves.

About the date of the anniversary of his death, his monument in the Old Cemetery fell down; it was a pillar standing on a platform, and was surmounted by a ball. The whole monument fell down that February. Although he died when Melbourne was only six years old, yet he had been in other colonies and had resided in Australia for fifteen years. He established the house of Arthur Kemmis & Co. here in 1839, and was said to be the founder of steam navigation in Victoria. He married Miss Raymond, the daughter of the Postmaster-General of New South Wales. Fortunately we photographed his monument before it fell, and it can be seen in our picture of the Watton grave, just behind the stone to James Moore, M.A.

George Porter was a merchant who lived a careful life, and when he passed away, Garryowen says, “left his son rolling in wealth.” That story can be told of more than one who visited the Old Cemetery when their work was done. A good story can be told of the shippers, but I leave them to be treated under Naval and Military Men. The building trade has several representatives in this Cemetery, Peers, Cogan, Lang, Brownlie, and others.

J. J. Peers was the founder of the building trade in the sense that he took the first big contract. I find in the letters of Lonsdale a report of the completion of the contract to build the Custom House, and a statement to the Governor of New South Wales that he had paid Peers. He bought land at the first sale, 1st June, 1837, and he was a lay, if not the lay founder of the Victorian Wesleyan Church, for he built the first Wesleyan Church with his money and on his own land at the corner of Swanston Street and Flinders Lane; and later he was on the building committee of the Wesley Church, and was appointed one of its trustees. He was also a trustee of the Wesleyan Division of our Cemetery, and his grave was at the corner of that ground near the oval in the centre.

He was on the committee of the Melbourne Building Society, which was the forerunner of all our building societies, many in number, some with a precarious life, but all contributing to the development and beautifying of our cities.

J. J. Peers represents the enlightened mechanic. He associated himself with the first effort in the town for popular education, the Mechanics Institute. He was on its committee, and was also a promoter of the first auxiliary to the British and Foreign Bible Society in Victoria. He was the treasurer to the Harmonic Society, the first musical society in Melbourne, and when it was superseded by the Philharmonic Society, he passed in to the more modern association. And they engraved on his tombstone the form of David playing his harp. Thus he was allied to nearly every association for the common good in early Melbourne.

Isaac Buchanan, whose wife is buried in the Old Cemetery, took a leading part at the Squatters Meeting of 1844, standing for cheap labour and the cause of the squattocracy. There was no trade union movement in these days, but William Kerr led the opposition, and broad minded merchants supported him. The advocate of transportation was a scab, and the ship which brought convicts was a plague ship. The Australasian League, I have said, was formed, and King went to England. To that work men in the Cemetery gave liberally: G. W. Cole, 100 guineas; Jackson, Rae & Co., 100 guineas, Fulton & Smith, 100 guineas; C. Williamson & Co., 100 guineas; Turnbull Bros., 100 guineas; James Graham, 100 guineas; George Urquhart, 100 guineas (probably related to William Urquhart of the Old Cemetery; W. S. Campbell, 100 guineas; George Cavanagh, 100 guineas; Henry Budge, £50; William Williamson, £25; James Gill, £25; M. Benjamin, £25; J. J. Everist, £5; J. Brisbane, £5; T. McIntyre, £5; J. Fogarty, £3; and others whom I have mentioned elsewhere.

Such was an effort to enfranchise labour. The assigned servant worked without pay. Macfarlane paid his assigned servants from nine pounds to ten pounds a year. They were not allowed to enter a public house without permission; one of them was found there with twelve pounds in his pocket and some orders, and Lonsdale wrote to Bourke about it, and asked that Macfarlane be restrained from
paying his servants. The mechanic, you will see, would be degraded by these servants, and the anti-transportation represents the protection of labour in the commencement. Franklin, when he made his will, commenced with the words: I, Benjamin Franklin, Printer; not President of the State of Pennsylvania; not Franklin, who signed the four great documents in American History, but I, Benjamin Franklin, Printer. Thus did he dignify labour before the world, and several in that old graveyard have their trade upon their tombs, among them Alexander Brunton, late of Hobart Town, cabinet-maker. Let me tell you his story: Eighty-one years ago a carpenter, James Ross, bought at the first auction in Melbourne (1st June, 1837) a half-acre of land at the corner of Elizabeth and Collins Streets, for which he paid £32. He found it hard to pay even this small sum, and appealed to John Batman for help. Batman lent him twenty pounds. The deed of mortgage is in the possession of B. H. Alston, the present proprietor, and is signed both by John and Eliza Batman. Boss cut the land up into smaller sections, and resold. In 1839 Alexander Brunton, a Scotchman, came to Melbourne from Van Diemen’s Land, and he bought from Ross the corner section, 32 ft. x 32 ft., for £606; he died in 1840. He left his estate to be administered by John Brown and the Reverend James Forbes, and the property went to his only daughter. The executors let it to a Jew, Michael Cashmore, one of the trustees of the Jewish Division of the Cemetery. The rent he paid sustained and educated the little girl. She grew into a beautiful woman and married first a Mr. Milner and then on his death Mr. J. A. Davies. I knew her and her last husband well; he had a mill at Richmond, not such a great distance from Dight’s old mill, who was the pioneer miller of Melbourne. I visited their beautiful home at Hawthorn, and when he died and she was advanced in life, saw her again at her house in East Melbourne. She was one of the well-read women of Melbourne, and a visit to her home could not be forgotten.

This corner grew in value, and she became a rich woman, and Mr. Alston, its present proprietor, paid many thousands of pounds for it.

Brunton’s funeral in the forties cost nineteen pounds; the present stone must have been placed in the Cemetery much later. His daughter died five or six years ago.

Charles Hilton Dight, our earliest miller, was buried not far away from William Dutton, the old merchant. We will see them again. Wages in these days were six shillings a day for mechanics, and that was a day of nine and ten hours. In 1854 their wages stood at from 15 shillings a day. In 1850 farm labourers received £19 a year; in 1854 from £52 to £65. Female house-servants in 1850 received £14 to £16 a year; in 1854 from £30 to £35 a year. The first period of our history was agricultural and pastoral, and our first pastoral society was the Caledonian. In 1844 The Pastoral Society of Australia-Felix undertook to protect stockholders. A stockholder in these days was a man whose stock was in cattle.

The mines brought in mining laws, and offices, even a Warden’s Court, and stock then was stock in mines. This is a difference between the first and second period, and therefore I introduce the story of the Agricultural Show. The Royal Agricultural Society held their 48th Show in the fourth week of September, 1919. It was a record show, and had the finest display of cattle ever witnessed south of the line, and it came fittingly at the close of World War I, as a call to the New Cincinnati. I went on Thursday, the 25th of September, by train and returned by tram, and all the day crowds surged around that circle. The total number of these who visited the Show that day was 76,269, the highest on record for any Thursday up to that time; the Show Thursday that came nearest to it was that of 1917, when 65,404 attended. The entrance fee was one shilling; and the first thing I saw was the Australian flag floating over Evan Evans’ booth, near the entrance, and at the corner of Skene and Plummer Streets was an open space in which various forms of the eucalyptus and the wattle grew. There were the indigenous liliaceous and fan-shaped palms, and some American and European plants, and like open spaces provided with seats were found at different points as breathing places. The Society has from time to time offered prizes for the cultivation of the Australian flora and for special trees that may shelter and adorn the farm, and all this comes from of old and was in the brain of the pioneers, in that of Daniel Bunce and Edmund Hobson. The many ways and bye-ways at the Show were called streets and avenues to suggest the city. But while the town is there, it is distinctly an agricultural show. We are trying to realise the ideal, and give the country the culture of the
city, and the city the health and ozone of the country, therefore we fight for the preservation of such open spaces as the Cemetery. These streets or avenues at the Show are named after its promoters. De Graves Street, after the first president of the Society; Mitchell Street, after Sir. J. W. Mitchell, who proposed that a monument to Batman be erected over his grave, which was done in 1881. In days past Mitchell held large estates in Victoria. McCracken Street is named after a former president; Merritt after the president for 1919, and Gibb Street after a former trustee. The new stands overlooking the exhibition and competitive ground, Chirnside and Cliff, after members of the council. Every way and bye-way has thus some reminiscence of agriculture, yet these memorial names did not go far enough. They should have taken in the first Pastoral Society and done full justice to the old Port Phillip Farmers Society, which preceded the Royal Agricultural Society. The Farmers society as formed in 1848, and was reorganized in 1851. In 1851 Donald Kennedy was president, and Charles Hilton Dight, whose remains lie in our Old Cemetery, was vice president. They had their shows in Royal Park. The present Society received the deeds of that old Society and came into existence in 1870 as the National Agricultural Society. It held its Show in a ground off St. Kilda Road in November 1871. Its first Show did not pay, but was nevertheless a good show, and had in it the promise of all that came afterwards. The last show of the Port Phillip Farmers Society was in 1807. The National Society took the name Royal in 1890, in recognition of its being the leading institution of the kind in Australia. In 1887 its gross income was £8443; in 1918 £23,587. The old Farmers Society took at their first show £642; thus have we grown. Rolf Boldrewood’s Old Melbourne Memories is but the story of an Agricultural Show, a horsey narrative of old cattle stations. The fact that he could write this pastoral is an evidence that the farm was the foundation of our first life. He talks of horses like J. D. Lyon Campbell’s famous horse Clifton.

But Melbourne from the beginning was more than this. The mounted police are at our Show now as they were about town in the forties. The foot-policemen hang around the corner of the street at the Show, as they do in the city. It is furnished now with every convenience for ladies and gentlemen, and has even a nursery for babies. Hot water is given free, and the wayfarer need not eat an expensive meal, for folks are anxious to sell their food exhibits. The aeroplane floated over the Show, and we thought of ancient times when a Pagan was called such after Pagus, the country, and the Heathen named after the dwellers on the heath. To-day we find these men leading in progressive movements. We go to a farm and find Homer open on the table and the farm the foundation of our first life. He talks of horses like J. D. Lyon Campbell’s famous horse Clifton.

Industry is the basis of farm life, and with that idea in my mind I passed into the Agricultural Hall, and then into the Industrial Hall. In these you see the products of the field: huge potatoes and marvellous pumpkins, onions, oats, maize, and wheat, and when I looked above I read, wheat £27,199,473 worth grown in the Commonwealth in 1917-1918, and I asked why cannot we get in a Melbourne Show Victorian statistics. It is the same in the manufactured article, pass by Pineapple hams and bacon and look on local-made cheese, but there is nothing about Melbourne or Victoria here; that £1,020,103 worth of cheese has been made in the Commonwealth. Where is Melbourne here? Are our markets handling our own products? Some farmers find it as easy to send their produce to Adelaide or Sydney as here. Melbourne puts her market depot in an out-of-the-way graveyard, rather than build it where these districts have access to it. In our Show are the products of all Victoria; why not in our markets? If our curers of ham only got pigs from the suburbs of Melbourne, the metropolis would be poorly supplied with bacon.

In the Industrial Hall the industries are restricted chiefly to these based on the products of animals and plants. We learned about manures, irrigation, chaff-cutting and up-to-date farm machinery, and felt that
all this was the natural outgrowth of the life of early Melbourne. Latrobe, in encouraging the growth of the vine, covered the land with vineyards. There is an exhibition of woman’s industry, a department in which are exhibits of plain and fancy needlework, embroideries, laces, socks, cosies, millinery, baby linen and other specimens of woman’s handiwork, and in one corner is The Strength of Empire’s stall, with the story of Australia’s drink bill and a plea, for prohibition. One thinks that this is fair where there are so many exhibits of Australian wines and Colonial beers, and where town and country men meet often in these saloons to drink the product of the vineyard and the hop garden.

The visitor entered the great pavilions of the pastoralist and the grazier. His supreme exhibit is the horse, the light horse; occasionally you see him attached to a buggy, and the heavy draught horse to a lorry. There is the stately stallion, and the language describing him is the same as you read in the early Melbourne papers, when Tom O’Lincoln, by Snoozer, out of Alice, would stand in some paddock in Melbourne; and the price is given in our papers. The same kind of thing is advertised at this Show.

The beef cattle ring is here. Herefords, Jerseys, Guernseys, Friesians, Ayrshires, and the product of our own breeding, the Shorthorns. here is a dialect of the field, a phraseology that belongs to the farmer, which when it touches us translates us to the Pyrenees and the Grampians, and sends us over wide lands, where the patriarch watched over his herds and flocks.

While the Show is trying to hide early Melbourne from us, yet it comes to us, and often the collision between the old order and the new seems incongruous. These splendid oxen are sometimes reminiscent of old time, and when you find one grand ox called The Federal, you feel that it is quite up-to-date, but the next stall brings you to your bearings, when you stand before The Baronet. It is proper that an Ayrshire steer should be called Douglass. The earliest pastoralist society in Victoria was Caledonian, but Aviator, of Oakbank, calls us back to the conditions of now.

The Law of Moses is still respected by the farmer, by the provision for sick cows. The cow hospital, where cows about to calve or suffering from any ailment are properly treated.

The early pastoralist had a fight to keep his cattle healthy, and he often complained of the Government inspector killing them when he thought they could be cured.

The sheepfold with its Merino sheep recall Henty, who first brought them into Victoria. Suffolk’s, Shropshire’s, Leicesters, and other sheep with golden fleece. The sheepfold is a memorial house to our great pastoralists. We think of the price W. J. T. Clarke paid for one ram to improve our wool and breed good sheep, one thousand three hundred and fifty guineas, although in his case the ram turned out a poor parent.

There is a pavilion given up to pigs, large and small swine, and another to poultry; and we think of the Neaves buried in the Old Cemetery, who were the first poulterers in Victoria. The poultry exhibits are partly utilitarian and partly game; this is a prevailing feature of the Show. Australian work and sport go together. Here are turkeys, geese, ducks, and all kinds of domestic poultry, from the Brahma cock or cockerel to the Dorking hen or pullet. Then you pass to birds in a bird-house, parrots, canaries and cockatoos. A Mr. Pearson recently lost a cockatoo; “It was found in a certain person’s house, who claimed it as their own, but the bird called out Hello Pearson, a whisky and soda” “and the police at once knew to whom the bird belonged.” The bird identified its owner. Among the collection of birds are all varieties of doves, and Darwin is vindicated here, as in our National Museum, and we see how they vary under domestic selection.

Around us are the rabbit traps of the trapper; the incubators from the henry. The giant churns, cream separators, milking machines, and other innovations from the dairy, and honey and the products of the apiary.

What interested me more than all else was the dog show, wise dogs, fleet dogs, cunning dogs, and handsome dogs. One felt that the person who said he had seen so much of men that he thought more of dogs was not entirely irrational. Here were terriers, greyhounds, pointers, setters, retrievers, sheep dogs, kelpies and spaniels of different kinds. This show memorializes the first period of
Melbourne’s history. As we proceed we will see the beginning and growth of that agriculture which in a perfected condition is exhibited at the Show. Lonsdale writes on 27th June, 1838: ‘Messrs’ Anderson and Massie report coal at Westernport.” The first discovery of the mineral in Victoria was by Hovell. In his report in 1827, he wrote: Cape Paterson I found great quantities of very fine coal; and this, later, was confirmed by Anderson and Massie. A year or two later Arthur Kemmis presides at a meeting of business men, for the purpose of organizing a company to work the coal at Westernport. Captain Cole and others joined in the venture. Coal came first, and then, in 1850, Melbourne was to be lit by gas. Now it is Asher Hymen Hart and C. H. Dight who were the promoters of the movement.

Hart was a trustee of the Jewish Division of the Cemetery. The Melbourne Gas Works were opened on the 1st January, 1856. These tentative efforts were the beginning of that movement that ended in our thousand miles of gas main and the ten thousand lamps of our great city.

The fiftieth half-yearly meeting of the members of the Metropolitan Gas Company was held 26th of January, 1903, when Sir. George Swinburne, M.L.A., acting chairman, made this statement, among others:-

“he present meeting is the 50th in the history of this Company, a few remarks on its work may not be out of place. The Act for the amalgamation of the City of Melbourne Gas and Coke Company, the Collingwood, Fitzroy and District Gas and Coke Company, and the South Melbourne Gas Company, and the incorporation of the present Metropolitan Gas Company came into operation on the 1st January, 1878, so that this Company has completed the first quarter of a century of its existence. It is also half a century since the original Company, the City of Melbourne Gas and Coke Company first commenced its operations for the supply of gas in the City of Melbourne.

It would be interesting if opportunity afforded to trace the progress of the gas industry through all its various stages from the time when the Reverend John Allen called the first public meeting, on the 28th of August, 1850, at which it was affirmed that the time had now arrived when the introduction of gas into Melbourne was necessary and a committee was formed to carry out that object until the present day, when the ramifications of the Company's operations are extended far and wide. But it is not, however, only in the comparison of the actual number of consumers, that one must seek to follow the strides the gas industry is still making. The gas engine, for instance, which from the smaller size of a few years back, is now in the field supplying motive power up to 1500 h.p., a size hitherto regarded as impracticable. At one of the theatres in the city a gas engine of between 80 and 90 h.p. is utilized to generate the electric light required, and it is satisfactory to this Company to know that the production of electricity by gas engines is the most economical method for large consumers. John Grice, some of whose brothers are in the Old Cemetery, was chairman of the directors, but he was on a visit to England, therefore Mr. Swinburne presided.

This company introduced the incandescent light into the streets of Melbourne, and into these of the municipalities around, which in their turn are being superseded by the electric light. A feature of our city is the general use of the cooking stove. This company has supplied over a hundred thousand of them. The asbestos grate fire has superseded in many a cosy parlour or study the old companionable coal fire, and here again electricity has come in, and a few rooms are being heated by it. In the best houses in Melbourne are gas bath and water heaters; electrical cooking has not yet come.

The secretary of the company, who saw this work carried out, was John Hinde. He died this year (1923). He had been appointed secretary to the company in 1899, succeeding Thomas Vasey, so well-known to Melburnians in the nineties. The City Council commenced to light the city with electricity in 1894. In 1893 they installed their machinery, which then had a total capacity of 1200 horse power; now it is considerably over 30,000 horse power.

A modern system of electrical lighting came in 1906. Mr. A. U. Alcock, son of Alcock, the founder of the billiard-table industry, has given us the history of the application of electricity in Victoria, and from his presidential address, given at an annual meeting of the Electrical Association
of Victoria, I gather these facts. The first practical use of electricity was in the telegraph and telephone service. The first telegraph line in Victoria was erected in March 1854, and the first telephone was in 1877, twenty-three years later, although the general use of it in business did not come until nearly the twentieth century.

The first telephone was laid by J. E. Edwards, of the Instrument-room of the Telegraph Department. The first display of electrical lighting took place on the marriage of the Prince of Wales in 1863, and consisted of three arc lamps, erected by the Government at the Post Office, the old Telegraph Office, and at Parliament House. In 1878-Messrs’ Sands and McDougall and the Apollo Candle Co. each imported electric light machinery. This was a very qualified success. But there was a fair display at the Exhibition of 1880, and a complete lighting of the Exhibition grounds at that of 1888, when Mr. K. L. Murray supervised the work. The pioneer electrical lighting company was the Victorian Electrical Company, and this probably was the first company in all Australia; they purchased a piece of land in Russell Street, and there planted the nucleus of an electrical station. Their first contract was for the lighting of the Eastern Market, a market which had proved itself like every other one in the city to be a failure, which had only lived by departing from its primitive ideal. Take the idea of Paddy’s Market out of the Victoria Market, as Dr. Native remarked to me, and it will go the way of all our other markets. However, to return, our first street lighting was experimental, and was in Elizabeth Street. Our first permanent street lighting was in Russell Street. The Opera House was the first theatre lighted with electricity, that was in 1882. In 1888 A. U. Alcock started a private concern in Corr’s Lane, off Little Bourke Street, introducing for the first time Woods electric series arc light system. Another firm also arose, Marter and Draper, introducing the Thomson Houston arc lighting system, and so the application of electricity developed and another company came in, but eventually all companies merged themselves into The Melbourne Electric Supply Co., which to-day lights our southern suburbs, the northern being lighted by the City Council.

The first suburb lighted was Richmond. In the Wesleyan Division of the Old Cemetery there were buried two old settlers whose names contrast, the first is Isaac Dark and the other Reuben Light. On Light’s stone there is a representation of a flame. As he died in 1849, it must either be the flame of a candle or that of an oil lamp, nevertheless the rays of light encircled it, and as it symbolizes that man’s name and life so does it symbolize our city, which is the most advanced city in Australia in the matter of lighting by electricity. James Service was called the father of electric lighting, because he encouraged the movement, and in 1890 turned on the steam to the engine at the central station of the Australian Electrical Lighting Co., at Richmond. The Melbourne City Council took up the matter at their meeting on 19th January, 1891, and we have seen how they were in full swing in 1894. As early as 1890 an exhibition in cooking by electricity was given, and Edison has suggested that we may yet cure the gout by electricity. Many and various uses it will yet be put of it in business did and Edison has suggested that we may yet harness the Yarra, and use it in our great power house for the generation of electricity. We only hope that there will never be marriage by electricity. We think we have gone far enough in that matter with Magnetism of Love and Holt’s Matrimonial Agency.

General Sir John Monash shortly after his return from the war became Chairman of the Electricity Commission of Victoria. This Commission built its office in William Street, on the site of Fawkner’s house. It formulated the scheme for using Morwell as the great power house, and promised cheap power and fuel for all; even farms in the country are to be lighted with electricity, and farm machinery driven by it. So sure are they of success, that Monash says is to be a monument to every man, however humble, who has shared in its creation.

On the 14th of April, 1920, J. W. Payter died at the age of 87. He received the first cable message which reached Australia, and was also the operator who took one of the earliest telegraphic messages despatched in this country, the receiving instrument being placed on a tombstone in the
Old Cemetery. The first telegraph office was in William Street, not far from the Cemetery. We find him taking one of the first messages in Melbourne, and then in our own time he is one of the first men to send a radio-telegram, and he experimented in wireless telegraphy, sending messages from Caulfield to Glenhuntly, before Marconi’s system had been introduced here.

In 1851 came the discovery of gold. Hepburn affirms that Mr. Betts, a man living in Birmingham, England, wrote to him before he made his overland trip, asking him to look for gold as he travelled, because he thought from the description of the country that it was gold-bearing. I take it that the Betts buried in our Old Cemetery is a son of this prophet. This was away back in 1836. Strzelecki thought that there was gold in Gippsland. The first communication concerning gold made to the Victorian Government was that made to Latrobe by an old colonist, J. Wood Beilby. He said his shepherd, William Richfould, when nursed by him during his sickness, in gratitude told him how he discovered, worked and sold gold. He had found it in a creek to the north of the Pyrenees, in a district afterwards known as the Navarre Goldfields. Latrobe withheld the information lest it might injure the pastoral interests. Edward Hargreaves is regarded as the man who discovered payable gold in Australia. He was residing in New South Wales when gold was discovered in California, and he went there to restore his fortune, and observing the likeness of the country to some parts of New South Wales, he reasoned that as gold was in California it was also here, so he returned and in 1851 and found it in Bathurst. This led to investigation all over the country, and the Port Phillip people resolved to prospect. Chapman reported gold in the Pyrenees. What became of him no one seems to know; his discovery placed him under suspicion and he disappeared. Then Henry French claimed to have found it, but his discovery was investigated and reported adversely on; yet in the very spot he claimed to have found gold, the Caledonian Mine was afterwards worked. William Campbell discovered gold at Strathlodden, on the estate of Donald Cameron. The Government later acknowledged his discovery, but it was not reported until after others had made the existence of gold known. On the 5th of July, 1851, Campbell wrote to the Honourable James Graham, telling the exact spot where he had found gold the year before. The honour of discovery is generally given to James William Esmond, who found it in the Clunes district, near Donald Cameron’s station, but he had heard the story, Marcus Clark asserts, of Campbell’s discovery. The party that found it was Esmond, Kelly, Burns and Pugh. Whether any of these sleep in the Old Cemetery I know not, but at about the same time gold was found at Anderson’s Creek, (Warrandyte) near to Melbourne.

A very important discovery was made at Buninyong by Thomas Hiscock. This, too, was based on the report of a previous find, Brentani’s, said to have been found in the Pyrenees five years before. This opened up the whole of the Ballarat district to the gold invader. Among those who were in the first rush to Eureka was William John Mayger, who was buried in the Presbyterian section of our ground; he took his boy George with him, and when I met George he was an old man, living at St. Kilda, and could remember Eureka when there were only two hundred miners on the field. His father returned to Melbourne and died at Heidelberg. George became the proprietor of the Mitre Tavern, in Bank Place, and put the stone over his father’s grave.

We cannot write of the foundation of trade and commerce without bringing the story down to the gold era, for the discovery revolutionized the social and economic life of Victoria. In 1853 £14,163,364 worth of gold was taken out of the mines. Gold transformed us. Captain Fyans in 1849 bought twelve legs of mutton for 5 shillings. He could get a fowl for nothing. In 1853 he had to pay 7 pence a pound for mutton, and eggs were 5 shillings a dozen. The pastoralist thought that he would be ruined by the discovery of gold, labour would be so high; but instead of being ruined, he saved himself, and a large proportion of the mineral wealth obtained was exchanged for his products. His land and everything he had increased in value. Every economic problem in the world can be discussed by a study of the early mercurial life of Melbourne. Government in those days found the wisdom of having made the pastoralist a leaseholder and yearly tenant of the Crown. Think what the sudden mining of £14,103,304 worth of gold meant to a community, whose entire wealth in 1842 was £2,038,840. Ten years later five times this amount is taken out of one article in one year. To-day we import £0,939,455 worth of goods every three months, and our city therefore has passed through successive
economic changes, and made such wondrous progress that George Augustus Sala, when he visited us, called us Marvellous Melbourne. And not the least marvel in our history was the change wrought by the opening of such goldfields as Ballarat, Bendigo, Castlemaine, Mt. Alexander, Maryborough, Avoca, Ovens and Omeo. Out of the city flowed a continuous stream of immigrants to the goldfields, and by roads that even now are exits from the city, such as the Mount Alexander Road. They came in vessels from the Motherland, which in a few instances have left their names behind, such as The Sarah Sands, a name that was afterwards attached to a hotel in Brunswick, and ship, The Great Britain. The first batch of British gold seekers are said to have arrived in 1852, in the month of September. In the previous month there had been 6552 arrivals from various places; this month the British newcomers brought the total up to 15,850, and in four months 60,219 immigrants poured into Port Phillip, his went on in the succeeding year, and thus there arose south of the Yarra the historic suburb of Canvas Town. I am indebted to Samuel Mossman for a description of this part of Melbourne. In 1854 the tents were arranged so as to form regular streets, that bore the names of places from which the new arrivals came; apparently their minds ran on London. Thus the principal thoroughfare was Regent Street, at a corner of which was a tent of a military cut, having a flag that directed the stranger into Piccadilly. Two other streets running through the tented town were called the Holborn and the Strand. The refreshment booths bore the names of London hotels. Men like Higginbotham lived in these tents, and literary treasures were stowed away there. You might hear the strains of the piano and other musical instruments.

We have seen recent goldfield towns in Western Australia pass through this stage, which have reminded us of the canvas town in Melbourne. Filth and misery dwelt by the side of refinement and enterprise. The last tent passed away in 1864; thus for ten years canvas residences had existed south of the Yarra. Of course latterly it dwindled down to a very few tents, and we are told that in its last days it was the rendezvous of crime and immorality.

Members of the family that owned and named Bendigo slept in the Old Cemetery. Richard Grice took up that district as a sheep run, and his overseer, Myers, called the place Bendigo, after the English prize-fighter. Tom Myers afterwards kept the Sarah Sands Hotel out at Brunswick. The name of Grice covers the history of Melbourne. Richard Grice was one of these engaged in the pastoral industry. His family married into the family of the Henty’s, and Bendigo, his old estate, is our greatest mining centre. James Grice was married to a grand-daughter of John Jones Peers, the founder of the building trade, and Sir John Grice was the Vice-Chancellor of our University, and was President of the Hospital Board. On his retiring they resolved to name their new operating theatre after him. On the old map of Melbourne for 1838, brought out by Hutchinson, the book-seller, is a reference to the firm of Heape and Grice. In 1844 Air. Heape went home to England, and when he arrived at Rochdale, his native place, the bells were ringing in honour of his father having been made Mayor of the city that day, and he himself was a Justice of the Peace of Melbourne at that time.

Mr. James Grice is the President of the Old Colonists Association of Victoria, and eight of that family are Life Governors. There were two graves in the Old Cemetery which specially call up the importers of the forties, Donaldson and Budge. This firm was the forerunner of the present emporiums. Donaldson died on 21st November, 1845; the cortege left his home in Collins Street, and proceeded to the Cemetery. Budge buried his wife there in 1850, and earlier The Melbourne Morning Herald in an issue in July, 1852, tells of the arrival of seven carts bringing 85,429 ounces.

?? than this, two of his children. The word Draper is on the Donaldson’s stone. To-day in the suburbs of the same city, which in these days was only a town, William Gibson, of the firm of Foy and Gibson, died, and his will is lodged for probate in the month of June 1919, and is sworn at the value of £1,856,328, and all the men and women employed in that great firm and kindred emporiums in the city are blest by this draper, Donaldson, who in that early age fought for shorter hours of shopping. He was also the forerunner of Sir Frederick Thomas Sargood, who came from England to Victoria in 1850, and who has been the leading merchant of our own time. In 1874 he was returned to the Legislative Council, and was a Minister of Defence in the Berry Government from 1883 to
1886. He also served the Munro Government. He is on the other side of the house and voted against the one man one vote measure, and when Justice Higginbotham retired from the Presidency of the Centennial Exhibition, he succeeded him. He was one of the founders, if not the founder, of the Military Organization of Victoria, and at the commencement of the Commonwealth was returned to the Senate. He died in 1903, while serving as a Senator.

Probably no man did more to organize the business of Melbourne in our own time. In writing of the Old Cemetery, I have not found any relatives of W. J. T. Clarke, (Big Clarke) Australia’s wealthiest man in the seventies. He also had land in New Zealand. The Riverina and Sunbury, he was well-known to all as one of his Victorian properties. He was probably the best judge of sheep and cattle in the colonies, and was the first to introduce the Leicester sheep. He owned some of the best business sites in Melbourne. Although I do not know of any of the Clarke family in the Cemetery, yet I believe relatives of them may be there, as they have married into several well-known families. William Howat, the private secretary of the second Clarke (The Honourable W. J. Clarke, M.L.C.), became connected with the firm in 1807, and he knew three generations of them. Theirs is a household name in Victoria, and I could not write a story of Melbourne without referring to them.

Mr. Howat gave me these dates: W. J. T. Clarke, born 1804, died 13th January, 1874, aged 70. The Argus made a mistake in calling him 73 in their memorial notice of him. William J. Clarke, his successor, born 28th March, 1831, died on the 10th of May, 1897, aged 66. The founder arrived in Tasmania at the age of twenty-nine in the year 1830. He made a success as a pastoralist there and visited Victoria in 1840, and took up the Station Peak run on the Werrriebe river, in partnership with two others, one of whom was Petit, a name found on a stone in the Old Cemetery, the only one on which I remember seeing the name Geelong. Dowling Forest was named after Clarke’s wife.

Clarke lived chiefly in Tasmania, coming over in the shearing season. During the last twelve years of his life he made Victoria his home. He was one of the founders of the Colonial Bank, and a Member of our Legislative Council. During the last two years of his life he asked Mr. Howat to mention no matter of business to him unless it was of supreme importance. He wished to prepare for death. He died worth £2,300,000, and his Victorian estate was valued at £1,500,000. In his letter to Latrobe, he says that at the time he came to Melbourne it was a forest of big trees.

His son (W. J. T. Clarke) was essentially the Victorian, although born in Tasmania. He dwelt at the Cliveden Mansion, East Melbourne. He was the eldest son, and inherited his father’s Victorian estates. He came to Victoria from his father’s home in 1850, spent two years on the Dowling Forest station, and later became manager of the Woodlands station, in the Wimmera, and in 1802 took over the entire management of his father’s Victorian estates. He stood for scientific farming, and arranged for Mr. R. W. E. Melvior to lecture on agricultural chemistry.

He was a benevolent man, and gave £2000 to the Indian Famine Relief Fund, £10,000 to the building of St. Paul’s Cathedral, £7000 to Trinity College. He gave to the Melbourne Public Library Summer’s “Statuary of the Royal Family,” and Dowling’s full-length portrait of Lord Melbourne. He was interested in our military and naval forces, and spent large sums on their development. His eldest son, Rupert, commanded a battery away back in 1886. He married twice, first to the daughter of the Honourable John Walker, of Tasmania, and on her death to Janet Marian, daughter of the Honourable Peter Snodgrass. She stood in the front rank of the philanthropic women of Melbourne, and her memorial is the Rotunda in the Alexandra Gardens. Clarke was a liberal man, and the only man who was ever the recognized head of the three Masonic Constitutions of Victoria.

He laid the foundation stone of the Freemasons Hall, in March 1885, and the finished building was consecrated by him to the service of the craft, March 1887. I have gathered these facts from our newspapers and biographical sketches of the family. Mr. Howat tells me that he was Evangelical in faith, but he was nevertheless broad enough in mind to lay the foundation stone of the Australian Church. He died worth £650,000. One day he came into Collins Street on business, and fell down in a dying condition in front of the Union Club Hotel. He was carried into the hotel, that stands on the site of that erected by Fawkner, the oldest in Melbourne, and there died. His memorial, which was
erected by his admirers in Victoria, stands near the Treasury Building, at the corner of the Treasury Gardens.

G. H. Knibbs, Alan Thody and others have furnished statistics relating to the economic conditions of Victoria during the last 83 years. Thody showed that during 61 years of our history, from 1837 to 1898, we imported £81,909,331 more goods than we exported. The first statistical records of 1837 show that our imports amounted to £115,379, and our exports to £72,178. In 1860 it was still so, the imports and exports are now counted in millions instead of thousands, but the imports are more than the exports. Imports, £15,093,730; exports, £12,962,704. What saved us from ruin was the discovery of gold. In succeeding years protection came, yet in 1884 our imports amounted to £19,201,633, while our exports were £16,050,465. In 1892, strange to say, our trade had diminished, and it went on diminishing until 1894, when it was only a little over half what it was in 1889. In 1889 imports were £24,402,760, and exports £12,734,734, but in 1894 imports were £12,470,599, while exports were £14,026,546. That was a year in which our exports exceeded our imports by £1,555,947. The banking collapse had come in 1893, when banks closed their doors and gave up their charters, and everything decreased in value, therefore the surplus of exports is the more remarkable. Still we could not keep the balance on the right side. When we Federate we are still on the wrong side, and in 1913 we import £24,387,000, and export £17,837,000. The war period was abnormal, but very much against us. In 1915-1916 our overseas imports are £26,762,000, and our exports £14,749,000.

As the population of Melbourne has varied between one-third and one-half that of the colony or State, it will be seen that a statement of the condition of Victoria is also one concerning that of Melbourne. We have never sent a great deal of frozen meat abroad. Our exports are chiefly wool, wheat, and dairy produce. In 1898 we sent to Europe £110,867 worth of frozen mutton, but the steam vessel with refrigerated chambers enabled us to send £736,325 worth of butter. Our factory system has developed under protection, the difficulty being to define a factory. They settled the definition when making their Factories Act, by saying that an establishment employing over four hands, or any shop using machinery worked by steam, gas or other than man power, even if it had less than four hands, was a factory. In 1899 there were 2409 factories employing 53,311 hands in Victoria, and in 1917 there were 5445 factories with 116,970 hands; 74,924 were male and 42,046 female. The public debt of Victoria commenced in 1855; that year it was £480,000. A strange assertion is made by Professor Jenks, that owing to mining, that year (1855) Melbourne fell behind both Sandhurst and Ballarat as a manufacturing centre, and continued for some time in that condition, but this has to be verified. In 1805 the State debt was £8,622,245; in 1885, £28,628,588; 1905, £51,513,767; 1916, £75,504,562.

The Chamber of Manufactures originated in 1877; it is much younger than the Chamber of Commerce. It has fathered some minor exhibitions, and in the month of November 1919 a thousand shops in Melbourne had in their windows only Australian-made goods. An Alderman said to me that he could find more character and history in the sixties, the seventies and the eighties than in the age covered by the Old Cemetery. I replied that there were at least a hundred representative men there; but I had my doubts as to whether you could find as many in the succeeding period, because it was the age of the financier, the broker, the estate agent, and the professional politician. It was the time of Matthew Davies, James Miram’s, Benjamin Joseph Fink, and Duncan Gillies; and you found generalization rather than initiation, attempts at exploitation rather than creation; and when there was initiation it was often by the old pioneer who lived on and was possessed of the spirit of the first period, or of his sons to whom he transmitted that spirit. The gentleman who set up the contention was the son of a pioneer himself.

To know the men of the sixties, seventies, and eighties, we have to remember that there are in Victoria four great sources of production, pastoral, agricultural, coal, and gold-bearing lands. All these sources had been touched by the pioneers, and therefore we turn to the succeeding age and we only see innovation and variation. For instance, take the first pastoral. All that made the pastures pay, such as tallow, was thought of by the pioneers, but later came candle makers and the manufacture of chemicals, and the great wool kings who systematised and developed the industry. One of the
greatest of these was Richard Goldsbrough. He commenced life as a wool stapler in Bradford, England. Struck with the superiority of Australian wool, he resolved to come here, and he landed in Melbourne in 1847, and entered into business with Row and Kirk, the firm being known as Row, Kirk and Co. Later, Hugh Parker, his brother-in-law, joined him, others were admitted, and the business increased and eventually amalgamated with the Australasian Agency and Banking Corporation Limited. A company was formed with a capital of £3,000,000 300,000 shares at 10 a share. Goldsbrough’s name came now first in the business, and it had not reached its full limit; that he did not see, for he died on 8th April, 1880. Two years later the firm again amalgamated, this time with Mort and Co., and it still bears the name of Goldsbrough, Mort and Co. Another trader in wool of a different kind was Robert Simson. He came to Melbourne as early as 1843, and took up land in the Western district, dealt in stations and came to represent in the Victorian mind the pastoral and agricultural interests. He was three times President of the National Agricultural Society in Melbourne, and three times President of the Zoological and Acclimatisation Society of Victoria. These are two men who, like Learmonth and others of the beginning, developed the pastoral resources of Victoria, and while both belong to the sixties and the seventies, yet they seem to have found their foundation in the first era of Victoria. There is certainly a phase of farming that only came to its own with the trebled furrow plough and the modern harvester.

But even when we turn to the implement maker we have to remember that Lemon made the first plough for Henty. Henty is credited with saying in the Legislative Council, “This hand cut the first wool; this hand planted the first vine; this hand ploughed the first furrow; and this hand bound the first of corn.” From that beginning came the vast resources developed by Goldsbrough, Robert Simson and Lascelles, who opened up the Mallee. But these men did by finance what had been prospected for them by ten thousand pioneers.

The market gardeners of Cheltenham and Doncaster belong to the later age. Our first market gardens were in the city, and later at Brighton. Patrick Egan was a market gardener at Brighton. He acted as a Jury man in the vegetable department of the 1880 Exhibition. I take it that the Egan grave in the Old Cemetery belonged to that family. Henry Comfort was a market gardener at Cheltenham. He was the first to manufacture tomato sauce in large quantities. The second period of history can claim him as the founder of a new industry. Rule was the pioneer nurseryman, gardening in Richmond. We cannot give the middle period any credit for origination here. Brunning and Sons, by their St. Kilda Nurseries, helped to beautify our city, but the special man in this line was David Johnston, the landscape gardener. He came to Melbourne in 1853, made a competency for himself in business, and has left his memorial in the life of St. Kilda. He was a trustee of their beautiful Cemetery, and many of the principal grounds around Melbourne grew up under his care; and he encouraged tree-planting in our streets. He selected the site of the St. Kilda Town Hall, and suggested improvements to the Esplanade, that noble boulevard along the shores of the bay. He acted as judge at the Horticultural Shows, and was the founder of the first Free Gardeners Society in Victoria. S. L. Chapman was a pioneer of bee culture by virtue of his invention of the Champion bee hive. In this business he does not go back beyond the seventies and of course bees had been kept and cared for long before that. Dairy farming has been with us since the days of Mrs. Neave, and as the city growth specialised, and of course expanded.

Chief among the men who discovered the value of our forests was A. U. Alcock, the father of the billiard table industry. He was a genius in the wood-ware line, and helped Melbourne in a most exceptional way. Alcock and Co. established their business in 1856; they ante-date the sixties in their origin, but as their fuller development came in that age we credit Mr. Alcock with belonging to the second period of our history. Sir Thomas McLraith, the Queensland Premier of that period, passed through his factory, and he came on a piece of ornamental wood, and much admired it, and then Mr. Alcock told him that it was grown in Queensland. Alcock not only picked out from the Victorian forests timbers for his work, but used the products of all our Australasian forests, and knew the grain and special beauty of indigenous timbers unknown to others. In this he was the pioneer.
Others have taken up his ideas about veneering and turned them to a profitable use. To the production of perfect work, he brought to Melbourne the world's latest inventions in wood-working machinery. His billiard tables are not only in use all over Australasia, but also in England and on the continent of Europe.

The first moulding mills in Victoria were those of James Swanbourne, established in 1854. In the seventies one of our largest building firms was Nation, Gamlin and Nation; they erected their spacious premises in Church Street, Richmond, in 1871. They were essentially a building firm, and at their best in the eighties. John Sharp and Sons timber-yard dates back to 1860 the business was then in Collins Street. The oldest timber-yard in Melbourne was said to be that of W. Turnbull and Son; it was situated in Albert Street, East Melbourne, and was established by C. J. Smith in 1851. Still I take it timber was sawn in the pits from the first. One of the earliest acts of Lonsdale was to send for sawyers, and their work was the prophecy of Moore, and other timber merchants. An interesting man in the building trade of this period was the Honourable G. 1. Langridge. He came to Melbourne in the fifties, and finding mining unsatisfactory, he turned his attention to the building trade, and supervised the building of the military barracks on St. Kilda Road. In 1803 he was a Town Councillor in Collingwood, in 1871 an M.L.C. for Collingwood, and remained in Parliament until he died, in March, 1801. He gave every help when Minister of Lands and Works to Mr. Brown in the building of Batman's monument. It was he who let the tender for our Parliamentary buildings, and it was he who determined that they should be built of Stawell stone.

The late John Warren Swanson may be referred to under trade and commerce. He belonged to the firm of Swanson Brothers, the builders, who recently built the new art school at the University, and who for the last thirty years has been associated with the work of rebuilding Melbourne. The new Police Courts were erected by this firm. J. W. Swanson was several times President of the Federated Master Builders Association of Australia. It naturally followed that when our timber trade was well established we should manufacture pianos and musical instruments. The first organ manufacturer in Victoria was George Fincham, whose business was in Richmond, in 1804. We have enormous furnishing firms to-day that trade in and manufacture pianos. Walluch Bros, is said to have been the largest in the eighties. John Hackett had the oldest carriage factory in these days in Melbourne, situated at the corner of Brunswick and Argyle Streets, Fitzroy; it was established in
1853, and he won laurels in three Melbourne Exhibitions.

Enoch Chambers is credited with building our first locomotive. The Railway Department has recently averred that Langland and Fulton built a locomotive in 1854, and as this is evidently true, this was the first, and Chambers built his later. And the first gas engine in Victoria was made by Scott and Sons, in 1884. Alexander Borthwick commenced the manufacture of paint and varnish in 1853. He was the first to do so in Victoria. As we have nearly all the ingredients here, it is an industry that should be our own. Louis Blair made a departure in the mirror and glass industry, and Alfred Shaw commenced the manufacture of stamped iron ware at his Australian Iron Works in Franklin Street, in the seventies. Johns and Co. probably made the first hydraulic lifts. The brick industry was one of our earliest, and it naturally followed that we would make tiles and pottery. This has especially developed in the northern suburbs. The Brunswick Pottery was established in 1800. A terra-cotta business has been carried on successfully, and we see our Aboriginals moulded in the clay that best befits their image. In Melbourne are the offices of the Australian Asbestos Works, the only company of that kind in Australia, said the Jubilee History in 1888. It was established 1883. There are glass works in Richmond, glass-bottle works, in Spotswood, and chemical works in Footscray, which were established in 1871.

Melbourne is as much a fur city as the cities of Russia or Canada. The trapper, tanner and skinner preceded the furrier, and the industry in some form was with us from the first. Women are seen in the winter time in the most beautiful jackets or the most expensive boas and tippets. Many people here think that a woman is not well dressed unless she has a fur of some kind on. These are not only made from the skins of the opossum, the kangaroo, or the native bear (Koala), but furs of singular beauty are manufactured out of dyed rabbit skins. Strange that in a land that once abounded in seals, we have now to fall back on imitation seal jackets made out of shorn rabbit skins. The men who made this industry were the trappers. The first regular furriers were Cohn in the city, and Green in Fitzroy. Mr. F. McClean, furrier, in Carlton, sold a platypus to Green in the beginning of the eighties for forty pounds, and Green sent it home to Edward, then Prince of Wales. The two firms which extended this industry were Pearl and Nettleberg, especially Morris Nettleberg. The wattlebark and the native animal together made it possible to do good work. Tanning has been with us from the first. Mrs. Wood, who attended Miss Batman’s school, remarks that her father, Abraham Searl, who was buried in the family grave in the Old Cemetery, was a tanner, and when they arrived in the beginning of the good tanneries were on the banks of the Yarra Michaelis, Hallenstein and Co. established their tannery in 1864, at Footscray. Leather is made from the large kangaroos, but they are now protected, and that industry is practically dead. The native animals that are now taken go to the furrier. Opossum skins in 1870 were sold for 2 shillings and 6 pence a dozen, to-day they are sold for three pounds.

A man who utilized our native plants was Joseph Bosisto; he had been preceded by Daniel Bunce. Bosisto came to South Australia to open a wholesale drug business in Adelaide, but he took the gold fever and crossed to Victoria. After he had been on the diggings he settled in Richmond, and became a pioneer in applying chemical knowledge of native plants, medicinally; he popularized the eucalyptus medicine. Bosisto and Co. are now known everywhere. Scientists in Europe have honoured the man who was a pioneer in Australian pharmacy, and the people here showed their appreciation of his merit by sending him to Parliament. While there he carried through the Pharmacy Act and was made chairman of the first Pharmacy Board. He was on the Executive of the Melbourne Exhibition of 1880. How industry specialised is seen in the enterprise of Thomas Stevens Small, who established the first firm devoted exclusively to photographic material. Now we have great businesses of that kind, such as the Kodak. One of the earliest photographers in Melbourne was G. B. Goodman; he advertised his daguerreotype photos in August 1845, in the Port Phillip Gazette, and stated that his charge was one guinea, and that he took the picture in five seconds, and delivered it in four minutes. He invited you to get your second self. His premises were in Little Flinders Street. Baker and Co. were pioneers in the making of photographic plates. Now cameras are made on a large scale, as witness the Kodak Companies works at Richmond, which I have
already cited.

The clothing industry belongs to the age of the Old Cemetery. It is interesting to remember that a big boot factory stands on the land formerly attached to the first Government House, at Jolimont, and that the house has become an adjunct to the factory. The first to introduce boot-stitching machinery was R. White; his firm dates back to 1858. He first to make silk hats, Mr. Mauger tells me, was Edward Hillier, and the first manufacturers of felt hats were the Denton Mills; J. H. Turner was one of their directors. Frank Tudor was employed in these mills, the man who became the Leader of the Official Federal Labour Party. The first woollen mill was in Melbourne, although that industry has now left the capital.

One of its promoters was James Munro. It was situated at Yarraville, and managed by W. J. Loonier. In spite of our manufacture of articles in silk, we have never cultivated the silk worm. One would imagine that which is so profitable in California might be made a success here. The Melbourne Steam Laundry was not only the first steam laundry in Melbourne but in the Colonies. T. Poolman was the oldest sugar refiner in Melbourne. In 1857 he designed and built a sugar refinery at Sandridge, and in 1886 started the Port Melbourne Sugar Refinery Works. The father of Joshua Bros, was here in 1849. They were the pioneers of sugar refining at Yarraville. H. G. Grist commenced the manufacture of essences, condiments, and baking powders. John Zevenboom established the first brush factory in Melbourne, in 1860. This, it is claimed, was the first in the Southern Hemisphere. Thomas Mitchell served his time with Zevenboom, and to-day is one of the greatest, if not the greatest, manufacturer of brushes in Australia. Barnet Glass founded the rubber industry in Australasia, in 1876 at his works in Footscray. Blythe, Irvine and Binney established their bone mills in the same district in 1882. In the early days the pioneers blacked their boots, to-day their sons polish their shoes.

Boot-cleaning preparations of various kinds have been made in Melbourne. It would be hard to say who made the first, but before these came into use, Melbourne was cleaning its boots with Day and Martin's blacking, and that firm was founded about the very time Captain Cook was discovering Australia. Perhaps the first boot-cleaning preparation an Australian made here was a cream by Lewis and Whitty, but they were preceded by Spooner and Co., who were the original Polish Company in Melbourne. The first distinctly Australian firm for polish was the Kiwi. Ramsay established that in London in 1908. William Ramsay was the founder of the firm, but his father, John Ramsay, arranged a good deal of the business in England.

An interesting man in the middle period of our history was Lowe Kong Meng, the Chinese merchant. I have known several of the superior class of Chinese, and had the good fortune to meet the daughter of Kong Meng, who is a Eurasian. When she gave me her name I mistook her for a German; there was nothing Chinese about her. She seemed to me to be a refined English woman. Yet I found her in entire sympathy with the Chinese. The memory of her father made her such. He was the leading Chinese merchant in the seventies and eighties. He was born at Penang, on the Prince of Wales Island, in 1831. At the age of 11 he was sent to Mauritius, and thus became both an English and French scholar. Once when an illiterate man accosted him in pigeon English, he kindly replied to him by saying that if he would talk to him in English, French or Chinese he would be pleased to carry on a conversation, but that he did not understand his lingo. He was the owner of several sailing vessels, and I have sometimes looked at the picture of them in his wife’s house. They traded up the coast to the Gulf of Carpentaria and between Australia and China. The Emperor of China bestowed on him the rank of Mandarin. And we made him a Commissioner of the International Exhibition, held in Melbourne in 1880. His widow survived him, and more than once she regaled me with pleasing narratives of earlier Melbourne.

The American Tobacco Works commenced manufacturing in 1871. The retail business out of which it developed was that of Heinecke and Co., which commenced as early as 1852. This was, and is, the oldest tobacco business in Melbourne, and was the forerunner of the many tobacco works of to-day.
A man who is represented as the founder of several industries was Dr. L. L. Smith. He had an intercolonial reputation as a physician who had made a special study of all forms of venereal disease. He led an eventful life. He was born in London in 1830, studied medicine, and was in France (1848) in the days of that revolution. Then only a youth, he elected to fight on the side of the Republicans. On leaving Paris he continued his studies in England, and practised in the hospitals in London. He came out as a surgeon on board the ship *Oriental*, and leaving her went to the diggings. He returned to practise in Bourke Street, and made for himself an intercolonial reputation. I remember his advertisement in the *Evening Star*, Dunedin, N.Z., away back in the seventies, commencing: “In the bright lexicon of youth there is no such word as fail.” He entered Parliament, and while there initiated the Penny Postal Card, and in 1878 tried through a measure that the postage on all inland letters should be one penny. During the war we have retrograded, and it has gone up to three-halfpence. He was the first to publish and edit a medical journal in Victoria, and some claim him as the father of the wine industry, but that commenced before his time. He helped to improve and extend it, and make our wines acceptable outside of Australia.

The publishers and printers of our first newspapers, we have seen, started the printing industry, and are sketched in another chapter. When we come to the early fifties we see the foundation of the firms now in existence Mason, Firth & McCutcheon, Sands & Kenny in time became Sands & McDougall. The oldest continuous printing firm under one name is Walker, May & Co., founded in 1854; it was projected in Scotland, its originator and founder being James Walker, who was in business in Leith, in company with John and Thomas May. They heard from their friends in Australia of the prospects of business in Victoria. Animated by James Walker they purchased a letter press and lithographic printing plant, and embarked for Melbourne in *The Parisian*, and towards the end of 1854 they commenced business in Stephen Street (Exhibition Street), on the spot where the Alexandra Theatre was afterwards built, now called Her Majesty's Theatre. These promises proved unsuitable, and they moved into Little Collins Street, and then into Bourke Street West. Mr. John May was the pioneer stereo and electrotyper of Victoria, having learned his trade at the celebrated house of Fullerton's, in Edinburgh. His twin brother, Thomas, who was also in the business, served his apprenticeship as a pressman in Blackie's Printing House, Glasgow. These three men brought out some of our earliest publications, such as the first illustrated newspaper, the first penny morning newspaper, also a humorous paper, the rival of Punch, Touchstone, which Henry Kendall edited for a time; the first Roman Catholic newspaper, *The Victorian*, although none of them belonged to that church. They also published *The Melbourne Monthly Magazine* and *The Melbourne Monthly Review, The Taller, Clough's Weekly Circular, The Economist*. They also brought out the first issues of *The War Cry*, and a scientific paper, *The Emu*, they are still printing this and *The Victorian Naturalist*. They were burned out in 1860, and although uninsured resumed business at once. In 1872 they moved from Bourke Street to McKillop Street, and became tenants of George Robertson. In July 1918 they bought the manufacturing plant of that firm, and recently carried their business premises into Bourke Street.

One of the largest printing and publishing firms in Australia is McCarron, Bird and Co. They published *Men of the Time*, 1877, and *Victoria and its Metropolis*, 1888. The original partners were J. H. Bird, J. F. McCarron, H. W. Puttman, and Andrew Stewart. Mr. Stewart's portrait we give here; he out-lived all his partners, and was known for his philanthropic interest in the temperance and other social movements. He died on 16th March, 1922. I saw him shortly before his death, and he was transacting his business in his usual calm way. The clearness of his intellect enabled him to recall incidents that took place in the forties. He could remember the old wharves on the banks of the Yarra, the old vehicles that ran along St. Kilda-road. that resembled jaunting cars. He remembered Hoffman’s pork or pie shop that stood on the spot where the Savings Bank now stands in Elizabeth Street, and other old buildings. He could remember the pioneer schools, and he talked interestingly in favour of preserving the memorials of the city.

He admired James Bonwick, and felt grateful to him for having gathered together original historical material, which if it had not been done at that time would have been lost. The firm was founded in
1872. It started in Flinders Lane West, and remained there until 1887 when the site now occupied by them in Collins Street was purchased and the present building erected, which was designed by Koch, the architect.

Mr. Stewart had an interest in new inventions, and introduced the latest machinery into his works. Founder of Walker and May’s Printing Works. Andrew Stewart. Died at the age of 42 years. One of the Founders of McCarron, Bird & Co. It has been suggested that Westernport would be a splendid place to breed oysters, and establish an industry like that existing in France. This is a problem for solution in the future. In the meantime we kill our oyster beds as we destroy our forests, but the eyes of the community are opened, and the reformer is at work. Parer Brothers opened the Spanish Restaurant in 1860, in Bourke Street. They extended and supplied their own table from a large fruit garden they purchased at Box Hill. In 1886 they bought the Wissen Cafe, in Bourke Street. They are typical of several caterers, who from small beginnings have risen to affluence. Buried in our Old Cemetery are many who preceded them, such as Peter Perkins, who started the first oyster saloon in Melbourne, and Cowell, who first gave us turtle soup. James Stewart Butters claimed to be the originator of Gold Mining companies. In 1858 he introduced joint stock mining to work the Hercules Mine in Sandhurst (Bendigo). The exchange originated in April 1861, as the Melbourne Stock Exchange. Owing to dissensions in 1884 a number of members seceded and formed the Stock Exchange of Melbourne in October that year. On September 1885 the two Exchanges amalgamated by electing the members of the Melbourne Stock Exchange to membership in the Stock Exchange of Melbourne.

Recently Lady Helena Cambridge, a niece of Queen Mary, became engaged to Major E. E. Lyn Gibbs, of the banking house of Anthony Gibbs and Sons. She is in the succession to the throne. The Gibbs have been leading merchants in London for a hundred years, and Gibbs, Bright and Co., in Melbourne, is an offshoot of that firm.

The development of trade built up our suburbs. The first house at St. Kilda was an imported one, brought out by Mr. Ensae. Mr. J. B. Were had one of the same kind put up in the east end of Collins Street. Liardet cleared the first road to South Melbourne, and owned the first steamer running to Schnapper Point. William Frederick Ford opened the first produce store at Prahran, and the first election meeting on the South side of the river was held in his house. However, he left Melbourne to go into the country, James G. Bailleau was an old resident of Queenscliff, and did much to develop it as a watering place.

Charles Wedge, who came from Van Diemen’s Land in 1835, an associate of Batman, pioneered the settlement at Mordialloc. Swan Street, Richmond, I take it, was named after James Swan, who was Mayor of Hawthorn from 1883 to 1884, but the settlement of these districts goes back to the beginning.

In 1853 James Pask became an orchardist at Oakleigh; at that time there was but a track through the bush from Melbourne, but there were settlers there before he went. Thomas Stewart was farming there in 1855.

It would be hard to say who opened up the northern suburbs commercially; certainly Rucker and Fawknor led the way, but S. King was a pioneer of Coburg, and Thomas Napier was in that district. But a few facts relating to the origin of trade in the surrounding district are introduced here.

Edward Fred Bailey was the first postmaster at Coburg. He came to Melbourne in 1838. He bought property in Market Street, and built there a private dwelling. He also secured, two and a half acres of land in Brunswick, and in 1840 erected a wooden house there. Buying property at Pentridge (Coburg), he built there the first stone house erected in that district. W. S. Kimpton is the grand old man of the Victorian flour milling trade. He is now over ninety years of age. He arrived in Victoria in 1853, and in 1854 had established a bakery in Fitzroy. At that time, he says, the millers only
gave 24 hours credit to the bakers. He started milling in 1875, and the present mill of the firm is the largest in the Commonwealth.

Another remarkable man in recent times was William Angliss, who came to Australia as late as 1885, and found employment at Footscray. Then he went into business for himself in Carlton. With magical rapidity that firm extended itself. It has arisen under the gaze of us all. Arthur Angliss joined the firm as late as 1908, and now Angliss and Co. is the largest meat firm in Australia. They have systematised the meat industry, and some have accused them of raising the price of meat. Economically the generalization of trade should mean a decrease in price and an increase in wages. At their place at Footscray they can freeze 30,000 carcases in a week.

Robert Sutton, originally a blacksmith, was one of the progressive men in the Nunawading district. He came out in 1851. The story of this district is well told elsewhere. The growth of these outlying settlements has been materially helped by carriers and parcel delivery companies by such firms as Mayne, Nickless and Co. They, as carriers, date back to the early eighties, and it is during the last thirty years that the suburbs have expanded. The father of J. H. Gardiner, the perambulator maker, in Hotham, was the founder of that industry in Melbourne. J. H. Gardiner was councillor when the Cemetery agitation was on. He has since passed away. At that time there were two Gardiners in the council, one representing Carlton and the other North Melbourne.

I jocularly suggested that J. H. Gardiner voted with those who would destroy the Cemetery, because he saw so many of his perambulators drawn up before the market. The mothers go to market with perambulators, and wheel the produce home; surely the better way would be for the merchants to distribute it by motor car.

An interesting commercial life was that of Jonathan Binns Were, who was one of the founders of Brighton. He came out to Melbourne in the William Metcalfe, and arrived here 15th of November, 1839. He purchased land at the corner of Collins Street and Spring Street for three pounds ten shillings a foot. He founded the firm of Were Bros, and Co., exporting wool, and was the first President of the Melbourne Chamber of Commerce, being elected in 1841. In the same year he became a director of the Union Bank. He was in the Auction Co., the Bridge Co., and was the first agent for the P. and O. Shipping company; also the first agent for Lloyd’s Association, and a member of the Steam Navigation Board. He was Commissioner for Western Australia at the Intercolonial Exhibition held in Melbourne in 1857. He seems to find a place in nearly all our earliest enterprises. He is the representative here of Norway, Sweden, Spain, Denmark, Brazil, Hamburg, Lubeck and Peru. He was a member of the Commission for our Exhibition of 1881, and although thus engaged in business he is deeply interested in literature and philanthropy. He is a supporter of the British and Foreign Bible Society, and a member of the Philosophical Society of Melbourne. After living the triumphant life he died at the age of 76, on 6th of December, 1885.

The one thing that distinguishes the trade of the third or Federal period is technical education. Now the farmers boys are taught the science of agriculture, a thing unknown in the first age, which was given up entirely to farming. In our Schools of Mines the miner learns the science of the earth, and no longer pursues the rule of thumb often adopted by the early prospector.

And from pottery to architecture the business of life is laid down on broad lines and taught in schools. Still, a man like Binns is proof that the commercial men of eighty years ago sought educated labour and valued the trained mind.

It is affirmed that the asphalting of footpaths originated in Melbourne with a James Shepherd, who was its inventor and patentee. This sounds apocryphal, for asphalting has been known for a long time, but Shepherd may have introduced a special form of asphalt. George Howat was a distinguished business man, who was noted alike for his aptitude in business and his character as a citizen. He came with his father to Melbourne in 1855. The Reverend F. Milne preached his memorial service on Sunday, the 27th of July, 1919, and the Presbyterian Messenger said that for forty-three years he wore the white flower of commercial integrity.
The press said that he laid the foundation of the present system of business in vogue among stock and station agents. He was a brother of Mr. William Howat, of West Melbourne, who has charge of the Clarke estates, and was called the last of the original stock and station agents of Melbourne; that is he unites us through Dalmahoy, Campbell and Co. to the age of Raleigh and Rucker. He was 75 years of age when he died.

I close this chapter with a few thoughts on the labour movement. A White Australia carries with it a plea for a Federal eight hours system. This system originated in the colonies first in New Zealand, and in Melbourne in 1856. Some stonemasons met in an hotel in Smith Street, Collingwood, and resolved that they would stand for an eight-hours day, or forty-eight hours a week. They won, and some trades are now working only 44 hours a week, for the Saturday half-holiday followed in the track of the eight-hour system.

Mr. Lyons, one of the pioneers, was a frequent attender at our Old Cemetery meetings; some of his family were buried there. The working class wrote on their banners eight hours labour, eight hours recreation, and eight hours rest, and made it law; and in 1903 erected the monument to the eight-hour system in Spring Street. Percival Ball made a model for an eight-hours monument in 1880. It was a work of art, representing the Goddess of Liberty inspiring the Australian working man; it was to have cost £3000. Only the pedestal was erected; the granite column was erected in 1903, in place of the intended figures at a cost of £800. This year the monument has been removed to the top of Russell Street, and placed on the triangular piece of land near the Trades Hall.

It was the development of this sentiment that led us to exclude Asiatic labour. The Chinaman did not buy a newspaper, attend church, keep a wife, build a house, or limit his labour to eight hours, or even demand a living wage. The Chinese herded together in numbers, and took a long time in coming to our conditions of life. They menaced us with Asiatic diseases, and we thought that there was a danger of their coming here in millions. And as it is a mistake for old people to sleep with children, so also for an old civilization to sit down beside a progressive democracy. We thought it better that China should be saved in her own land. And so with the eight-hour system came a White Australia Policy that meant not only excluding the Chinese, but the Kanakas, the natives of Polynesia, from the sugar industry in Queensland, in which Melbourne was deeply interested. Labour here evolved, and until recently made very few mistakes, and while it fought Conscription, it has to remember that it was a Labour Government that made the mistake in the commencement of putting the compulsory clauses into the Defence Act.

In the commencement it did not dash rashly at its work of economic reform, and during the memorable Maritime strike had Judge Higginbotham on its side. The greatest strike we have had in Melbourne was the strike at the Gasworks, in 1890, which arose out of the Maritime strike. The police strike recently brought on a riot, but industrially it had not the significance of the Maritime or Gas strike.

Each April, on Eight Hours Day, the city is made glorious by the labour pageant. In the procession each trade carries its emblematic banner, which gives its object lesson in industry. The boiler-makers are at work on their drags. You can hear them clinching the rivets. The tinsmiths ride in armour on horses caparisoned in the metal they work. All along the line are the trophies of the industrial battles of the past, and the symbols of the trade. Vulcan is there at his forge, and one hears the whistle of the engine of the engine drivers. I can see the square and compass of the mason on his banner. The bricklayer has his trowel on his banner, and the carpenter his rule in his pocket. In some years the clothing trade have come out newly dressed in the goods they produced. The confectioners are making lollies and scattering them among the crowd. And the cigar makers have an immense cigar resembling a torpedo, and perhaps it is one when we consider its influence on the life of a young worker. The brewer is also there with a brass-bound cask, which I suppose contains the oldest liquor or the best brew. The other day Mr. Scaddan, then Premier of Western Australia, proposed to nationalise the public house.
Could anything better be devised to bring the Nationalisation of industry into contempt? Yet the Labour Party there has made that a plank in its platform. Some labour leaders wore the blue ribbon, and they only agreed to this plank because they could not break with their party.

Throughout the procession are the various city bands, some paid musicians, others the bands of the organization. The procession starts from the Trades Hall, and passing along some of the main thoroughfares terminates at the Exhibition Building. In days gone by the old pioneers of the movement were taken in a drag; now they are all dead, and the Labour Members of Parliament ride in the procession. This gala day of Labour is a public holiday.

In 1850 the one-arched bridge over the Yarra was completed, and the first trade union in Victoria, the Stone Masons, originated at that time, however the eight-hours system did not come here until six years later. The first Trade Union was founded by Thomas Smith, a foreman mason. W. Emmet Murphy, in his "History of the Movement in Victoria," says: It originated in Australasia, in Dunedin, New Zealand. If this is true. One of the provisions of the Otago Association, which laid the foundation of Dunedin for the Free Presbyterian Church, was that there should be only eight hours labour a day, but New Zealanders claim that even before this it was in existence in Auckland. In New South Wales it came with a strike of the stone masons, in 1855, on the building of Tooth’s brewery in Parramatta Street. And here in Melbourne it was proposed by James Stephens, a man who had been a Chartist in England. Thomas Wattle Vine, a carpenter, was president of the inaugural committee. He died at Echuca in 1882. The movement commenced at Clarke's Hotel, Collingwood. It was secured in April, and hence for some time the annual fete day was on the 21st of April. But when it became a public holiday the Government resolved that it should always fall on a Monday, the Monday following its anniversary. The terms were signed in 1856, in the Queen’s Theatre, where Coppin and G. V. Brooke performed. The first fete was at Cremorne, another of the pleasure resorts directed by Coppin. The first Trades Hall was erected in 1859. The present Trades Hall has on it the date 1874. Technical education was commenced in the first hall, and old Trade Unionism was not political but educational. Thomas Walker put up the first labour fight in Richmond in 1882. He was defeated, but William Trenwith was returned some years later. John Hancock, a Londoner, arrived in Melbourne in 1884. He was a member of the Typographical Union, and succeeded the Honourable G. D. Langridge for Collingwood. He worked hard in the Maritime strike of 1890. He died in Melbourne on the 22nd of November, 1899.

George A. Elmslie, labour leader, died a few years ago. I attended his funeral in the Melbourne General Cemetery, and I personally know the political labour movement since the days of Thomas Walker to these of G. M. Prendergast.

Peter Lalor was a liberal. Labour did not break with liberalism until the coming of Federation. And it has been also within that period that the present Socialistic Party has arisen in Melbourne. They are not yet in history; they have come and gone too often. In Robert Owen’s day the socialists in Britain drew large audiences: then they died down and rose again recently.

The first socialist debate ever held in Melbourne was the one that I held in the old Hall of Science, thirty-eight years ago, with James Donevan, the cultured representative of the Anarchist Club. It was reported by Andrade, in Honesty, the official organ of the Anarchist. I affirmed that State Socialism was preferable to Anarchy, and when we were through with the debate Mr. Rusden, the brother to the Historian, stepped up to me and said he could not see any difference between the two positions. There is, however, a wide difference, notwithstanding Mr. Rusden’s opinion.

Dr. William Robert Nuttall Maloney is M.P. or M.H.R. for Melbourne. He represents Labour. He was born in West Melbourne, on the 12th April, 1854, and educated in Mattingly and Spring’s School, and Scotch College. He matriculated in the Melbourne University, and later studied medicine at St. Mary’s Hospital, London. He is a benevolent medical man. I remember his entry into politics. He represented West Melbourne in the State Parliament from 1889 to 1903 and he resigned his position there to represent Labour in the Commonwealth Parliament to which he was elected in March 1904. He has been in Parliament ever since. There is a tendency in him to seek approbation, but that does not
make him insincere. At 66 he claimed the Old Age Pension not because he wanted it, but because he believed it to be an old man’s right. He has been working with Dr. Bride, Mr. Hoare, and the late Mr. Alfred Creamer in the referendum movement and has taken up the cause of the Old Cemetery. Mr. Maloney claims to be one of the pioneers of the referendum movement. With all his Parliamentary work, he has never been in office. We cannot say he is a great man intellectually, but he is by no means a weak man, and he is always interesting on the platform. Above the column in Russell Street are three eights symbolizing “8 hours labour, 8 hours rest, 8 hours recreation.” Trade and commerce are not ends but only the means to sustain mankind and let him fully develop his powers. The manufacturers war memorial was unveiled by H. Brookes, who was president during the war, on the 23rd of January, 1923, in the Entrance Hall of the Victorian Chamber of Manufactures. It was the work of C. Gilbert, and was erected to the sons of members of the Chamber and also to all the Sons of Australia, who fought in the war. In eighteen months from the first land sale, a town arose where before there was only forest, in which there were well-constructed houses and good business stores and in 1838 a fortnightly mail ran along the overland route first surveyed by Hume and Hovell to Sydney.

Along that way postal stations stretched from Melbourne to Yass, and in 1840 Lord Russell sanctioned the making of Melbourne a Free Port and Free Housing Port. With this successful beginning we went forward with leaps and bounds, until we have become the ninth city of the Empire. We used to rejoice, said Marcus Clark, when writing of Bendigo, but which is also applicable to Melbourne, over the capture of a Spanish galleon with half a million Spanish dollars on her, but here the Empire has received a city through whose gates have passed to the Anglo-Saxon world hundreds of millions from the gold, wheat, and woollen treasures of Victoria.
CHAPTER 6
GREAT MISSIONARIES

No one has given us a history of the Christian Church in Victoria. I know that many have written about its religious life, but they have not given a complete version of its origin and development. At our feet in the Old Cemetery Richard Bourke confirmed the survey that made us a city four square. A rectangular city, resembling in form that which is said to have been let down from Heaven. Richard Bourke stood for religious liberty and equal endowment for all religious bodies, hence in 1837 came a General Cemetery. This represents one of the first efforts in the British Empire to let all sleep together in the city of the dead. It was not until the passing of Old St. James, on a New Site, the Burial Act of 1855, that General Cemeteries were created in England. Those who advocated the destruction of this memorial ground, said that 300 cemeteries had been converted to other uses in Great Britain. This is not true; no cemeteries have been touched in England, but small church lands have been removed in keeping with the Open Space Act, and generally remain as lungs to the city. Great historic grounds are never touched. Westminster remains in the heart of London, Greyfriars Church in Edinburgh, as also Pere-la-Chaise in Paris. This in Melbourne was one of the great missionary grounds of the world. For our ministers were missionaries. Batman himself in the true sense was a missionary. He had worked for the elevation of the natives in three colonies, New South Wales, Van Diemen’s Land, and Port Phillip; and our first ministers were associated with the Cemetery or were buried there. The only monuments to these eloquent men were in this Cemetery, or had been in it, otherwise the city would have forgotten them, and did forget Crook, the great Missionary, who was at Sorrento in 1803.

The first sermon preached in that settlement by an ordained minister was that preached by the chaplain, the Reverend Robert Knopwood, on the 13th November, 1803, at Sullivan’s Bay, Hobart Camp, Port Phillip, New South Wales. We must not forget that Sorrento is a recent name. Divine service was held earlier than this, on Sunday, 23rd October, but on this occasion there was no sermon, only prayers.

It was stated by Joseph King that Crook preached earlier than Knopwood, but was not officially recognised. The first sermon by Knopwood synchronized with the escape of Buckley and his comrades. The sermon was at 11 a.m.; they had made way a day or two before, and on this day eight in all were missing. The sermon was published in the Church of England Messenger, Victoria, 14th February, 1878. J. E. Calder, of Hobart, had the manuscript. There is a difference between Knopwood’s journal and the report in this magazine. This magazine says it was preached on Sunday, the thirteenth, at eleven o’clock, whereas Knopwood has entered it in his journal for Saturday, the 12th Mr. Knopwood was born on the 2nd of June, 1761, and died on the 18th of September, 1838. In early life he was private chaplain in a nobleman’s family, and subsequently became one of the chaplains of the fleet. He was just the man in one sense for a new settlement. He was a good shot, and was among the first to secure the game when they were out shooting.

He was a Master of Arts, and was entrusted while in the settlement with magisterial work. He not only preached the first sermon here, but also the first in Van Diemen’s Land, and his journal is a brief history of the settlement. He was buried in the Cemetery of the little village of Rokeby, Clarence Plains district, Tasmania. The passage of Scripture on which he preached the first sermon at Port Phillip was Psalm 139 8-9. If I take the wings of the morning and dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea, even there shall thy hand lead me, and thy right hand shall hold me. Familiarity with the Bible is revealed by the sermon. He discusses why David came to write this Psalm, and the spirit of the Scriptures in regard to the omniscience and omnipresence of God. God protected them and had been with them in their journey across the sea. He referred by way of illustration to the remarkable escape of Captain Bligh of the Bounty, who, with eighteen of his ship’s company, traversed in an open boat 3618 miles of sea in 43 days, and only lost two men, one by accident and the other by sickness, on their arrival at Batavia. From this and other remarkable escapes at sea we were led to trust in God,
and to learn from hence to adore Him. With this exhortation and a word of prayer, he closes his sermon.

From the first, the Old Cemetery had an area of ten acres, but it does not seem to have had its denominational divisions allotted from the beginning. We see them on Laing’s map of 1847, and you can see them in this book on Hoddle’s map. I have gathered from trust deeds and other sources that the grounds were set apart on the following dates, but burials had evidently taken place in each division before the trust deeds were drawn up. The Wesleyan is dated 30th January, 1843 Trustees George Lilley, W. Witton, J. Jones Peers, Thomas Jennings and William Willoughby. But John Mills was buried in this ground in 1841. Church of England, 18th May, 1843; the Right Reverend William Grant Broughton, Bishop of Australia, trustee. Presbyterian Church, 18th December, 1844; yet there were burials in their ground in 1837. William Ryrie, James Oliphant Denny and S. Hunter Patterson were trustees. The Independents are put down for 30th November, 1847; but the Reverend Mr. Waterfield, the first Congregational minister, tells us in his diary that he applied for the ground and saw it marked out in 1840, and that it was granted about the same time. In 1838 he attended a funeral, that of Thomas Forrester, and in 1839 that of John Batman. So the ground was a going concern from 1837; but the granting of the deeds came later. But there from the first existed the denominational idea, because Michael Carr is buried in 1839 in the Roman Catholic ground.

Attached to the Statute of 1877, by which the market made its first encroachment on the and are the names of the Jewish trustees; they received their deed on the 18th December, 1844, and their trustees were Michael Cashmore, Solomon Benjamin and Asher Hymen Hart. On 30th November the Society of Friends received theirs, and the names Godfrey Howitt, Edward Sayers and John Bakewell are given as trustees in the schedule attached to the Act of 1877.

The Cemetery was closed in 1854, and for ten years only those who had bought land there were allowed to bury. In 1864 it was reopened, and by an Order-in-Council, 18th April, 1864, new trustees were appointed, Richard Hale Budd, Alexander Brock, Cosgrave, J. Phillips, Robert Smith, and Moses Rintell; apparently only one for each denomination. This order ignored the previous trustees, and assumed that the Cemetery Statutes passed that year were applicable. This reopened the Cemetery for three years, but by an Order-in-Council, 28th October, 1867, burials were discontinued, except to these holding land. This was announced in the Gazette, of the 8th November, 1867. Miss Hale, whose father was made trustee in 1864, writes thus to me:-

10th Sept., 1918.

“Your letter has been unanswered so long because I had to write N.S.W. for information. This grave in the Old Cemetery is that of my brother and sister, children of the late Richard Hale Budd, and his wife, Elizabeth, who was sister of the late James Purves. My mother arrived in Tasmania, I believe, in 1838, and in Melbourne in 1839. My father arrived in 1840. Both our father and mother and several members of our family are buried in the Brighton Cemetery.”

She then describes her grave in the Old Cemetery and continues:-

“As you may perhaps know, anything done to preserve the Old Cemetery was done by my father, for very many years. It was he who worked to get trustees appointed, I think somewhere about 1860. At the time of his death he and Dr. Lloyd were the only trustees; both old men, my father 93. He fought hard to keep the ground from the City Council. As late as the 29th July, 1905, a meeting was held at our house about the matter, attended by the then Town Clerk.

Though not much could be done, the matter was at any rate shelved until the present time. My father died in 1909. I am now an old woman, but as long as I can remember the Old Cemetery business seemed to be always to the fore. All my life there was never any money with which to keep the grounds in order, and the Board of Health seemed to be always interfering. That is my impression of affairs from memory.

I am Mary E. Budd. Richard Hale Budd was one of our greatest educators, and his life is sketched in Australian Men of the Time. The trust deed given to each denomination was like unto that given
to the Wesleyans, which I have copied from the original Copy of the Trust Deed of the Wesleyan
ground in the Old Cemetery:-

Dated 30th January, 1843.
Victoria by the Grace of God,
of the County Bourke, Parish Melbourne.
United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland,
Burial Ground, Wesleyan Church.
Queen, Defender of the Faith and so forth.

Ac. I. R.P.
To all whom these presents shall come, Greeting.
Know ye that in order to promote religion and education in our territory of New South Wales, we,
of our special grace, have granted and for us, our heirs and successors, and do hereby grant unto
George Lilly, William Witton, John Jones Peers, Thomas Jennings and William Willoughby, being
respectively trustees, nominated and appointed under and by virtue of an Act of the Government
and Legislative Council of our said territory, made and passed in the second year of the reign
of her present Majesty Queen Victoria, intituled an Act to regulate the temporal affairs of the
religious societies called Wesleyan, Methodists, Independents, and Baptists, and to their heirs and
assigns subject to the trusts, conditions, reservations and provisos hereinafter contained, all that piece
or parcel of land in our said territory containing by admeasurements one acre, be the same
more or less, situated in the County of Bourke, Parish of Melbourne, and Town of Melbourne,
bounded on the east by a line bearing north five chains, commencing at the south corner of the
Independent burial ground, on the north by a line bearing west two chains, on the west by a line bearing
south five chains, and on the south by a line bearing east two chains to the south-west corner of the
Independent burial ground aforesaid (advertised as No. 5 in the Government notice, dated 12th
December, 1842), with all the rights and appurtenances whatever thereto belonging, to hold unto
the said George Lilly, William Watton,?? John Jones Peers, Thomas Jennings and William
Willoughby, their heirs and assigns for ever, yielding and therefore paying unto us our heirs and
successors the quit rent or sum of one farthing for ever, if demanded, upon trust for the interment of the
dead according to the use of the people called Methodists in the connection established by the late
Reverend John Wesley in conformity with the provisions of the said Act, and of a certain other Act of
the Government and Legislative Council of the said territory, made and passed in the seventh year of
his late Majesty King William the Fourth, intituled An Act to promote the building of churches and
chapels and to provide for the maintenance of ministers of religion in New South Wales. So far
as the same may apply to the trusts of this our grant, and for no other purpose whatsoever, on
condition that the said grantees, their heirs and assigns, do and shall in every respect and at all times
hereafter conform to the Government regulations for the time being, and to the laws and
regulations now or hereafter to be in force for the better regulation and alignment of streets in our
said territory, so far as the same may be applicable. Provided nevertheless and we do hereby reserve
unto us, our heirs and successors, all mines of gold and silver and of coals; and provided always
that if the trusts, conditions, reservations and provisos herein contained, or any part thereof, be not
duly observed and performed by the said grantees, their heirs and assigns, then the said land shall be
forfeited, and revert to us, our heirs and successors, and these presents and every matter and thing
therein contained shall cease and determine and become absolutely void to all intents and
purposes, and it shall be lawful for us, our heirs and successors, by our Governors for the time being
of our said territory, or some person by them or him authorized in that behalf, to re-enter upon
the said land or any part thereof, and the said grantees, their heirs and assigns, and all occupiers thereof
therefrom wholly to remove. In testimony whereof we have caused this our grant to be sealed with the
seal of our said territory.

Witness our trusty and well-beloved Sir George Gipps, Knight, our Captain-General andGovernor-
in-Chief of the said territory and its dependencies, at Government House, Sydney, in N.S.W.,
aforesaid this thirtieth day of January, the sixth year of our reign, and in the year of our Lord eighteen hundred and forty-three.

GEORGE GIPPS.
Entered on record by me in Register of Grants, No. 80, Pages 210-214 inclusive, this 11th day of March, 1843.
E. DEAS THOMSON,
Colonial Secretary and Registrar.

It will be noticed that by this deed the land is granted for ever, and that forever is not a compound word; the condition is the quit rent of a farthing yearly if demanded, and the grant is made in order to promote Religion and Education, and that the only things which will cause the land to be touched are the alignment of the streets, and the finding of gold, silver and coal mines within the area of the ground. Religion and education still call for the conserving of the grounds, and the destruction of the open space is inimical to the health as well as the morality of the people. In England it is said that they do not touch burial grounds until fifty years after the last interment, and then they use them as open spaces, but forbid the erection of a band stand within the space, lest the place be turned to profane usages, and yet hundreds of people are alive who are related to these who were buried here, and still go to Fawkner to weep over these graves.

Our two earliest undertakers were Robert Frost and Samuel Crook. In the first issues of the Gazette, Frost is advertising that he will undertake funerals, and Hutchinson has his place marked on the map he had made in 1888 of Melbourne in 1838. At the beginning they carried the coffins to the Cemetery, or put them on some ordinary vehicle. Samuel Crook was the man who introduced the hearse. John Sleight went into business with him, and his grandson is still in the business, and has in his possession the firm’s ledger for 1839, a revelation of the business life of early Melbourne. Frost is in 1838 at the corner of Collins and Elizabeth Streets, and Crook opened in William Street, near the wharf, and then removed to the site adjoining the Town Hall.

In 1838 they carried the coffin, but recently a long line of motor cars followed the motor hearse that conveyed Deakin’s body to the St. Kilda Cemetery. Let us now take the denominations in succession, commencing with the Episcopalian ground. In the trust deeds Melbourne is called a town, it became a city with the arrival of Bishop Perry, on 24th January, 1848. The Bishop came in The Stag, which arrived in port on the 23rd, but he did not land until the following day, and then St. James Church became St. James Cathedral, and the Town of Melbourne became the City of Melbourne, and we are still under a different law to that which governs other municipalities in Victoria. Many books tell you of the arrival of Bishop Perry, and the different clergymen in the city, but this is not the origin of the church, nor of the churches, for most of them originated with laymen, and it is this simple beginning and sincere fellowship which is overlooked; for instance, I find that although William Pascoe Crook was the first man to administer the Lord’s Supper in Sydney among the Congregationalists, few are found ready to state that he laid the foundation of the Congregational Church in Australasia, simply because at the time he was not a properly-ordained minister. The first man to preach a sermon in Melbourne was Henry Reed, a Wesleyan local preacher, who conducted service here in 1835. Dr. Thomson claimed that he built by public subscription the first building devoted to church purposes in Melbourne; it was built on the site of old St. James, before they had a priest. Batman is said to have given the first subscription to it, and Mr. Waterfield says in his diary that it was a wooden shed shingled, and that before it was used by all denominations.

Men like John Batman, Dr. Farquhar McCrae, whose bones rested under a granite tombstone in the Old Cemetery, and J. D. Lyon Campbell laid the foundation of the Anglican Church in Melbourne. In the letter to which I have already alluded, in which Lonsdale, writing to Bishop Broughton, says that there is only a population of 364, he states that he will read the services himself to the military and the convicts, and get someone to read them to the people. He read the service in the Court House. From this rudimentary commencement, in which Dr. Alexander Thomson acted as both medico and cleric, the Church of England has grown to its present proportions, and yet unmindful of the simple nobility of its origin, it has within recent times sacrificed the historic site of old St. James. The now
History of Melbourne - Revisited

church can never have the same place in the affections of the people, although the assertion may be true that it has been moved without alteration. It may be still the old church, but it is no longer the landmark showing the centre from which our religious life radiated. Robert Russell was its architect, and its foundation stone was laid on the 9th of November, 1839. The forethought and piety of Batman is shown in his securing the co-operation of Dr. Thomson. Thomson went to Geelong, and called his house overlooking the Barwon, Kardinia. Few people in Geelong to-day as they ride by the estate reflect that Kardinia was the native name for sunrise, and that Dr. Thomson thought that the beginning of missionary enterprise here was sunrise in Australia-Felix. I stood by his grave in the Eastern Geelong Cemetery, and read that he died on the 1st January, 1866, aged 66, and on his stone it also said that he came in 1836. He came a little later than Batman and Faw克ner, and thus the first sermon was preached by a Wesleyan preacher. Bishop Broughton visited Melbourne in 1838. He was a passenger from Sydney in H. M. Frigate Conway. He paid us two visits; this was his first. The Advertiser reports his consecration of the Church of England ground in the Old Cemetery: On Tuesday and Wednesday, the Bishop of Australia christened six children.

We are sorry that we cannot recount one solitary marriage. On Wednesday, pursuant to notice but an hour later than the time announced, the Bishop proceeded to the burial ground, and in the presence of a very few persons consecrated a piece of ground for the reception of the bodies of the Melburnians and others who may depart this life. We think that publicity seemed to be avoided for no public notice was given as to the Bishop’s movements, except a few words read on a rainy day.

TO THE MEMORY OF THE REVEREND
WILLIAM PASCOE CROOK
A ZEALOUS DEVOUTED MISSIONARY
IN THE MARQUESAS AND SOCIETY ISLANDS
A FAITHFUL PREACHER OF THE GOSPEL
IN NEW SOUTH WALES
BORN IN DEVONSHIRE ENGLAND
ON THE 29TH OF APRIL 1775
DIED AT MELBOURNE
ON THE 14TH OF JUNE 1846

William Pascoe Crook’s Grave. A Translator of the first Polynesian Bible in the church. The Press is the proper organ of publicity, and in this case would have answered well Monday, Tuesday and Wednesday were the days on which the Bishop was prepared to christen, wed, and consecrate. We know that very many persons would have attended the consecration had the time of consecration been made public in a proper manner.

To-day there lies on the lectern in old St. James, a Bible published in 1836, which was presented to the Church in its Missionary days (1839), by the Society for Promoting Christianity. When St. James was moved, the Old Cemetery became the last memorial of the beginning left to us. On the 12th of October, 1838, Reverend J. C. Grylls, the first Anglican Minister in Melbourne, took charge of the work. He remained a couple of years, and was then succeeded by the Reverend Adam Compton Thomson and the Reverend James Wilson. (This Thomson must not be confused with Doctor Thomson.) Thomson worked the township, and Wilson the outlying districts. Neither of these men left their bones in the Cemetery, but Thomson buried his only son there, Frederick George, on 26th March, 1849. The funeral procession left the church in the afternoon, and all the Sunday School children attended, and nearly all the parishioners. There was a large body of mourners, and the coffin was carried by six young women. The burial service in the church was conducted by the Bishop of Melbourne, and the service at the grave by the Reverend Daniel Newham.

Two years later he went there himself, in August, 1851. He was a minister of great merit. He came out with Dr. Perry and the Reverends Macartney and Hales in 1848, and was the first Anglican Minister to answer the call of death. He was made at once Vicar of St. Peter's. The Church of England in Victoria owes its origin to the men of St. James, but its development was determined and accelerated by Newham; he laid the foundation of many of its chief institutions. He sleeps in a nameless grave. Bishop Perry preached a funeral sermon on him on the 20th of August, 1851, which was reported in
The Messenger. In this he gives his traits under eight headings. First, a blameless life; second, a freedom from covetousness; third, enthusiasm; fourth, devotion to the service of God; fifth, readiness for any work; sixth, benevolence (benevolence is more than freedom from covetousness, it is good-will and sensitiveness combined with sympathy); seventh, faith (not only faith in God but also man); eighth, the crowning virtue of all, truth. The love of truth. Let me illustrate two of these traits from the work of his life in Melbourne, enthusiasm and service for God. He established the Anglican School system, laying the foundations of the Bourke Street St. John’s and Collingwood Schools. He went for building churches, and was instrumental in having St. Paul’s built. He organized societies, the Diocesan and Anglican Visiting Societies. He advocated the Book Depot and the Anglican Library, and was editor and founder, with Dr. Perry, of the Church of England Messenger. To illustrate further his enthusiasm and service for God, I go to his idea, which is given in a sermon of his reported in the Messenger. He recognised only one class. Christians before God, not a labour or a leisure class, for Christ was destitute. It is character that makes us one, and sin that divides us. What he calls the fearful contamination of sin.

Patriotism is saving man. The saved man, the good man, is a citizen. That sermon proves that Newham was a superior man. He had entered the new house built for him at St. Peter’s.

The house seemed damp, and he took cold, and after three months illness died. I saw a letter from a lady who heard his last sermon, and she said he was a dying man, and preached his last sermon with death in his face. And so the last post is sounded, and he is carried to the Old Cemetery. Bishop Perry said some of their institutions he founded, and in all of them he took a prominent part.

The Reverend James Yelverton Wilson, who had worked the St. Peter’s Parish before Newham, in the early forties, along with Richmond, Brighton, Northcote and Heidelberg, lived on to the seventies. He was an Anglican Minister, who worked in Victoria for 33 years, and died in 1875, when the Anglican Church was fully established in the districts he had pioneered. He belonged to a different class to that of Newham. On the 25th of June, 1847, the Bishopric of Australia was divided into four sees Sydney, Newcastle, Adelaide and Melbourne. Hence the coming of Bishop Perry in the beginning of 1848.

Mrs. Perry, the Bishop’s wife, was a lady of literary merit, and from her letters to her friends in England one can gather the story of Perry’s work here. Summers, the sculptor, has preserved the Bishop’s features for us. He was strong both in body and mind, and with his wife braved the hardships of bush life, traversing nearly the whole of Victoria before we had our railway system. He was born in London in 1807, and was over forty years of age when he came here. He lived first of all in a small cottage in the scrub, then at the Southern Cross Hotel, until Latrobe, provided a house for him at Jolimont, and in 1853 Bishop’s Court was completed in East Melbourne. In 1874 he returned to England. W. J. Hughston gives an interesting biographical sketch of him in The Argus, in April 1922, and tells us that when he died in 1891 at the good old age of 84, a memorial service was conducted for him in Melbourne by Dean Macartney, who was then 93 years of age. He had come out in the same vessel, but outlived his colleague, although an older man.

In the Episcopalian Division in the Old Cemetery was a stone to Joseph Greening Ward, late Parish Clerk of St. James, died on the 13th of August, 1852, aged 60 years, with a verse from My God my Father while I strayed. He was a faithful servant of the church, and a good citizen. When we secured a town clock he saw that it was regularly wound up. As we have already noted, the first collection for a public purpose was to buy this clock. Once met in the Cemetery a relative of William Willis, the first Sexton. He was looking for his grandfather’s grave, and although the stone to the Parish Clerk still stands we cannot find the grave of the Sexton. We have seen that Bishop Perry came in 1848. His successor, Dr. James Moorhouse, was probably the most eloquent man in Melbourne in the eighties. He was installed on the 7th of January, 1877, and being called to Manchester was succeeded in March 1887 by Dr. Field Flowers Goe.
Dr. Henry Lowther Clarke, the recent Archbishop, was consecrated Bishop of Melbourne in St. Paul’s, London, on the 1st of November, 1902, and made an Archbishop of Melbourne and Metropolitan of Victoria in 1905.

St. Paul’s Cathedral was opened on the 22nd of January, 1891. It is situated at the entrance to the city proper, opposite the Princes Bridge Railway Station, a massive but dully proportioned piece of Gothic architecture, within which is a spacious auditorium capable of seating 2000 people; in it has been held our great national services, and during the war the Anglicans erected a temporary building beside it, in which our soldiers and sailors found constant refreshment and entertainment. The Cathedral is still incomplete, and to memorialize the close of the world-war, its towers were to be completed; the central tower and spire will be 275 feet high, and the two western towers 120 feet. It was built on the site of the old St. Paul’s Church and Schools. The foundation stone was laid on 13th April, 1880, by Lord Normandy, who was Governor during the Episcopacy of Dr. Moorhouse. Francis Ormond, a Presbyterian, gave £5000 towards its erection; William Clarke, Henry Miller, Joseph Clarke and others followed with substantial sums. Nearly the whole building was erected by day labour; all excepting the foundation of walls and piers. In it is a memorial to Nurse Cavell; its principal memorial is to Dr. Charles Perry, first Bishop of Melbourne. A stained-glass window in the clerestory and a mural tablet in the aisle is in memory of the late Walter and Eliza Hall. Mrs. Hall created a perpetual trust of one million pounds to be used in the States of New South Wales, Victoria and Queensland for the support of charitable, philanthropic, educational and religious work.

St. Paul’s contrasts with the sacrifice of old St. James. The land becoming valuable around St. James, it was moved bodily to the corner of King and Batman Streets. When they were building the Nave of St. Paul’s, the Anglicans were offered £300,000 for the site; they refused it, and went on with their building, and up to date they have spent £120,000 on it. How it contrasts with the destruction of our earliest monuments by short-sighted councillors. Upon the arrival of the body of General Bridges in Melbourne a State Funeral Service was held in the morning in this Cathedral, and the address was given by Archbishop Clarke. The procession proceeded from the Cathedral to the Spencer Street Railway Station, and the body was taken to Canberra and buried by Archbishop Wright in sight of Duntroon College; thus we bury General Bridges in the New Capital, while we exhume the remains of General Howard and his brother officers in the temporary Capital. On 15th February, 1922, Reverend Dr. Harrington C. Lees was installed, in the presence of men from every denomination even the Jewish Rabbi was present. He has already sympathized with the Government to erect on Flagstaff Hill an Old Pioneer Memorial, and wrote to me on the 23rd of March:-

*I think that in a matter of this kind the whole public feeling of the community must necessarily be drawn out along civic lines. The whole question is much bigger than that of even a Cathedral service, and I imagine that if there is any native feeling in the movement there ought to be no difficulty in carrying it out.*

*Believe me, Yours very truly,*

*H. C. Melbourne.*

Dr. Bromby was born in Yorkshire. His father was vicar of Hull, and he was educated at Cambridge. When teaching in Guernsey he had among his pupils H. C. E. Childers, who preceded him in Melbourne. Childers seems to belong to long ago, while Bromby seems quite a recent man, that is because he came to Melbourne before his teacher, and Bromby lived on to our own time. Childers died in England, and his schoolmaster in Melbourne. Bromby became Headmaster of the Church of England Grammar School. On leaving it he became the Apostle to the Gentiles at Toorak. I remember when he preached a sermon on Beyond the Grave, rejecting the doctrine of Eternal Punishment. He certainly served the cause of progress nobly by such an act as this, and by coming out in favour of the doctrine of evolution. But he impaired his influence by marrying a young woman when he was a very old man. One gathers from Flinders *Terra Australasia* that the Bromby Isles to the north of Australia were named after his father.
A memorial service was initiated at St. Paul's in 1916, to commemorate the Martyrdom of Nurse Cavell. The fourth annual service took place in 1919, and it is intended to continue them periodically.

Running parallel with the Episcopalian ground is the Presbyterian, where the founder of both the National and the Free Church of Scotland in Melbourne was buried. James Forbes first he built Scots’ Church, and then seceded, and with the secession party built the John Knox Church, opposite the Public Library, now owned by the Churches of Christ, and wherein a quarter John Knox’s Church, erected by the supporters of the Reverend James Forbes after his secession.

Designed by James Laing, Architect. Foundation Stone laid November 17th, 1817. of a century ago I myself preached. I give a picture of it as one of the older buildings of Melbourne, being built in 1847. His body was exhumed along with that of his favourite elder, Henri Bell, and transferred to the Melbourne General. On the monument there is this inscription:-

Erected by the Elders and Members of John Knox Congregation to the Memory of the Reverend James Forbes. He was ordained to office of the Holy Ministry in the Church of Scotland by the Presbytery of Glasgow. In faithfulness to Christ as King and Head of the Church, he renounced connection with the establishment in Scotland 9th of October, 1846, and founded the Free Presbyterian Church of Victoria. Amidst bodily weakness he was abundant in his labours for many years. A man of inflexible integrity; a Minister of untiring devotedness. He died on the 12th of August, 1851, and his remains with these of his beloved Elder were placed here in August 1855. How abundant he was in his labours is not only attested by the two edifices in the city for Scots Church he at least secured the land and erected the first building, and then built John Knox but also by the fact that he brought out what was practically our first religious periodical, The Port Phillip Christian Herald, and he gave the first temperance lecture in Melbourne. At one of his meetings the Reverend Mr. Grylls stepped forward and signed the pledge, and a little later Grylls himself gave a lecture on temperance in St. James. Forbes was identified with the organization of the Mechanics Institute, and in their first course of lectures, lectured on Colonisation.  

I read the report of this lecture before I read McCombie’s History of Victoria, and when I came to McCombie saw that in opening he gives expression to ideas that seemed to have been suggested by Mr. Forbes lecture on Colonisation. Forbes founded a Scotch College, and promoted education, and identified himself with men like Peers and Waterfield in the philanthropic movements of the beginning. I have not argued that the Presbyterian Church originated independently of the help of a regular Minister, because the Reverend J. Clow came here in 1837; but he came to take up land and not to follow his calling as a minister; yet right down to the Union of the Presbyterian Churches he was an influence in the planting and extension of their work. Like Thomson, he buried a son in the Old Cemetery. Henry Moncrief Clow had reached his twentieth year; he died in Melbourne and was buried on 30th March, 1852. His daughter married the Reverend James Forbes, and therefore there was a double kinship between the first two Presbyterian ministers. Clow conducted the first regular Presbyterian service on the last Sunday of 1837. His letters can be read along with these of other pioneers collected by Charles Joseph Latrobe.

The Free Church of Scotland sent William Ross out to Forbes. He represents the martyrs buried here. Forbes reports in the Port Phillip Christian Herald that he was a Missionary. He suffered so much on the voyage that he died on his arrival here. There was no medical man on board the boat, and these in charge did not supply him with the food needed by an invalid, so he gradually grew worse and died on his arrival, leaving a widow and six children. His case led Forbes to take up the case of the immigrants, and to demand from those in authority that better provision should be made for the long voyages. I understand that he was successful in obtaining better treatment for the immigrants. Ross died on the 25th of September, 1849. In these days there were three branches of the Presbyterian Church in Melbourne, The National, the Free and the United. The National met in Scots Church, the Free in Knox’s Church, and the United in St. Enoch’s, afterwards to be the old Assembly Hall, which stood where the Auditorium now stands.
Now these three are represented in the Presbyterian burial ground where they are one. A leading preacher in the United Presbyterians was the Reverend Andrew Mitchell Ramsay, pronounced by Garryowen to have been the most eloquent man among the preachers of early Melbourne.

In the Old Cemetery was the grave where his children were buried, and the only monument to him in the city. He himself died in 1870, and was buried in the Melbourne General Cemetery. When Melbourne was flooded he wrote The Voice of the Storm, and as early as 1847 he lectured in the Mechanics Institute on War as Opposed to the Genius of the Christian Religion. The Voice of the Storm was called A Memorial of the late Flood; it is in our Public Library, bound up with other Victorian pamphlets. The storm raged for three successive days; it set in on the morning of Monday, of the 26th of November, 1849, and was at its height on the morning of Wednesday, the 28th after which the floods were observed gradually to subside. As it came in the summer time, when shearing was advanced, and the harvest was approaching, and the thermometer had stood at ninety degrees and dropped rapidly to sixty, Ramsay was led to think it was probably a judgment, and to hear in The Voice of the Storm the thunders of God.

£100,000 worth of property was destroyed, and lives were lost. Our Old Cemetery testifies to the fact that Furse was drowned in Merri Creek and many other lives were lost. It was the greatest flood Melbourne had had up to that time, and probably we have never had a greater, although recently we saw all our low lands submerged. Ramsay, in his eloquent way, asked: Will a lion roar in the forest when he hath no prey? He emphasized two great sins, that he thought must have incurred the indignation of God, covetousness and intemperance. He said that there were men in the community aiming to engross the entire trade and seeking excessive gains. If he had been alive today, he would have used the word that has come into use with the war, profiteering.

Speaking on intemperance, he said the city was bespangled with stars, the lights of early Melbourne they were the lights from the taverns on the heights around. Had they been school lights, chapel lights, hall lights, lights over the doors of Mechanics Institutes, or temperance hotels, it would have been delightful to speak of them, but they were the lights of the tavern and the theatre. Instead of being beacon lights over rocks and shoals, they led men to the Tartarian Region. Rather than dwell in the tents of wickedness it were better for a man to fly to the mountains and live on the roots of the desert. Talk not of the degradation and cruelty of the natives. It was sickening to witness the nightly brawls that disturbed our streets, and the disgusting revelry that goes on at the bars of our inns.

The great men of the early Scotch Churches were buried in the Old Cemetery; on one stone was the name of James Oliphant Denny. He, with others, formed the Melbourne Auxiliary of the British and Foreign Bible Society. It was formed in July 1840, and was called The Auxiliary Bible Society of Port Phillip. The Reverend James Forbes and Reverend W. Waterfield were its secretaries. In 1851 Daniel Newham was secretary, and that year both he and Forbes died, and that year parcels each containing 1596 Bibles were sent to different places outside of Melbourne, such as Williamstown, St. Kilda, Arthur’s Seat, Bacchus Marsh, Craigieburn, Warrnambool, Gippsland, and the Pyrenees. During the world war this Society gave 134,000 copies of the New Testament, bound in khaki, to the Victorian soldiers, and the parent Society in England sent at the same time 9 million, printed in 80 different languages, to the men of all nations in the fighting line. There are now sixty-two auxiliaries in Victoria.

Next to the tomb of Denny is that of Mrs. Skene Craig, and not far away that of Isabella Williamson, the widow of an Edinburgh solicitor. She brought six daughters into a community where there were at least four men to one woman; at times more than this. Mrs. Williamson’s daughters became the mothers of some of our prominent citizens. We cannot tell the story of the spiritualism of the beginning and forget the virtuous women who wrestled with the adverse circumstances of pioneer life. Mrs. Louisa Hetherington, the wife of the successor to Forbes in Scots Church, was buried in that old Scotch ground. She joined in the warfare to preserve among us the holier features of the human soul.

The four Presbyterian Churches in Victoria united on 7th April, 1859. The Synod of Victoria, the Synod of the Free Presbyterian Church of Victoria, the Synod of the United Presbyterian Church of Victoria,
and the Synod of the United Presbyterian Church of Australia met for the last time as separate courts and drew up their concluding minutes, and at 12 o’clock noon adjourned to Scots Church, Melbourne, where they were formally and solemnly constituted into the Presbyterian Church of Victoria. Reverend James Clow, the old pioneer, was unanimously elected Moderator.

In the evening a great public meeting was held in the Old Exhibition Building. Some representative Presbyterians, Reverend S. Hetherington, Reverend J. Clow, Reverend Dr. Cairns, Reverend D. S. McEacharn.

Dr. Lang and the earliest Presbyterians were interested in the Evangelisation of the Aboriginals, but the Presbyterian Churches in Victoria did not enter the South Seas until late in the fifties. In 1872 Reverend Daniel McDonald went from Victoria to the New Hebrides, but the Victorian Church had been financially interested in the Mission since 1863. D. McCrae Stewart, in his Jubilee History of the Presbyterian Church, mentions the advent of Dr. Adam Cairns as an episode in the history of the church here. He resigned his church in Cupar, Fife, Scotland, and volunteered for life-long service in Victoria. He came in 1852, and in due time built the splendid Chalmers Church in East Melbourne, and became a power in the social life of the city.

The Cairns Memorial Church erected to his memory is one of the fine edifices of our city. Before contemplating the other Churches, it is well to remember that Dr. Lang, a Presbyterian Minister, represented us in the New South Wales Council, and was the father of our State. He was the first religious Minister in the history of British Colonisation to be sent to Parliament. Our first Town Clock ornaments the turret of the old Gaelic Church, St. Andrew’s, Carlton. That clock, which sometimes strikes the wrong hour now, was the standard of time in early Melbourne.

The Welsh have been here from the commencement. I have not been able to ascertain whether George Evans was of Welsh origin, but we have a tomb in the Congregational ground dating back to the early forties, with a Welsh inscription on it, that of Humphrey Hughes and his wife. The Welsh Church, however, originated in 1852. It first met in the Scots Church Schoolroom, and is a Presbyterian Welsh Church. In 1854 it had permission from the Government to occupy two acres of land at the corner of Queen Street and Latrobe Street. Later one-half of this land was resumed, the other half granted permanently for the use of the church. The present church building was erected in 1872, and the Cambrian Hall in 1888. The Cambrian Society has maintained the study of Welsh history, and their choir has distinguished themselves in the musical world. I am indebted for these facts to their minister, Reverend D. Egryn Jones.

The Wesleyan Church provided the town with its first ordained minister, and also its first lay preacher. Henry Reed, a merchant, preached to Henry Batman, William Buckley, and a few Sydney natives in the Spring of 1835. The Reverend Joseph Orton was the first ordained minister to preach here. He held one service in Batman’s house, and another in the open air in 1836. He preached his first sermon, from the Text in John III: Except a man be born again he cannot see the Kingdom of God. The Wesleyan Missionary Society in London appointed the Reverend B. Hurst and the Reverend F. Tuckfield to the mission field here. Tuckfield took up his residence on the River Barwon, at a place called Rickett’s Marsh. Mr. George Russell, who lived in that district, said: The general opinion was that he was doing some good in the way of educating the natives, and getting them to live a more settled life; teaching them industrious habits, such as cultivating the soil and other bush labour. But after persevering for some years, Mr. Tuckfield gave up the work, and no permanent benefit was derived by the natives from this establishment. This was also the fate of the Moravian Mission to the natives in the Wimmera district. Some have thought that the first interment in the Wesleyan ground in the Old Cemetery was John Mills, buried by the Reverend S. Wilkinson in August 1841, but this was not so. I gather from the Register that John Hall was buried there by Mr. Tuckfield on the 8th of November, 1840. He was a schoolmaster, aged 35, and died at Rickett’s Station, in the Geelong district, where the Reverend F. Tuckfield had his mission. Wesley Church in Melbourne to-day is called the Central Mission. I presume it has adopted that name for other reasons than that of preserving the idea that its church here was originally a mission, but nevertheless it was so. The first building was the little church erected by
John Jones Peers on his own land in Flinders Lane, where the Queen’s Arms Hotel now stands.

It was only thirty feet by sixteen. The site has just been sold to the Commissioners of the State Savings Bank; they paid one thousand one hundred and seventy-two pounds £1172 a foot for it, or one hundred and sixty thousand £160,000 for the block. What Peers gave for it I don’t know, but Batman originally bought the block at the second sale if we can trust H. E. Badman’s map for fifty-nine pounds £59 While they were selling this block to the State Savings Bank A. A. Sleight was exhuming John Jones Peers body in the Old Cemetery. Roland Woodward, of the Old Colonist Movement, told me that they found it in much the same condition as they put it down seventy years before, only it had browned a little; it had been encased in a leaden coffin, which apparently kept it incorrupt. Peers led the singing in the Anglican Church, and then in the Wesleyan. The fact that there was no church of your own denomination did not keep you out of church. Batman, although an Anglican, is heartily supporting the Wesleyan Church, and Lonsdale encourages all denominations, and John Jones Peers sings for both Anglican and Methodist. The foundation of the larger Wesleyan Church at the corner of Collins and Queen Streets was laid on the 11th May, 1840. The ground was originally purchased by a Sydney buyer for £40, but he thought he was paying too much for it, so he forfeited his deposit of £4, and when the Wesleyans applied to the State for a grant, this half-acre was given them. They built the church and parsonage facing Collins Street, and the school with its face to Queen Street. In the meantime 1848 they secured a grant in Lonsdale Street; in 1857 they sold the section in Collins Street for £40,000, and built Wesley Church here, and devoted the remainder of the money to church extension in the suburbs. The Bank of Australasia now stands on the site of the Collins Street Church. The successful tenderer for Wesley Church was a Mr. Forsyth, and Hr. E. Derrick, who was the second lowest tenderer, became his foreman. he was the father of A. J. Derrick, the present business manager of the Central Mission. A. J. Derrick’s grand-parents by the maternal side were buried in the Old Cemetery James and Eliza Marsh. When the Collins Street Church was built John Jones Peers was still with them, arranging musical festivals.

The Reverend Joseph Orton, however, only put in a few years work, and then departed for England. The report of his farewell is given in the Port Phillip Gazette. It was held on the 28th of February, 1842. While he had only been six years in Melbourne, yet he had spent eleven years in Australia. Peers was present on that occasion, and stood by them to the end. His obituary notice says he died in the full triumph of the Christian faith, and was buried at the corner of the ground of which he had been a trustee. Not many of these old memorials remain. The Wesleyan ground being near to the western gate, the vandals from West Melbourne got in, and I am told carried off the wooden memorials for fire-wood; therefore with one or two exceptions the stone memorials only have survived. Peers died in Sydney in 1850, aged 45, and his body was brought to Melbourne.

In the Wesley Church are memorial tablets and windows to men like D. J. Draper, A. R. Edgar, William Henry Judkins, and E. I. Watkin. A very distinct Missionary in their movement was Christopher Mudd, for twenty-two years a deputation agent of the Methodist Home Mission Society. He was a distinguished botanist, and as a man of science accompanied Edward VII., when he was Prince of Wales, on his visit to India. The present Chief of the Central Mission, the Reverend Alexander McCallum, is not yet in history, but he is the son of a pioneer. His father, Captain McCallum, he tells me, was chief mate of the ship which brought out The Constitution.

The movement that led to the creation of Wesley College on St. Kilda Road was initiated in 1854; it commenced with a bazaar in the old Exhibition Building, when a considerable sum of money was raised. On 6th January, 1865, the foundation stone was laid, and in 1867 the prizes were distributed by H.R.H. the Duke of Edinburgh, who was then on a visit to Melbourne. Among its teachers was Arthur S. Way, the translator of the Iliad and Odyssey. At the Conference of 1920 a memorial window was unveiled at Wesley Church by the Reverend R. Ditterich, the President of the Conference, to 21 sons of Methodist ministers who made the supreme sacrifice in the great war. They were: H. R. Cocks, P. E. Cook, W. F. Cory, R. I. Fowler, C. V. Hodge, N. G. Holden, L. G. Jeffrey, G. F. Lloyd, T. R. Lowe, A. J. McBride, F. H. Oldham, S. N. Oldham, F. R. Rankin, J. D. Rowlands, C. H. Saloway,

The Reverend Joseph Nicholson, who died recently, at the age of 76, was one of the best-known Methodist ministers in Victoria. He recommenced his ministry at Inglewood in 1858, and in his old age was Secretary to the Council of the Bible in State Schools Movement. While not an eloquent man, he always stated his case well, and was held in high esteem by a great number of people.

Next to the Wesleyan was the Independent ground. Mr. Waterfield writes in his diary, Friday, August 1840: Went to see the burying ground marked out in this ground there are some very interesting memorials, especially that shown earlier in this chapter over the grave of William Pascoe Crook. I have compared and contrasted him with Buckley in the chapter on The Aborigines and the Pioneers.

At the south-east corner of the Independent ground were the graves of Martha Crosbie, wife of the Reverend William Dunn, and Margaret Craigmile, wife of Robert Smith. They were enclosed as one grave, but there were two memorials, one of stone and the other of iron; that of iron was over the wife of an iron foundry owner, Robert Smith. Robert Crosbie Dunn, the son of Martha Crosbie Dunn, was Registrar of Shipping in the Customs in the forties. He was born at Coupar Angus, County Forfar, Scotland, and came here in 1846. The Reverend Dunn, his father, was on a visit to him when his wife died, and he left her remains here. This is the lot of the missionary. Australia in those days was to Scotland what Korea or Uganda is to us to-day.

One evening I met Mrs. Ingram, who had come from Coupar Angus, and knew the nurse of Andrew Dunn, the son of William Dunn. She remembered Andrew Dunn returning from Australia on a visit to his birthplace. She said that the Reverend William Dunn was very highly esteemed in Scotland. That seems to be verified by the notice of the death in our early papers. He was a Relief Congregational Minister, and I take it while here lived with his son. Anyway the papers say that the coffin was taken from a house in Lonsdale Street West, and Mr. Howard says that this is where Mr. Dunn, junior, an officer of the Customs, lived.

This burial ground we have seen was secured for the Congregationalists by the Reverend William Waterfield. He was the first Congregational Minister in Melbourne, and I ought to write of him here. His son sent me what is printed of his diary. He attended Batman's funeral, and he wrote thus in his diary: "Wednesday, 8th May, 1839. This morning was wholly occupied in attending the funeral of Mr. Batman. There were a great number of persons present. 60 or 70 and most of them had hat-bands and gloves, some scarfs. A group of natives came to the grave. Mr. Waterfield came here in 1838. He arrived in Hobart on the 25th of April, 1838. He was born at Derby, on the 24th of March, 1795, and embarked for Australia on the 28th of December, 1837, and was sent out by The Colonial Missionary Society, and remained in Melbourne for five years. While here he married Miss Purves. He died at Green Ponds, near Hobart, Van Diemen's Land, on the 17th of May, 1868. In Melbourne he met Fawknener as soon as he landed, and gave him his letters of introduction, went to his Hotel, and learned that the Advertiser, the manuscript paper, had stopped, and tells that the first authorised printed paper in Melbourne was The Gazette, brought out by Arden and Strode. In company with Mr. Fawknener he called on Batman. Fawknener was a Congregationalist, and became one of his strong supporters, giving the largest amount to the erection of the first Independent Church. He preached on the Sunday following his arrival, and one of his earliest meetings was that of the Port Phillip Temperance Society, at which he and Forbes were the principal speakers, and at which Mr. Langhorne, Mr. McArthur, and Dr. Cotter also took part. In August 1838 he receives a promise from Lonsdale that a section of land will be granted to the Congregationalists for a building, and thus they secured the site of their present magnificent church in Collins Street. The first funeral he went to was that of Thomas Forrester. The name is not now on the memorials in the Cemetery, although we have a stone to Ann, the wife of Joseph Forrester.

There was no Baptist Church, so the Baptists went into Waterfield’s congregation. Here is the advertisement from The Gazette of the opening of the church, which Waterfield claimed was the first edifice in Melbourne devoted exclusively to religious worship; it is a two-inch advertisement,
and seems to have been the only religious advertisement in that paper, but was a forerunner of these columns of religious advertisements in our Saturday’s paper. It appears in The Gazette of 30th December, 1840:

New Year’s Day. The opening of the Independent Church. The Inhabitants of Melbourne are respectfully informed that the Independent Church will, on Friday, the 1st of January, 1841, be formally opened for Divine Worship, on which occasion will be preached three sermons. In the morning at 11 o’clock by the Reverend W. Waterfield; in the afternoon at 3 o’clock by the Reverend James Forbes, AM.; in the evening at half-past six o’clock by the Reverend Joseph Orton.

A collection in aid of the fund after each service.

You will observe that the Presbyterian and Wesleyan Ministers co-operated. There was union with liberty among the denominations in those days. Each held to his own view, but had fellowship with others in their good works. Fawkner took a deep interest in the Congregational Church. He had Waterfield out at his farm; that farm to-day is the settlement at Pascoe Vale. There were no blind, deaf and dumb in those early days; that misfortune came later, and the Congregationalists were the pioneers in helping them. The Reverend William Moss came out in August 1850, and at once associated himself with the Reverend Mr. Morrison, who was then officiating in the Collins Street Church. Moss, after speaking at West Melbourne and other places, got to work in Prahran, and was the principal man in forming the Prahran Mechanics Institute, the Victorian Deaf and Dumb Institution, and later the Victorian Asylum and School for the Blind. When Mr. F. Rose came out he was made superintendent; he was deaf and dumb himself. Premises were taken, and the school was opened in 1861. The work developed and the Government granted the block of land now occupied by them at the corner of St. Kilda Road and High Street. The memorial stone was laid 6th March, 1866, and all denominations were associated in the work. The education of the blind was then taken up, and the pioneer in this work after Moss was the Reverend James Mirams, father of Mirams the Protectionist Politician. In time they, too, secured a block of land fronting the St. Kilda Road, and the first part of their building was opened on the 21st of August, 1868. The generosity of McPherson, the Mayor of Melbourne, added a wing to it in 1872. The Reverend Mr. Moss retired from the regular ministry in 1878, and gave himself entirely to the education of the blind. The war recalled our attention to this work, when men came back from the front blind. Captain Clutha Mackenzie visited us in 1919. He was the son of the High Commissioner for New Zealand, and lost his sight while fighting in France. He was returning to New Zealand with Jellicoe on board H.M.S. New Zealand. He visited this institute for the blind accompanied by Mr. Manson, the Melbourne agent for New Zealand. This work reflects credit on the Congregational Church. Let us return to Waterfield. The religious life of early Melbourne is well described in the diary of the Reverend Mr. William Waterfield. His son sends me the following extracts, which relate chiefly to the Old Cemetery:-

14th January, 1842. The Reverend Mr. Crook, from Sydney, called before breakfast and engaged to preach for me on Sabbath next. 5th Mr. Crook dined with me. Went and buried Mr. Chin’s child. 16th. Mr. Crook preached for me all day. He appeared to be past preaching. His impediment was great. (He lived some years longer.) 17th. At 5.30 went to the funeral of Mrs. Hughes, and after paying the expenses of the funeral there was £4 4 shillings to spare for Hughes.

5th Set out at 10 o’clock to bury a child of the name of Hinde. 5th May. Buried Mr. Mortimer’s eldest son. 19th July. This morning about .30 I was sent for to Mr. Kettle, who was thought to be dying. I was there till 3. Came home, returned and stayed till 5. Saw him frequently during the day. The doctor there most of the day. Did not expect him to live. Lord prepare us for death. Mr. Kettle had broken a blood vessel. 21st. To the astonishment of the Dr., Mr. Kettle he was still alive. 24th. After the services went to see Mr. Kettle; a wildness in his looks; mind happy; expecting to get better, but submissive. Page 27th. This morning, to my surprise, I was informed that Mr. Kettle died last night about 11.30, after bursting the same or another vessel. Lord prepare me for my latter end, and support the bereaved widow and children. Saw the family and prayed with them. 28th. (Thursday).” Went to the funeral of Mr. Kettle; about 60 friends there. Mr. Wilkinson read and prayed in the home. I read and
spoke at the grave. Mr. Forbes prayed. Some of us returned for tea at the house of mourning.

1st August. Mrs. W. and I were visiting and making after the fashion of the world return calls. 9th Sept. Left Messrs. Langland’s & Fulton to cast a bell for the use of the chapel. 24th January. Preached from Romans 1:17, Revelation 14:13. This last was for a funeral sermon for the late Mr. Ker (Mrs. Jacomb’s grandfather, I suppose). Mr. Forbes read and prayed, and I preached. Crowded chapel. 11th February. At night visited Mrs. Beswicke, who was in a dying state. 12th. At 6 this morning Mr. Ker came to inform me of Miss Beswicke’s death. How very rapid. Called to see her brother, whom I found in bed. After dinner went again to Mr. Beswicke’s to make arrangements for the funeral. 13th. This morning at 10 went to Miss Beswicke’s funeral. She was much younger than I thought 20. Returned, prayed with her brother. 27th. Had to attend the funeral of a Mrs. Lush. Got completely wet through. Elizabeth Street a river. 28th. Just before the evening service I was sent for to see Miss Kidd, who was dying. Got there as she breathed her last. Prayed with the mother and daughter, who were much distressed. 1st March. Attended the funeral of Harriet E. Kidd. 2nd April. Dined at Mr. Chisholm’s home in Collins Street for, I suppose, the last time, as they are about to remove. Took tea at Mr. Batman’s with his family. Many friends called, and the most of us went to see the corroboree over the river. 6th May. To-day visiting Judge Willis, Mr. Lonsdale, Dr. Howitt, and Judge Stainsforth. At 6 p.m. went to Mr. Latrobe’s to dinner; met the Reverend Messrs. Thompson and Wilson, Mr. McArthur of the Bank, Mr. Foster, Mr. Herriot. Spent a pleasant evening. Three of us had been to St. Keven’s Red., County of Wicklow, and two of us had been at Road Abbey. 7th Dined at Murphy’s with Mr. and Mrs. Neil Campbell, who spoke very highly of this country for agricultural purposes. Took tea at Dr. Howitts’ with Dr. Mullane and L. Booker. 25th. The marriage of George Toohey and Caroline Carter, and the burials of Helyar’s child and Wrigley. Dined at Dr. O’Mullanes. 27th Miss Arnott called and paid a burial fee. 24th June. This morning the Wesleyan New Chapel was formally opened. Reverend Mr. Wilkinson read prayers and preached from Matthew 6:10: Thy Kingdom Come. Collection £17 6 shillings and 6 pence. Very thin attendance indeed. Dined at Marsden’s (draper), whom I found had been a Missionary in the West Indies. At night the Reverend Mr. Orton preached; his text, Psalm 132, 7-9. It was a useful and impressive sermon, but very long. Collection upwards £35. 28th. Dined at the Reverend Mr. Wilkinson’s with the Reverend Messrs. Forbes, Orton, Tuckfield, and Dr. Thompson. 30th. Mrs. Roy died. Aged 53. 2nd July. Went to Mrs. Roy’s funeral, which was highly respectable. 15th. Went to see a sick person of the name of Warman, at Newtown. 27th. A great part of the day visiting. At 4.30 went to the funeral of Mrs. Warman. 27th. August (1841). Mrs. Sayers and Mrs. Marr each of a daughter. Afternoon Mr. Mill’s funeral. 31st December. This morning went to the funeral of Mr. Neil, a passenger who came out in The Marquis of Bute he died in the bay. 27th. Went to Brunswick, near Melbourne, to lay the foundation of a small Wesleyan Chapel. 28th. Oct. At 6.30 went to the dinner given to His Excellency. Was much pleased with the night and with what I heard of the country. Came away at 12 o’clock. I do not covet to be often at such places. On the 29th I Married Mr. Lush and Mrs. Hailes, and afterwards went to tea and supper with them; a large party. 6th Nov. Mr. Latrobe called, and I went afterwards to see his garden. 12th July. 38 or 39. This morning we were in Mr. Fawknor’s upper room. I afterwards baptised two children, Mary Aberline ?? and Thomas Henry Jennings, being the first baptised since I left England.

It seems to me that the Sunday School came early in the life of our settlement, but I have no exact dates. Batman’s girls came in 1836. Miss Thompson, daughter of Dr. Alexander Thompson, brought a little pony with her; she was just blossoming into womanhood. The children of St. James, we have seen, attended the funeral of the Reverend A. C. Thomson’s child, and also of Batman’s boy. E. C. O. Howard, Gordon McCrae and William Reid were boys in early Melbourne.

Sunday Schools did exist to minister to the children. In 1842 there were in Melbourne over 2000 children. Sunday Schools even became the means of establishing churches, such as that which swarmed off from the first Congregational Church in 1846. A new school was formed in the west end of Little Bourke Street, between William and King Streets. This resulted in the building of hat west end Congregational Church, which stood where Hughes and Harvey now have their place of business. F. Sargood took an interest in the foundation of this church, and presided at the first meeting at which they
resolved to build. Air Hugh Purves, who is still alive, attended the school, and has a minute book belonging to it that goes back to 1849. Thomas Fulton, of the foundry, after whom Fulton Street, which ran along the north of the Old Cemetery, was named, was a teacher in it; also Robert Dunn, of the Customs; and John Ross, David Leive, R. R. Rodgers, Mr. Hetherington, Misses McClure, Sir. Tewley, Mr. Thwaites (father of the engineer), and others took part in its services. Frequent references are made in the minutes to the roads, and to the weather. Miss McClure is absent on one Sunday, owing to being away in the bush. There was bush all around Melbourne, and the children came by bad roads and along pathways through the bush to school. On 5th October, 1851, Mr. Rogers was invited to close the school because he was going away to the diggings for six weeks. The record of the great flood of 1849 is in the school minutes: 2nd of December, 1849. Assembled this afternoon after the visitation of God by a great flood, and by which many lives were lost. From the minute book we gather that in the September of the same year there was a great snow storm, a thing unusual in the history of Melbourne. The teachers went out periodically to distribute tracts and canvass for pupils.

The first church service held was in the schoolroom, 10th March, 1856, and this church decided to buy land in Lonsdale Street and build a church; thus arose the second Congregational Church in Melbourne. The Victorian Sunday School Union originated in 1871. This has initiated work like The Children's Church, and the International Bible-reading Association, Conferences for Teachers, and the publication of Lesson Helps. It is said that there was an earlier movement, and that a United Sunday School Demonstration was held in the Domain sixty or seventy years ago. The programme of that demonstration went to England, and when Dr. Dale and Henry Lee, of Manchester, visited Melbourne some thirty years ago, Lee brought with him a programme of that demonstration in the Domain. Westmore Stephens and William Howat took a deep interest in this movement. Stephens was one of the first singing visitors to the schools. The Raikes Centenary was organized by the Union. The Church of England preferred to stand out of this movement; it has its own organization. The first Sunday School magazine published in Australia was brought out in Sydney and edited by the Reverend J. G. Hailey. Kendall, the poet, contributed a poem, which the editor refused, and told him to try again, which we all know Kendall did.

The Baptists co-operated with the Independents from the first, and used the same burial ground in the Old Cemetery. Their distinct work seems to have commenced with the open-air services of Peter Virtue, on the river front. These were the first gatherings on the Yarra Bank, and the parent of the mass meetings of to-day. The first baptisms were in Hobson's Bay, in South Melbourne, then called Emerald Hill. The first person baptised was Mrs. Crook, wife of Samuel Crook, in 1839. Mr. Robert Reeves baptised her. The first paid preacher was John Joseph Mouritz. He came in 1840, and the first regularly ordained minister was the Reverend John Ham, who came in 1842, and conducted services in the Mechanics Institute. A church was formerly organized on 20th July, 1843. In 1844 they received from the Government a grant of the land on which the Collins Street Church now stands, and the foundation was laid 21st May, 1845. John Gill was the architect. Reverend Dr. Lang, the celebrated Presbyterian minister, and the Historian of Phillipsland, visited Melbourne in 1840, and gave the Baptists a service by which he helped them to raise money for their building fund. Mr. Ham established a Mission to Aboriginal Children at the junction of the Yarra with Merri Creek, near the Studley Falls. One of the sons of Ham, Cornelius-Job Ham, became Mayor of Melbourne. I now turn to the foundation of the Roman Catholic Church in Melbourne, and confess that many will not value this part of my narrative from my known antagonism to that church. Its origin and evolution in Melbourne is very interesting; although so large to-day, it had like all the others a very simple beginning. You will remember Lonsdale gave the population of Melbourne on his arrival as 224, fourteen of whom were Roman Catholics. They commenced meeting in a weatherboard cottage, Peter Bodecin's house in West Melbourne, and before the arrival of Father Geoghegan, five laymen drew up an appeal to the community, containing these words, which I take from Garruyowen's narrative. I understand Garuyowen was a Roman Catholic, and therefore on this subject his information will be accurate:- "We, the Catholics, are among you, and before you, and we need but refer you to our numbers, industry, and talent, to induce you to acknowledge our importance to a new-born, rising and
struggling colony. We are, however, poor as a community, and therefore call upon you with confidence for assistance in our undertaking. We need not at the present day resort to these bugbears, the offspring of ignorance and fraud, which placed our fathers at variance for so many ages."

The five who drew this up were: Peter Bodecin, T. Halfpenny, Adam Murray (who was associated on the Free Press with Dr. Greeves), Robert Hayes and William Cogan. Of these, Halfpenny was buried in the Cemetery, and Cogan’s wife, Hannah Cogan, had a memorial, on which are some lines which, if Cogan wrote them, prove that he was no mean versifier. One fourth of the memorials in the Old Cemetery are over Roman Catholic graves. Like the Anglicans and the Presbyterians, they had two acres of land. The first Roman Catholic burial was Mary Ann Coffee, a child aged 2 years, who was buried on 2nd June, 1839. The earliest Catholic memorial that remained down to the time of exhuming was Michael Carr. He bought land at the first land sale, and was one of our earliest publicans. His burial was the sixth in this Division of the Cemetery.

I.H.S.
Memento Mori

MICHAEL CARR.
19th October, 1839.
Aged 36.

the stone is also the name of Michael Bulger, his wife’s brother. The monument was erected by his widow, Catharine Carr. Mr. Jageurs, a historian of the Roman Catholic Church in Victoria, asked me to look up in my record of the graves the names of these Catholics who were buried between 1839 and 1856, and I picked out one hundred. The five who drew up the manifesto met in Peter Bodecin’s cottage, in Collins Street West, close to St. James. Their first meeting place when the Reverend Mr. Geoghegan arrived was Campbell and Wooley’s store, at the corner of Little Collins and Elizabeth Street, a site now used by the Colonial Bank. The Parnells, whose well-kept grave was in the north of the Roman Catholic ground, attended with others, who were afterwards buried there. On Sunday, 22nd 1839, the Reverend Mr. Geoghegan, like the ministers of the other churches in the town, took up a collection towards erecting the first fence around the Cemetery. Patrick Parnell came out in The Coromandel in 1839, and was one of the first to reside in what is now the suburb of Preston. He did not stay there long, but being a farmer, went further inland. He antedates St. Francis Church. Mrs. Murray, wife of Matthew Murray, was also buried in the ground, and came out in the same vessel. The foundation stone of St. Francis, the first Roman Catholic Church here, was laid on the 4th of October, 1841, by the Reverend P. B. Geoghegan, and others. In 1844 two prelates came on a visit to Melbourne, Archbishop Polding, of Sydney, and Bishop Francis Murphy, of Adelaide; and on Sunday afternoon, Oct. 20th the members of the church, accompanied by their Temperance Society, marched in procession to the Old Cemetery and consecrated the Roman Catholic ground there. It was a dusty day, and yet three thousand people attended. Dr. James Alipius Goold was consecrated Bishop of Melbourne in Sydney on 6th August, 1848. He travelled overland to Melbourne, and on the 9th of April, 1850, he laid the foundation stone of St. Patrick’s Cathedral on Eastern Hill. He served his church well, and died in Melbourne on 11th June, 1886. I remember the ministry of the three Roman Catholic Bishops, and three out of four of the Anglican, and the later part of the Ecclesiastical history of Melbourne passes easily before my mind. During Goold’s life an effort was made to assassinate him, by a lawyer who was doing some business for him. He escaped. When in the due course of time he died, Bishop Moran (Cardinal) visited Melbourne, and took part in his funeral services. He was succeeded by Dr. Thomas Carr, to whom I refer later on. Dr. Carr died on 6th May, 1917; that was the anniversary of Batman’s death. Batman died 6th May, 1839. Batman was a Protestant. I only mention the coincidence. Bishop Carr was succeeded by Dr. Mannix. Mannix has stood for Hibernianism in Melbourne; that feeling was strong in the city before he arrived, and a statue to O’Connell stands in front of their Cathedral, which is called St. Patrick’s Cathedral.
On Sunday, 2nd May, 1920, the church at North Fitzroy celebrated the centenary of the arrival of the Reverends Therry and Conelly. The Reverend Royayne, with others, took part in the service, and he said: That they had assembled in joyful commemoration of a century’s striving, and in happy contemplation of a century’s achievement. The Advocate about that time brought out a series of articles on the early Church in Australia, and it said: Among these who had been transported as a result of the Irish rebellion of 1798 were three priests, Fathers Dixon, Harold, and O’Neil who arrived in 1800. O’Neil was pardoned and returned to Ireland in 1802. Harold was sent to Norfolk Island, and Dixon was appointed by the Government in 1803, to administer to the religious wants of the Catholics of Sydney. Dixon left the colony in 1808, and Harold was appointed in his place. He in turn left in 1810, and not till seven years later did they have a priest. Then the Reverend Jeremiah Flynn arrived at Sydney 14th November, 1817.

Governor Macquarie ordered him to leave, holding that his credentials were unsatisfactory, and then three years afterwards, on the 3rd May, 1820, came the Priests Therry and Conelly, the centenary of whose arrival was celebrated in North Fitzroy. On the 30th of June, 1820, they opened the first Catholic meeting house in Australia. The Reverend Dr. John Bede Polding came in 1835, and among these who accompanied him was a sub-deacon, Bede Sumner; he was made a priest in 1836, and was the first priest ordained in Australia. Later Dr. Polding is made an Archbishop, and visits Melbourne and consecrates the Roman Catholic Division of the Old Cemetery. The Reverend P. B. Geoghegan died in Dublin in 1864; this was also the city he was born in. I have not secured the name of any priests buried in the Old Cemetery, but the remains of Robert Brettargh, the brother of one, was there.

Isaac Stevens, belonging to the Society of Friends, was buried here. His body was exhumed by the Government in 1877. When they encroached on the ground, the markets were extended over the grounds of the Aboriginals, and the Society of Friends and three-fourths of the Jewish ground was also appropriated.

There were eighteen Jewish graves in which there are nineteen persons buried. In one grave there are twins; apparently it is the custom of the Jews to put only one person in each grave, but in this case a departure is made, and the explanation is given on the tomb: Whilst alive they were always united, and in death are not separated. While our present plan shows only eighteen graves, yet the Reverend Mr. Solomon, the Secretary of the Synagogue, tells me that sixty-six were buried there, and that they have the record. The Jews now have a Chevra Kadisha, a Society for the conduct of funerals, and the care of the graves. If all of our religious denominations had had one, the Cemetery would never have been sacrificed. The first Jewish burial in Melbourne was that of Miss Davis, buried near Merri Creek. The ground was found to be unsuitable. In excavating the grave they had to work through rocky ground. The body was exhumed and sent to Hobart and there interred. Asher Hymen Hart applied for land in the Old Cemetery, and an acre was granted to the Jews. By a strange fatality, Lewis Hart (Asher Hymen Hart’s brother) was the first interred, 14th August, 1843. Mr. Maurice Brodzky wrote the History of the two Melbourne Synagogues down to 1877. The first Jewish worship was in 1839. I think Jews may have been interested in the foundation of the Port Phillip Association initiated by Batman, but this was their first religious assembly.

They met at the house of M. Lazarus, Collins Street West. In that gathering were Solomon Benjamin and Michael Cashmore, both of whom became trustees of the Cemetery. The foundation of the Synagogue was laid in 1853, when Rabbi Cohen, from Jerusalem, was present. Moses Rintel was their first regular minister, and he in 1857 established the East Melbourne Synagogue, that met first in a temporary meeting house in Lonsdale Street. Then in 1859 they obtained a grant of land in Stephen Street (Exhibition Street), and in 1860 had a small Synagogue here; but this was not satisfactory, and on the 20th of March, 1877, the foundation stone of the East Melbourne Synagogue, in Albert Street, was laid. Mr. Rintel was born in Edinburgh in 1824, and came to Melbourne in 1849.

When you leave the earliest pioneers, you come on men like Moses Goldstein, who extends the work of Jewish philanthropy. He is the forerunner of Phillip Blashki. Both men took an interest in the direction of funerals and respectful burial for deceased Jews. Solomon Joseph was not only the founder.
of Jewish literature in Melbourne, but in all the Colonies. Edward Cohen was the first Jewish Mayor here, and afterwards a member of the Legislative Assembly. He prepares the way for Sir Benjamin Benjamin and Isaac Alfred Isaacs and like men. Michael Cashmore was the earliest Jewish City Councillor.

We have seen the first Jewish burial was that of Lewis Hart, who died on 14th August, 1843, and was buried on 15th August. He was buried by his brother, Asher Hymen Hart. This man, with J. H. Hart, conducted all the burial services until the coming of Moses Rintel; Rintel conducted a number in the Old Cemetery. His own child was buried there. The record of this burial ground gives no idea of the longevity of the Jew, which is so universally attested; he shared the lot of the pioneer. No Jew who went to this Cemetery lived to be three score and ten. The person who came nearest to this age was Sophia Levy, a Jewess, who lived to be 68½ years old. Elizabeth Abrahams lived to be 55, as in register, or 52 as on her tombstone. Louisa Hart died at 44, and Lewis Hart, the first interred, at 40. David Newton was 40, so also Lewis Franks, Mordecai Marks, Samuel Barnet and Harriet Levi; Emanuel Nathan was 37, Edward Hart 36, Joseph Godfrey 30, Rachel Cohen 30, Sarah Alexander 28 or 23, (we could not decipher which). Ralph Raphael 23, Cecilia Sarah Cohen, the wife of Simeon Cohen, came out in the steam vessel The Great Britain, on one of its earlier trips. She died at sea, at the age of 19. Her body was brought into Port Phillip and buried here. The Jewish and Anglo-Saxon Alliance promises well, and Palestine has become a province in the British Empire. It will be seen that not one reached the honoured age of three score and ten years; all the others that I know of were children. Most of the Jews in early Melbourne were in business. There were only one or two Jewish settlers in Victoria. Levien was one. Lewis Hart was a clothier. Newton was a fruiterer, in business in the city, and Myers was a butcher. They pursued almost exclusively mercantile pursuits. Montefiore, Lopez, Henriches, Asher Hymen Hart and Benjamin were merchants; Cohen was a bullion broker; Mendel was a spirit merchant, and one Jew (Marks) kept an hotel; Levy was a general dealer; Lincoln, Harris and Alexander were drapers. One Cohen kept a boarding house, and another we have seen was a broker. There was a jeweller (Millinger), a stationer (Marks); and a tobacconist (Cohen); but these, like the Professor of Music, belong to a period approaching the fifties. The Jewish auctioneer was possibly earlier; certainly he was here in the early fifties.

Mr. Eskell was probably the first Jewish dentist. A.H. Hart solemnized the first Jewish marriages. His first marriage was Edward Hart to Isabella Hart, and at this wedding the two witnesses required by law were Solomon Benjamin and Michael Cashmore. The first Jewish birth given in the Register is that of Ellen Lazarus; she was born on 9th July, 1841, and was the daughter of Isaac Lazarus and Nancy Lincoln; the Lincolns were very early Jews. Lincoln was a draper. The child was baptised or in some way brought into relationship with the Synagogue aged four years later by Asher Hymen Hart.

It will be seen that the Jew participated in the materialistic life of the pioneer; recently he has shown a devotion to art, science and music. That takes us into an entirely different sphere. The portrait of Lieutenant-General Sir John Monash, in the National Gallery, was painted by Isaac Cohen, a Jewish painter, who studied art in Melbourne, and has attained fame as an artist. He gave the picture to Mr. Nahum Barnet ?? and Mr. Jacobs, two men who assisted and encouraged him in the days of difficulties. They gave it to General Monash, and the General, remembering a wish of Cohen’s when painting it, gave it to the Gallery. There was an Isaac Moss on board The Lady Nelson; if he were a Jew he was the first Jew in the port. He came with Murray, the discoverer, in 1802, and saw the British flag unfurled here.

Although the Jews surrendered three-fourths of their ground in 1877, no Jewish bodies were exhumed and removed to other cemeteries, only Quakers and Aboriginals; and of these, I only know one name, Isaac Stevens, a member of the Society of Friends, also Derrimut, the aboriginal, who saved the first settlers from a native attack, by giving information in time, went directly from the Benevolent Asylum to the Melbourne General. Longmore, in pleading in 1877 for market extension, said only three bodies would be removed, but when they came to the work they found it is reported many more, and gruesome stories are told how 20 years afterwards, in 1899, they found bodies when workers under the
Metropolitan Board of Works were engaged in some excavations. A Chinese was buried in the Cemetery in 1838, evidently one who had strayed here from some ship, for Chinese immigration was not initiated until the fifties; their Joss House was opened on Emerald Hill in 1856. A movement that came in recent times was the Young Men’s Christian Association. There is, however, a reference in the papers of 1854 to a Young Men’s Christian Association in Melbourne, but this would not be a branch of the Y.M.C.A. It seems to have been started here by the Reverend Mr. Marsh; its earlier meetings were held in a room over Wallworth & Remington’s shop, at the corner of Bourke and Swanston Streets. Later, in the early eighties, we find them in Russell Street, in a building which they had erected on the land of the Honourable James Graham.

When the Secularists left the Old Hall of Science, in Bourke Street, the Y.M.C.A. (Young Men’s Christian Association) surrendered the place in Russell Street and took this hall. This is now the Salvation Army’s headquarters; the Y.M.C.A. gave it up for their present premises in Flinders Street. One of their Presidents was John Ramsay, a strong fighter; he had a controversy with H. K. Rusden, and once I met him in debate on a doctrinal subject in the Christian Church in Lygon Street. I can also remember Henry Varley speaking under the auspices of the Y.M.C.A. in the nineties. He was doing evangelistic work in Melbourne as far back as the seventies. The Illustrated Australian News had a picture of him addressing an immense crowd in Richmond Park in 1877. J. Virgo, now a London and Empire Secretary to the Association, was at one time Secretary of the Melbourne Association. It is a young movement. I had the pleasure of meeting its founder, Sir George Williams, in the Foundation Society, Islington, London. He was present at a social gathering given in the midst of my course of lectures under the auspices of that society. He was a type of the Society he founded. I thought of him as clean in character, sane in mind, and healthy in body. The last tenant of Batman was a Freethinker. Diversity of thought existed in early Melbourne, but the Freethought and Spiritualistic Movements belong to our later history.

In 1855 the Melbourne City Mission was originated by Mrs. Hornbrook, then it was known as the Ladies City Mission, because it was organized and financed by them. They found that they needed the help of the clergy, and in the following year a gentleman's committee was formed. Dr. Cairns, D. Ogilvie, W. Fairfax, and others who are described as historic and as pioneers in Christian work in Victoria, took up the work. The Reverend H. H. P. Hanafield was the first secretary. In 1864 the late Honourable James Balfour, M.L.C., became associated with the Mission. The foundress thought of the Missions in Glasgow and London when she organized it; she is remembered in the Hornbrook Hall in Collingwood. The Melbourne City Mission is for Greater Melbourne, and is doing both a central and suburban work. We present here the pictures of the foundress and the late Honourable James Balfour.

The Mission is benevolent and broad based, undenominational in character, and quiet but persistent in its work; Statesmen like Joseph Cook address at its annual meeting six or seven hundred people, then it goes quietly on its way; its ordained missionaries seldom preach in a fashionable church.

Another great benevolent work is that done by the many institutions for helping boys. The first institution of that kind was the Try Boy Movement, started in Toorak and South Yarra! William Foster forty years ago commenced this work, and it is the direct parent of the Newsboy Movement and the Gordon Institute, and indirectly of every other boy movement in the city.

The work of the late Dr. Barnado in London is not paralleled here; the Melbourne boy, even when he has lost his parents, is hardly a waif and a stray. Some people object to the name neglected children with which one of our Government Departments is labelled. A widow, unable to provide for some of her children, seeks help from the Government, not because of neglect, but because of misfortune. However, it is not infrequently neglect. Mrs. S. T. Staughton was the President of the Society. The late Mr. Staughton and his wife were the Patrons of Mr. Foster from the commencement of the movement. Its aim is to take the boys from the street of a night, and give them rational recreation and instruction. During thirty-five years of work it has enrolled 10,000 boys; 300 old Try Boys enlisted for service, 25 were killed, 4 won the military medal, and 1 the Croix de Guerre.
Builders are losing their memorial, and the Old Cemetery where their fathers sleep is being taken from them as they win a memorial for them elves.

These undenominational movements remind us that State aid to religion was abolished in 1871, and that religious and philanthropic institutions are upheld today by the charity of our citizens.

I gather from the annual report of the Royal Humane Society of Australasia that it was started in Melbourne. Mr. John Wilks moved, by the loss of life in the wreck of the pilot schooner Rip, wrote to The Argus 24th July, 1873, under the nom de plume of Nemo, suggesting the formation of such a society. George S. Coppin took the matter up, and the Society was inaugurated as The Victorian Humane Society, 28th September, 1874, just a hundred years after the foundation of the Society in England. In 1878 the Society commenced work in other colonies, and in 1882 it became The Royal Humane Society of Australasia, and in 1880 the Society was completely federated throughout Australasia and Fiji, thereby becoming the first Federal institution in Australasia. The Society decorates the Peace Hero with medals. The life buoys on Princes Bridge and other places are put there by this Society; there are thirty-seven in and around Melbourne. The grandson of Batman, the late A. B. Weire, received Honourable Mention for saving life at Sandringham. In 1854 W. Le Souef formed a Society for the prevention of cruelty to animals that was called A Humane Society. It only lasted for a few years. The present Victorian Society for the Protection of Animals originated in 1871. It now has a building of its own in Swanston Street, and is not only saving the animal from maltreatment, but cultivating the spirit of kindness in the community.

The Royal Victorian Trained Nurses Association was founded in 1901. It was the first Nurses Association outside of Great Britain to receive the title Royal. Bush Nursing Associations and like benevolent institutions preceded it, but it seems to have the record. It registered up to 1919, five thousand nurses, and three members of its council are trustees for the Edith Cavell Fund. The Ambulance Movement is recent. In Old Melbourne the sick and wounded were carried to the hospital in the first vehicle available, and their trouble was not infrequently aggravated by the manner in which they were conveyed.

J. Harold Lord, of the St. John’s Ambulance Association, gives the following historical sketch of their movements: “The St. John’s Ambulance Association in Victoria is a centre of the English organization, and was formed in this State on the 20th June, 1883, through the instrumentality of the late Drs. James E. Neild and R. B. Warren. The first President was Sir William Clarke, (Baron). Since the inauguration of the centre, 55,880 persons have received a course of instruction in First Aid, Home Nursing and Home Hygiene, and of these 2848 have passed three examinations and obtained the Association’s Medallion. The head office of the Association is 217 Lonsdale Street, Melbourne. The Ambulance Society of Victoria was commenced as long ago as 1887, through the kindness of Lady Clarke, wife of Sir William Clarke, who presented six Ashford Litters. The first Ambulance Wagon was placed in commission in 1896, and was run by the Metropolitan Fire Brigade, this wagon being borrowed from the Defence Department. At this time an association of ladies, styled the Daughters of the Court, with Mrs. L. J. Bevan and Mrs. J. E. Neild, raised sufficient funds to pay for an ambulance suitable to the requirements of the city.

Owing to lack of facilities, the Metropolitan Fire Brigade were unable to continue the running of the ambulance wagon, and in 1902 the St. John Ambulance Association took over the service. The work has increased each year since that date, and after putting into commission five horse wagen’s, in 1908 the Association purchased its first motor wagon, and at the present time has in commission six motor vehicles and three horse vehicles, with a staff of twenty-one officers and men. In 1918, largely due to the energy and ability of the President of the Victorian Civil Ambulance Service, Mr. A. H. Hansford, M.A., LL.B., the service acquired its own premises at 217 Lonsdale Street, at a cost of approximately £12,000. Since the commencement of the service over 90,000 cases have been conveyed to or from hospital, including country journeys of upwards of three hundred miles. One quarter of this work has been done for patients unable to pay any fee whatever.”
History of Melbourne - Revisited

Forty-seven years ago a society was formed here, called The Society to Assist the Educated Poor. It has kept going, and Archbishop Clarke was one of its patrons. When Australia was settled, she was one vast parish in the circuit of the Indian Bishop who wrote, from Greenland’s Icy Mountains. When he penned the words, Rolling down its golden sands, he did not know that there was as much golden sand in his Diocese as anywhere else in the world. The first Bishop of Australia, we have seen, was Bishop Broughton; he was Dean when Melbourne was founded, and was made Bishop the year after our foundation (1836), and as he took a place in what was formerly Heber’s Circuit, so Bishop Perry came to work in his field, and St. Paul’s arose, and Bishop Moorhouse, one of the orators of the Empire, came to this remote city.

(See Cuthbert Fetherstonhaugh’s second book After Many Years” for more on Broughton and Perry)

We find him in the eighties discoursing on the Book of Job, and Thomas Walker, a Secularist lecturer, replying to him before great audiences in the Opera House. The world has changed. St. Paul’s in early Melbourne was a small church, now it is a massive Cathedral. The Cathedral in Sydney, although representing a larger body of Anglicans, is a smaller edifice. Both the Church of England and the Roman Catholic Bishops call themselves Archbishops of Melbourne, and the public do the same; different parties magnify their own side. At the ceremony initiating the Commonwealth, Cardinal Moran deemed himself slighted because the Anglican Prelate took precedence over him, and he went and sat during the ceremony among a gathering of Roman Catholic children. It seems to me it is fair for the Anglican to come first, for both in Sydney and Melbourne the first services were Anglican. In Sydney the Anglican service was first read by a layman, and here by a Wesleyan minister, the Reverend Joseph Orton. The first minister to come to Australia was Richard Johnson. In Melbourne there has been a large amount of religious freedom. The spirit that set aside a Cemetery for all denominations in the age of the churchyard, was one which enfranchised Melbourne. That freedom we are fighting hard to keep. Our idea is that error has the same right to be expressed as truth, or otherwise we have not the opportunity of letting the world know that it is error. For thirty years and more I have fought to preserve a free platform in Melbourne. Archbishop Carr and Dr. Lawrence Rentoul discussed the question of Romanism versus Protestantism in the columns of the Melbourne Age and The Argus at such length that it has been republished, and constitutes a considerable volume.

The Jews do not exercise as much influence here as in some American cities. There are six thousand Jews in Melbourne. It is said there was a Jew in the Batman Association, but it is doubtful whether Solomon was a Jew. I have no recollection of a Jew’s name among the first purchasers of city land. An interesting story is told by Garryowen. In 1840, in a small shop in Collins Street, Mr. Hart suddenly dropped dead; Cashmore and Forsaker sat up to watch.

The house took fire, and Garryowen says, as they did not believe in cremation, they carried the body to the other side of the street, and put out the fire. There seems to me a discrepancy in date, for the first interment was Hart, but on the stone the date is 1843, unless this Hart happened to be a Gentile. I have heard some of them argue that they have, in a certain sense, suffered by emancipation. There is but little prejudice against them on our continent. I went along with other Gentiles to hear Dr. Abrahams at the Synagogue on Saturday, and the Gentiles here are probably as much shocked at the accusation of ritual murder in Russia as the Jews themselves.

We know many of them, they are in our Municipal and State Councils, and have full fellowship with us in the life of the city. A great Jew, Lieutenant-General Sir John Monash, led our forces at the front to victory. As I tell later on, he stood by us at Batman’s monument and challenged the morality of disturbing the dead and destroying our oldest memorial ground.

This was on Sunday afternoon, 25th January, 1920, and not long afterwards Lady Monash passed away; she died at his residence, Iona, in St. George’s Road, Toorak. She was the daughter of Mr. Maton Moss, of Melbourne. She left a beautiful daughter, a young woman, Miss Bertha Monash. She had been the General’s faithful helpmeet, sustaining as far as she could, the patriotic movements, and inspiring the work at home during all the strenuous years of the war. The Jew suffered as much from bereavement during the war as others in the community. General Monash said, in response
to an address from them It might interest them to know that here were 20,000 Jews in the Australian army, which showed that Australian Jews had played their part in the war. There was 1 lieutenant-general, 2 lieutenant-colonels, 24 majors, 50 captains, and 115 lieutenants. Over 100 had received honours, including a Victoria Cross, awarded to Lieutenant Keese. In 1921 Sergeant Issy Smith returned to Melbourne. He had been residing here as an Imperial reservist when the war broke out, and he enlisted in the first Australian Contingent, and was the first Jew to win the Victorian Cross. He had identified himself with Melbourne, and was on the staff of the Metropolitan Gas Company, and when the war came went to the camp at Broadmeadows.

The Jews, like other religious bodies, were endowed. Dr. Lang laughed at our early liberality. Although an advocate of general education, and an opponent of denominationalism in education, he thought that were the Malays and Chinese coolies to come, there would be a plea for justice to Mahomet and Vishna, as well as to Moses and Aaron. Certainly, if we had continued the endowment system, all or none. Mr. Alexander, the President of the Synagogue, was related to the Alexander whose wife was buried in the Old Cemetery. The Earl and Countess of Rosebery visited us in 1883. The Countess was Hannah Rothschild. Rosebery in early life had three wishes, First, that his horse might win the Derby; second, that he might be Prime Minister of England; and third, that he might marry the richest woman in the world. He was born on Friday, and contrary to the general idea, all his wishes were fulfilled. When he went to the altar with his Jewish bride, they said: It is Ivanhoe and Rebecca. Mr. Brodie told me that in Melbourne Rosebery accompanied his wife to the old Synagogue, and he also was present at the annual speech of the Scotch College, and visited many of the institutions of the city, such as the Public Library. The Reverend S. M. Solomon is the earliest appointed Jewish Minister alive in Victoria.

The Presbyterian Churches are as strongly rooted here as in the United States; their Ministry is everywhere to the front. Dr. Rentoul was Chaplain-General of the forces. They are the same now in education and religion as in the days of James Forbes, only there are now no longer three or four branches, but only one united Presbyterian Church, and Dr. Marshall, of the Scots’ Church, said a medical man, to me, could earn his money in any other of the learned professions. There is an idea that inferior men are now going into the Ministry. Congregationalists, Baptists, Disciples of Christ and Unitarians constitute a considerable minority, upholding congregational liberty and independence. The Congregational Church is especially noted for its scholarly and progressive Ministers. Many of them have accepted the doctrine of evolution; among them, Dr. Roseby in New South Wales. He first came out on the side of evolution in New Zealand, supporting Professor Hutton. I have a clear recollection of that controversy, and sat under Professor Hutton when he gave his University extension lectures on biology. Hutton came to the Melbourne University and did a great work for Australasian science, and is now among the dead pioneers. Roseby spent a short time at Ballarat, and then went to work in Sydney, and until his death recently was one of the oldest Congregational preachers in Australia, and held his advanced views in science until the last. He was a member of the Royal Astronomical Society. I can go back to the beginning of the Melbourne ministry of Dr. Bevan, a truly interesting speaker, and no one more widely versed in Australian literature.

The Methodist bodies, like the Presbyterian, have united; they had but one graveyard in the beginning and in the Old Cemetery. I cannot tell a Primitive Methodist from a Free Methodist, nor a Bible Christian from a Wesleyan. They have reformed themselves in our day into one Methodist communion; yet we can remember the chapels of the four denominations in Melbourne and their respective pleas. Henry Mason was in the front of this movement; he was then a Bible Christian minister.

One of the most conspicuous preachers in Melbourne was A. R. Edgar, he had a splendid voice, and at an open air meeting could be heard far and wide. His great work was the foundation of the Central Mission at Wesley Church, probably the most successful Mission created in Melbourne. He founded the Pleasant Sunday Afternoon when I was fighting Northern Melbourne at the first Federal Election. He gave me their platform on the Sunday afternoon before the election, to speak on The Anglo-American Alliance in the interests of universal peace. There was an immense audience, full of enthusiasm. Mr. Higgins, however, was returned, became a Judge, and was a Judge in the High
History of Melbourne - Revisited

Court, before whom all labour disputes were appealed, discussed and arbitrated. I have never been satisfied of the bonafideness of that election. However, to return to the Wesleyan Church. In 1888 that body built their Centennial Hall, in Sydney. This would show that they believed their church had been with us from the first.

Major Barker started the Salvation Army in Melbourne. Ballington Booth, who seceded from them and started the Volunteers in America, was with us for a season, and General Booth paid us more than one visit, speaking in the Town Hall and Exhibition Building.

The Mormons came to Melbourne in the seventies, but made no impression on the community. I can remember meeting Elder Batt in debate at that time in New Zealand, and one man of real intelligence who was led away and went to Salt Lake City. The trip, however, disillusioned him, and he returned to New Zealand a Freethinker. Elder Batt spoke in the Dunedin Freethought Association, and after his address came the discussion.

The Seventh Day Adventists have been more successful; their best work was done in the nineties. They published The Echo, which has since been replaced by another paper. They have a community at Warburton; and some really good work is turned out from their printing establishment. A debate between Dr. Hammond and Mr. Curtis was held in the nineties in the Athenaeum Hall, Curtis contending for the observance of the Saturday. Dr. Hammond unfortunately was an adventurer. Liberals in religion are disorganized here; probably everywhere; yet some of the best Australian minds have been latitudinarian, such as Justice Higginbotham, David Syme, Justice Williams, Alfred Deakin, and in the beginning Judge A’Beckett. Steps were taken to establish a Unitarian Church in December 1852. At that period, it will be remembered, the discovery of gold was transforming the social life of Melbourne, yet amid the interesting and exciting events of these times, ten Unitarians assembled and laid the foundation of the Unitarian movement.

In 1854, 358 of them appealed to the Government for State aid. They erected their first building on Eastern Hill, on land granted by the State, at a cost of £4400. Some very old colonists gave freely to this work. Alexander Wilson and his wife gave between them £310, Charles Heape £250, John Duerdin £100, Sir W. A’Beckett (Chief Justice) £50, William Nicholson, M.L.C., £20, Archibald Michie £10, Godfrey Howitt, M.D., gave £25 (originally he was a member of the Society of Friends), Joseph Watts £50, Doctor Motherwell, W. F. A. Rucker, Henry T. Hyslop, G. W. Selby and numerous others gave. A few Jews subscribed, such as Montefiore and Co. Henry Gyles Turner was not then a member, but in 1858 he was elected as one of the executive, so he came in very soon after foundation. When he died recently the Unitarians resolved to erect a memorial to him in the church. His sister at one time acted as minister.

The first minister was the Reverend Maxwell Davidson, and the first secretary Thomas Cubitt Balmain. The congregation resolved that their minister should not have less than £400, and they succeeded in paying £500, but they have not kept this up. Their first minister was not allowed by law to solemnize marriages; they secured that right later. In the anti-slavery times in America it used to be said that eloquence was dog cheap in the Unitarian Church; it cannot be said so here, for their progress has been nil, owing to the mediocrity of their preachers. Mr. Walters was probably their best. For a quarter of a century he has been preaching in Sydney, but he occupied the Melbourne church for a time, and it was during his ministry that the present building was erected.

He married a Victorian girl. He is well-known as the author of the drama, Joseph in Canaan, which ran for a season in Australia, and was put on the stage in London. He has been the most successful Unitarian minister in Australia, and still continues his work in Sydney.

The Graves Commission in England, after the war, recommended the erection of a Mohammedan Mosque and a Hindu Temple in France to commemorate the valour of the Hindus in that great fight. We have a number of them here, but they have never built a place of worship as the Chinese have done.

The Unitarian cause in Melbourne was strengthened by the secession of Dr. Charles Strong from the Presbyterian Church in 883. He preceded Dr. Marshall in Scots’s Church, but having given expression
to some liberal views in religion, he was challenged to state whether he believed in the deity of Jesus, the doctrine of the Atonement, and the Resurrection of Jesus. His avoidance of a direct answer led to a rupture, and he tendered his resignation and left for Scotland, but returned and built the large edifice that he preached in Flinders Street. Liberals from all parts gathered around him. He would not take the name Unitarian, but called his church the Australian Church, and declared that it was Catholic and Free. He has been a pillar in the temple of social reform in Melbourne, but has marred his work by challenging the grandest feature in our Commonwealth Secular Education. I heard him publicly say that he believed that the claim of the Roman Catholics to State aid for their schools is a just claim.

Some time ago our Government started a gun factory at Lithgow, New South Wales. What would we think if the Government came down with a proposal to give bonuses, subsidies, and endowments to factories of Europe whose avowed object was the destruction of our gun factory. Yet this is what the Roman Catholics are asking us to do in regard to education. We are trying to establish an educational system State-owned, which will be the most efficient in the world from the Primary School to the University. In the University we have given the Roman Catholics the same privilege as other denominations; they have been welcomed to erect a beautiful college in the University grounds; now as they have equal privileges they should do as the other denominations and renounce their primary schools in favour of State education.

Secondary education is largely given up to the churches. The Scotch College is a magnificent school, with a history that would require a volume. On 5th March, 1920, in the presence of the Lieutenant-Governor, Sir William Irvine, the foundation stone of a new college at Kooyong was laid by General Sir John Monash. After a career of sixty years, it found that the best memorial it could erect to the Scotch Collegians who fell at the front was this building. General Monash said that 1200 from the college had enlisted, and 188 had died for their country.

The Church of England and Wesleyan Schools on St. Kilda Road are referred to elsewhere, and St. Xavier’s College is at Kew. The Church of England Grammar School was opened in April 1858, under Dr. Bromby; it had been preceded by the Scotch College, which started in 1851 with Dr. Morrison as principal. St. Patrick’s Diocesan College was started in the same year.

Secondary education has been left very much to the denominations, but we have aimed to make the primary schools secular. If we were to endow the opposing schools with public money, we turn our own State Schools into charitable schools, and the great purpose of national free and compulsory education is defeated. Our ideal is free school from the primary to the University.

The State took us up when we were ignorant, and when the schoolmaster was starved, and educated us and gave a good income to the teacher, and this is one of the glorious triumphs of the nineteenth century, in which Melbourne has shared. Our children have their Arbor Day, a day to think about trees; their Bird Day, a day to think about birds; their Discovery Day, a day to think of our explorers; and their Empire Day, a day to think on Government. With their school magazine and a children’s branch of the Public Lending Library yet to be established, they will come out of school ready for a full citizenship.

The Churches of Christ arose in Prahran, in January 1853, where they first met in a tent; they have now nearly forty churches in and around Melbourne. There has been an effort to form the Baptists and the Disciples into one united body, but one of the leading features of the Disciples of Christ is bible names for bible things, and they cannot consent to give up their name; other matters might be arranged if the Baptists could be induced to accept their name, and leave many practices to their congregations to settle for themselves. H. G. Picton was the founder of the movement; he and James Service (afterwards Premier) preached in the open air in Prahran. The second church was that now in Lygon Street. It was founded in 1854, and met in the Mechanics Institute. Their forward movement commenced with H. S. Earll, an American Evangelist, in 1864. The church in Swanston Street commenced in 1865, and they bought John Knox Forbes old church about the year 1882. One of their most eloquent preachers was M. W. Green, He came a young man from England and developed on Australian soil, and was therefore properly an Australian preacher. He founded the North
Melbourne church. He was a controversialist, and conducted several successful debates with leading Freethinkers. One of their most scholarly men was J. E. Laing, M.A., an inspector in our State Schools, who took an active part in church work. Two of his daughters took degrees at the University. The American Statist said, to me years ago, that the progress of this church in America was the religious phenomenon of the Republic. During the time of Charles Bradlaugh in England, and Robert Ingersoll in America, a wave of secularism swept through the Australasian colonies. The Lyceum Hall was built in Dunedin, New Zealand, the Hall of Science secured on Bourke Street, Melbourne, and the Freethought Hall in Campbell Street, Sydney, and another one in Newcastle; now they are all gone. Freethought lecturers were attacking Christianity in all our chief cities, and drawing large audiences. When I was a Freethought lecturer I met many of these men John Tyerman, Charles Bright, Joseph Symes, W. W. Coffins, Thomas Walker, Wallace Nelson, Dr. York, and others; all of them, unless it was Wallace Nelson, came to Melbourne. I know how strenuously they laboured, and how utterly they failed to build up an abiding organization. Still it remains a phenomenon in our history. They used the large theatres on Sunday, and during the week conducted debates on religious topics. Minor lights fought the matter out on the Domain in Sydney, and on the Queen’s Wharf in Melbourne on a Sunday afternoon. But the movement failed to crystallize into a permanent work. Sir Henry Parkes gave it the death blow in Sydney, by forbidding the lessees and proprietors of theatres to let them for anti-Christian lectures under pain of forfeiture of their licenses. This embargo did not then apply to Sunday concerts, and so the public accepted it and gradually the Freethought lecturer disappeared, and with the fall of Sydney gradually came the dissolution of the movement. Freethinkers finding a home in the Unitarian or Australian Church, or in the ranks of Spiritualism; but back of all these movements were the old Eclectic Institute, and the free Discussion Society. Henry Keylock Rusden started the Institute in 1807, and the Discussion Club in 1870. He was a brother of George William Rusden, the Historian. He was the son of a Minister, and yet became a pronounced Atheist. I not only met Rusden in the Institute, but also Dr. McInerney, and in the Free Discussion Society Trenwith. Rusden advocated the painless extinction of the habitual criminal, and sent his views to Charles Darwin. Darwin wrote a guarded reply. Trenwith was the practical founder of the Political Labour Party, but in the Free Discussion Club he dealt, when I heard him, only with theological subjects. I don’t think the churches suffered by these movements; they rationalized their preaching, and thus exalted and quickened the work of the church. The churches suffer today from indifference. Through free thought a kindly fellowship sprung up, which destroyed the acrid bigotry and intolerance of the preceding age. Moreover, as Voltaire and Rousseau preceded the French Revolution so this movement turned the minds of the working class towards the Socialistic institutions of to-day. And in its current came the Spiritualistic Movement, which has remained. In Saturday’s Age there are twenty gatherings of Spiritualists advertised, and The Harbinger of Light, published in Melbourne, is an established paper that dates back to 1880.

We can remember Emma Harding Britain; she impressed me as the greatest woman orator that ever visited Australia. I find that the Daily Mail Annual says (1914) that Mrs. Besant is one of the most eloquent orators alive. We have heard both Mrs. Britain and Mrs. Besant, they were both in Melbourne; they are very different. For oratorical effect on the multitude I should say Mrs. Britain was the greater orator, although I am doubtful whether she was as widely read and informed as Mrs. Besant.

The greatest Spiritualistic lecturer who ever visited us was Professor Denton. He followed Richard Anthony Proctor, the Astronomer, in Dunedin. I heard both, and on one Sunday in the Children’s Lyceum spoke to Robert Stout concerning them. He said that he held that Denton was the greater science lecturer. Denton would open in a town with a course on geology and biology, and then close with a lecture or two on spiritualism, and the people, captivated by his science lectures, would attend these on Spiritualism. Lady Stout was a Spiritualist, although Sir Robert was, and is, an Agnostic. He visited Melbourne in 1883 and again in 1921.

A remarkable Spiritualist in Melbourne was T. W. Stanford. He was born in Albury, New York, in 1832, and in 1860 at the age of 28 he came here. His brother, with two others, built the Southern
Pacific Railway, the first railway to connect the Eastern States with California. Stanford heard that we were not using kerosene lamps here; he therefore shipped a large consignment of lamps and oil to Melbourne, and opening up in this business made money. Then he secured the exclusive rights for Singer’s sewing machine in Australia; this made him a very rich man.

His shop in the sixties was at the corner of Russell and Bourke Streets, the site on which White’s boot shop now stands. He died 28th August, 1918. He lived to be a very old man, and dwelt in a beautiful house in Clarendon Street, East Melbourne. He moved about Melbourne up to the last. The day before he died was at his office. For some years he was the American Consul in Melbourne. He remained an American, and could not be persuaded to be naturalized, and when he died left a large sum of money to endow a Chair of Psychology in the Stanford University, the University founded by his brother in California. The Harbinger of Light was founded by H. Terry, and for many years Stanford subsidised it. He was a liberal giver to the cause of Spiritualism.

The Theosophists have two or three good lodges in Melbourne, and their quasi Orientalism has helped to foster an interest in comparative religion. The esoteric Buddhism and Vedantism sends folks to the Public Library to read these massive volumes, the sacred books of the East, translated for us by Max Muller and the scholars of England. The Reverend Snodgrass, an Anglican Minister, belonging to one of our old families, lectured at one of their lodges on the Theosophy of Clement of Alexandria. Perhaps their best venture has been securing and furnishing the Queen’s Hall in Collins Street.

The Australian Sunday is a day of rest, of quiet and intellectual recreation. The concert hall and the picture theatre have been opened at times, but most of the municipalities have closed them and nowhere are the shops opened on Sunday. London is a quiet city on Sunday, yet you will find there the open market in some suburbs. But Melbourne has given one day in seven to the Ministry of the Spirit. The Art Gallery and the Museum are opened, but they are means to spiritual growth. The Liberals realize as much as the Sabbatarian the need of this periodical rest.

Whittier a Liberal, eulogised the Sunday in New England, America, and in Melbourne a walk across the Fitzroy Gardens on a Sunday morning is a silent preparation for church and service to God. A morning in the Botanical Gardens, where every important plant is classified, and the name of the order, genera and species is given, is a service and an outing. As also are the hot afternoons at the watering places, which we sketch in "Circumspice."

The hotels are closed, but the soft-drink shops are open. Fresh fruit and light drinks in such a climate is not only a recreation but a necessity.

Religious and anti-religious services were held in this market. Mr. James Service, in his early days, applied to the Council for the right to conduct meetings in it.

We have successfully fought and overcome in Melbourne the publishing of a Sunday paper. The printer has his day’s rest at the end of the week, and we try on Sunday to get through our Saturday’s paper.

The history of temperance initiated at the beginning is sketched elsewhere. America banished the barmaid from the saloon, but gives nearly every other occupation to women as a substitute. The barmaids in the Melbourne public houses are most attractive, gracefully attired, often bright and handsome women, who recognise that their business is to lure men to the public house. Thus is our womanhood being destroyed. Fortunately they have no longer to remain long and late hours behind the bar, and during the war the public house was closed at six o’clock. And this practice has continued. The Australian is naturally a philanthropist. True, we cannot point to men like Carnegie and Rockefeller, who have given millions to education and charity, but we have our munificent givers like Wilson, Ormond, and David Syme. And what is better, the whole city gives. We have our Hospital Saturday and Sunday at the end of October, when everyone contributes, rich and poor, in proportion to their means to the medical charities. This movement commenced in 1870. Our magnificent hospital in the city cannot be surpassed as a hospital. My work as a Christian Minister took me into the most of our hospitals. I found all the physicians in the city interested in them; they
would often send their private patients to them to undergo an operation, preferring a hospital with all the up-to-date appliances to their own laboratory. I believe I was the first to advocate the Nationalisation of medicine, which I did at the Churches of Christ Conference in 1894. It is now the policy of the Australian Natives Association. (A.N.A.) I have always believed that our Maternity Bonus should have been associated with Maternity Hospitals. It seems to be debauching a people to give them money out of State coffers to encourage procreation. We pay for services of brain or hand, therefore if more is required, as I believe more is, it should be met by the Nationalisation of health. Health and holiness are derived from the same old Anglo-Saxon word. State doctors and nurses are as essential as the State schoolmaster. We have a vast hospital system, two lunatic asylums, doctors in our prisons, in our navy and army, doctors for coroners inquests, medical professors in the University; thus already the doctor in part is a State servant. Recently we have had an unpleasant dispute about Divine Healing. The Hickson Mission was not the first in Melbourne; Alexander Dowie put that view before us in the nineties, and built a large tabernacle in Fitzroy, and recently the Christian Scientists have built a large church on St. Kilda Road, but we see God's influence in the scientific treatment of disease, and Melbourne has been in the fore in the movement for the socialization of medicine. Her friendly societies have kept the community whole. Surely a Board of Health is a religious institution. It overlooks every building in the city. A theatre cannot be opened until it has passed the Board of Health. We build quarantine stations, and the doctor often accompanies the pilot on board the incoming vessel to safeguard the community against infection; this is Christian fellowship. We insist on vaccination to save our brethren from small pox. In India we have Leper Hospitals, and here the Leper Mission that sustains them. One of the chief functions of Government, we recognize, is to know the diseases that are likely to be prevalent in the community whether the white disease among men, the scab among sheep, the codlin moth in the apple, or phylloxera in the vine. The new order demands that the life of every citizen be considered sacred; that he be safeguarded alike from disease and violence. Jesus believed in means to cure disease; he makes the Good Samaritan pour wine into the wounds of the injured man to cleanse them, and oil to cure them, and he puts him in an inn, which was the nearest hospital In that spirit Melbourne has approached the problem of disease and created a great Hospital Saturday and Sunday. Alexander Dowie and Milner Stephen come and go, but science abides forever.

As a Christian Minister I have visited the prison, and knew the condemned man. I have been through Pentridge goal in Coburg, a suburb of Melbourne, and contrasting it with San Quentin, in California, claim that it is a superior prison. Lonsdale, sending his reports to New South Wales, tells of the primitive hut which was the first prison in Melbourne. He put some aborigines in it, and on 25th of April, 1838, they burned the place down and escaped; one of them was recaptured and told his captors that when they saw through the crevices that the guard in the next apartment was snoozing they passed a long reed over the partition by the rafters and lighted it at his candle, then they drew it back and fired the prison. Now we have a secure lock-up, a City Gaol, and the Penitentiary at Coburg, which has had a precarious existence, and men have found a way out as they did out of the old hut. But were we all true to the ideal there would not be any men and women in prison. Prisoners, however, have as much to fear from the ill-informed reformer as from the most barbarous jailor. Take, for instance, the indeterminate sentence. Nothing more calculated to send a prisoner insane was ever invented. A prisoner wants to know when his time is up. He works for, and looks forward to the day of his liberation; but under the indeterminate sentence he never knows when he is to be liberated. It is better to sentence for a given time, and if he be a good prisoner release him on parole before he has served his complete sentence. The indeterminate sentence is in vogue here, and the Honourable Samuel Mauger has identified himself with a number of social reforms. The Anti-Sweating movement was commenced by him; he called the first meeting and enlisted the services of Mr. H. H. Champion, Dr. Bevan, J. W. Bilson, C. H. Irvin, W. J. ??? ormer, Dr. Strong, Dr. Torrance, Professor Gosman, Mrs. Goldstein (mother of Vida Goldstein) and others. They called the Town Hall meeting of 13th April, 1896. The movement had then been in existence nearly twelve months. Mauger has identified himself with prison reform, but his greatest work has been as President of the Victorian Temperance Alliance, succeeding such men as the Reverend
Alexander, Presbyterian Minister, J. W. Hunt, J.P., and the Honourable James Munro. That movement came into existence in the year of the Melbourne Exhibition, 1880, when a conference of temperance workers had gathered to see the Exhibition. At that time the Melbourne Total Abstinence Society was 38 years old, and eight years before they had opened the present Temperance Hall, in Russell Street, 28th March, 1872. One old temperance worker many of us remember was J. G. Burtt; he commenced the open air work in 1852. The Rechabites established their first tent in Melbourne 1847. Benevolent Asylums, Homes for Destitute Old Men and Cripples, the Blind Asylum and other institutions call for some general scheme of provision for the poor, the sick and the maimed, as well as the aged, who are so well provided for by the Old Age Pension.

Look on Batman, Fawkner and Henty and you find benevolence in all of them. Hospitality and mutual help was a distinctive feature of the beginning, and while we have few, if any, millionaires, the community itself has tried to do rightly by its unfortunate or weaker members. J. J. Shillinglaw was known as the sailors friend, because in 1853 he and Lieut. Pascoe brought before Latrobe the need of a Sailors Home, and from that time on he took a deep interest in the welfare of the sailor.

I close my chapter on the Origin and Development of the Spiritual Life of Melbourne not as perhaps I ought to do, by reflections on the occult influences in the religious circles of the city (that I leave for others), but by contrast between the beginning of church life here and in other Australian cities. The first clergyman in Australia was the Reverend Richard Johnson. He preached in the open air, for religion was not encouraged in the early Settlement of Sydney.

As late as 1793 there were no religious edifices in Australia, the first being erected by Richard Johnson, a wattle and plaster building with a thatched roof; this first temple in Australia was raised by voluntary contribution. In addition to planting the Gospel here, Mr. Johnson planted oranges, and grew rich from his orange groves. He returned to Britain in 1798, but before he left, Samuel Marsden had arrived. Marsden, too, combined farming with preaching; he resided at Parramatta. When he went there it was covered with forest land, and before they buried him in St. John’s Churchyard it was a bounteous settlement. The story of his introducing Christianity into New Zealand shows how completely he was moved by the Missionary Spirit, but that comes comparatively late in the history of early Sydney. Long before that, the Reverend Robert Knopwood had accompanied the expedition to Sorrento, Port Phillip, and had joined with Collins in founding Hobart Town. Thus Tasmania started life with a regularly ordained Anglican Minister. Knopwood died in 1838. Other places were not so well ministered to. Of the deaths at New Norfolk, writes an early chronicler, all except two are attributed to accident or drunkenness. The Missionaries who fled from Tahiti did a good work in early Australia. They founded the first Bible Society in Australia. The first Roman Catholic Priest was Father Harold, a transported Irish priest. The Reverend Mr. Fulton, a Protestant Clergyman, was also transported, and ministered to the convicts on Norfolk Island. Launceston did not have a resident clergyman until 1824. Men in the country districts in these days forgot the days of the week, and often did not know when Sunday came, and the convict life of these other cities contrast with that of Melbourne. It is said that the first indication in these convict settlements, that the foundations of an Empire were laid was in the children. They often exhibited contempt for vices and crimes of their parents, and swam the swollen rivers to go to school. Children, perfect in form and open in countenance, would walk beside parents maimed and hardened by crime. Melbourne never had such an experience, certainly the emancipated convict came here and escaped convicts secretly entered the city, like the body snatchers, described by Garryowen, who came from New South Wales in the early days and were captured and sent back, although that is hard to believe in thought of recent events. The Old Cemetery reflected the religious and civil liberty with which we were dowered from the commencement, and which it is our duty to uphold:
History of Melbourne - Revisited

I will my Father here adore
   In Spirit and in Truth,
And call on men to know Him more,
   In Spirit and in Truth.
Symbol on Capt. William Milne’s Tombstone.
   (Old Cemetery.)
CHAPTER 7
THE SCIENCE AND CULTURE OF MELBOURNE

The age that we write of was one in which the Doctrine of Evolution was not accepted, in which it had not yet been clearly propounded; yet the human mind had commenced to travel along that road. The nineteenth century, even before it gave birth to the Doctrine of Evolution, was the age of Science. Captain Cook as the forerunner of that age, and was the servant of science. Darwin’s journal of his voyage around the world is the natural sequence to Cook’s Voyages. Cook bears a singular relationship to the changing world. He came in the Age of Revolution, which preceded that of Evolution.

Christopher Columbus went seeking a new way to India and found America. The search is never in vain. Science, if it fails in its objective, is nevertheless victorious, for enquiry brings the truth in part as we advance. Europe awoke with Christopher Columbus. Soon the world was circumnavigated, and at the same time came the invention of printing. Erasmus revives the study of the Classics, and Luther reforms Religion. The discoveries of Columbus reacted on all our life. The Renaissance, the Reformation and the Revolution pass in natural succession. And Cook’s discoveries in like manner go with the growth of Democracy in Europe and America. He is an admirer of Franklin. Franklin reciprocates, and their mutual love of science blesses the world and prepares it for the greater gospel of evolution. The first Australian animal known to European scientists was the Gray Cuscus, a tree-climbing marsupial, brought to notice in a book published in Leyden in 1611. Sir Joseph Banks and Dr. Solander have written the preface to Australia’s Study of Science. All who have come afterwards have built on their work. The men of letters and science in early Melbourne did so, and belonged to that age of enquiry that preceded Darwin. The English explorers differed from the Dutch. Holland was in these seas a hundred years before us, but the Government of that country had no interest in science. They were bent on material gain, and hence only a few Dutch maps, badly made, and a few Dutch words survive.

Our story commences with the Sorrento Settlement, but we must look back just a year to the survey of the port. As Cook and Banks were associated so were Flinders and Brown. Men of science were put on board with them, and directed that while botanizing they were to secure new plants for the Royal Gardens, at Kew, England. Robert Brown came and did as comprehensive a work as Flinders himself. He had with him Ferdinand Bauer, the natural history painter, and William Westall, the great landscape artist, who, it is said, was the first man to paint Australian animals amid Australian scenery, and the first man to sketch the Heads of Port Phillip and the southern coast line of Victoria. He men of science with Flinders thought alike on stars and flowers. The astronomer was John Crossley. Flinders science took in the winds, the ocean currents, the shelter for ships where there were no harbours, and every other thing essential to life on the continent. His vessel was The Investigator; that investigation that gives truth, and truth is essential to life. The men of the beginning seemed to be philanthropic. One Cape is called Cape Wilberforce; it reminds us of the emancipation of the slave. Flinders thought that the anti-slavery man needed a big heart. Whether Flinders was fully on the side of liberty I cannot tell, but Tuckey, who came after him to the Sorrento Settlement, undoubtedly was.

Flinders, it will be remembered, was wrecked on a reef off the coast of Australia on his return journey to England, and the rare plants intended for the Kew Gardens were destroyed.

A large part of the Botanical collection, however, was in Sydney. Brown had not accompanied him. He had remained behind to perfect his study of Australian Botany, and in his Appendix to Flinders’ book is his Bird’s eye view of the Flora of Australia. He accepts the name Australia for the continent and islands, but when speaking especially of continental botany, for instance, in contrast to that of Van Diemen’s Land, he uses the old name, New Holland, in order that botanists may understand him. When he found that Flinders, owing to his imprisonment, did not return to Australia, he went to England, arriving there in October 1805. In preparing his study, he had access to Banks collection, and became Banks Librarian. He even examined the plants brought from Sharks Bay by Dampier, also some of
Baudin’s specimens. He says that the Australian plants then known to him were 2900 dicotyledons, 800 monocotyledons, and 400 acotyledons. Simple spikes, he thought, prevailed among our flowers. The cryptogams were few in number compared with other parts of the world, although he knew here a hundred different kinds of (Felices). He did not find a single specie of moss in the Gulf of Carpentaria, phonograms predominated. On the whole, he found Australian plants belonging to 120 orders, out of a possible 145 orders. I cannot pass these orders in succession before the reader. He found a hundred species of eucalyptus, and said that the native inhabitants had proper names for many of them, suggested by their colour, texture and scaling of the bark. The eucalyptus formed four-fifths of the forest, and he only knew of one species outside of this country. He only knew of two arborescent ferns, one at Port Jackson and one in Van Diemen’s Land. He gives a good study of the wattle, and said the two genera most widely distributed were the eucalyptus and the acacia. That is the gum and the wattle. Theepacrideaeis also a feature of our vegetation, and also the honeysuckles, the proteaceous; there are four hundred species of these known, half of which were in Australia. He speculated on the relationship of our vegetation to that of South America, New Zealand and South Africa, and thus prepared the world for Darwin’s work on the geographical distribution of plants. He saw the sandalwood in the north, and Flinders claimed that they had discovered a new fruit there; but it has never been of any particular use to us. The Eugenia. He saw the palms and pines in the East, and studied five hundred species of plants in King George’s Sound in the West; and when at Port Phillip he would see the she-oaks and the fire-oaks, with their horse-tail like foliage and symmetrical forms; he thought that nearly half the Australian plants were between the parallels of 33 and 35, therefore to him Victoria had less variety than New South Wales. But Flinders gives no record of his botanizing here; perhaps later science can put us in a little better light before the world of science.

This man would stay out all night in a bush never visited by any other man. He and Bongaree, the aboriginal, would go botanizing together, and making friends with the natives, or on hazardous boating excursions with Flinders. Let us remember Robert Brown, for he was the first great scientist in Port Phillip, and with Flinders he circumnavigated Australia, but not returning with him to England, he was saved from imprisonment in Mauritius, and comes undoubtedly into the history of the foundation of settlement on the southern part of the continent.

He went to Van Diemen’s Land before Collins founded Hobart, and after doing his work there ran across the Straits to the Sorrento Settlement, and returned with Collins to Van Diemen’s Land. He spent four years in Australia, and then went back to England to work with Banks.

Banks considered that the distinguishing feature of Australian botany was the absence of the cocoanut tree. When The Endeavour was in the Endeavour River (Cook Town), Banks completed the great botanical study he had commenced at Botany Bay, and he saw the cocoanuts washed up on the shore with the barnacles on them, and reasoned that they had come from the New Hebrides, and marvelled that Australia was without these trees. He was the first to make a correct study of the kangaroo. Lieutenant Gore, who was with Cook, was the first to shoot the kangaroo, and while others had seen it, Banks got it into his possession, and when we see the pictures of it and other objects in the pictures in Cook’s Voyages, we are prone to doubt the statement that William Westall was the first to paint our animals amid Australian scenery. However, Westall’s picture of Kangaroo Island has led to that belief. Banks made a very complete study of individual specimens, but it was left to Brown to take a comprehensive view and to place the botany of Australia on an exact scientific basis, and we are glad to be able to record that he was in Port Phillip.

In our first settlement at Sorrento there were at least four men of letters. Collins, who wrote a history of Australia, which was completed just before he entered on his voyage to Port Phillip; Knopwood, who kept a journal; William Pascoe Crook, whose journal and letters are also extant; and James Tuckey, who was first-lieutenant of The Calcutta. Australia seems to have been related to India. When she was first settled, Reginald Heber, who wrote from Greenland’s Icy Mountains, was Bishop of India, and he included Australia in his diocese, and the vessel that carries the first settlers to Port Phillip is The Calcutta, taken from the India trade. The Reverend Robert Knopwood
History of Melbourne - Revisited

says that the old name of this Man of War was the Worley Castle.

Let us turn to Tuckey’s story of her voyage, and the settlement at Sorrento. He knew that Murray had discovered Port Phillip, and that Bass and Flinders had been through the Straits, and he pays a tribute to their services to science. His book is a most readable work on travel, written alike in the religious and scientific spirit. When the vessel goes to Teneriffe, he observes that in burying the dead they bury them in the church, and put lime in their coffins, covering the corpse with it, and leaving the lid open. Soon all the flesh is destroyed by the lime, and only the bones remain. This, he argues, should be done in all countries, to prevent infection. This is akin to the scientific doctrine of cremation (which the Australian Natives Association has affirmed) and which he seems to indorse in 1803.

He believed what we never came to, that Government vessels were the best vessels for immigration; that it should be the work of the navy that it kept their men employed in times of peace, and that it saved the lives of the passengers, through its cleanliness and good food. He saw the passengers and the convicts being killed in private-owned vessels, because they were exploited for profit by mercenary men, whereas in the navy the men shipped for a number of years without regard to where they went, and got their rewards only by the performance of their duty. They only thought of making the vessel fit to live in. In spite of their care six went overboard; some of these had come on board diseased with consumption, and looked to the long voyage curing them. They stopped at Teneriffe, Cape Verde Islands, Rio Janeiro, and then beat about to the Cape of Good Hope, and then secured a fair run to Port Phillip, arriving there after a voyage of five months. Tuckey gives a description of the port, the expanse of water unruffled as the bosom of unpolluted innocence. He describes the rocks around, and the search for water, and the pioneer difficulties. The sinking of these casks for water, since discovered in the district, and which, like our tombstones, are a souvenir of the past. He will not describe the climate, lest his short stay may lead him to misrepresent it. After many seasons others hesitated. However, the morning he arrived the weather was beautifully serene. He meets the Aboriginals and gives a description of them, and in the spirit of science describes our Victorian animals and plants. He observed one hundred and fifty beautiful kinds of moths, noted the luxuriance of the grass, and turning to the sea, thought that the number of sharks in port produced a scarcity of fish. His book, I take it, is the earliest contribution to our literature, and in it he advocated the abolition of negro slavery. We commence with a plea for liberty.

We turn from the first settlement to the last. To say that with the founding of Melbourne, Port Phillip is still in that same condition, and is related to the spiritual development of the world. There is a why for every immigrant which is reflected in our early literature. Melbourne as well as Boston had its ideals at the commencement, and I think I can see them through the fifty or more literary men who were buried in the Old Cemetery. These ideals and the influence of the broad ocean, the long voyage, the mountain breeze, the primitive man, the marsupial life, and the naked forest, are in the literature of the original settlement.

We no longer believe that Australia is a land where the flowers are without perfume, and the birds without song. Dr. Leichhardt, found the forest full of perfume, and Dr. Leach thinks that we have more song birds than any other country in the world, and the beauty and perfume of the flower and the song of the bird has passed into our literature with the story of the deeds of our first settlers. Our fiction and poetry is essentially pioneer. Marcus Clarke dealt with pioneer convict life, and Gordon gave us horsey poems and bush ballads, while Kendal put into his verse the rhythm of the trees and the melody of the mountains.

The first literary work done on the site of Melbourne was Grimes report of his survey of the district, in January and February 1803. One of the earliest pieces of literature that has come down to us is Batman’s Journal. Batman was a man of literary tastes. Here is a quotation, 29th May, Friday, 1835: “This morning as soon as daylight appeared saw the Heads at Port Phillip, about eight miles off. With a fair wind we got between the Heads about nine o’clock a.m., the tide running and nearly low water. A very heavy surf running at the entrance. The wind was light, and with some difficulty we got in; width about one mile and a quarter, the depth five and a half to seven fathoms of water. We got
well into the port about ten o’clock, where the water is very smooth, and one of the finest basins of water I ever saw, and most extensive.”

Saturday, 6th June, 1835: We started this morning at 8 a.m. to find the natives. We travelled over as good a country as I have yet met with, and if possible richer land, thinly timbered; the grass was mostly three or four feet high, and as thick as it could be on the ground; the land quite native. We walked about eight miles, when we fell in with the tracks of the natives, and shortly after came up with a family, one chief, his wife and three children. I gave him a pair of blankets, handkerchiefs, beads and three knives. He then went on with us, and crossed a fresh water creek. The land on each side excellent. He took us on, saying he would take us to the tribe, and mentioned the names of chiefs. We walked about eight miles, when to our great surprise we heard several voices calling after us. On looking back we saw eight men, all armed with spears. From these eight Batman acquired Melbourne. He called them chiefs; that is the European way of talking of them; they were members of the tribe, the office of chief did not exist among them. Batman, it will be seen, had literary tastes, and when he looks on his new estates he thinks of the words ascribed to Alexander Selkirk by Cowper:

I am monarch of all I survey,
My right there is none to dispute,
From the centre all round to the sea,
I am lord of the fowl and the brute.

Fawkner started the first newspaper, The Advertiser; it was a manuscript paper, and the printing press did not come in until the tenth number. Our first literary efforts take us back to the childhood of man and the age of the scribe, but yet withal Fawkner was not a literary man, and his first paper, being unauthorized by the Government, was suppressed. Over the leader to Number 10, 5th March, 1838, I find the words: “We aim to lead, not to drive.”

Fawkner also started The Geelong Advertiser, which is still in existence. The history of Geelong and Melbourne run together. Captain Pollock, in the Francis Freeling was the first to make his way to Corio Bay, but Batman was within a cooee of it. The name Pollock, whether belonging to this family or not we do not know, was on our stones. It was in 1840 that Fawkner first published The Geelong Advertiser, and away back in that time there was a Cemetery in Geelong, and in 1841 an appeal was made in the Advertiser to put a fence around it. The writer, in pleading for it, said: “At harbours along the coast, which are visited principally by half savage whaling parties, there are well enclosed and neatly tended graveyards to be met with, and the most remote and sequestered corners of the earth, where even the comforts of living are treated with indifference, where ruin may have long held sway, the sanctity of the tomb has long been honoured. Thus the whalers who lived in Victoria before Batman or Henty, who never built a house, tended a graveyard, and remembered their heroic associates, kept their graves, while we dig up the fathers of one of the wonder cities of the world, and our first papers stand to rebuke us.

Arden edited our first paper, The Gazette, which came out in 1838; that is, if you do not accept Fawkner’s manuscript as a paper. Arden and Strode received authority from N.S.W. to publish; Arden was then only a youth, and with the enthusiasm of youth put over his paper the words: “To assist the enquiring, to animate the struggling, and to sympathise with all.”

When years after, Kerr started The Argus, he put over its leader the words of John Knox: “I am in the place where I am demanded of conscience to speak the truth, and the truth I speak. impugn it whoso list.” (Dispute the validity of a statement) All this indicated the mind of early Melbourne. The pioneers came here to secure personal freedom; they wanted to escape from the environment of the convict and his keeper, which existed in Van Diemen’s Land, and their love of freedom and their desire for sincere fellowship passed into their literature. Fawkner is buried in the Melbourne General Cemetery.

Arden died by the wayside on the diggings, and William Kerr was buried in our Old Cemetery. George Arden wrote the first book published in Melbourne; it came out in 1840, and its theme was the Port Phillip Settlement. He was succeeded on The Gazette by Thomas McCombie, in 1848.
McCombie buried his little daughter, in Australia, in the Old Cemetery, and later an infant son.

_The Gazette_ is an historic name; the first paper in Great Britain was _The Gazette_, and the first paper in Sydney bears the same name; it lends itself to journalism. McCombie was essentially a man of literary tastes, and there appeared a column in his paper called the _Literary Gazette_, in which current literature from all parts of the Empire was reviewed. His paper reviewed the Vestiges of Creation, when it came out. Then he had a column or two on local news, The Domestic Gazette. His shipping and commercial news were under the heading, _The Shipping and Commercial Gazette_, and is leader when on political topics was called _The Political Gazette_. He was undoubtedly a moral influence in the life of early Melbourne. _The Gazette_ passed into _The Times_. When William Kerr became associated with McCombie, they held that while the name Gazette was applicable to Port Phillip, yet the Times was a better name for the leading paper in Victoria. It was short-lived. Kerr became Town Clerk, and the paper amalgamated with the _Daily News_, and the _Daily News_ amalgamated with _The Argus_, which has continued down to our own time. In 1855 it had a daily circulation of 13,000.

William Kerr, its founder, was the real founder of our literature by virtue of the volume and character of his work. He came here in 1839 with George Cavenagh, as Editor of _The Herald_. The columns of that paper during 1840 and the beginning of 1841 show Kerr's merits as an editor. During that period he also brought out the _Melbourne Directory_, which for that age is a considerable work, and the following year he brought out another volume, The Almanac and Directory. In 1841 he became Editor of _The Port Phillip Patriot_ and _The Advertiser_, and continued on its staff until 1845. He started _The Courier_, which only lasted a few months. He seems also to have been associated with a paper called _The Alirion_. He commenced _The Argus_ in 1846, and the words of John Knox which he placed over the leader are still there. But the policy of the paper has changed since that time.

In Kerr's day it was democratic, now it is regarded as the conservative paper. Edward Wilson purchased it from Kerr in 1847-1848. Kerr was associated with every good movement. When an Alderman in the Town Council he threw his influence on the side of Reform. He firmly stood forward and opposed the wealthy pastoralists in their intention to make Port Phillip a penal settlement. He went for separation long before Edward Curr; and when it came he advocated Vote by Ballot. Our method of ballot then introduced, has been endorsed by the whole democratic world. He was a Freemason, and Orangeman, and a temperance man. When Edward Curr moved at a public meeting a motion: "That in the absence of ordinary means of obtaining free immigration, the introduction of a number of the class of men from Pentonville denominated exiles would be beneficial to the country," Kerr enthusiastically and forcibly negated it, and saved the country from that humiliation. He was therefore the founder of that democratic movement or definite social sentiment which preceded unionism, and he uttered the first great cry for social justice. I think, therefore, that he was a great intellectual and moral influence in the beginning. Some scurrility crept into his writings, for he was a virile man, and a fighter, and in these days you had to fight in the press, and even sometimes on the streets. Kerr carried a club about with him for personal protection. But he was more than a controversialist, and broke out into song, and was probably our first poet. Like most reformers he failed to grow rich, and had but a very simple grave in the Old Cemetery, one stone in an 5 ft. by 4 ft. raised grave, in which the red geraniums bloomed. He was a generous man; helped others and became financially involved himself. He it was who proposed in the City Council the propriety of a New Cemetery, a proposition which led to the creation of the Melbourne General Cemetery. When _The Melbourne Argus_ was sold through Kerr's financial misfortunes, in 1848. Edward Wilson bought it.

He came from England to Melbourne in 1842, and took up a cattle station, near Dandenong. He had written letters for the press, criticising the Latrobe administration, and this revealed to him his capabilities as a journalist. He was a Liberal, and joined heartily in the anti-transportation movement, and when Hotham came, denounced his treatment of the miners. He aimed to develop Victoria, and was the founder of the Acclimatisation Society.
When he accumulated money he went to live in England, and was one of the founders of the Colonial Institute. He died in Kent on 10th January, 1878, leaving, as David Syme did afterwards, a large sum of money as an annuity to the charities. In the 84th half-yearly disbursement £4000 was distributed among 150 charities.

of *The Australasian* in the sixties and the *Argus* in the seventies, and one of our greatest journalists. I The Town Clerk who preceded Kerr, J. C. King, became the manager on his return from England of *The Argus*. The paper that Kerr founded went under the name of the *Melbourne Argus*, but Wilson altered it to *The Argus*. King’s daughter seems to have married Frederick William Haddon who was Editor only infer that King’s daughter married him from the inscription on John Charles King’s tombstone, where we read the words: Annio Jane Haddon, daughter of the above (John Charles King), and wife of Frederick William Haddon. She died in 1877, and he buried her in the Old Cemetery beside her father. Haddon, like other cultured men, was brought out from England by *The Argus*; Edward Gowen Evans was another. Edward Wilson found Evans writing for *The Spectator*, and he arranged for him to come to Melbourne. He arrived in 1867. *The Argus* has sought to preserve literary character by having good men on its staff. James Smith wrote for it in the fifties. Smith was one of our most eminent journalists; he, too, was a literary man before coming to Australia. We can remember his speaking and writing on kinds of topics. He came to New Zealand and spoke on Spiritualism, and then in Melbourne we hear him on Thackeray. When Federation comes he is brilliantly at work, writing on the foundation of the colony. He was one of the originators of the *Melbourne Punch* and was its second Editor. He was also Editor of *The Evening Mail*, an evening paper that came out in Melbourne, but did not last. He wrote drama and discoursed on art, and justly finds a place in the history of Victorian literature. The name Smith is a common name, but it has been made illustrious in Melbourne by John Thomas Smith, Statesman; Dr. L. L. Smith, physician; Captain William Howard Smith, shipowner; Robert Murray Smith, Agent-General for Victoria; George Paton Smith, editor of the Leader; William Jardine Smith, writer for *The Argus*; and James Smith, the lecturer and litterateur. Henry Gullet, a brainy journalist of great merit, succeeded Smith as editor of *The Australasian*. Arthur Lloyd Windsor was another of the distinguished men the Argus brought out from England. He edited at different times both *The Argus* and *The Age* Wilson had for his partner James Stewart Johnston, whom we refer to elsewhere. He came from Scotland, landing in Tasmania in 1838, and passing over to Melbourne in 1840. He as Wilson’s partner in the cattle station, near Dandenong, and being an educated man joined him in his literary enterprise. He sold his share in *The Argus* to Mr. Gill, and Mr. Gill sold it to Mr. Lauchlan Mackinnon. The present Sir Lauchlan Mackinnon is his cousin. Lauchlan Mackinnon came out in 1838, and was one of the first to bring sheep and cattle overland to Port Phillip. He arrived in Melbourne in 1840. He, like Edward Wilson, died in England at Malpas Lodge, Torquay, on 21st March, 1888. *The Argus* of 23rd March, 1888, says: He took up a run for himself on the Loddon, and subsequently removed to Mount Fyans, but Sir Lauchlan Mackinnon writes to me in response to a request for information that he did not take up land in the Loddon district. How his land ventures went it matters not; in 1848 he was elected by the Belfast and Warrnambool district for the New South Wales Legislature, and was one of those who opposed the election of men like Earl Grey. In 1852 he enters into partnership with Edward Wilson in the proprietorship of *The Argus*. He was one of the members of the original Council of the University. He was twice married, first to the sister of James Montgomery, solicitor, and then to Emily Bundoch, daughter of Captain Bundoch, Royal Navy His cousin, Sir Lauchlan, retired in 1919 from the management of *The Argus*; he had gone into its service in 1870, and became general manager in 1881. Sixty-three members of the staff enlisted for service in the Great War. Pioneer, (see Robert Savage, Journalist and Inventor was Editor of the Rural section for many years.)

When Sir Lauchlan Mackinnon retired in 1919 from the management of *The Argus* he had been associated with that paper and *The Australasian* for fifty years. When he started with it, it was sold
for threepence a copy, and contained ordinarily from eight to ten pages, and on Saturdays sixteen pages; now it has from twelve to twenty-four pages daily, and from twenty-four to thirty-four pages on Saturday. The war made a difference in both The Age and The Argus. They first increased the price of their Saturday’s paper to two pence, and then increased their daily issue to three-halfpence. One-fifth of the staff of The Argus enlisted for the war, and eight were killed.

Let us turn, by way of relief, from distinctly literary men to some early men of science. It seems to me that Dr. Edmund Charles Hobson was the founder of Natural Science in Victoria. He sent the platypus (Ornithorhynchus Paradoxus) and other forms of the Australian fauna home to Professor. Richard Owen, and Owen, in dealing with Australian mammals, gave Hobson credit for the important work he did. He not only sent home the living forms, but also fossil forms, and by original research enabled Owen to perfect his work. It will be seen that he died eleven years before Charles Darwin published his Origin of Species. Reverend Waterfield tells us that he had an Anatomical Museum. He was a nephew of Captain Hobson, after whom Hobson’s Bay is named, and who was the first Governor of New Zealand. Dr. Hobson was one of the foremost in organizing the Melbourne Hospital movement, and was appointed chief of the staff, but died before entering into office. He died on the 4th of March, 1848, at Bona-vista, South Yarra, after a few days illness. His monument, erected by public subscription, is a tomb of Gothic beauty, and was one of the most striking works of art in the Old Cemetery. On a tablet is this inscription:- This monument, in memory of Edmund Hobson, M.D., born at Parramatta, August 1814, died at Melbourne on the 4th of March, 1848, has been erected by public subscription in honour of a distinguished fellow colonist, whose pre-eminence in his profession, and whose skill and attention were never solicited by the poor or distressed in vain. He united with rare medical and other attainments dispositions and virtues which endeared him as a man and a Christian to his friends. He died universally regretted in the 34th year of his age. He had no sooner passed away than a movement was set on foot to erect a memorial to him, and a local poet sung his praises. Here are a few lines from his verses:-

\[
\text{Genius was stamped on that clear brow,}
\]
\[
\text{Soul dwelt in these dark eyes,}
\]
\[
\text{which shone through dim their lustre now}
\]
\[
\text{With human sympathies,}
\]
\[
\text{The quick, the comprehensive mind}
\]
\[
\text{Which glanced from Pole to Pole,}
\]
\[
\text{Now views creation unconfined,}
\]
\[
\text{Surveys the wondrous whole.}
\]
\[
\text{Now all is gone but memory to}
\]
\[
\text{Mark where once he stood,}
\]
\[
\text{And when to him we heave a sigh,}
\]
\[
\text{Like him, let us do good.}
\]

The papers thought he was born in Tasmania, because there he did his earlier work. He founded with others the Tasmanian Society, and this is a quotation from their minutes of 8th November, 1848: Mr. Ronald A. C. Gunn announced to the Society the lamented death, at the early age of 34, of Edmund Charles Hobson, M.D., which event took place at his villa near Melbourne, Port Phillip, on 4th March inst., after an illness of four days. Dr. E. C. Hobson was a native of Tasmania (should have been Parramatta), studied for some years under Dr. James Scott, R.N., Colonial-Surgeon at Hobart Town, from whom he acquired much and varied information, and then visited England to complete his studies, where he obtained the regard and esteem of Professor’s Owen and Grant and other eminent men in London. After visiting Paris and various parts of France and Germany he returned to Van Diemen’s Land in 1838, when he commenced practice as a general practitioner in Hobart Town. In 1839 Dr. Hobson, in association with two or three gentlemen of congenial tastes, and under the auspices of his Excellency Sir John Franklin, our then estimable Governor, founded the Tasmanian Society for the advancement of natural science in Australia, which Society still flourishes and publishes the Tasmanian Journal. I abbreviate the remaining portion of the minute. He found that
the climate of Van Diemen’s Land did not agree with him, so he came to Melbourne in 1840. A paper of his on the Calorifacaces Australis appeared in the first number of the *Tasmanian Journal*, and subsequently several other articles came from his pen. He was familiar with comparative anatomy, geology and botany. The minute closes: As one of the founders of the Tasmanian Society, and one of its most able and zealous members and supporters, his memory will be long and fondly cherished by all who pursue science in Australia. The tomb has the name of M. Hahn, its maker, on it.

Both Batman and Hobson were born in Parramatta, and did their early work in Van Diemen’s Land. Either Batman, Kerr or Hobson are entitled to an enduring monument in the heart of our city, and these three graves alone were sufficient reason for the preservation of the ground.

Daniel Bunce, a botanist, was one of our earliest arrivals; he advertised in the first number of the *Geelong Advertiser*, 21st November, 1841, and at that time took an interest in the domestication of our native flora, a project which has only found full fruition in our own day in the labours of Mr. Pescott in the Horticultural School at Burnley. I do not know where Bunce is buried.

We have already referred to Strzelecki, the Polish Scientist, who represented himself as the discoverer of Gippsland, but who followed in the footsteps of Angus McMillan. McMillan was a Scotchman, who arrived in Sydney in 1830. He became an overseer on Macallister’s Station, in the Maneroo district in New South Wales, and as early as June 1839 he visited Gippsland. He called the country Caledonia Australis, but Strzelecki’s name of Gippsland superseded it. McMillan died in May 1865. His son recently had a house in South Yarra.

Our chief science society is the Royal Society of Victoria, which dates back to 1854. In this year the Victorian Institute for the Advancement of Science and the Philosophical Society of Victoria were founded. They amalgamated in the following year, and became The Philosophical Institute of Victoria. This, in 1860, became the Royal Society. While it started out to foster science, art and literature, it has become almost exclusively a science society, and others have been formed for the encouragement of art and literature. It has a hall of its own, and a large science library. The first volume of its publications dates from 1855, and up to 1922 it had issued 67 volumes of its proceedings. The visiting day at the Observatory is Wednesday. This institution had grown up under three directors, Messrs’ Ellery, Barrachi, and Baldwin. In 1925 the astronomical day will be the same as the solar day, and an effort will be made to initiate the movement for universal time.

This may be a mistake; it is questionable whether it will be right or natural to have the same time in Europe that we have here, but the numbering of the hours up to twenty-four will prevent all confusion between morning and evening. Our first observers were in the Old Cemetery; they made their observations on Burial Hill with Buckland’s telescope. Robert L. J. Ellery only came to Melbourne in 1851. He had been brought up to the medical profession, and early in life showed his love of astronomy. Governor Latrobe entrusted him with the charge of the Observatory at Williamstown, for the purpose of providing security against maritime disaster. There is an economic side to all science. He continued his labours there until 1858, then he took up other work, but returned again to his post in 1863, when the Observatory was moved to its present position. Ellery was assisted by Neumayer, Barrachi by Baldwin, and Baldwin by Merfield.

There is a large reflector telescope at the Observatory, which when it was introduced here was one of the largest in the world. If Melbourne wishes to see her sons excel in science she should liberally endow the Observatory. We ought to have a telescope equal to the Lick Telescope.

The two oldest institutions in Melbourne, Garryowen says, are the Melbourne Club and the Mechanics Institute. Several literary men in the Old Cemetery were identified with the Mechanics Institute, among them Dr. P. Cussen, James Forbes, and Edward Sewell. Both Forbes and Sewell gave lectures in the first course. These lectures, Garryowen says, were the first lectures in Melbourne. This is incorrect, lectures were given by Forbes and Grylls on Temperance much earlier; still the Mechanics Institute was the foundation of literary and scientific association in Melbourne. It passed into the Athenæum in a direct line, but indirectly found expression and development in our Public Library. Edward Sewell was a lawyer of merit and a contemporary of Judge Willis, and was one of the
few who seemed to get on with him. He was the friend of Redmond Barry when Barry was beginning his career; and if Barry deserves a monument in front of the Public Library, Sewell deserved to have his memorial preserved in the Old Cemetery, for a maker of the Mechanics Institute was a builder of the Public Library. This was the beginning of popular education in Melbourne.

Forbes lectured on Colonisation, and Sewell on Heat. Like Hobson, Sewell died early, and we can only regret that we did not have him at his best, but he did enough to rank himself among our early men of letters. There was an earlier society than the Mechanics’ The Union Mutual Benefit Society, which commenced on 4th February, 1839, and merged into the Mechanics, which originated on 12th November, 1839. On 13th August, 1840, the present site was bought at a Government sale; the land then ran back to Little Collins Street, and embraced that on which the Coffee Palace now stands. The first building was erected in 1843. In 1872 the present building was erected, with the exception of the facade, which was built in 1885, and the image of Minerva or Athena placed above it.

The lay founders of Religion, J. J. Peers, James Oliphant Denny, Dr. Farquhar McCrae, Lewis Hart, and Edwin Gill, were in a sense literary men. Benjamin Franklin, a printer, was the founder of American literature. William Kerr, Junior, a bookseller in Melbourne, issued a Port Phillip Magazine in 1843, at 3 shillings a copy. It did not last long, and magazine literature until recently had a precarious time. In 1847 The Australasian came out. It was a monthly, but it only had two issues. The Illustrated Australian, printed by an old printer, Samuel Goode, and owned by Thomas Jabez and Theophilus Ham, was a good magazine, but only ran a little over a year.

In a young community, literature is seldom a profession, and, like religion, it commences with the lay worker. The men of religion, however, have favoured letters. Andrew Lang argues that literature commenced in Scotland with Christianity. In Melbourne we had the Reverend James Forbes, starting The Port Phillip Christian Herald in 1846, and running it until 1851. The Roman Catholics had a short-lived organ, which was more secular than sacred, in 1841. The Weekly Press, edited by Dr. Greeves and Adam Murray, Bishop Perry and the Reverend Daniel Newham started the Church of England Messenger in 1850, and in the same year the Reverend A. M. Ramsay brought out the Melbourne Presbyterian, and published a booklet, The Voice of the Storm.

Our medical men and members of the law spoke, taught and wrote for the press. Sir William A’Beckett, the First Chief Justice of Victoria, was a literary man. He became a Judge of our Supreme Court in 1846, and was made Chief Justice of Victoria in 1851. He wrote, under the pen name Colonus an article suggesting that the effects of the discovery of gold was morally an injury rather than a blessing to the country. He wrote volumes of biography, and several good poems, and edited the Magistrates’ Manual for the Colony of Victoria. The story of the A’Beckett family is in itself a chapter in the History of Melbourne’s literature. There was Thomas A’Beckett, Wilham Arthur Callender A’Beckett, who married the heiress of John Mills, and Thomas Turner A’Beckett, and they all in some way contributed to the culture of the city. Many of the succeeding Judges, Higginbotham, Williams, and others, have helped to develop our literature.

In the Old Cemetery were many medical men, and lawyers of merit, who had contributed to the general education of the public, Dr. P. Cussen, Dr. Farquhar McCrae, Dr. J. Patterson, and Dr. Watton, all of whom fostered literature. Lawyers, like David Chambers, enriched our minds. Nearly the whole of the Stephen family were given to literature. The young man buried in the Old Cemetery belonged to the branch of the family which had gone to New Zealand; another branch was in New South Wales, and another here; they distinguished themselves in three colonies. Of this family was Milner Stephen, who created such an interest as a Faith Healer or Mind Healer. The banker was often a literary man. James Moore, M.A., was a great lover of books. Among pastoralists we read Edward Micklethwaite Curr, the eldest son of Edward Curr. He wrote a standard work on the Aboriginals. One is disappointed in reading his recollections of squatting in Victoria to find so little about his father in it. He died on 3rd August, 1889. The first schoolmaster aided in the development of our literature by giving Hoddle the native names for places. George Langhorne taught the Aboriginals English, and our men the native tongue. He was a nephew of Lonsdale; although he did not agree with him, Lonsdale
thought it would be a good thing to have a body of Native police, and chose De Villiers to organize them. De Villiers had lived among them, and could speak their language, and Lonsdale believed that he could so enlist a number of the Aborigines in the police force, that they would enable him to bring the murderers of the whites to justice. Soon a rivalry arose between the Mission and the police. One evening Lonsdale heard that the perpetrators of a certain outrage were outside of Melbourne. He resolved to go out and get them. George Langhorne had gone among them, and when Lonsdale arrived he wanted Langhorne to pass him a rope to tie up one of the men he had secured. Langhorne refused, so Lonsdale reported him to the New South Wales authorities, and whether this was the cause or not, yet not long after George Langhorne went back to New South Wales, while his brothers remained and were buried in due course in the Old Cemetery.

He was assisted by the inimitable John Thomas Smith. The attendance at the Aboriginal School reached 28 the first year; it was an effort to save the Aborigines through their children, but dwindled down until it was discontinued in 1839. Miss Newcome was our first school teacher among the whites. She came with Batman's family in 1836 to act as governess. She seems to have gone to Geelong for a time. Mr. Howard tells us that she married a Mr. Cook, and opened our first boarding school, Roxburgh Cottage, which stood in Flinders Street, on a block now occupied by the Princes Bridge Hotel. Her advertisement appears in the Gazette of 1838.

One of our earliest schoolmasters was William Penny. At the time that he kept school, Thomas Halfpenny kept a public House, and Penny occasionally got drunk at Halfpenny's hotel. It was a common joke that while Penny and Halfpenny were in Melbourne, Melbourne would never want for coppers. His school was in a one-roomed edifice in Little Flinders Street. Penny died in 1840. He sleeps in an unknown grave in the Old Cemetery. Halfpenny hung on for many long years, and we read on his tombstone that he died in 1894, at the age of 89.

Mack Cormack is reported by Garryowen to have been another of the same class; a literary man and a winebibber. He was found suffocated in a gully at the corner of Elizabeth and Lonsdale Streets, where he had fallen down while intoxicated. James Clarke opened a school in connection with the Church of England in 1840, and received Government aid. In a short time his school so grew in numbers that he obtained an assistant, Mr. Abbott. The Reverend J. C. Grylls gave tuition to pupils. In November 1838, Robert Campbell opened a Presbyterian School. He taught in a building on the site where Scots Church now stands. Twelve months after opening, John McClure was appointed assistant. Mr. John Macgregor, a surveyor, in 1839 opened a school not far from where Kirk's Bazaar now stands, and Robert Campbell, retiring from Scots School, united his forces with Macgregor, and together they established their school in Little Collins Street. General Howard and Captain Brown, father of Thomas Browne (Rolf Boldrewood,) in 1840 induced David Boyd, M.A., of Trinity College, Dublin, then second headmaster of Sydney College, to come and open a school in Melbourne. He started in a building in the west end of Little Lonsdale Street; the fees were high, and only boys whose fathers were well off attended. Boyd entered the ministry, and the school was given up. In 1844 the Port Phillip Academical Institution was opened; Garryowen has fully described this. its aim was to give classical, scientific and commercial education; the headmaster was William Brickwood. He, like Boyd, became a clergyman. He was an Oxford man, and is described by Mr. Howard as an accomplished teacher. The school was conducted in Napier's Rooms in Collins Street, but was afterwards removed to a building in Little Flinders Street, owned by Dr. Wilmot. J. H. Craig was on Brickwood's staff, but in 1842 he removed to a building in Queen Street, erected by David Boyd on a piece of ground Boyd had purchased from Howard's father. Boyd was succeeded in the same building by George Groves, a schoolmaster; we hear a great deal about him from the Old Colonists. Howard says he was a man of high attainments, that he took a deep interest in scientific matters, and published weather tables, which were looked forward to by the public with interest and confidence. In forwarding them to the press in 1874 he gave an explanation of the system on which he based his calculations. It was widely thought that he would have been the first official head of the Victorian Observatory. Groves had been a sea captain, and taught navigation. In front of his academy was the picture of a full-rigged ship. A Mr. Champion was Mr. Groves' assistant. Several of the men in the Old Cemetery went...
History of Melbourne - Revisited

to that school. The people who came to our gatherings talked about it. These schools prove the literary tastes of the pioneers, and their desire to build up an educated community. Groves died in 1878.

On the 11th of April, 1849, Richard Hale Budd, of St. John's College, Cambridge, opened the Diocesan Grammar School on Eastern Hill. I have referred to this gentleman elsewhere. His daughter took a deep interest in preserving the Cemetery. He resigned his connection with the Grammar School in 1854, and became an Inspector under the Denominational Board. In 1862 he was Inspector-General, an office he held until 1872, when he retired. In 1874 he opened a classical school for girls in Russell Street, conducted on the principles of the English public schools. Mr. Howard, by whom I am chiefly guided in regard to our early schools, says it was the first of its kind in Victoria.

We must remember that the Presbyterian School system developed under the fostering care of the Reverend James Forbes. In the Old Cemetery are buried some of our early Roman Catholic teachers. There are three Lynch graves. Kerr's Directory gives the name of Thomas Lynch as a well-known schoolmaster, and John and Mary Lynch are mentioned elsewhere as teachers at St. Francis School. There was an infant school in Melbourne in 1844. Our complex system of Physical Training Display of State School Girls at the Melbourne Cricket Ground education thus commenced to arise. It was not all denominational, as we can see in the efforts of J. D. Lyon Campbell, Arthur Kemmis and others to found a Port Phillip College. In the fifties the University came to crown the work. The first literary society was the Debating Society of 1841. Here James Forbes was again an interested worker, so, too, was John Jones Peers. In reading the record of our Old Cemetery, it must be remembered that we only know a minority of the thousands buried there. We have only read there one chapter out of ten, but I question whether you can find a larger chapter in the History of Melbourne anywhere else. Albert Mattingley founded the North Melbourne School in 1858, which was continued as a State School there after the State system was introduced. Probably several private schools have passed into the hands of the State. One of our greatest scholars and educators was Charles Henry Pearson, M.A., LL.D. He was educated in England, and a lecturer on Modern History at Cambridge.

He emigrated to South Australia in 1872, but removed to Victoria, and was appointed Lecturer in History at the Melbourne University in 1874. Later he entered Parliament, and was Minister of Public Instruction in the Duncan Gillies Ministry, and in that position worked to place a school teacher in every locality where eight children could be found to regularly attend school. He was also a writer of merit, contributing articles to The Age and The Leader.

Australia was in the vanguard in two great social movements, the Eight Hour System and Popular Education. Without education the eight hour system would have been a failure. With increased leisure must come moral and intellectual culture, or the time will be misapplied. The reform came naturally. The Education Bill, granting Free, Compulsory and Secular Education was passed in 1873. State, Primary, Secondary and University Education is now thoroughly established. Some of the illustrations in this book are from the Children's Paper a unique production, until recently found in very few countries. C. R. Long initiated the movement here. He knew John Hartley, of South Australia, the originator of the movement, who brought out there in 1888. The Children’s Hour, which was the first children’s paper circulated among State School children in Australia. Mr. Long proposed the matter to Peacock, and he was commissioned to bring out a paper, the first number of which appeared in February 1896. In San Francisco there is a Public Lending Library for children; we have not this here, although it would be an easy matter to have children's books in our Public Lending Library, and arrange hours where children might change them. We have a Children's Museum attached to our National Museum. I never saw a Children's Paper in the hands of a State School child in America.

Melbourne has the advantage over any cities in her complete system of technical schools. The Working Men’s College was endowed by a rich Australian. On his monument beside the college are the words:- Francis Ormond, Public Benefactor, died 5th May, 1889. He died in France, and left £10,000 to the college. When he founded it six years before he gave £5000 to it. He not only endowed the Working
Men’s College, but also built a Hall in connection with the Melbourne University. As in America, so in Australia, rich men have given liberally to education.

Democracy is built upon the educated mind. It is reason asserting our right to life, liberty and happiness. The brutish mind cannot do this, therefore we plead for free education from the primary school to the University. That has not yet come. A University does not exist to train a class, but to develop faculty in the community. It is a centre of light from which knowledge radiates through the community, and our University Professors have periodically given exhaustive courses of University extension lectures.

Latrobe was a literary man, and recommended the creation of the University in 1852, and in 1853 the Act was passed in Council granting forty acres for that purpose. It seems that the authorities first thought of East Melbourne for a site for a University, for it is reported in the minutes of the City Council for 20th June, 1852, that the Colonial Secretary had written to the Council apprising them that application had been made for twenty acres for the University in East Melbourne. This apparently fell through, and land was secured in Carlton. The University grew, and joined its hands with the Public Library and daily newspaper in educating the community. At different periods men from the University have lectured in the Public Library on themes that can be studied there, and thus made us familiar with the means of instruction hidden there. Professors like the late Professor Morris, who gave us an Australian English Dictionary and the biography of Judge Higginbotham, have written valuable books that are socialising knowledge. The University is for both sexes. Miss Bella Guerin was the first lady to graduate; that was in the early eighties. She married a Mr. Halloran, and later, when a widow, became the wife of Mr. Lavender. She died a year or two ago in Adelaide. Her unique work as a public speaker during her comparatively short life is not easily forgotten.

The first to have conferred on them the degree of B.A. were Messrs’ J.C. Cole, J. M. MacFarland, and G. H. Greene, in 1858. Two years later Cole and MacFarland were made M.A.S, and the first to receive that degree. In 1867 the degree of M.B. was conferred on W. C. Rees and Patrick Maloney. The first degrees of LL.B. were conferred on Robert John Madden, T. Smith and A. Gilchrist, in 1865. John Madden was the first Doctor of Laws, 1869, and W. C. Rees the first M.D., 1872. Justice Barry was the first Chancellor of the University. Professor Baldwin Spencer was the first Professor of Biology. Mr. Greig induced the authorities at the University to put up this memorial on their first building: The Foundation Stone of the University of Melbourne was laid by Sir Charles Hotham, Lieutenant-Governor of Victoria, on 3rd of July, 1854, and this building was formally opened by him on the 3rd of October, 1855. For a young city we have truly great newspapers The Argus, The Age, The Herald, and the newly-born Sun. The Herald commenced in 1840, the Age 1846, and The Age 1854, the first number of which was printed on 17th October, 1854. John and Henry Cooke originated this paper, and the writers were Ebenezer Syme, David Blair, T. C. Bright, and James Smith. The Cooke’s surrendered it to a Co-operative Association, which held it until 1856, when Ebenezer Syme bought it. It was born in the age of Sir Charles Hotham, and the Eureka Stockade, and represented the radicalism of that period. David Syme came from the diggings with a small fortune, and bought into it. Since then to 1908 David Syme was The Age. For fifty years he influenced the life of Melbourne. He was born on 2nd October, 1827, at North Berwick, in Scotland. His father was a schoolmaster, with a small salary, and yet contrived to give three of his sons a University training. David was not one of the three; he was the youngest, and the father educated him himself. An austere man, who never gave a word of commendation to his son. Different indeed was David. For example, “When a man comes to him and says, I am about to be married, and would like an advance on my wages of a hundred pounds, Syme goes on writing, and the man repeats his request. Syme looks up, and says No! but take this, and he hands him a cheque for a hundred pounds, as a gift to his bride, and asks the man to tell no one about it.” He did not find fortune until middle age. In the early fifties he was in California, and almost destitute. In 1852 he left California for Melbourne, and four years later is connected with The Age, which was then published in William Street, near to where the Mint now is, in the old Exhibition Building. He had a profound love for the working classes, and devoted his paper to their elevation.
His biographer calls him the Father of Protection. *The Argus* has been the organ of Free Trade; *The Age* the consistent advocate of Protection. *The Age* has taken up Conscription, yet I could not conceive of David Syme doing so. Papers change. *The Argus*, under Kerr, was radical, to-day it is conservative. On the staff of *The Age* I remember Charles Bright. For years as a youth I sat under him and listened to his Freethought lectures in Dunedin. Later, in his chair in *The Age* office, was Benjamin Hoare, a Roman Catholic. Bright was a Jew. Both men were great students of Australian literature. Syme lived for a time at South Yarra, and had a country residence, but just before his death he was living at Kew. He grew very wealthy; invested in mines and all kinds of farming. At one of his farms he milked three hundred dairy cows a day. Pratt has written his life and the story of the development of his paper. Mr. F. H. Schuyler was editor of the paper at his death. Among the many who have written for it were Marcus Clarke and Alfred Deakin.

One of its great cases was Speight versus *The Age*. Speight managed our railways, and David Syme said mismanaged them. Speight proceeded against *The Age*, and one of the greatest court cases in our history came before us; one that threatened the very existence of the paper. Many of us deeply sympathized with *The Age*, because we believed in State Socialism, and that the criticism of the management of public utilities by our daily papers was essential to their successful management. *The Age*, after a second trial, came out victorious. The influence of *The Age*, I believe, as Mr. Deakin said, was without precedent among papers. That was seen very distinctly at our first Federal election, when nearly all the nominees of *The Age* were returned. David Syme was without a title. He is only David Syme. He died in his 81st year, 14th February, 1908, and was buried in the Kew Cemetery. One of the noblest tombs, a granite colonnade, has been erected over his grave. I said to the architect, Walter Butler, that it should have been put up in the Old Cemetery, that the maker of the great popular paper would have slept beside William Kerr, the founder of our literature, and the father of the rival paper, *The Argus*. Mr. Butler said that the Syme family had ground in the Old Cemetery, and I said that if we saved it, we would appeal to David Syme’s family to allow his bones to be placed in the historic ground.

*The Age* has something like this appearing every half-year: Nineteenth Half-yearly Allocation. The trustees of the David Syme Charitable Trust have made the following allocation of the amount available for the past half-year: Young Men’s Christian Association Red Triangle Appeal, £100; Melbourne Hospital, £100; Alfred Hospital, £100; Austin Hospital, £75; Women’s Hospital, £75; St. Vincent’s Hospital, £50; Children’s Hospital, £40; Eye and Ear Hospital, £25; Foundling Hospital, £25; Talbot Colony for Epileptic Children, £50; Victorian Bush Nursing Association, £50; Baby Clinics Appeal, £50; Men’s Convalescent Home, £25; Women’s Convalescent Home, £25; City Newsboys Society, £25; Melbourne District Nursing Society, £25; Victorian Association of Creches, £25; Free Kindergarten Union of Victoria, £25; Victorian Civil Ambulance Association, £20.

While we are thus well furnished with daily papers, we are indebted to England and America for our magazines. Good magazines have been started in Melbourne but never attained a permanent place in our literature; perhaps this is due to the fact that our great newspapers bring out a weekly journal. *The Argus* publishes *The Australasian*, the first copy of which appeared on 1st October, 1864. *The Age* the *Leader*, and the *Herald Weekly Times*. *The Leader* was first published about the end of 1855.

The week after Fawkner died the *Daily Telegraph* published the first issue 11th September, 1809. David Syme, from 1879 to 1890, brought out *The Illustrated Australian News*. This was a splendidly-illustrated paper. Henry Mortimer Franklyn originated the short-lived *Victorian Review*. He also edited the *Federal Australian*. George Levey was called the founder of cheap journalism in Australia. He controlled *The Herald* in the sixties, and brought it out as a penny paper. James Thomson joined the *Melbourne Telegraph* in 1874, and started the *Evening Standard* in 1889. He also founded *The Sporting Standard*. Howard Willoughby for some years edited the *Melbourne Daily Telegraph* already alluded to. The office of that paper was in Collins Street, near to *The Argus* office. For some time Fitchett edited the Australian edition of *The Review of Reviews*, which was brought out in Melbourne, and has been superseded by Stead’s magazine. Fitchett now brings out *Life*, which is a
success; the exception, however, only proves the rule. Several good American magazines, like *The Sunset*, are published by railway companies.

Our railways being owned by the State have only brought out time tables and literature that apply directly to the railways. Recently, however, they have transformed their magazine, and it is now a picturesque monthly.

The first newspapers in Australia were the *Sydney Gazette* and *New South Wales Advertiser*, a copy of which is to be seen in our Public Library. We copied New South Wales in many things. Both Van Diemen’s Land and Port Phillip sought suggestion there. Hence our early papers were called Advertisers and Gazettes.

Recently the picture paper has come. *The Morning Sun* started on a Monday morning, the 11th September, 1922, and the *Evening Sun* commenced on Wednesday evening, 4th April, 1923. It had been preceded by the *Sun* in Sydney, and a weekly paper, *The Midnight Sun*, had been run here for some time.

As each suburb received Municipal Government, it seemed to secure a newspaper. *The Emerald Hill Weekly News* and *South Melbourne Advertiser* commenced on the 20th of April, 1857. It was published by one of our pioneer printing firms, Mason and Firth, who had places of business both in the city and on Emerald Hill. In the same year the *Collingwood and Richmond Observer* came into existence; and almost contemporaneously with it the *Prahran and St. Kilda Advertiser*. These old papers enable us to see the suburbs as they were in the fifties. They were the pioneers of the many suburban papers of to-day.

We have not produced any eminent writers, unless it be Marcus Clarke, and his reputation is confined to one book. Some think it is due to the fact that we never had the leisure. Our life has been a struggle to obtain material prosperity. Once when I was in England I visited Cheltenham, where Adam Lindsay Gordon had spent his boyhood. It was inhabited by people in easy circumstances, a place to which officers of the British Army retired. From that spot to the Australian farm was a complete transition, and Gordon would find it hard to understand the new life. He had a fair amount of success, compared with a man like Robert Burns. He sat in the South Australian Parliament for a term, and more than once had money in his hand, and yet while a young man, dispirited and broken-hearted, he shoots himself, and his remains are buried in the Brighton Cemetery. We contrast him with a man like David Syme or William Kerr, and rather choose one of these as our ideal. J. Howlett Ross inaugurated the pilgrimage to his grave in June 1892, when he laid on the grave a wreath of English wild flowers gathered by Mrs. Jane Lees from the fields over which she and Gordon were in the habit of riding together. On Ross’s leaving England she asked him to take the wreath with him as her memorial to Gordon. His admirers are now raising money to build to his memory a monument. While the City Council was removing the graves of our first poets, Gordon’s old friends and admirers were trying to build this monument to him in the city. It is said that in Pere-la-Chaise, in Paris, every recognized great Frenchman is remembered, whether he be buried there or not, and Longfellow and Shakespeare are remembered in Westminster Abbey; yet Longfellow’s remains lie in his American grave and the bones of Shakespeare are at Stratford.

Our Old Cemetery would have been the Westminster of our city, and would have been a fitting place for that monument to Gordon. There he would have been remembered with the men who moulded the thought and formed the habits of early Melbourne. His wife, Mrs. Adam Lindsay Gordon, died on 29th November, 1919, at Bordertown, South Australia, at the age of 73. She had married again a Mr. Peter Low. A few months before her death some enthusiasts resolved to exhume the body of Annie Lindsay Gordon, which was buried 51 years before in the Old Cemetery, in Ballarat, and reinter it beside the remains of her father in the Brighton Cemetery.

Mr. and Mrs. Low came from South Australia to be present at the reinterment. She left a family by her second husband of seven children. Now, when the Gordon Memorial Committee have sufficient money they will erect a monument on St. Kilda Road, representing Gordon on horseback. As we look at this representation of him, we will think of his famous leap at Mount Gambier, and his victories.
on the racecourse. Neither Gordon nor Kendall were properly Melbourne men; they spent only three years in our city. Both men drank, but Gordon never got drunk like Kendall and lay out all night as he is said to have done in Collingwood. Gordon was a sportsman, a steeplechaser, and a hunter. It was not his poetry that put him in Parliament in South Australia, but the respect he had won as a noble horseman and a good citizen. Twice fortune smiled on him. First he received a legacy, £7000, this he loses; and then he receives another £4000, and comes to Victoria, and at Ballarat enters into business as a keeper of a livery stable. He was relying on getting a third legacy, but was disappointed. This probably contributed to bring about that condition of mind that put him in a suicide’s grave at 37. Kendall has been called the first of Australian singers. But Gordon was born before him, in 1833. Kendall came into the world in 1841. But what is probably meant by calling him Australia’s first singer’s that he was an Australian native who sang. Gordon had written verses before he came to Australia. He wrote a good poem to his sister on leaving, and The Exile’s Lament, a farewell to England, on the voyage out. The scenery of Gloucestershire, where he spent his boyhood, has passed into his verse. Kendall, although distinctly an Australian, was not the first of Australian singers. Even as a native born poet he was preceded by Charles Harpur, who was born in New South Wales in 1812, and who died in 1868, just when Kendall was being fully recognized was a poet. Kendall sang that year of Harpur’s death, and then gave up his Government position, that had been secured for him by Henry Parkes, to live by literature in Melbourne. It is said that the name Harpur, is an appropriate one for our first poet. Kendall was the grandson of a pioneer. His grandfather, Thomas Kendall, met Samuel Marsden, the Missionary, in England, and volunteered for service under the Church Missionary Society in Australia. He came out to Sydney in 1809, and five years later as at work in New Zealand at the Bay of Islands.

He seems to have mastered the Maori language, and he returned to England on a visit, met Professor Lee, and with him brought out Lee and Kendall’s Grammar and Vocabulary of the Language of New Zealand. This shows how faithfully he did his work. He is back again in New South Wales, and his son, Basil, married a Miss Melinda McNally, who in 1841 was the mother of twins, Basil Edward and Henry. His father died in 1847.

It is rather remarkable that Kendall’s first published poem should appear in a temperance paper, The Australian Home Companion and Band of Hope Review. His first verses, however, were not these then published. His first verses were on The Wreck of the Dunbar, afterwards published under the title of The Merchant Ship. While in Melbourne he edited a paper, The Touchstone, printed by Walker & May. Mr. Walker tells me that he was then unsteady in his habits. He would come late with his copy, and under the influence of drink; and others report that he was known to have slept out all night in the streets. He found friends among our literati, Marcus Clarke, Adam Lindsay Gordon, and George Gordon McCrae, who is still alive. He had brought out his first volume of Poems and Songs in 1862 in Sydney, and George Robertson brings out his second volume here, Leaves from an Australian Forest. He wrote the Cantata "Euterpe," which was sung in 1870 at the opening of the Melbourne Town Hall. This was the year of Adam Lindsay Gordon's death. The following inscription is on Gordon’s monument in the Cemetery at Brighton: The Poet Gordon. Died 24th June, 1870. Aged 37 years.

Ashtaroth, Bush Ballads and Galloping Rhymes and Sea Spray, and Smoke Drift. It is a broken-fluted Doric column, resting on a bluestone pedestal, on which are marble panels, and the inscription appears on the panels. Kendall sang his eulogy:

At rest, hard by the margin of the sea,
Whose sounds are mingled with his noble verse,
Now he’s the shell which never more will house
The fine strong spirit of my gifted friend, etc.

Twelve years after he was to sleep by the margin of the sea himself at Waverley. Kendall returned the next year, 1871, to New South Wales, and worked there for seven years as clerk to a timber merchant, and in 1879 wrote his Cantata for the International Exhibition, held in Sydney, and in the
following year brought out his third volume of poems, Songs from the Mountains. Henry Parkes again took an interest in him, and secured for him the position of Inspector of State Forests, at an income of £500 a year. He did not enjoy it very long. He took cold and died in 1882, and was buried in the Waverley Cemetery, and his grave, like that of Gordon, overlooks the sea. J. Howlett Ross has written the in Memoriam of both men.

That on Gordon is a biography in prose, The Laureate of the Centaurs. It was Augustus Sale who said, he might be called the Poet Laureate of the Centaurs, and Ross chose this appropriate title for his work. Ross sang Kendall’s eulogy in verse:

- The singer is dead, but his mystical song
- Echo’s back from the gloom of the tomb.

Our poetry is pioneer. Kendall sees the primeval forest, and Gordon writes bush ballads and horsey poems, and Marcus Clarke, Henry Lawson, and A. B. Patterson find their highest inspiration in themes relating to pioneer life and old colonial days. Strange that we have never had a Bret Harte to describe the gold era.

There is a kindred strain in some of their verses. Gordon and Kendall sing alike of September, the month that the Gordon Pilgrimage generally takes place. Gordon is stronger, and less influenced by other singers than Kendall. Kendall watches events; Gordon takes part in them. He writes as he lives. He is The Sick Stock Rider, and rides the horse that beats the favourite. In the poem, The Shipwreck, the man who carries the news and kills his horse is Gordon. He makes a famous leap, squanders two fortunes, and commits suicide. That kind of man is in the poetry. Kendall is the polished singer. He does not republish his volume, because he deemed it imperfect. He is the sweeter singer of the two.

- The lyre bird lit on a shimmering space;
- It dazzled mine eyes, and I turned from the place,
- And wept in the dark for a glorious face,
- And a hand with the harp of Australia.

It has been said that Australia is a land where the flowers are without perfume and the birds without song. Science has dissipated that view, and the poet has done the same thing. Kendall stole the song of the bird, the perfume of the wild flower, and the Beauty of the Brook, and put them into his verse. Although in writing of his visit to Sutherland’s grave, he takes more than a poet’s license when he talks of The Flowering Fern, a plant that never flowers. How kindred strains are in the two poets is seen in Kendall’s After Many Years, and Gordon’s I am Weary, Let me Go. The lustre from the face of things is wearing all away in both cases. This spirit prompted Gordon to write:

- Lay me low my work is done,
- I am weary, lay me low
- Where the wild flowers woo the sun,
- Where the balmy breezes blow,
- Where the butterfly takes wing,
- And the aspens drooping grow.
- Where the wild birds chirp and sing
- I am weary, let me go.

And in such a spot they have erected his monument in South Australia, near the site of the leap and overlooking the lake at Mt. Gambier.

Australia is in the songs of both men, and their best songs, like Gordon’s Sick Stock-rider, belong to pioneer life. Kendall says:- I cannot dream the dream again, But when the happy birds are singing In the sunny rain, I think I hear its words. It rains in Melbourne while the sun shines. But New South Wales is more in Kendall’s poetry. The waterfalls that gleam between the wet green walls, are there among the Blue Mountains of New South Wales. The folds of hill overlapping hill I have seen in the journey from Mount Victoria to the Caves, mountain undulations and convolutions that Kendall
may well describe as folds of hill. There are scenes which might stir the ancient fires, and rekindle the ardent lights, which once illummed the poet’s brow. I know the river in the range, and can testify that it has not yet been destroyed by the searching feet of change, and I have been out at night in the tropical north. When the rain the troubled torrent fills.

Gordon and Kendall did catch the beauty of Australian scenes and put them into song, and the lament that the lustre from the face of things had faded all away, is but the expression of the wearied soul of the poets, who both in their later rhymes had the touch of Byron’s dry and withered yellow leaf, and, like him, passed to an early grave, while George Gordon McCrae, who preceded them, strikes the triumphant note and lives on to the present time. Longfellow knew him, and when he prepared his collection of selections from the poets, the only Australian poem he included was one by McCrae, who is now in his nineties. He is distinctly a Melbourne man, but has nevertheless travelled widely in Australia and been to other lands. He has been in London and Paris, and has visited Mauritius, Reunion and the Seychelles. Johns sketches him in his Notable Australians, and the workers who sought to preserve the Old Cemetery know him personally. From a letter he wrote to me, I learn that his father was a lawyer, who came out from London to Sydney in 1838 by the ship Royal Saxon, then commanded by Captain Towns, who later settled in Sydney. He became a man of considerable note and property, and Townsville, in Queensland, was named after him. McCrae’s father came out to make ready for the family. His mother, three brothers and himself came out afterwards in the ship Argyle, sailing on the 25th of October, 1840, and landing in Melbourne from the Bay Steamer, Governor Arthur, on the 1st of March, 1841. He says that in the early days of Port Phillip he had the rare advantage of tuition from John McLure, AM., of Glasgow and Aberdeen. He prepared both Gordon and his brother William for the University, but Gordon never entered it, but graduated in the university of the business world. He entered the office of Octavius Browne, the merchant, brother of Hablot Browne, who illustrated several of Dickens works. Later he was in the Savings Bank, and then, on 1st January, 1854, entered the Government service and remained there until his sixtieth birthday, 1893, when he retired on his pension. He had various Government employment, served under the Auditor-General, the Chief Secretary, the Attorney-General and in the Registrar-General’s department, where he rose to be chief in the Patents and Copyrights Division, leaving the service as Deputy Registrar-General, Senior Examiner of Patents, and Registrar of Copyrights. By his literary attainments he was eminently suited for such a work. He has been engaged in literary work for over sixty years. He married in 1871, and has been the father of six children; one of his sons is also a poet. His youngest was Major McCrae, who was killed in action while personally leading his Battalion, the 60th, in the assault on the German position from Fromelles, France, on the 19th July, 1916. His message to us, at our last gathering in the Old Cemetery, is in the Mitchell Library. He denied that the condition of the Old Cemetery was due to the neglect of those whose dead lay buried within the consecrated area. It arose out of the question as to what particular official body we should look to restore, beautify, and keep up the resting place of the fathers of the colony and State. I called to see him on the 26th of August, 1918. He lives at Anchorfield, Muir Street, Hawthorn. He is a tall man with a fine countenance, blue eyes, and talks pleasantly. He could clearly remember events which took place in 1841. The erection of Batman’s monument in 1881 to him was quite a recent event. His relatives buried in the Old Cemetery enhanced his interest in the effort to save it.

He knew the Cemetery almost from the beginning, and was a friend of William Westgarth, the Historian. He seemed to value his statements more than these of Garryowen (Edmund Finn), and corroborated several of them. Dr Hobson was a nephew of the Commander of the Rattlesnake, after whom Hobson’s Bay is named. He was a Microscopist, and McCrae thought that I had done rightly in describing him as the founder of Natural Science in Victoria. He remembered the Lonsdale’s. H. W. Smythe was Captain Lonsdale’s brother-in-law. He was known as Long Smythe, and was nearly seven feet high. He knew Skene Craig, and could remember his store in Collins Street. He was also well acquainted with William Clarke, the musician, and thought that it was not improbable that the stone with the Masonic emblem on it was erected to the memory of his children.
He knew the Langhorne’s, and verified Westgarth’s statement that Mrs. Langhorne was one of the most beautiful women in early Melbourne. He did not think Garryowen was right in saying Liddy grew the first cabbages. Whether it was true or not, Minifie was growing splendid cabbages in 1841, in a place in Little Lonsdale Street. Liddy grew them behind the Adam and Eve Hotel, not far from where the recent Gun Alley tragedy occurred. He thought that one of the Miss Williamson’s, a daughter of Isabella Williamson, married Captain Cain, he who built the first sailing vessel that was built here the Jane Cain.

Dr. Cussen he remembered well; some of his family were still alive. He remembered Thomas Halfpenny, and also William Devine, who was a really popular old man in the forties. He had met Mr. and Airs. Raleigh, and knew Jane Montgomery, the wife of Lauchlan Mackinnon, well.

Edward Curr was specially remembered by him, and what we had written about him was correct. We must be sure to mention the name of the Van Diemen’s Land Company he represented. He was especially interested in James Horatio Nelson Cassell, and he agreed with us, that he represented a class of State servants who had become Statesmen. He referred kindly to J. D. Lyon Campbell, to David Charteris McArthur, to W. F. A. Rucker, and to the Honourable James Graham; all these and many others he remembered vividly. He was a surveyor, and in pursuit of his calling he went over the district of Bullanda, and was entertained by the Brocks; and the mere fact that the name Bolinda is differently spelt on an old map, had no weight with him. You could call it Bolinda or Bullanda, and so with many native names there was a difference of opinion in regard to their spelling.

He remembered the interest excited by the murder by the natives of Robert Moffat Allan, and knew the case of Sandford Bolden. He had met the Boldens, and knew them personally, but could not say whether they were the founders with the Brocks of the tallow industry. He had listened to Judge Willis speaking, and gave interesting sketches of Edward Sewell, William Kerr, James Moore, John J. Bear (the cattle dealer), and Dr. Watton. He told the story of James Jackson, our first great merchant, as it is told in William Westgarth’s early Melbourne. The little wooden slab in the Cemetery with A. Holland on it may be over a child of Adjutant H. F. Holland, or over one of James Holland, the old school inspector. He knew John Hunter Patterson, and could not think it right to erect monuments to the men of to-day and forget these men of merit who so nobly served the country long ago. He turned with interest to the picture of John Shank’s Stone, as we turned over the Old Cemetery Album now in the Public Library. He remembered his hospitable hotel, but challenged the statement of Henry Gyles Turner that there were fourteen public houses in 1819. He could only remember three or four in 1841. Turner was indebted to books and documents, which he thought had misled him. Turner was not here himself until the fifties. I suggested that Garryowen’s statement might be correct, that there were eight in all Australia-Felix at that time.

Few are better read than McCrae, or more distinguished in letters, and it is doubtful if there be another man living whose memory goes further back in the history of our city. He gave his money in his old age to war work, and joined in the work of defending the Empire. Among his own relatives in the Old Cemetery were Captain George Ward Cole, and Dr. Farquhar McCrae. He thought his son a better poet than himself; but he is in history. He wrote a poem on the Aborigines in the sixties (1860), and then verses on the world war in 1915, and here are sorrowful verses from both periods:

Death in the Forest

By the skirts of the dark grey forest,
The paths of the glassy glades,
Wail the loudest the saddest, the sorest
No more to the forest or fountain,
Comes the fair with the tiny feet;
No more over moorland or mountain,
Shall she warble her love notes sweet.
This is the death of the Aboriginal maid.
The White Man’s Day.

198
The star in the sea finds a sister,
The swan crowns her mate on the lake;
And the wave, when the pale moon has kissed her,
Is silver once more for her sake.
But the willow that waves o'er the water,
That mirrors her image in vain,
Sighs accents despair must have taught her
Ah, never, Ah, never again.
We sorrow alone.

This is the death of an Aboriginal maid:

The star of the sea finds a sister,
The Swan crowns her mate on the lake;
And the wave, when the pale moon has kissed her,
Is silver once more for her sake,
But the willow that waves over the water,
That mirrors her image in vain,
Sighs accents despair must have taught her,
Ah, never, Ah, never again.
We sorrow alone

Douglas Brooke Wheelton Sladen is one of the best known of our literary men, but he was a late comer, and did not remain here. He arrived in Melbourne in 1879; while here he graduated in the Melbourne University, and was appointed to the Chair of History, but he returned to England in 1884. Arthur Patchett Martin was essentially a Melbourne literary man. He was brought here when only eighteen months old, and went to school in Fitzroy. He was a member of the eclectic Institute. It is said that out of that Institute the Melbourne Review, a quarterly, arose. He, like Sladen, went to England. He settled there in 1882 and found a place as an English writer. One of his poems was The Cynic of the Woods. James Hingston was a well-known Melbourne writer, who wrote Travel Talk for The Argus.

Many stray poems have struck the public taste. Gordon and Kendall set men trying their hand at verse, but long before either of them were thought of men were rhyming in early Melbourne. Richard Howitt wrote his song of the Native Women’s Lament and his verses on the Yarra in 1841. In recent times we have had such poets as Ogilvie and Lawson, but they are not Melburnian. The Reverend William Allen was educated at the Scotch and Congregational Colleges, in Melbourne, and won the first prize for the Cantata for our Exhibition of 1888. A. B. Patterson, H. Blackham, Brunton Stevens and others come into the life of Melbourne, though not of Melbourne, but Victoria has had some good singers who are not much known. J. F. Daniel, who wrote The Jubilee of Melbourne; Keighley Goodchild, who wrote While the Billy Boils; ??? O’Hara, who sings his songs of the South; Newton Goodrich, Angel Beckoned, written in the Fitzroy Gardens; Frances Tyrrell Gill, The Wind in the Sheoak; Dr. Patrick Maloney, Melbourne, 0 Sweet Queen City of the Golden South; John Bright, When I am Dead; R. H. Horne, Aboriginal Song and Chorus; Jennings Carmichael and Ethel Castilla sing their Lady Songs; E. Booth Loughran, “The Ivory Gate”

On Flagstaff Hill, neath sculptured stone,
Brave John has long been sleeping,
He lived to see the good seed sown,
But tarried not for reaping,
E’en though the founder’s fame denied,
He was the bold forerunner,
Who threw for all the portal wide,
Therefore we name his name with pride,
**And hold it high in Honour.**

We qualify the poem by saying that those who denied Batman’s right to be called the founder are now discredited.

Thomas L. Work, Sang of the first printer, the immortal Caxton in "Envoi" (Closing words).

Recently Mr. A. Strong has given us a volume of sonnets, and Bernard O’Dowd has nine books in the Public Library, not all of them poems. Mr. O’Dowd married Miss Fryer, who was sister to Fryer, the Secretary of the Australasian Secular Association. O’Dowd was associated with that movement, and prepared the Lyceum Guide; this, with other secularist books, Mr. Joseph Symes sold in his book shop on Bourke Street. A. B. Patterson (Banjo) beat any maker of song in Victoria in the sale of his songs. “Fifty thousand copies of The Man from Snowy River were sold at five shillings a copy.” That takes you over the range, and gives New South Wales the palm.

Richard Henry Horne came to Melbourne with William Howitt in 1852, and for some time commanded the Gold Escort between Ballarat and Melbourne. He became one of Australia’s champion swimmers; yet he is better known for his choice verses, some of which Sladen published in his collection. A volume of poems by Mrs. Marie E. J. Pitt was recently published. She seems to belong to a new school, and to lean towards Socialism. Thus she sings The Song of the Axe

> Oh’ song of the axe on the westward tracks,  
> By the camp fire ruddily leaping,  
> Twas the Marseillaise of the roving days  
> That wakened the land from sleeping.

J. Nelson Nhill’s poem, The Pioneers, carried off the prize at the Australian Natives Fete of 1893. The A.N.A. for a time sought to foster Australian poetry as the Trades Hall tried Australian art.

Douglas B. W. Sladen, when in England, published in 1891 A Century of Australian Song. It was an enlarged edition of a previous work, Australian Ballads and Rhymes. It came out just after we had celebrated the centenary of Australia, and Sladen, moved by a love of Greater Britain, prefaced it with his own poetical plea for Imperial Federation:-

> Why separate? I would that we were one!  
> Not we and she and Canada alone,  
> But our lost brothers of the Union.

It includes not only the poets of the continent, but also some New Zealand singers, and the picture on the cover is the sun setting on an Australian burial. Mr. W. R. Furlong, of the Royal Arcade, placed his rooms at the disposal of the Australian Literature Society, and took a deep interest in Australian poetry and music. He selected a hundred songs, and composed the music for them, and sang them himself. One of his finest songs of this character was Rest, Gallant Heart, by Mona Mario. Singing to Sykes accompaniment. He took part in the Shakespearean Fair of 1885.

**The Melbourne Punch** was edited by Garryowen’s son. It has a permanent place in our literature, and contrasts with the Sydney Bulletin, which had on its stall such a caricaturist as Phil May, and published the poems of A. B. Patterson. The school of the Sydney Bulletin is all its own; it is a literary type. A bush ballad strain runs through its poetry, and a radical spirit pervades its politics. I met Judge Denniston in a railway train in New Zealand, and handed him a copy of Patterson’s poems, and remarked that Patterson had contributed to The Bulletin, and the Judge said to me: For a long time I would not read that paper, but one day I struck a copy of it, and found it one of the most living papers in Australasia; and so The Bulletin went on to his table. He would not have scrupled to read Punch, which, while boing humorous, is not too radical for the moneyd classes. The founder of the Sydney Bulletin was the Late J. F. Archibald, who died recently (1919) in Sydney. He brought out the first issue in 1879, and his life is the story of that paper. He is the author of that style, which has given it a unique place in Australian literature; yet the body of the work was not done by him. The original work came from others under his direction.
History of Melbourne - Revisited

He was born in 1858, in Warrnambool, Victoria, and in the seventies was on the staff of the *Melbourne Daily Telegraph*, a paper long since extinct. He found his sphere of work in Sydney. We read both Punch and Bulletin in Melbourne.

Watkin Wynne, the general manager of the *Sydney Daily Telegraph*, who died recently (1921), aged 77, was a Victorian in the sense that he came here with his parents at the early age of eight. His earlier days were spent in Geelong and Ballarat. In Ballarat in 1806 he married Eleanor Picton, daughter of H. G. Picton, of the Church of Christ. Picton spent his old age at Wynne’s house. I remember visiting him there just before his death. Picton has his place in our memory as a Christian Evidence lecturer. Wynne had a beautiful home. He was a successful man. He had been with The Telegraph since 1879, the year of its foundation. Several Victorians were interested in this paper. Mr. Wynne, at the commencement, was sub-editor. John Lynch, another Victorian, was editor, and Angus Mackay, also a Victorian, was manager.

On his resigning in 1884 Wynne took his place as manager, and under his management they became the great concern it is to-day, with its splendid office in King Street, Sydney. His reputation as a newspaper man reached England, and The Chronicle, in London, induced him to assist them in reorganizing their house. He was the prime mover in the scheme in Melbourne which amalgamated all our evening papers in the Herald. In his early days he was one of our greatest swimmers, and won the half-mile championship of Victoria. Sydney writers and singers have fellowship with us. We repeat here as in New South Wales, Lynd’s eulogy on Leichhardt:-

*When ye your gracious task have done,*
*Heap not the rock upon the dust.*
*The angel of the Lord alone*
*Shall guard the ashes of the just.*
*But ye shall heed with pious care*
*The memory of that spot to keep,*
*And note the marks that guide me where*
*My virtuous friend is laid to sleep.*

Marcus Clarke stands first as a novel writer. His novel, For the Term of his Natural life, is almost history. He looked with the mind of genius on the old penal days, and thought of them from the convict’s standpoint. Impartial history must also remember the resolution, valour and fortitude of the old sea dogs who ruled over us, Arthur Phillip, John Hunter, Philip Gidley King, and William Bligh. They were superior to the military Governors who followed them. The Governors at that time had despotic power tempered by the Home Government. Some of their officers felt their lot as much as the convict, and preferred to become convicts, believing that the convicts lot was better than theirs. One of these was put in irons, and died from the effect of the irons. Clarke’s story is nevertheless historical. Rufus Dawes, the innocent man who was transported, was no imaginary case. Whittier, in his Literary Recreations, tells the story of the Scottish Liberals who were condemned to penal servitude and sent to Australia. Thomas Muir, a young man, but already an elder in the kirk, (Church) and a barrister-at-law; Palmer, an accomplished Unitarian Minister, from Dundee; William Skirving, educated for the ministry; Joseph Gerrald, whose prayer uttered on an important occasion, says Whittier, is the prayer of universal humanity, and nothing in modern history can compare with it, unless it be the prayer of Sir Harry Vane, uttered at the scaffold. These were the men who taught Australians to think for themselves, an historical. Rufus Dawes, the innocent man who was transported, was no imaginary case. Whittier, in his Literary Recreations, tells the story of the Scottish Liberals who were condemned to penal servitude and sent to Australia. Thomas Muir, a young man, but already an elder in the kirk, (Church) and a barrister-at-law; Palmer, an accomplished Unitarian Minister, from Dundee; William Skirving, educated for the ministry; Joseph Gerrald, whose prayer uttered on an important occasion, says Whittier, is the prayer of universal humanity, and nothing in modern history can compare with it, unless it be the prayer of Sir Harry Vane, uttered at the scaffold. These were the men who taught Australians to think for themselves, and while you remember the Governors, you will remember these convicts and martyrs. Palmer’s narrative is in our Public Library.

During the Young Ireland movement of 1846, Smith O’Brien, Meagher and Mitchell were transported. After seven years Meagher and Mitchell escape to America, while Smith O’Brien is pardoned and returns to Ireland. One can understand the truth of Marcus Clarke’s narrative by taking note of statistics. In 1834 there were 15,000 convicts in Van Diemen’s Land, and there were 15,000 cases of insubordination, and 50,000 lashes were administered. No wonder from the succeeding year right on we fought transportation. This is only one year’s record, and convictism existed in Australia from 1788
to 1868, when the last convict ship was despatched to Western Australia. None were ever allowed to land their cargo in Port Phillip.

Gerald’s body is buried in the Sydney Botanical Gardens. Muir escaped, and after incredible hardships died in France. Skirving died three days after Gerald, and both died of sorrow. Palmer died on the way back to England, and the writer, in Peeps at the Past, who gives their death, says Margaret lived to be remembered in plots that disturbed the Government.

Marcus Clarke was the only son of William Hislop Clarke, a London barrister, and was born at Kensington, 24th April, 1846. He had a good Grammar School education. His father died when he was seventeen years of age, leaving only a few hundred pounds, and his mother died a few months after giving birth to him. The family was of Anglo-Irish origin. About two years after the death of his father he set out for Australia in the ship *Wellesley*, and on arriving in Melbourne was taken care of by his uncle, James Langton Clarke, a County Court judge. He is essentially a Melbourne man; he developed here. He first took a junior position in a bank here, and after a brief clerical career he went on to a station, in which his uncle had an interest. There he led an indolent literary life, acquiring experience, discussing Freethought topics with Dr. Lewins, and forming that condition of mind that led him years after to write Civilisation without Delusion, to which Bishop Moorhouse replied. After about two years in the country, Lauchlan Mackinnon, of the *Melbourne Argus*, offered him a position on the paper as a theatrical reporter, but it is said that one of his reports came out before the event, and he was removed from the regular Argus staff. This seems to have been the commencement of his work as a fiction writer. He continued to contribute to *The Argus* and *The Australasian*, and purchased for himself the *Australian Magazine*, which he renamed *The Colonial Monthly*. His first novel was Long Odds. He commenced it and wrote a few chapters, but being thrown from his horse he fractured his skull, and another writer completed the serial story. This was in 1868, the year Kendall came to Melbourne. On recovering from his accident, he continued his literary work, and took an active part in founding the Yorick Club. It was here that he met and made friends with Adam Lindsay Gordon. He wrote for several papers, among them the *Melbourne Punch*, and edited *The Humbug*. Both *The Humbug* and *The Touchstone* which Kondal edited, and for which James Smith wrote, were but short lived. Clarke married Marian Dunn, daughter of John Dunn, the burlesque actor. Miss June knew them well, and spoke of Marian as a good actress. Clarke dramatised Reade and Boucicaut’s novel, *Foul Play*, which was produced at the Theatre Royal, but was never as successful as the dramatisation of his own work, “For the Term of his Natural Life,” which was played some years ago by Dampier, and was dramatized by Thomas Walker. This story that thrills us with its picture of horrors, first appeared as a serial in the *Australian Magazine*. It was, however, completely revised before it took the book form known to us. In January 1870 Clarke became Secretary to the Trustees of the Public Library, and Assistant Librarian in 1876. He continued writing stories, but the only work that continues to be read by the public is his great story of convict life. In the seventies he wrote for *The Herald* and *The Daily Telegraph*, and afterwards for *The Age* and *The Leader*.

Vincent Pyke was more a Dunedin man than a Melburnian. He is, however, on the Victorian diggings in the fifties, and that experience colours his novels. He wrote in New Zealand.

Henry Kingsley, who wrote a romance, Geoffrey Hamlyn, published in 1859, depicting the life of the pastoralist, belongs to the Richard Howitt class, who could not find in Australia a permanent home. He was brother to Charles Kingsley, but has not shared in his fame. Tasma and Mrs. Praed Campbell fit us, but Rolf Boldrewood abides with us. He is a brother-in-arms and letters to Marcus Clarke. He presided at the meetings of the Australian Literature Society in his old age, and in his youth in the forties camped his cattle just outside of the Old Cemetery as he drove them westward. He has written a story of highway robbery, “Robbery under Arms” which depicts the bushranger, and another of the high seas, *The Buchaneeer,* which translates us to the Pacific Isles, when they were the prey of the naval adventurer. He shares with the Vagabond (Julian Thomas) the honour of making the Melbourne public familiar with Polynesia.
History of Melbourne - Revisited

His correct name was Thomas Alexander Browne. He was the eldest son of Captain Sylvester John Browne, of the East India Company’s service, of Enmore, New South Wales, and of Hartlands, Victoria. He arrived in Australia with his father in 1830, when he was four years old, and was educated in a Sydney college. At seventeen years of age he entered Victoria with a herd of cattle, and became a pioneer of the western district. His “Memories of Old Melbourne” deal as much with his settlement in the Port Fairy district and his station, Squattle-sea Mere, as with the metropolis. It is a horsey story, which does not give us historical insight into the life of early Melbourne. He lost money and had his ups and downs; he also became a Police Magistrate at the Gulgong goldfields in New South Wales. Robbery Under Arms appeared originally in the Sydney Mail, in 1888. When Boldrewood was sixty-two years of age it was republished, and seemed to be universally read, (See Thomas Browne’s Murrabit Station) although by no means as attractive a tale as Marcus Clarke’s novel, For the Term of his Natural Life.

Alfred Dampier, when he took over the Alexandra Theatre, renaming it the Australian, produced Robbery under Arms as it was dramatized by Garnet Walcha. Dampier appeared as Captain Starlight, and the play was well received.

Boldrewood’s daughter, in her articles to The Australasian in May 1922, said that he in induced Henry Kingsley to write. Gladstone wrote to him a special letter congratulating him on his novel, Robbery Under Arms. He took his nom de plume, Boldrewood, from Walter Scott’s Marmion. He lived in his later days at Toorak; it was there that Mark Twain called on him. He met several of the distinguished men who visited us, among them Rider Haggard. Ian Hamilton called on him with a copy of Robbery Under Arms, and asked him to write his autograph in it; this was one of the last autographs he wrote. He died in March 1915.

Ada Cambridge (Mrs. Cross) came here with her husband in 1870, and has written several volumes of fiction and a book of poetry of great merit, Unspoken Thoughts. One of her books is biographical, Thirty Years in Australia. She describes in it the exhuming of the bodies in the Old Gellibrand Cemetery at Williamstown. She says that they only expected to find two or three hundred bodies, but that they found nearly a thousand, and reburied them in one big grave. She stands between fiction and history.

Tasma (Jesse Catharine Couvreur), as her nom de plume suggests, was more a Tasmanian than a Victorian. She was born in London and taken as an infant to Tasmania. On her first marriage she came to live in Victoria, but in 1879 went to Europe, where she remained. She lectured on Australia in France, speaking to Frenchmen in their own language. Her second marriage was to M. Auguste Couvreur. He was a Belgian, and they resided in Brussels. When in Victoria she wrote for The Australasian and the Melbourne Review. Our own time has brought forth women authors. We remember the work of Mrs. Harrison Lee in Melbourne. She was a good speaker, and did an effective work for temperance, both by pen and tongue. Miss Fullarton is also both a writer and speaker. Louis de Rougemout paid Melbourne a visit at the close of the 19th century, and had a lively time of it at the Tivoli Theatre. Apparently the audience thought his marvellous adventures in Northern Australia were fictitious. He was a clever imposter. We have had some truly great men, among our historical and descriptive writers. David Collins, Richard and William Howitt and Dr. John Dunnmore Lang. George H. Haydon published in 1846 his work, Five Years’ Experience in Australia-Felix. He wrote in opposition to the protectors. He went to Gippsland with George Augustus Robinson and wrote disparagingly of him. He saw that year, 1844, the remains of the old Westernport Settlement, the foundations of the houses, the stump of the old Flagstaff, and the cattle from the Settlement that were running wild.

James Bonwick is the great historian of Port Phillip, as G. W. Rusden is of Australia. There are forty of Bonwick’s books in the Public Library. Both Bonwick and Westgarth died in England. Bonwick did original work in his historical sketches of Batman and Buckley, but when we turn to his chapter on Government in his book on “The Settlement of Victoria,” we are disappointed in finding that he deals so scantily with Lonsdale, relying on two or three quotations from early newspapers. He did not seem to know that Lonsdale’s letters were in the Chief Secretary’s office, and that in his correspondence
there is an exact history of early Melbourne, as a township as seen by a Police Magistrate. The journal of William Pascoe Crook seems to be known to none of our historians, yet Joseph King affirmed that he and not Knopwood preached the first sermon in Port Phillip. Nor is there any evidence in Bonwick’s History of Victoria that he had access to the Old Pioneer’s Letters. There are thirty-two books by John Dunmore Lang in the Public Library. I have already referred to him as a Statesman. He stood first in pleading for self-governing institutions for Australia, but here we have only to think of him as a literary man. Considering him in every aspect, he was one of the ablest men who ever came to Australia. A distinguished preacher, who gave a large portion of his time to literature. He was born at Greenock, in Scotland, on 15th August, 1799, and graduated in the Glasgow University. He was a man of strong opinions, and possessed of the spirit of enterprise, thus the condition of Australia appealed to him. He arrived in New South Wales in 1823, and soon firmly established the Presbyterian Church in Sydney. The building he preached in has remained as a memorial in Sydney until our own time, and in the square facing it is his monument.

In the way of memorials Sydney has been more considerate of the pioneer than we have been. He promoted the immigration of Scotch artisans, and brought out a body of ministers and school teachers, and laid a broad foundation for education in Australia. He not only represented Port Phillip in the Legislative Council in Sydney, but wrote one of our first books, Phillip’s Land. He likes to remember the discoverer and the pioneer; thus he wrote of the south as Phillip’s Land, and the north as Cook’s Land. His services were recognized by our Parliament in 1872, when the Victorian Parliament voted him a thousand pounds. He wrote a poem on Australia, Aurora Australis, as early as 1826. He saw the entire South Pacific world, and wrote with interest on New Zealand and all the other Australasian colonies. His books to-day are one of our great sources of history. He issued his last book in 1876, and died on 8th August, 1878. Last year (1923) Sydney celebrated the centennial of his arrival, and the Melbourne papers gave lengthy biographical sketches of him. It is to be regretted that his son, who came to Victoria, got into series trouble over financial Matters.

Francis Peter Labilliero, whose grandfather was buried in the Old Cemetery, we have sketched in the chapter on the pioneers. One of our early histories of Victoria was written by Thomas McCombie. Then came David Blair and Alexander Sutherland. The whole family of the Sutherlands were brainy, and nearly all of them distinguished. Thirty years ago it was said that 50,000 copies of his history were sold. Henry Gyles Turner passed away on 30th November, 1920. He was well on towards 59 years of age. Shortly before he died I met him on the marble stair of the Public Library and said to him: Will you spend an afternoon with me in the Old Cemetery? He looked young, but he was not so, and said to me: Remember I am eighty-eight years old.

Edmund La Touche Armstrong gives us the history of the Public Library, which is a history of the intellectual activities of the city, and which I have freely used here. These men are too many to photograph here, and more than they For All things are ours;

Paul is ours, Apolos is ours, Peter is ours. The story of Melbourne embraces something from nearly all Australian writers. Archibald Strong's sonnets are on English characters, and he dresses Shakespeare like a member of the A.N.A. Our literature at its best is but a variation of that which comes from the past, and the History of Literature but the history of variation. Dr. Fitchett is a Melburnian who has written ‘The Deeds that Won the Empire,’ a story of military and naval exploits. But the story of his own city shows that the naval and military men, to quote Latrobe’s reference to another matter, He says — “play second fiddle to the heroic men and women who pioneered the way in the bush, created the Australian farm, and stood for national integrity and national rights. We contrast the age without debt made by the men sleeping in the Old Cemetery with that period when six banks closed their doors in one week, or with this age when our State debt amounts to £300,000,000, and our City Council borrow a quarter of a million to build a market over the bones of the pioneers. In all its wilderness, a beautiful graveyard, where flourished the English elm, the cedar and the Cyprus, the Australian fig tree, laurel and myrtle.”

204
Everybody knows that Salisbury visited Melbourne and went to the diggings. A son of Charles Dickens lived for a time, I remember, at Hawthorn. The Age reports that several relatives of Gladstone have been in Australia. A second cousin took up land at Dandenong, and his son, William Gladstone, is now living at Canterbury. Another distant cousin was Stewart Gladstone, who was the original owner of the Noorat and Glenormiston Estate. His son, Montgomery, was killed in Australia. That property was acquired by Neil Native, who named one of his sons Stewart Gladstone. John Williams was the founder of the Temperance Alliance Record, and was the author of the prize cantata at the opening of the Melbourne Exhibition of 1880.

Radical papers arose at the time of Eureka insurrection. They were published on the gold-fields, and that spirit affected some people in Melbourne. A small short-lived weekly paper came out here, The Empire of the South. A voice from the people. The only issue I have seen was 15th August, 1856.

We have coined very few words in common usage that are not based on the English; one well-known Melbourne word is larrkin. Sergeant Dalton, in 1809, brought up before the Melbourne Police Court some youthful prisoners, and in his broad Irish accent said to the Magistrate that he had found them a-larra-kin about the streets, for larking. But the late Professor Morris, in his Australian English, gives two other probable derivations of the word, one of them from the English word Larry, which in its turn is derived from the French word Irron, a thief. still, nine out of ten accept the first explanation. Yarra-bender is certainly a Melbourne expression for a man eccentric in his ways, from Yarra Bend, our old hospital for the insane. We use these inter-colonial words, new chum, nobbler (for (a glass of spirits), pannikin, rabbiter, swagman, sundowner, squatter, bushranger, right-of-way for alley, which is undoubtedly of English origin. We say of the spendthrift, he knocked down his cheque. Bail up and barrack are Austral verbs. We talk of going on the wallaby. We call our hut a humpy or a wurley, or gunyah or mia-mia, and a club is a waddy. A miner is a digger. The stockman wields a stockwhip. A pond is a waterhole, but no longer is a Tasmanian a Vandemonian. The miner works his tailings. Most of these expressions are in Marcus Clark, but very few of them are exclusively Victorian, and many of them modifications of English expressions.

The coining of the Commonwealth affected literature by the creation of the Commonwealth Parliamentary Library, and by the appointment of Petherick to the office of Archivist. He gave us the first great bibliography of Australian literature. W. A. Wadsworth laid the foundation of the Commonwealth Parliament Library. Great documents of historic value are there, relating to the origin of the Commonwealth, with such memorials as the ink stand and pen Queen Victoria used, and the table on which she wrote when she gave her assent to the Commonwealth Constitution Act. It contains Batman’s diary written in 1830, when he was engaged bringing in the Tasmanian natives, five years before he came to Port Phillip. It is a young library, and perhaps may never compare with the Mitchell Library in Sydney in the matter of manuscripts, or our own in the matter of books. Melbourne has the greatest Library in Australasia, and one of the greatest libraries in the world. An eminent visitor Coode, of the Coode Canal passing round, said he counted more readers there than he had seen in the reading-room of the British Museum. It has 250,000 books for reference, fifty thousand of which are placed on the shelves in the reading room; any of the others can be seen by applying at the inquiry room. The reading room is octagonal, 115 feet in diameter, and of the same height, surmounted by the largest ferro-concrete dome in the world. It is the central feature in the mass of buildings which are called the Public Library the National Museum and the National Art Gallery. In one building is a free lending library with 30,000 books. The large Public Library grows at the rate of from 6000 to 8000 books a year. I have spent many days there, and know its value. Among its theological books I found copies of the great manuscripts of the Bible. It has but few manuscripts; in this it cannot compete with the older libraries of the world, but it has nearly all the great modern works since the advent of printing. Science, philosophy, literature and art have a home here at the Antipodes. The History of Australia is profusely illustrated. There one sees the maps of Tasman, Cook and Flinders, the works of Sturt, the travels of Leichhardt, the journal of Wills, and all the literary souvenirs of our foundation. It obtained from Mr. O’Cock by purchase two of the original Batman deeds. Books upon books on the native men, the native birds, the native beasts, the wild flowers, the
geography, the geology, and all that pertains to our strange continent and Oceania. Our histories from the narrative of Palmer to Sutherland’s History of Australia. The first large gift made was that by Sir Redmond Barry; and it has received many other large donations since. The Ethological Museum, where the Australian and Polynesian specimens are to be seen, has been under the direction of Sir Baldwin Spencer, and is now called the Spencer Gallery. The Aboriginal collection is said to be the finest in the world. Sir Frederick McCoy was director of the Museum from 1856 to 1859.

The Palaeontologist of the Museum, who is also a Professor in the University, has taken the collection, which was formerly in the University grounds, and multiplied them, placing them in the Museum, and continued that classification, which commenced in the old collection, by which we can see the evolution of species at a glance. Frederick Chapman, who has done much of this work, entered the Museum in 1902. He has written a book on Australian Fossils, from which we gather that many good fossils are found at Lilydale, the home of Madame Melba, and all round Melbourne and Geelong. The fossilized tooth of a sperm whale was found at Beaumaris and the skeleton of a seal at Queenscliff; and very many fossils are found at Mornington. Balcombe, who has a grave in the Cemetery, has given his name to the Balcombian beds, and thus found an abiding place in the history of science. This National Museum is the British Museum of the Southern Hemisphere, and yet it is but a branch of the old Mechanics Institute, whose founders were in the Old Cemetery. David Charteris McArthur was trustee from 1856 to 1887. He was elected President in 1880, but resigned in 1883, continuing on the Board until his death, on the 10th November, 1887. The McArthur Gallery is named after him, just as the Barry Hall was named in honour of Redmond Barry; the Buvelot Gallery, in honour of Louis Buvelot, who is called the pioneer artist of Victoria; and the Verdon Gallery, after Sir George Verdon, who succeeded McArthur. The Stawell Gallery is after one of the original trustees, the Latrobe Gallery after our first Governor, and the Spencer Gallery after Sir Baldwin Spencer. Early Melbourne, therefore, contributed its full share to this noble institution.

Hobson’s anatomical Museum was the forerunner of the National Museum. The Library was founded in 1853, and opened to the public in 1850, in a room 50 feet square, in the centre of what is now the Technological Museum. The foundation stone of the Library and University were laid on the same day, the 3rd of July, 1854. Barry thought that no other country had founded a Library and a University within twenty years from the coming of their first settlers. Mr. Reed was the original architect.

By the loan of small libraries the trustees have assisted in building up the Libraries of Victoria; they commenced with the suburbs of Melbourne, and their first loans were to Booroondara, Collingwood and Kew. The building was lighted with gas shortly after it was opened, and is now lighted with electricity. Its first paid man was its Secretary, Charles Cumberland, who received a gratuity for his services in assisting in its organization. Its first Librarian was Augustus Henry Tulk, the second a Mr. Sheffield, and the third Dr. Bride. Marcus Clarke, we have seen, became associated with it in 1870. It opened with 3804 books. Nearly all its books were bought in London up to 1804. That year they voted that five hundred pounds be spent among the booksellers in Melbourne. They had a small gift of books at the commencement from Latrobe, but relied in their early days almost solely on the Government for money. In 1862, however, Dalgety gave them a hundred pounds. In that year there were 27,000 books in the Library. Others soon followed the example set by Dalgety. The collection of Natural History was kept at the University until 1899. Dr. Bride during his term of office as Librarian did a great service to Victorian history by editing the Letters of the Old Pioneers, and preparing them for publication.

The first trustees were the Attorney-General, William Stawell, who became Chief Justice and was knighted; the Speaker of the Assembly, James Palmer, who also was knighted; the Right Honourable. Hugh Culling Eardley Childers, who went to England, and entered the English Parliament; Justice Redmond Barry (he too, was knighted); and the Manager of the Bank of Australasia, Mr. D. C. McArthur Barry wrote a history of the Library, which is attached to the catalogue of 1880.
Marcus Clarke gives an historical sketch of it in his History of Australia.

The best history of it is that by the present Librarian, Mr. Armstrong. He purchased the Album of our Memorial Union for the Library. It is not generally known that the old Emperor of Germany, William the First presented the works of Frederick the Great to us. The work is in thirty-one volumes, and only two hundred copies of this edition were published. This was given to the Library in 1883. Justice Isaacs, when a Member of Parliament, and of course before he was a Judge, went into the Library to read, but finding the heat oppressive, he took his coat off; the officer-in-charge held that it was a breach of decorum, and requested the learned gentleman to put it on. Isaacs declined, and gave the officer his name. The officer still persisted that he must put his coat on or get out. He left the Library, but hearing that the trustees were sitting, he asked to be allowed to submit the matter to their judgment. This they allowed, and he argued that as it was a Democratic country a man should not be deprived of the privilege of taking his coat off in the Library. The trustees supported the officer, and now everyone has to read with his coat on.

The heavy hail storm of the 14th November, 1901, smashed the skylights in the Library. The attendants put on uniforms in 1884. Very little loss is sustained by the ft; but in thirteen years the Library only lost 182 volumes by theft. All readers watch the interests of this great home of popular education. Among the men of science who have been associated with it was J. Cosmo Newberry, who entered its service in 1870. He is credited with prophesying that payable oil wells would be found in Gippsland. Henry Gyles Turner, who for twenty-eight years was associated with the institution, died recently (1920). He had been President of the Trustees for fifteen years.

Let us now turn to another great work of science the Botanical Gardens in which is the old red gum tree under which we were proclaimed an independent colony; the inscription on this tree is: Under this tree, on the 15th November, 1850, public rejoicings of the citizens of Melbourne took place in celebration of the authorized separation of the colony of Victoria, the 1st of July, 1851.

These gardens are said to have been first formed in 1852 by the Government Botanist, Dr. F. Mueller. This is hardly correct. Latrobe, at the beginning of his administration, had a tract of land set aside as a botanical reserve on the northern side of the Yarra, near to Batman's Hill. And in reading the minutes of the City Council I found frequent references to the subject throughout the forties. Near the southern entrance to the present Botanical Gardens there are the names of all the directors. They are as follows:

- John Arthur, 1846-1849
- John Dallachy, 1849-1857
- Baron F. Von Mueller, 1857-1873

Mr. Cronin, the late director's name, will, I presume, soon be added.

Baron Ferdinand Von Mueller is the man who has received the most notice. He is regarded as one of the greatest scientific men who has developed exclusively in Melbourne. He was born in Schleswig Holstein, and came into the world with a tendency to consumption. This led him at the age of 22 to come to Australia, where he lived until he died, at the age of 71. He landed in Adelaide in 1847, and started as a chemist. He became known to Latrobe as a botanist, and in 1852 was offered the position of Government Botanist in Victoria. He was deeply interested in Dr. Leichhardt, and possibly the example of Leichhardt led him to take an interest in exploration, a work that is consistent with botany, and in botanising he became an explorer himself. This was also true of our first botanist, Daniel Bunce, who seems to have been passed over in the selection of directors for the Botanical Gardens. Mueller's first scientific articles were written in German, his native tongue. His great work, Fragmented, was written in Latin. He seems to have been a good linguist, for he wrote also in French. His works in English, however, are not attractive. He had a vast store of information on botany, that he put into a disordered form in his English articles. He lived in Melbourne, occasionally taking trips to other States, for forty-four years, and died at the age of seventy-one, believing himself an old man, although in Melbourne this is not an old age for a literary man. He was slovenly in his dress, and on a hot day would be seen walking down Collins Street with a large
comforter around his neck. His clothes never fitted him. He was self-absorbed, and never married, although, it is said, he tried more than once to do so. He is known as the organiser of the Botanical Gardens. The Hooker Classification there is credited to him. He seems to have tried to do too much himself, instead of trusting more to his overseers; thus he was compelled to retire in 1873 from the position of director, although continuing on as Government Botanist. He then had leisure for literary work. Charles Daley, who has written a biographical sketch of him, says that he produced forty works. One of his subordinates produced a map of the gardens which was given to Guilfoyle, and over this Guilfoyle planned his splendid system of landscape gardening. Had Mueller taken his assistant into his confidence, the practical result might have been his instead of his successors. He became world-known, and delighted in his fame. He hungered for appreciation, and gladly accepted the titles conferred on him. Daley says that he was Australasian, and was interested in exploration in both New Guinea and the Antarctic. His own special work of exploration was done chiefly among the mountains of Victoria, and by coincidence he also traced with Gregory to its source the Victoria River, in Queensland. He was sympathetic to every student of science, was adviser to the Burke and Wills expedition, and was deeply interested in the work of Giles and Forrest. He comes very close to us in being the founder of our Geographical Society, that is now amalgamated with the Historical Society, and was a forerunner of the movement for the conservation of, and setting aside of reserves, like that of Wilson Promontory, or the preservation of the fauna and flora of this country, although he was not the first or alone in these projects.

All these projects seemed to have passed through the mind of Daniel Bunce. Mt. Mueller and other places in Victoria have been named after him. He was associated in work with that eminent Australian botanist, Robert Brown; both assisted by their work George Bentham in bringing out his monumental book, The Flora Australiensis. He is said to have introduced the Finns Insignis, that has become an institution in Melbourne, as the Eucalypts have become one in California. With others he founded the Philosophical Society in Victoria, which in time evolved into the Royal Society. He was also a founder of the Pharmaceutical Society, and was associated with our first three exhibitions, especially that of 1854. He was buried in the St. Kilda Cemetery, and his memorial still remains there.

W. R. Guilfoyle, his successor, was also a literary man. His book on Australian Botany is a most readable work, and nearly everything in the book is illustrated in the gardens. He writes of the giant eucalypts, which approach in size to the great trees of California, but still take second place; some in Gippsland have been found from 395 feet to 480 feet high. He tells of one of his illustrious predecessor, Baron Von Mueller, saw at Native Spur, 480 feet high, whose circumference at the base was 81 feet, and at the height of 300 feet it had a circumference of 18 feet. Suppose only half of its timber were available, and was cut into boards 12 inches by 1 inch, you would get 426,730 super feet, sufficient to cover 9 3/4 acres. He reports that out of fifty fruits in use, ranging from the pear to the pineapple, or from the almond to the cocoanut, none are indigenous to Australia. Of thirty different spices and condiments in use, from pepper to ginger, none are Australian, but we cannot say there is no balm in Gilead when we have medicinal plants like the eucalyptus. In 1840 Dr. Godfrey hoped to introduce the date-growing industry into Victoria, and planted some date palms on his land at the corner of Collins and Spring Streets. When the city approached his date orchard, one palm was transplanted to the Botanical Gardens, and remains to this day. In 80 years it has not yielded any dates. We are a timber country. There are 38 great world timbers and eleven are ours.

Powell Town is a timber-workers township, in the heart of the Woodland district, ten miles from the Yarra Junction, and therefore easily got at from Melbourne, as are also the great trees of Gippsland. I have ridden by night and day through the forests of Australia, and have felt the enchantment of their primeval solitude. These evergreen trees differ from the deciduous trees of Europe. Ours shed their bark; theirs cast off their leaves. Visitors to Australia love to show the contrast. They say that our flowers are without perfume, our birds without song, our fruits without flavour, our animals carry their young in their pocket, the sun travels the wrong way (north instead of south), the cherry...
has its stone on the outside, and everything seems upside down. This, like many other picturesque statements, is only partially true.

One thing which arrested the attention of Dr. Leichhardt as he journeyed from Moreton’s Bay to Port Essington was the perfume of the vegetation. The wattle blossom has its peculiar perfume, the wild Boronia and the Victorian laurel have odorous flowers. A valuable scent has been distilled from the Victorian laurel. Away in the north-west of the continent are the forests of sandalwood, whose perfumed planks are sent away to China. Beneath the feet in various parts is a surprising abundance of Australian mint. The diamond-leaved laurel of Queensland produces large corymbs of Jasmine-scented flowers. There is perfume in the flowers of the silky oak, and in the leaves of the eucalyptus tree. It is therefore incorrect to say that our Australian forest is without perfume. Some of our birds are without song, and seem to try to make up for that deficiency by the beauty of their plumage.

In Drummond Street, Carlton, and in other streets, we see that unique tree, the Moreton Bay fig. Its composite trunk and erratic roots standing up out of the ground impress one as some strange freak of nature, and combined with its curious features is a beautiful large-leaved foliage, which makes it a good shelter when the sun is over 90 degrees in the shade, as it often is in the summer time in Melbourne. Such-like trees evoke the admiration of all botanists, and Guilfoyle grows eloquent on our flora. He avers that there are spots in the Australian which rival in beauty the richness and splendour of the Brazilian forest. In New South Wales the rosewood, the red and white cedar are ornamented by parasites and epiphytes, stag Homs, elk horns, and bird-nest ferns. These trees also support a heavy veil of climbers. You can ascend the mountains in New South Wales and look down on what appears to be a picturesque lawn, firm and inviting to the foot, with a profusion of flowers, and studded with trees, whose apparently short stems are nearly hidden in the lavish verdure around them, and this is but the top of the forest interlaced with beautiful Australian climbers. It is aglow in the summer time with beetle and butterfly. This, with the fungi, give it in places a phosphorescent glow at night time. Australia, like all warm climates, abounds with insects, and has as insectivorous plants, and marsupial insectivore that prey on the insects. In Queensland they build their houses on high piles to avoid the ants, and in different places in Australia the hospital beds are hung with light curtains to save the patient from the sting of the mosquito. Melbourne, however, is almost free from the mosquito, and that was true of the village in pioneer days. G. H. Haydon mentions it in his book on Australia-Felix, published in 1846. We have wasps, but we seldom see them in Melbourne; dragon flies, centipedes and great tarantula spiders. But we have also a native honey bee without a sting, and some successful old colonists have found that there was honey in the rock for them.

Mr. Cronin, the President of the Horticultural Society, a society started in 1859 and the late Director of the Botanical Gardens, used his collection of plants to draw on to beautify all the parks in the city. It was the hope of the Cemetery workers that he would join with us, and when victory came, lay out the Old Cemetery; but we lost, and he died last year (1923). We have taken our beautiful grass trees, palms, fern palms (cycads), and stately pines and put them into our public gardens and parks. These breathing places are full of Australian plants.

Mr. E. Pescott, in his Horticultural School and Gardens, at Burnley, has shown us how to domesticate and cultivate many wild flowers. The Cootamundra wattle is one of the most elegant of garden shrubs, and yet with all our own variety we are not disloyal to the flora of the motherland, for beside our indigenous trees you see on the street and in the park the oak, the elm, the white poplar and other British trees and the plane tree and the pepper tree from America.

On the 4th of March, 1867, Mr. Wragge proposed in the City Council, and Mr. Cohen seconded, that the principal streets of Melbourne be planted with trees, thus I take it the trees came in Collins Street. In the fifties the Carlton Gardens were used for the propagation of the Norfolk Island pine, and other trees and plants. We have recently adopted the American policy of taking down our fences around the parks. In early Melbourne they had to erect fences to protect the parks and gardens from the cattle, and to keep them as reserves. The open park, however, adds to the beauty
of our city. The trees and flowers can be seen from the footpath. In the Fitzroy Gardens are beautiful avenues of elm and poplar, and in the Carlton Gardens a very fine plane tree avenue. Leafy glories of varied kinds are to be seen in seventy different green spots through the ten-mile radius.

The evolutionist finds much evidence to support his theory both in the animal and the vegetable life of Australia. When William Westgarth came the platypus was in Merri Creek and in other streams around Melbourne, a mammal that lays eggs and suckles its young. In vegetation the wattle is just as striking an illustration; the foliage of some species is pinnate or feather-leaved, in others the leaf is simple. In the saplings on the Yarra Bank you will find both kinds of leaves, showing that both species came from the one stock.

Early Melbourne had roaming over it in the beginning these animals that are now only to be seen in the Zoological Gardens. Just as in San Francisco to-day you can only see the buffalo and the bear in the Golden Gate Park, so in this land of the Dawning, where marsupials were in abundance they are now only to be seen in the Zoological Gardens to the north of Royal Park.

When Batman came, the kangaroo browsed on Emerald Hill. In five years they were all gone. The Native cockatoo lingered on some years longer, and then took his departure. There are 110 different species of marsupials, root eaters, fruit eaters, grass eaters, flesh eaters and insect eaters, and the king of them all is the kangaroo. Once there was a greater than he, the Diprotodon, whose fossil remains only have been found. Many varieties of marsupial are seen at the Zoo, opossums, native bears, sluggish harmless creatures, and the wombat, a creature only seen in books or at the Museum. He burrows and only comes out at night time; several Australian animals are nocturnal. The only wild dog in the world is our Australian Dingo; where he came from nobody knows. He is a really suspicious character, with a stealthy tread; he seldom barks, and has preyed not infrequently on the farmers sheep. A feature of our animals is their silence. No sound comes from the bear, unless it be wounded, and all the marsupials are much alike. As the leaves of our trees hang edgeways to the sunlight to avoid the intense heat, so some of our animals hide away during the day time and thus avoid the mid-day heat, silently coming out at night to forage for their food. We have already noted how comparatively silent are the birds. The forest has a temple stillness in the day time. Our largest bird is the emu, allied in form and stature to the moa and the ostrich. Its large eggs are often converted into ornaments and set in silver, and have a distinct place among the bric-a-brac on our mantelpieces. The Native swan only now lives among us as a guest. Our most peculiar bird is the lyre bird. It can mock any bird in the forest, and can imitate anything from the farmer sawing wood to the crowing of the cock. It is called a lyre bird, because its tail resembles the Greek musical instrument called a lyre. If our birds do not sing, they are among the best of talkers. Many houses keep a cockatoo to entertain them. We have sixty different species of parrot, green parakeets in a blaze of beauty; euphema pulchrella, that move even the scientific mind as their names attest. We have a noble king fisher, the laughing jackass; native legend says it first laughed from joy when it killed a snake that was trying to fascinate a bird. It is not the only creature that fights the venomed world. The iguana is a deadly foe of the snake. There are five species of snake in Australia whose bite is fatal, and many more whose bite is venomous. There are thirty or forty, like the carpet snake, that are harmless.

Frederick G. Aflalo, in taking them home to England, would allow them to lie beside him in his berth during the cold weather to keep them alive until the voyage was over. But deadly ones haunt the farmer. He turns them over in the furrow, and finds the deadliest of them in the haystacks. I once saw a farmer hurl one down from the top of a haystack to a comrade below with a bundle of hay; it was at once despatched. The snake has gone from Melbourne. I never saw one at liberty in the precincts of the city, although some years ago a snake charmer let a number of them loose in Little Bourke Street. On one occasion I saw a large number of them at the University, when the students in the medical school were studying snake poison. A Murray cod has been known to swallow a snake, and when caught the snake was found alive in its stomach. The fauna of all the Australian States are represented at the Zoo.
There is a difference between them, but it is small. In the Queensland Rivers is the alligator, which is exhibited in our Aquarium. But the animals in Tasmania very much resemble these in Victoria. The native wild cat, after which some of our mining schemes are named, is in Tasmania. We never see it now, yet in early Melbourne it was a pest. The echidna or porcupine ant eater is in Tasmania, and in our Zoological Gardens. In our time the gardens were under the direction of William Dudley Le Souef, whose name recalls early Melbourne. In telling the story of our Zoo, we remind you that it did not originate as a wild beast show, but in a desire to stock the country, preserve the native animals, and interest the world in them. Acclimatization had commenced with settlement. It commenced when Batman brought its sheep. Thomas Jefferson thought that when they put an epitaph on his tomb they should not only refer to his writing the Declaration of Independence, and to his work for Religious Liberty, but should also mention that he had introduced new cereals. He thought that his work of acclimatization equal to his work as a Statesman. The first society formed for this purpose in Melbourne originated in 1857.

It was intended to be an Ornithological Society, but at its first meeting, which was hold in St. Patrick’s Hall, Dr. Thomas Native moved that it should be a Zoological Society, and such it became. They secured the Richmond Paddock, afterwards known as the Friendly Societies Gardens, but they found this ground was too low lying, so they crossed the river, and Dr. Mueller allowed the first collection to be placed in the Botanical Gardens. A Mr. Sichel had preceded them in acclimatization. He introduced the Angora goat in 1856. But these experiments have all come to nought; Angoras, Alpacas and Ostriches have never thrived in Victoria.

The present Society originated in a meeting in the Mechanics Institute, in February 1861. It is a memorial to the work of the old colonists. On its early executive are the names of such men as Henty, Cole, Chambers, Godfrey, Bear and Coppin. In 1875 W. F. A. Rucker was its auditor. Prof. Frederick McCoy gave a lecture at the first annual meeting on Acclimatization, its Nature and Application to Victoria. An old pioneer in the service of Mr. Le Souef tells me that he thinks Coppin had some sort of menagerie at Cremorne, probably the leopard, that belonged to Charles Wright, the publican. Wright afterwards made it a present to the Zoological Gardens, and it was the first wild beast of the carnivore that the Zoo received. The Society arose fully functioned. It entered into fellowship at once with the consuls of the different countries with a view of securing exchanges. One would have thought that our unique animals could be readily exchanged for the big game of other lands, but it has not been so, we have had to purchase the most of our large animals. Marcus Clarke says that the idea of the present Society originated with Edward Wilson. George Spriggs was its first Secretary, and a Mr. Lissignol its second; they had not a long tenure of office. Mr. Albert Le Souef and his son were the practical creators of the gardens. Albert Le Souef became Secretary in the early sixties, and his son, William Dudley Le Souef, became his assistant. The history of the Le Souef’s is an interesting pioneer story.

Among the very early settlers who did not come to the Old Cemetery were the Le Souef’s. William Le Souef succeeded Dredge as Assistant Protector of the Aboriginals in the Goulburn district. He had his station near where Murchison now stands. A son of his was in the Customs, and had a cottage on the south side of the Yarra, near the falls, as early as 1838; and a grandson of his was the late Director of the Zoological Gardens, William Dudley Le Souef, author of Wild Life in Australia and other books. Some of the family, among whom was the father of the Director of the Zoological Gardens, A. A. C. Le Souef, came out in the Eagle, a barque which left London on the 30th of June, 1840, and arrived here on the 20th October, 1840. It was an interesting ship-load, for among the saloon passengers was Dr. Frederick Palmer, afterwards Sir Frederick Palmer, and Robert Pohlman, County Judge. Rusden said:-

> Why not record in some enduring book,  
> That seeking a just Magistrate we took  
> Our Cincinnatus Pohlman from the plough  
> And wigged and gowned him as you see him now.

211
This in an address on the 2nd of July, 1869, at a performance in the Theatre Royal, in aid of the Old Colonists Home. In the same vessel was also R. H. Budd, the great educator, and Mr. John Phillips, of the well-known squating firm, Phillips and Graves. (see Reminiscences of early Australia Life) A. A. C. Le Souef was only twelve years old. He remembered the arrival all his life. It was spring time, the trees hung far out over the Yarra on either side, and almost met in the centre; the land was beautiful, the forest full of perfume, the wattle was in bloom, the kingfishers floated overhead, and the bell birds were about; the tree stumps were in Collins Street, and the Moonee Ponds Creek was a clear pure stream; the squating stations were near Melbourne, and the friendly natives came among the settlers. We had hoped that someday William H. Dudley Le Souef would have given his father's narrative to the printer. Date of arrival in Victoria. Henry Le Souef, 1838, uncle; William Le Souef, 1838, grandfather of W. H. D. Le Souef (Melbourne Cemetery), born 1792, died 1862; age 70; Dudley Charles Le Souef, 1840, uncle; Albert A. C. Le Souef, 1840, father of W. H. D. Le Souef; Mrs. William Le Souef, 1840, grandmother of W. H. D Le Souef.

In the sixties Keith and Phillips circus visited Melbourne. They struck a bad time, and Bennet, the butcher, sold them up. The Zoo bought the two lions and put them in cages. In the seventies Mr. Le Souef had the lion house built, which was then reputed to be the finest in the world. The present grounds have grown from small beginnings; they are now forty acres, being some distance out there has always been room for expansion. One of the first buildings was the Burke and Wills Stables, transferred from Royal Park. The Superintendent's house was built in 1862. The first elephant came about the year 1875. There have been three large elephants, and the children have ridden on them all. For forty years this has been a feature in the grounds. The first bears were brown bears. Grizzly bears have never been kept in the gardens; the bear pit was in existence in the early seventies. We can all remember Cooper and Bailey's circus and wild beast show, which came to Melbourne in 1877. It was easily the best menagerie ever brought to Melbourne by a circus. The Society, however, received no help from them. That circus had a hippopotamus, six elephants, tigers, bears, hyenas, an American jaguar, dromedaries, zebras and other rare animals. Only once did a wild animal escape, and that was a leopard that escaped about ten years ago, and wandered about the neighbourhood, and after a short lease of liberty was discovered by one of the inhabitants and shot. No person has ever been seriously injured by an animal in the Zoo, and no pest has been introduced into the country by the Society. Rabbits and foxes were not introduced by it, nor sparrows. Once the Society tried the silver Gray rabbits for their valuable skins, but they died out.

The Society has had its successes and failures with acclimatization. In introducing the English songbirds, it has sometimes been defeated by the native hawk, but the English lark has found a home here and sings its carol in the sky over Camberwell. It has been thought by some that Tasmania was the first to acclimatize the trout; whether this be so or not, trout were introduced into Melbourne in 1862, and soon found an abiding place in the trout pools of Macedon.

They were first hatched in boxes in the ice houses in Melbourne. Albert Le Souef, the father of the present Le Souef, was in the habit of taking a holiday in the locality behind Pakenham, in the Berwick district; here he came on a stream, and beside it found sapphires. Therefore he called the stream Gembrook. Settlers commenced to create farms there; they took up selections of 320 acres; the Government surveyed it, and officially gave it the name of Gembrook. The Zoological Gardens had a reserve there, a breeding place from which they let loose birds, restocking the bush.

The cochineal bug was acclimatized in the Botanical Gardens, and fed on the leaves of the Tree of Heaven; and in the Zoological Gardens as early as 1862 silk culture was tried and the white mulberry trees were planted for the silk worm to live on, but no permanent results were obtained, and both bug and worms have been allowed to practically die out.

The Melbourne Gardens is the parent of all the Australian Zoological Gardens, but still New South Wales was before us in acclimatization, of necessity, Macarthur introducing sheep, and others the vine tree. Dr. Native and Edward Wilson, however, evangelized other colonies. Dr. Native
initiated the work in New Zealand, and Edward Wilson originated societies in Tasmania, New South Wales and South Australia. Mr. Chirnside was the first to introduce the red deer into Victoria. He brought them here in 1860. Prince Albert, the consort of Queen Victoria, made the Zoo a present of a roo deer. Burke, when starting away from Victoria, left a young camel six months old on the banks of the Murray; fourteen years later it was captured and placed in the Melbourne Zoological grounds.

While the Prince of Wales had a pet wallaby given him by Mr. Hughes, yet the kangaroo and the wallaby have not been domesticated; the only Australian animal we have succeeded with is the cockatoo. Mr. Le Souef founded the Bird Union of Australia, and their paper, The Emu, was kept going for twenty-two years.

The motto of the Zoological and Acclimatization Society is Omnia Feret, Omnia Tellus, and both the Le Souef’s have lived up to it. Albert Le Souef went round the world in the interests of Zoological science, and his son went round four times. He (William H. D. Le Souef) visited the Zoos in America and Europe, and lectured in different centres on Australia, especially the Wildlife of Australia. He represented us before science societies and at science congresses.

We all know how the gardens have been represented in popular lectures on science here, and also in literature by Mr. Le Souef. The gardens have contributed their share to fighting disease among animals. For fifty years they have been sources of pleasure, profit and instruction to the people of Melbourne.

We have seen that Victorian History naturally divides itself into three epochs; this is also seen in science, literature and art. Australia-Felix did not know evolution. Although some prophecy of it appeared, McCombie reviewed The Vestiges of Creation. In the second period science is awakened by the discovery of gold and the study of geology is quickened. Bunce goes on to the goldfields; men turn and reflect on the work of Strzelecki, Sir Roderick Murchison and the Reverend W. B. Clarke.

Then comes the third era, the School of Mines has been established, and the great scientific lecturers like Proctor are welcomed to Melbourne. It is the day of the Commonwealth. The University has its first lecturer on Biology. That word had been coined previously, but the science is now accepted. The great Science Association Congresses meet in Melbourne, and the Commonwealth creates a Science Bureau; and evolution is taught in the University and illustrated in the Museum.

In literature the first period is the age of the bi-weekly and the Tri-weekly newspapers. The second period sees the great dailies arise, and towards the end of his period comes the book age, which is a part of the life of literature, in the present age. Art, too, has had its development. The first artists were surveyors Wedge and Russell, and amateurs like Liardet. In this period we are very much dependent on Britain for our pictures and art work. In art we do not, however, progress as in science. In science the whole world has marched forward, but in art we have still to look back to Phidias. In science invention succeeds invention, but the skill of the sculptor and painter seems to have found its limits, and three periods are marked in Melbourne, rather by an increasing love of art, a feeling in which even the working man has participated. In connection with the eight hours demonstration there was an Art Union, and the prizes were valuable pictures painted by Australian artists. An art centre of the present time is the Athenaeum, the lineal descendant of the Mechanics Institute. In this hall artists periodically exhibit their work.

As we record an increasing love of art by the people of Melbourne, so also has the love of music grown. Our singers are often trained abroad, and our increased wealth enables opera companies to appear ere entirely unknown in early Melbourne. There is a wide difference between Joseph Wilkie’s music warehouse of the fifties and the great music houses of to-day. The corroboree is going and the great chorus of trained voices is coming. Our National School of Music commenced with Francis Ormond’s generous endowment of the Chair of Music at the University.

In 1891 he gave twenty thousand pounds for this purpose. G. W. L. Marshall Hall was the first occupant of the Ormond Chair of Music and the first Director of the Conservatorium. This school has bestowed on our city a body of trained musicians. The Conservatorium has sent forth its singers. The
wilds of Gippsland, the Mallee, and the Riverina hear new birds singing in the forest. The daughters of pioneer settlers who have perfected their study of music at the University Conservatorium, but specially in the Melbourne concerts, have poured out their melody for the masses. Three entertainments were given for the Old Pioneers Fund, two by the Albert Street Conservatorium and one by the University. The first part of the University Conservatorium new building was opened in April 1910. For the present building the Government subscribed £3000. In 1912 Dame Nellie Melba, then Madame Melba, gave a thousand pounds towards the building of a Hall, to which the Government added pound for every pound given.

Miss Mary L. Reid subscribed £300 and Mrs. Robert Reid £100. Other monies were subscribed, and other money borrowed, and thus the Melba Hall was built. The early history of the Albert Street Conservatorium of Music is closely associated with the work of the late Professor G. W. L. Marshall Hall, who, as the Ormond Professor, founded the institution now known officially as The Conservatorium of Music. After a few years had passed circumstances brought about the separation. In 1901 Professor Marshall Hall continued his work as director of this Conservatorium, which had now become an independent institution.

In the year 1914 he resigned his position in favour of Mr. Fritz Hart, who is well known as a composer under the name of F. Bennicke Hart, and whose great concerts in the Town Hall and the Exhibition assisted the pioneer movement in making its appeal to the Melbourne public.

The record of the Conservatorium has been rendered brilliant by the teaching of Dame Melba, D.B.E., who as directress founded the Melba School of Singing, which has produced a number of distinguished singers. She still takes an active interest, and with Mr. Hart is ably fulfilling the ideal of the late Professor Marshall Hall, and even creating an Australian School of Opera.

Dame Melba, D.B.E., has had a unique career. She turned her harp in Melbourne, and then sang in the auditorium of the world. Her first effort was at the age of six, when she sang a ballad in a charitable concert to her own accompaniment. She, like other great artists, unites us to the Mother land. She has been acclaimed a great singer in England, described as the greatest operatic soprano in the British Empire. She and Sir George Tallis are the only persons concerned in stage work in Melbourne who have been honoured with titles by the Throne.

Her father was David Mitchell, the builder. He came from Scotland to Victoria in 1852. He built Scots’s Church, the Masonic Hall, the Exhibition Building, Prell’s Building, and the Equitable Building. First she is known here as Madame Melba, now as Dame Nellie, and at her own school as Nellie. She studied in Paris, and entered on the stage 15th October, 1887, appeared in London 1888, played Ophelia in Grand Opera in Paris in 1889, and in the same year Juliet in London; toured Australia in 1903, and helped, as but few others did, during the war, and has given the first entertainment in aid of the War Memorial. She married Charles Armstrong in 1882. Her home is in Melbourne, and at the present time she is singing in Grand Opera in this her native city.

The first musical society in Melbourne was the Harmonic, started by William Clarke, and John Jones Peers. There was a stone in the Old Cemetery to the children of William Clarke, over which were the Masonic emblems; while over the grave of Peers was a stone on which was the harp. The Harmonic Society was superseded by the Philharmonic, which on Christmas Night (1919) gave its 369th concert, and its 86th rendition of the Messiah, John Russell was its first conductor, at the performance of the Messiah in 1853. David Lee played a prominent part in its history as a conductor, having led in twenty-three performances; but George Peak, who followed him, conducted twenty-six. Music and the drama-like literature leans on the Motherland. It has an imperial place in promoting Anglo-Saxon fellowship and federation. We have had among us Mrs. Scott Siddons. I heard her take the part Juliet, in Romeo and Juliet, and later heard Creswick play Othello. These, in the past, as Henry Irving’s son to-day with his peculiar rendition of Hamlet, promote the unity of the Empire. Ada Crossley made her first appearance in the Melbourne Philharmonic, and then appeared five times before Queen Victoria. Amy Castles was born in Victoria, and was the first Australian Prima Donna to make her debut in Grand Opera here.
In the Old Cemetery was a stone on which was the name James Jamison, and we often wondered whether this was the man who built our first Melbourne theatre. If so, he was the proprietor of the Eagle Inn in Bourke Street. He erected the Pavilion on the persuasion of a friend who was filled with enthusiasm for the drama, but when this theatre was completed he could not get a license; nevertheless it was occasionally used for theatrical performances. The first entertainment was given by a Mr. Hodges, but it was disountenanced by the authorities. What is called the first theatrical performance in Melbourne was under the management of George Buckingham. He had played in Adelaide, and an amateur company was gotten together here to give a performance in aid of the hospital. This was on the 1st of February, 1842. They produced a comedy, The Widow’s Victim,” and a laughable farce, The “Lottery Ticket” or the “Lawyer’s Clerk.” The Eagle Inn was situated near where Hosie’s pie-house afterwards stood. It is said Hosie’s pie-house was built on the site of the Pavilion. Conrad Knowles was our first successful actor. According to the Register in the Statist's office, he died on the 19th of May, 1844, aged 34 years, and was buried the next day in the Old Cemetery. He is entered in the Register as manager of the theatre. The Reverend Adam Compton Thomson performed the burial service.

Mrs. Charles Lee, Garryowen says, was one of our first actresses. She died insane in gaol, for in 1845 there was no receiving house for the insane, and she was sent there by necessity. Turned up the register of her death, and from it learned that Heziah Lee, wife of J. Lee, comedian, died on the 8th of March at the age of 24. She was buried the same day, and hers was another of the many burial services performed by the Reverend Adam Compton Thomson. She, we believe, sleeps in a musician’s grave not far from where Batman’s monument stood.

The Pavilion finished as a theatre on the 24th of April, 1845, and just prior to its close, Francis Nesbit made his debut in Melbourne. The name on his tombstone at Geelong, Mr. C. Miller Clark tells me, is Francis Nesbit McCrone, but he was better known as Francis Nesbit. His first appearance in Australia was at the Royal Victoria Theatre, Pitt Street, Sydney, on 1st March, 1842, in Sheridan’s play, Pizarro. At the Pavilion in Bourke Street he took the part of William Tell in Sheridan Knowles play of William Tell. He died at Geelong on 29th March, 1853, aged 42 years. G. V. Brooke erected the headstone over his grave. George Seth Coppin, who ran the Queen’s Theatre in Queen Street, which was converted into Fallshaw’s city business house, was born at Steyning, Sussex, England, on 8th April, 1819. His father was a surgeon, but early in life he was thrown on his own resources, and took to the stage. After playing in different provincial towns in England, he came to Australia, arriving in Sydney on 10th March, 1843. He played in Sydney, Hobart and Launceston, going back and forward between New South Wales and Tasmania. His first theatrical company was formed in Launceston. In that company was Mr. Charles Young and his wife, who afterwards became so well-known on the Australian stage; also the Howson family and G. H. Rogers. He came with this company to Melbourne. They crossed the Straits in The Swan in 1845, and Coppin undertook the management of the Queen’s Theatre. He is regarded by historians as the actor and manager who laid the permanent foundation of the drama in Victoria. In 1852 he became manager of the Geelong Theatre, and in 1854 visited England, and secured the services of G. V. Brooke. In returning with Brooke he brought out an iron theatre, which he erected in Lonsdale Street. This he called the Olympic.

Gustavus Vaughan Brooke was a tragedian. He was educated at a school in Ireland, conducted by the brother of Maria Edgeworth. He appeared on the stage when only fifteen years of age. He made his first appearance in London as Virginius at the Victoria Theatre Royal, a name that became attached to our Theatre Royal here. Later the word Victoria was left out. In London he scored a success as Othello at the Olympic, and on visiting America played the same piece at the Broadway Theatre. His success in the United States led him to take the Astor Place Opera House, in New York, but this was a failure, so he returned to England and reappeared at Drury Lane, which was then under the management of E. T. Smith, the father of Dr. L. L. Smith, the well-known Melbourne physician. It was here that Coppin found him when he visited England. He is said to have received as much as a hundred pounds a night for playing in Australia and New Zealand. He went into partnership with
Coppin in the Cremorne venture, and was financially ruined. Both men came out without a penny. Coppin recovered himself, but Brooke was on the down grade. He had given way to dissipation, which left its effects on his person and voice, so that when he returned to England he was no longer successful, and thus he was led to return to Australia, and on the voyage out in *The London*, lost his life, 11th January, 1866. As the ship foundered in the Bay of Biscay, it is said that he stood on the poop, and waving his hand to the people in the boat, cried, Remember me to all my Melbourne friends. His last thoughts seem to have been of Australia, and he goes down to his grave playing the heroic part he played so well in life. Brooke was a tragedian, Coppin a comedian. He finishes like a tragedian, while humour seems to restore Coppin to life. His fortune is renewed. In 1858 he was elected a Member of the Legislative Council; he soon resigned his seat, but is respected and still spoken of as the Honourable. George Selth Coppin. He was again in Parliament in 1874, as Member of the Assembly, representing East Melbourne. Through his influence the Post Office Savings Bank was founded in Victoria. He is well known as the manager of the Theatre Royal. When it was burned down, although uninsured, he rebuilt it (1872), and from that time he prospered. He seems to be better known now as a man of business and a public character than an actor. We seldom hear of him as Tony Lumpkin and Bob Acres, but we often think of him as the Director of the Commercial Bank, the founder of the Old Colonists Association, the Victorian Humane Society and the Dramatic and Musical Association. It is said that he claimed to have built six theatres in the Australian colonies, and to have introduced two hundred artists, among them Mr. and Mrs. Charles Kean and G. V. Brooke. He also claimed to have introduced the camel and the English thrush into Australia, and his initiative made Sorrento a successful summer resort.

*The First Post Office in Melbourne*

Barry Sullivan is often spoken of by all pioneers as an exceptional actor, who appeared on the old Theatre Royal stage in the sixties. He was both manager and star performer. It is said that he ran for a thousand consecutive nights; and that while he was the lessee of the Royal, Charles Kean and his wife came to Melbourne, and played at the Haymarket, and that contemporaneously they interpreted Shakespeare, sometimes appearing in the same characters on the same nights at their respective theatres.
Charles Matthews and his wife were brought here in 1870. He was the friend of Walter Scott, and had charmed British audiences for fifty years. Here he was entertained by both the Yorick and the Athenaeum Club. Coppin and he together gave an entertainment in aid of the Old Colonist Movement at the Theatre Royal. These were the palmy days of Armes Beaumont and Lucy Chambers, and when June was a leading lady at the Royal. Sarah Bernhardt was here in 1891. Dampier, Sheridan and Rignold were great actors. A theatre is not only sustained by stars of the first magnitude; Pollard takes the children of Australia and makes them interesting in their childhood. The strength of the stage is in its great body of trained workers. Old Hoskins played many parts. I have a clear recollection of him in his old age. He was three times married first in England to Julia Harland who died in New Zealand, then to Florence Colville and finally to a Miss Bowman. When he was 68 years of age he was teaching elocution in Melbourne. These regular toilers on the Australian stage kept the lovers of amusement alive when no comet streamed across the firmament. For twenty-five years June was a leading lady on our stage. I knew her personally, and at breakfast she would regale me with stories of Charles Matthews and others who came here. She was a tall, dignified woman with a fine figure. Her presence commanded respect, and her voice was deeply sympathetic. She recited at a lecture of mine in the old Apollo Hall; one of the pieces was “The Wonderful Wain.” in her old age she too was an elocutionist, and conducted a school for preparing the younger generation for the stage. She died last year (1923) in the Old Colonist Homes.

James Cassius Williamson was a son of a Pennsylvanian medical man who died when J. C. was only twelve years old. Williamson met Maggie Moore in San Francisco, and they were married there in 1873. In 1874 they started to tour the world, and in three years travelled over 33,000 miles, visiting five continents; one of their greatest pieces was Struck Oil. Coppin engaged them, and brought them to Melbourne 1st August, 1874. In 1879 they were again in Australia, and this time J. C. Williamson takes up theatre management with Garner and Musgrove. They leased theatres both in Melbourne and Sydney. It was Williamson who brought out Boucicault and other distinguished artists. It is questionable, however, if in proportion he brought more genius to Australia than his predecessors. Arthur Garner was articled when a boy in England to an architect (Meynell) who designed theatres. He says Meynell erected no less than forty English theatres, and perhaps inspired Garner with a love of the theatre. Garner gave up architecture for scene painting, and from that work passed directly on to the stage. He came to Victoria as an actor in 1879. He began here with the London Comedy Company, and in 1881 joined J. C. Williamson, and thus came the trio Williamson, Garner and Musgrove. They built the New Princess Theatre in 1886, which at that time was thought to be one of the finest theatres in Australia. Maggie Moore is still alive, and still popular. She captured Australia with Struck Oil in 1874, and was playing in pantomime at the King’s but recently, and has appeared alike successfully in drama and comic opera, playing in Gilbert and Sullivan’s operas. She has lived through fifty years of Australian stage life. George Tallis is not an actor, but as a manager holds the first position in Australia, continuing the work of Williamson. He was knighted on the King’s birthday, 1922. He married Millie Young, the sister of Florence Young. Harry Rickards familiarised us with the best music hall talent from London in his Opera House. He succeeded the Victoria Hall, and the other in Bourke Street Minstrel Halls, and in his Opera House, under the management of McIntosh, Ada Reeve delighted us with her humorous songs and raised thousands for the Australian Soldiers.

We are one in Britain on the stage. Williamson, Musgrove and Garner, or J. C. Williamson Ltd., or whatever name they may go under, are an Empire Company, getting talent from England for the Australian stage.

Nellie Stewart builds a Mia-Mia in London, and gives us Nell Gwynne, in Australia we reciprocate, taking their best and giving ours. She was the youngest daughter of Richard Stewart, the popular actor, and the sister of Miss Docy and Miss Maggie Stewart. Theirs was a talented family. She in the nineties played native-eyed Susan at the Prince of Wales Theatre, London. She is an Australian native, who was on the stage when only a child. G. H. Rogers was a leading man at the Royal in the sixties. He played all over Australasia, and died in 1872. We have pleasant recollections of George Rignold's
Henry the Fifth, and his rendition of Shakespeare in the eighties.

The other day (1919) an esteemed old Australian actress, Mrs. Walter Hill, died. She died on a Sunday. She came with her husband under engagement to George Coppin as far back as 1855. She appeared first at the old Olympic Theatre, in Vilikins and Dina, a play written by her husband. Then she played Desdemona to G. V. Brooke’s Lago. She was the first to play here Zoo in the Octoroon. For the last few years she resided with her youngest daughter at Camberwell. She appeared with, among others, old Mr. Hoskins and Genevieve Ward. "The Wolves," a theatrical society founded by Edmund Kean in 1815, held their first meeting in Melbourne on 30th November, 1919. The whole of the funds of the society are devoted to these in need. Miss Louisa Pomeroy played Winter’s Tale in the seventies. Bland Holt is in Melbourne, and occasionally comes in from Kew in his motor car to the theatres. George Darrell made his residence in Sydney, and in the year 1921 committed suicide.

He was 70 years of age when he drowned himself. He was a spiritualist, and held that the manner of his exit was unimportant, this life being a detail in a progressive order of life. We have had two impressive funerals of actresses in Melbourne, that of Violet Vane in the beginning of the century and one recently of Florence Young. Mr. Bruford organised the fund for Florence Young Memorial Cots in the Alfred Hospital. She passed away in October 1920, and The Age declared that her funeral was one of the most remarkable demonstrations of popular sympathy that ever followed the death of a private citizen in Victoria. The service was held at St. Peter's. Thousands stood by the graveside as the coffin was lowered into the grave. There were two floral carriages, and a hundred and seventy wreaths were sent by sorrowing friends. Her sisters in Melbourne are Mrs. W. Clarke and Lady G. Tallis. This talented young family must not be confused with Charles Young and his wife; there was no relationship between them. Charles Young was brought out to Australia by Coppin, and was for years Australia’s leading comedian. His wife was one of our greatest actresses.

Organ music has been with us from the beginning. One of the early settlers in Prahran was Mr. Moyle, of Ivy Cottage. Ivy Street has been named after the cottage. Moyle was an organ-builder, although Cooper, the historian of Prahran, doubts whether he piped like a prehistoric Pan with the reeds in the swamps south of the Yarra. A very old and very great organist was J. Hill. Our first regular City Organist was David Lee; the love of liquor, a weakness among musicians, was his. We have had no other regular city organist but our present one, Dr. W. G. Price. Charles Sykes has had a unique experience as an organist; his work extends over sixty-five years, but as a musician he was not the equal of Lee or of Dr. Price, yet he was recognized as a musician of merit in the seventies.

Mrs. Sarah Victoria Tait died this year (1923) at the age of 86. She came here in the early sixties, and married John Turnbull Tait. Among her sons were John, Nevin and Frank Tait, of the theatrical firm of J. & N. Tait, and E. S. Tait; also Charles Tait, managing director of Allan & Co., the musical centre and booking office of Melbourne. She died at Clarendon House, East Melbourne, the residence of her daughter, Mrs. Amy H. Scott.

The first to introduce moving pictures was the late Harry Rickards, who engaged Carl Hertz to show them at the Opera House. Alexander Gunn was the first to use them throughout the city and suburbs at entertainments. At that time he paid 2 shillings. a foot for a film, now the price is 4 pence or less. Snazelle used moving pictures in his entertainments. The regular picture theatre came in 1908. The first suburban theatre was the Lyric, at Prahran.

A feature in the entertainments of the late eighties and in the nineties was the Cycloramas; they were first introduced into Australia by Reed & Gross, of the United States of America. The Battle of Gettysburg was first shown in Sydney in the early part of 1889. The Battle of Waterloo was opened in Victoria Parade, Melbourne, in May 1889, and in 1892 was transferred to Adelaide in exchange for Jerusalem, which had been showing there for about two years. Jerusalem was afterwards removed to Sydney, where it was exhibited for several years, and was re-opened in Melbourne from July 1902 to April 1904. Waterloo was sold to a Melbourne company, whose early shareholders received very handsome dividends, but it was unfortunately destroyed by fire in Adelaide. The Siege of Paris Cyclorama was opened in Bourke Street, Melbourne, on 31st October, 1901, by Mr. J. B.
Patterson, who was then Premier of Victoria. Though a beautiful picture, it was not as successful as Waterloo. It was owned by the same company. The bad times which culminated in the collapse of the land boom carried the company into liquidation. The first lecturer at Waterloo was Mr. B. A. Reeve, who in September 1889 was succeeded by Mr. Walter Forster, who was also appointed manager of the company. Air Forster delivered the first lecture on The Siege of Paris. He was also the Melbourne lecturer on Gettysburg and Jerusalem during its second exhibition in Melbourne. The Cyclorama of early Melbourne exhibited for several years at the Aquarium was a local effort. It is now a ruin in the store room of the Exhibition Building. Mr. Forster is an old pioneer, having come to Melbourne in 1853. He was, when a young man, a teacher in James Bonwick's School, and his lectures on Bonwick familiarized us with that historian's work. Mr. Forster is not only a member of the Historical Society, but he is a Dickens scholar, and his powers as an elocutionist make him a good exponent of the dramatic pieces in Dickens works.

Australian dramatic authors have fallen back on pantomime and the dramatization of novels. No great dramas have been produced in Australia, but this inferior class of work has been well done. As early as 1854 we read of The Battle of Melbourne being played in a Melbourne theatre. Among the most successful of pantomime writers was Garnet Walch. He was born in Tasmania in 1843, and in early life visited England and spent some time on the Continent. He became a business man, and then took to literature, writing for leading papers in New South Wales. He came to Melbourne in 1872. He had already written for the stage, and soon after arriving here produced the True Blue Beard at the Prince of Wales Theatre; that theatre was afterwards known as the Opera House. He followed this with a burlesque, Pygmalion and his Gal a dear, and this was succeeded by extravaganzas, Australia-Felix and Adamatria. In 1874 he published Head Over Heels, a volume of humorous poems. In 1875 he brought out a book, Oil the Cards; then another pantomime, Froggie would a Wooing Go. Then, his biographer tells us, a play of his was produced at the Theatre Royal, Beauty and the Beast.

He co-operated with Dr. Silvester. All the men of the seventies can remember the Fakir of Oulah and his splendid entertainment. Walch wrote a number of dramettes, to introduce his ghost effects. Then came Hey, Diddle Diddle for the Melbourne Theatre Royal. His productions were now being staged in New Zealand. He dramatized Helen’s Babies, and then produced a comedy called Humble Pie. He was a lecturer, and eventually was chosen Secretary of the Melbourne Athenaeum, and while in that employment produced an illustrated volume, Victoria in 1880. His best work seems to have been done in Melbourne. Germany said that she only fought for World Empire to spread German culture. If it be true culture, all can sympathise with the end, though the course taken was wrong. We have risen from the primeval and formed the scientific, the literary, the dramatic and the musical spirit, and the array of talent which has passed before us in this chapter is evidence that we have given to world-culture our quota. We have often left our thinkers and writers in poverty, but the spirit has triumphed, and many men and women in Melbourne with a pure heart have worked for the intellectual salvation of mankind.
CHAPTER 8
ART AND ARCHITECTURE.

Art and architecture in Melbourne, like everything in our history, has passed through three stages, three revolutions, and reveals the traits of each. The life of the first age was pastoral, and the buildings are these required by the farmer. This industry gives character to the pioneer township.

The second stage is a mining and manufacturing age. The search for metals and the building of factories alters alike the face of the earth and the skyline; tall chimneys come into view. It is, too, the age of the Public Library, the first Exhibition, and the University. The tall spire is built, sometimes broached, and sometimes ornamented.

The third period sees the Post Office passed under Federal control and a new post office is built near the railway station, at the corner of Bourke and Spencer Streets. Parliamentary buildings would have arisen here but Canberra was chosen as the Capital. Tall buildings came into being resembling these in New York, such as the Australian Building, and subterranean toilets, chastely enamelled, choicely tiled and conveniently situated. Electricity is applied to production, and the railway system has a different aspect. War memorials are created and war service homes built. Often old buildings are taken down; thus three times has Melbourne been builded. An old colonist reminds me that he can remember when Hoffman’s Pie House stood where the Savings Bank now stands, in Elizabeth Street. Stories like this can be told of nearly every site in the city.

Architecture is the history of mankind. Man built and socialized, and his civic, domestic and religious life can be illustrated by the diagrams of the architect, by elevations, plans and sections of the buildings he erected. Primitive man is the Aboriginal. Our Australian Native-fellow is a type of primitive man. He never tilled the field or domesticated an animal or so worshipped God as to build temples. A shelter of brushwood was his habitation, and a piece of bark his boat. He discloses the commencement of the universal history of architecture. Man seemed to learn first to make utensils, and weapons of warfare, then houses and boats, and domestic and naval architecture grow together, but with it soon comes a sentiment for the dead, and Stonehenge and old British Cemeteries remain to attest this. Man in England erects cromlechs and on the Continent dolmens; so here in Melbourne with the dawn of the village comes the city of the dead, and our art and architecture are there as on our streets. Men build over the grave of Fawkner a stone memorial representing the earlier settler’s home. Historians like Bannister and Fletcher have told the story of mankind from the days of the lake-dwellers down to our own time. You can commence with the Maori woodworker; study his beautiful pahs and see the evolution of the building mind until it culminates in our Anglo-classic grandeur, but you always know that man is limited by his material. He builds of brick in Babylonia, because he has the alluvial soil of the Euphrates and the Tigris to work on. In Egypt he has both brick and stone from the Mokattam Hills. In Greece Parian and Pentelician marble. But Home being surrounded by a volcanic region he builds his colossal edifices there of concrete. So in Melbourne we were restricted by material, by the lack of skilled men and suitable machinery; therefore the highest ideal of the architect could not be reached in early times. The first huts were turf huts, or wattle and daub; we see them illustrated by the primitive sketches of Wedge. John Heldcr Wedge, in his sketches, has perpetuated the appearance of Indented Heads when Batman was there. To get an idea of the material used we turn to the letters of Lonsdale, and see his anxiety to get from Sydney artisans who can cut down and saw into timber the hardwoods then growing all around Melbourne. Timber came to us very soon from New Zealand. In Fawkner’s written paper of 1838 Horatio Cooper is offering New Zealand timber. W. F. A. Rucker offers New Zealand timber logs and flooring. This, before the Treaty of Waitangi was signed, or New Zealand had been proclaimed open for settlement. Only one European village was there. Hobson had not become Governor, he had only just surveyed Hobson’s Bay; and at that time New Zealand timber is advertised for sale in our first paper. Fawkner is offering cedar, and stone window sills, shingles and palings in thousands, and the brickmakers are at work.
making bricks.

I take it that our first banks were fitted out with cedar from New South Wales. We do not deal with the survey of the town here, but it is well to say that while the city is rectangular the streets do not run east and west or north and south; the aim seems to have been to make them run parallel with the Yarra. One can see this when he remembers that Victoria Street runs east and west. The first buildings in Port Phillip were these erected at Indented Heads. The first house in Melbourne was the sod hut erected by George Evans. Melbourne started with wattle and daub, wicker work and mud. Our first idea was shelter. Rude buildings naturally come at the beginning, although they are built by a people coming from a land where architecture was at its best.

Fawknor brought the frame of his house from Van Diemen's Land. It seemed to have six rooms. atman erected a one-storey house, near Batman's Hill, of logs and mud, with a shingled roof; Buckley built a brick chimney to it. The walls were white-washed with lime. It has a plain front, with the door in the centre, and windows on each side. E. Wilson Dobbs says, in his Rise and Growth of Architecture, that on Waterloo Day, 1836, Bear Grass (the name we were called by in Sydney) had two brick buildings, three weatherboard shanties, and eight turf huts, and we have seen that George Russell gives a similar description, but mentions about twelve or fifteen tents. Such is the first effort. The township grows, and Liardet has left us forty pictures of houses that existed in the thirties and the forties. Lonsdale's first cottage was in West Melbourne at the corner of Little Collins Street; Garryowen says it was wattle and daub, with a mud chimney, but Liardet says it was framed house brought from Sydney. Lieutenant P.P. King has left us a picture of it, showing Mrs. Lonsdale feeding the chickens, and in the picture are also the figures of Lonsdale, Hobson, Batman, Buckley and others. When Lonsdale gave Bear Grass, as an expression, may have arisen from Batman's map. marked to the North of Melbourne Bare Grass Hills.

it up. Lieutenant Smythe occupied it. They seemed hardly able to at once break with wattle and daub and build of brick, for the Government's mechanics workshop was part wattle and daub and part brick. Liardet affirms that his forty-four pictures show the chief buildings in early Melbourne. The engraving of his picture Robert Russell, of Melbourne in the forties, was brought out by a London illustrated paper, is in our Public Library. The first lock-up was a two-roomed house. He describes it as built out of the turf dug from the alluvial deposits of the Yarra, and roofed with the reeds from its banks and surrounded by a tea tree stockade. A similar description is given by Garryowen, but he says it was built of slabs. I presume that Liardet is right. The first and second lock-ups were in the market reserves. The first was that burned by the native prisoners when Hobson was on duty. A story is told that Batman's big bull once charged it, and knocked it over.

The first head of the public works department in Melbourne was C. H. Loroux. He drank freely, and Lonsdale had him removed. On the 17th of August, 1839, he was found dead in his bed at the age of 34. He was buried the next day in the Old Cemetery, and had a well-attended funeral. The Reverend Mr. Grylls conducted the service, and in making his entry in the Register describes Loroux as Surveyor and Architect. Russell was appointed his successor as Clerk of Works on 30th March, 1838. He erected the first Government brick building. He made a plan and elevation of it, and it was among the earliest buildings (although only twenty feet by fourteen), to be erected from an architect's plan. It had a shingled roof.

In this room Russell commenced his architectural work, but he only occupied it for a few months, when it was converted into a police court. Nor did Russell enjoy a long term as Clerk of Works; he resigned on the 18th of June, 1839, and was succeeded by James Rattenberg. I think we can say that our art and architecture commenced with Russell, as the building trade dates back to John Jones Peers, who had the first large contract in Melbourne, the Custom House. Russell was the architect of St. James; if it but rudely represents classical architecture, it is only because Russell found himself subject to his surroundings. It was the day of small things, when many of the buildings were built without plans, or the plans were made by the builder himself; thus, Peers designed and built the first Wesleyan Church, which cost £250 to erect, and he was architect for the second, the church
in Collins Street, a Gothic structure, with an auditorium sixty by fifty feet, while the plans and specifications for the Custom House came from Sydney, from the Colonial Architect’s Office there. Of Russell as an artist I will speak later, and as a surveyor we have already seen him. He was primitive because his ideal could only be partially expressed. When Parliament House was to be built, Langridge demanded that it be built of Stawell stone; that meant that Peter Kerr, the architect, could only express himself as far as that stone would let him. Russell in like manner was limited by the conditions of early Melbourne.

He was succeeded by Rattenburg, here he was accused of mercenary conduct. It was said that on a small salary he had put up houses for himself on Victoria Parade. He retained the office until 1846, and had a very efficient assistant in Joseph Burns. Rattenburg was the architect for the first Court House in Latrobe Street, although Garryowen affirms that the plans came from Sydney: this wants corroboration. He was succeeded by Henry Ghinn, who was well-known in Melbourne. It was Ghinn who designed the Lunatic Asylum at Yarra Bend, and about this time David Lennox made his appearance in Melbourne, and commenced building on scientific lines. But it is well before advancing to his work to think more in detail on our first buildings. I have found some difficulty in getting exact information about the houses that Batman erected. He was not only the founder, but promoted as no other pioneer did the erection of buildings here. At one time he was the owner of the prison, and let it out to the Government at a pound a week. Liardet says that the price of Batman’s second house, that he built at the corner of William and Collins Streets, was £2000, and that it was erected by John Jones Peers. It is rather an irony that in Liardet’s picture of this house Fawkner is standing at the corner window up-stairs, addressing a crowd below, and appealing to them not to bid against Latrobe for the estate at Jolimont. One man, Mr. Green, did not heed this advice, but bided.

This was not the only time that Fawkner was found in Batman’s place. Wilson Dobbs says that near to where Batman’s shepherd first put his hut there are now the principal buildings in Melbourne for ornament and colour. This seems to me to be true. The Olderfleet, the New Zealand Insurance Company’s building, and the Rialto, built in the Gothic style of architecture, with the classical buildings adjacent make that block from the Australian Mutual Provident Building to the Federal Coffee Palace the leading block for ornament associated with colour in Melbourne. Fawkner’s own house, the hotel, we are told, was built by Edward Stephens. It was used by the Melbourne Club, and was also called the Shakespeare Hotel. Like in Batman’s house the corner was cut off, and in this space was the entrance. Hoddle left a sketch of the square in which it was situated (1840), and it appears in this sketch the same as in Liardet’s, a balcony at the back of it. It was also two-storied, with a hip roof, whereas in Batman’s house there was a small gable at the corner. The site of Fawkner’s hotel is now occupied by the Union Hotel. On the opposite side of Collins Street was the Lamb Inn, and the architectural feature in that which appeals to us is the verandah running around it. It is said Fawkner built a house of straw and mud in Bourke Street.

Our first public building was also a wooden building, used for a school on week days and a church on Sundays, standing near to the site of old St. James. It was built by public subscription, Batman giving five pounds. It was open for use to all denominations. It was devoid of any ornament, a rectangular building with square openings; at one end was a curtain that screened the choristers or performers. It is in this way that Batman promotes building: he lends money to erect a house where the Altson Buildings now stand. It is said he also had a house near the site of St. Paul’s, and another at the back of the present Post Office, in Little Bourke Street. The first brick building in Melbourne is given by Liardet as the house in which W. F. A. Rucker started the Derwent Bank; John Jones Peers was its builder. This is challenged by Mr. Theodore Napier. He says John Brown built the first brick house, and his father, Thomas Napier, did the woodwork in it. It was at the corner of Bourke and Queen Streets. Win. Moore affirmed that Michael Cavanagh built the ??? Cavanagh built Mills’ Brewery.

Liardet says this, but does not claim it as the first. Cavanagh would erect the house next to the brewery which seems to have been of brick, while the brewery appears to be built of stone. This was built in 1837. Liardet claims that the second brick house in Melbourne was that occupied by James Forbes,
the Manse of Scots' Church. This may be wrong; it seems to me that that house would probably be built after Mills Brewery. John Sutherland was an early builder; he built the house in which the Union Bank was started. Henry Miller lent him the money to build. John Caulfield was another. He had a child buried in the Old Cemetery. I take it that he is the man after whom Caulfield is named.

Government House is supposed to be one of the best houses in the community, but Latrobe lived in a wooden tenement (a Swiss Chateau) that he brought with him, a picture of which we have given in another chapter. George Beaver, the builder, erected it for him. Beaver also built the Court House in Latrobe Street. Lonsdale’s second house was built in the Government Paddock, Jolimont. It looks in the picture like a group of cottages instead of one. Mr. O’Callaghan says he examined it and found it to be wattle and daub.

Bishop Perry’s house was erected for him by Latrobe; it was afterwards occupied by Hugh Childers, at the time that he was in the Customs. It was finally bought by Sharp, the timber merchant, and taken down, and a brick house erected in its place. When you look for architectural ornament in these buildings you must be satisfied with lattice work and mouldings.

Dr. Cussen’s residence seems to me to be a little above the average. It was a villa built by Evans Brothers; a verandah runs around two sides of it, and it was pleasantly situated in grounds which were enclosed by a sensible and appropriate fence. There was a building at the rear of it originally intended for a hospital. The Reverend James Clow brought over a framed house from Hobart Town, which was erected at the corner of Lonsdale and Swanston Streets. This had a steep roof in which were dormer windows, and it had a verandah in front of it. It was converted into the Caledonian Hotel, and afterwards became a temperance hotel, kept by Tankard. A similar building was erected by James Westwood, who was buried in our Old Cemetery, and used as a hotel, The Albion. Like Mr. Clow’s house, it had three windows in the roof; this at least show’s a desire for variety and ornament. This hotel was opened in 1839. We can find no special architecture in our first theatre, built by Mr. Jamison, the proprietor of the Eagle Tavern. This stood on Bourke Street, not far from where The Bull and Mouth now stands.

The hotel was two rather long one-storey houses, and the Pavilion Theatre was erected beside it. The gable end faced Bourke Street. It was a plain wooden building, without windows in the front, only a doorway, with the name of the theatre over it. When it finished up as a theatre it was taken away and converted into a blacksmith’s shop. We give a picture of it in this chapter. The Queen’s Theatre, our second theatre, was more ornate. It was built in 1843 by a Mr. Faction, for a public house. Who was its architect I don’t know, perhaps its builder. It had pilasters up the front and the lion and unicorn in the parapet; Fallshaw’s had it as a place of business. Last year it was taken down and the Truth office erected on its site. In our picture of it in the previous chapter the Lion and the Unicorn are absent; as this picture was taken from a photograph, it must have been removed or erected later for it appears in some old pictures.

The public offices all had very rude beginnings; Latrobe’s office, the Treasury and the Post Office were all together in Chancery Lane. There were earlier Post Offices in private buildings; this was the first public one. Kelsh was then chief in the Post Office. Liardet pictures them as brick cottages, whose respective fronts are relieved by a door and two windows.

From this study of early Melbourne's buildings I judge the elements of ornament appeared in such houses as that of Dr. Cussen and the Reverend James Clow, and that the first real attempt at architecture was the building of our churches. St. James remains to this time to bear testimony to the merit of Robert Russell, the founder of Victorian architecture. The first St. Francis building was a simple rectangular edifice, built in the Gothic style, supported by buttresses or piers; Samuel Jackson was its architect. He also designed the first Scots’ Church, and St. Mary’s, at Geelong. One of the finest architects of the forties was Charles Laing; he designed St. Peter’s, and that beautiful piece of Gothic architecture opposite the Public Library, the old John Knox Church, in which Forbes preached when he seceded.
from the National Church of Scotland. It’s to-day owned by the Swanston Street Church of Christ, and still remains one of the most ornate pieces of architecture in the city. It was Charles Laing and not David Lennox who prepared the plans for the single-arched bridge over the Yarra. He succeeded William Weston Howe, the first City Surveyor. Howe contributed to the architecture of the city; all public works came before him to the markets, the public gardens, the forming of the water front, the punts, ferries bridges over streams, and gutters, even the designs for private houses, for we were without a City Architect, and in his day the landowner often had to make his own footpaths subject to the judgment of the surveyor. He over-sees the clearing of trees and listened to the first pleas for their preservation on Crown lands. He planned the draining of the swamp, and thought on the foundation of the architectural landscape of the city. Just when he was leaving in 1845, the Town Council consulted with the local architects regarding the Building Acts and By-laws. Why he left we do not know. His services were appreciated. He died at Loddon, ?? and was probably buried there.

It was in his time and during that of Laing’s, that these monuments of Classic and Gothic beauty entered into our Old Cemetery, such as these erected by the public to Dr. Hobson. As early as 1843 the Cemetery had some noble monuments, but I think they would come from Hobart, Sydney or the Motherlands. There was, however, some good sculpture work done in freestone even at that early period in Melbourne, and we see it in some of the old sandstone memorials which remain. Sculpture, however, is not architecture. Sculpture and painting are the Daughter Arts of architecture. Michael Angelo was a great sculptor, but not so eminent as an architect. A building like that designed by Charles Laing appeals to us by its grace and symmetry, where if it were clothed in sculptured or carved dressings it might repel us. Laing designed John Knox in 1847. In the same year he was architect for the Synagogue, whose stone was laid 25th August, in Bourke Street. Dr. McArthur laid the foundation stone of St. Enoch’s, 24th September, 1850. I neither know the name of the architect nor the builder, but at that time Augustus F. A. Greeves was Mayor of Melbourne, Latrobe was Superintendent, and Fitzroy was Governor. This was the home of the United Presbyterian Church, and when the Presbyterians re-united, it became the Assembly Hall, and has been pulled down and the Auditorium erected in its place. Nahum Barnet was the architect of the Auditorium. He has erected a building in every street in Melbourne proper, yet his noblest work is the design given to us for the Anzac Tomb. The ideal Gothic church in Melbourne is St. Paul’s. The design of this Cathedral was prepared by an English architect, Walter Butterfield, but carried out by Reid and Smart, who were Melbourne architects. The foundation stone was laid on the 3rd of April, 1880. Its plan is a Latin rather than a Greek cross, but it does not face the east; this is due to the fact that the land would not allow of it, so it runs parallel with Swanston Street, and has in it most of the features of the great English Cathedrals.

The architects for St. Paul’s Church, the building of which preceded the Cathedral, and whose foundation was laid in 1850, were James and Charles Webb. The architect of St. Patrick’s Church, the building which preceded the Roman Catholic Cathedral, was Samuel Jackson. The Cathedral itself was designed by Wardell, one of our local architects. John Gill was the architect of the first Baptist Church in Melbourne, that in Collins Street, the stone of which was laid on 21st May, 1845. The First Anglican Church in Richmond was St. Stephen’s, the architects of which were Arthur Newton and James Blackburn, junior. The foundation stone was laid 20th June, 1850.

Architecture antedates all religious systems, and has often suffered in purity by association with them. It has at times been made subservient to superstition and despotism. The Caesars rebuilt Rome and despots the Pyramids. Our aim should be to make it in a fair measure reflect and fortify our Australian Democracy. I am pleased to be able to record that St. Paul’s, with the exception of the bluestone foundation, was built by day labour.

The oldest Presbyterian Church in which a congregation has continuously met is said to that at Campbellfield, but the oldest within the limits of the city proper is St. Andrew’s, Carlton. It was designed by Mr. Cox; this is all that remains of his work. It was built by Mr. James Lawrence, who also with Mr. Cain built the present Town Hall. The West End Independent Church is now Hughes and Harvey’s tin warehouse, in Lonsdale Street. The land was bought in 1850; Mr. R. R. Rogers was

224
the architect. Fulton was associated with the church, and the window frames were made at his foundry, and are of cast iron. These Gothic windows can still be seen in the side of the building.

In the minutes of the City Council there is a statement that Langlands and Fulton, in 1844, offered to build an iron bridge over the Yarra. These two names are the names of separate firms, but they evidently made a joint offer. That project was not realized. Wesley Church was built from a competitive design; Joseph Reed was the successful competitor, Forsyth was the contractor, and Eliza Derrick the superintendent.

There is a tendency now to restrict Gothic to church architecture, but Melbourne has rather freely used it in secular buildings. Our Parliament House is classical, but that in Sydney is Gothic. When the Gothic system arose in the middle ages, it was used in all kinds of buildings, public and private, civil, religious and military. It came almost contemporary with the Saracenic invasion of Europe, but it is argued that it had an independent origin. The Saracens, however, had the pointed arch and horse-shoe arch. That form of architecture is seen in Melbourne in the Orient Hotel, and the Eastern Arcade. The Gothic seems to have evolved in the north of Europe from the Romanesque, commencing with the steep Gothic roof rather than the pointed arched window. The highest development of it was the English Cathedral, repeated here in St. Paul’s and St. Patrick’s. Melbourne seems to have returned to the original idea, and used the Gothic freely for secular purposes. It is natural that the Norwich Fire Insurance Building should be Gothic, to remind us of the Norwich Cathedral, although it is one of the smallest and more recent specimens designed by Usher and Kemp. But it is a little surprising to find the Stock Exchange, English Scottish and Australia Bank, and the National Mutual Insurance Company’s Building in the same style. They certainly give character to their respective corners of Collins Street. Melbourne has used the Gothic in the eclectic spirit. It is not inappropriate in the Selbourne Chambers, designed by Purchas and erected in 1881, because law comes from the Temple in London; but while the Selbourne is Gothic its predecessor, the Temple Court, is classical. It is one of our older buildings, and bears the date 1854; almost in ridicule of it, the Temple Court Hotel stands beside it, built in 1902, and grotesquely representing the Corinthian order, with the licensee’s name over it, F. Temple. Parker's air-gas building is Gothic, also Allan’s music house, and in Russell Street we see it applied to a hotel called the Tower Hotel, suggesting that its origin was as much military as religious. We have seen that the Olderfleet, the New Zealand Insurance Company, and the Rialto are all things of beauty in the Gothic style. William Pitt was the architect of both the Olderfleet and the Rialto, also of the Exchange which stands beside the English, Scottish and Australian Bank; and probably Pitt, the architect, built it in the Gothic style to make it consistent with the bank; but it is much more ornamental and displays the mind of the man who designed the Olderfleet and the Rialto. Henry Byron Moore suggested the work to R. J. Jeffrey, and £20,000 were raised. The location is ideal, as the building is beautiful. I understand that it was carried out by Pitt, under the guidance of Sir George Verdon, the gentleman after whom the Verdon Gallery is named. Pitt designed the Princess Theatre. He was born in 1855, I presume in Melbourne, because he was educated in the Carlton College, kept by Mr. Neighbour. In 1879 he started in practice as an architect, and was the first to introduce that style of the Renaissance seen in the Princess Theatre in to Melbourne. He gained the second prize for the Federal Coffee Palace, and was associated with its erection. The National Mutual Insurance was designed by Wright and Beaver, of Adelaide, and the English, Scottish and Australian Bank by Wardell, the architect who designed St. Patrick’s Cathedral. The Gothic is in our University Buildings; Joseph Reed introduced it there. It is throughout our educational buildings, but they are not exclusively Gothic, some are early English or part Gothic. They have the steep roof and sometimes recessed doorways and windows, which are characteristic of the Gothic.

National education should go with a national revival of architecture. If State socialism triumphs, architecture must become a people’s study; their public buildings must lead in art, as the navy leads in naval architecture. We have done something in this direction in our Post Offices and Town Halls. In the month of August, 1841, the first building was put down on the site of the present
Post Office, in Elizabeth Street, and in 1850 this was surmounted by a tower. The clock had been bought in 1840, ten years before the tower was built. The present building is the result of competitive designs. Smith and Johnson secured the prize. The building is a lesson in architecture. The orders are superimposed; the Doric is below, surmounted by the Ionic, over which is the Corinthian. These three orders originated in Greece, and were adopted and modified by Rome, and Melbourne has very much mixed the Grecian and Roman together in her architecture. The pure Doric is seen in the Parthenon, the Ionic in the other temples of the Acropolis, and the Corinthian in the monument to Lysicrates. All these Athenian classical forms can be studied on the buildings of Melbourne transformed by the fancy of our local architects. The Greek was a sculptor, the Roman a carver. The openings of the Greek were square, these of the Roman often circular-headed. Rome had the material for edifices, and required colossal ways and buildings. She developed forms and mouldings of her own. We are eclectic and consider that we have a right to appropriate in our own way the forms of Antiquity.

Melbourne had a few good halls in the forties, The Temperance Hall, the Protestant, and St. Patrick’s, St. Patrick’s becoming our first Parliament House. It was designed by Samuel Jackson, and the foundation stone laid on St. Patrick’s Day, 17th March, 1847. It is in buildings like these you see our composite form of architecture. The Colonial architect was eclectic, and the Friendly Societies have contributed very little to the development of architecture. Few of the first halls remain. The present Protestant Hall was built in 1882, and a new Temperance Hall was erected in 1872. The Foresters Hall, in Latrobe Street, might mislead some into the belief that it belongs to an early age, whereas it was only built 35 years ago (1888), and was designed by Ravencroft and Freeman.

In the year 1847 the Mechanic Institute completed their building. Its Hall of Arts was fittingly opened by Redmond Barry with a lecture on Architecture, Sculpture and Painting, first brick building.

Our First Architecture

It seems to have been the first lecture on architecture in Melbourne. He said architecture, sculpture and painting presented to the people visible history, enriched with all the attractions derived from fiction, allegory and religion; they addressed themselves to the multitude as perpetual records of the noble deeds of the nation, and preserved for contemplation the achievements of men renowned for every virtue, civil or military, public or private, and the forms of women famed for every grace and charm, and kindled that pure flame that exalted the Spirit of Liberty. He approvingly referred to the Greeks, who deemed a statue erected at public expense the highest honour they could attain. He attained that honour himself. His statue, with that of the other pieces of statuary is in the ground in front of the Public Library. They certainly add to the appearance of the place.

His address is that of a literary man, who has read about architecture, rather than that of one who knows it. He repeats the fables and similes about the origin of the orders; and tells stories about architects and artists; but it was evident that he had not a critical knowledge of architecture. This, however, we have seen, is characteristic of Melbourne. Few buildings are true to the principles of architecture, yet there is little in the history of the art that we cannot illustrate here. Donevan and Crosbie were contractors for the Mechanics Institute; their tenders were £1920.

It is in the second period of our history that the great buildings arise, such as the Public Library, with which Redmond Barry was also associated, the University, the old Exhibition Building of 1854, the Treasury, the old Supreme Court, the Jail, the Railway Works, Chalmers Church, and St. Andrew’s, in Carlton. All of these you can pick out on Rowe’s picture of Melbourne of 1858, taken from Flagstaff Hill. From 1858 to 1888, when the last great Exhibition was held here, Greater Melbourne arose, and the masterpiece, of its architecture seems to me to be the Exhibition Building. Just as the arched bridge closed the work of early Melbourne, so did the dome arise at the conclusion of the second period, and crown the Exhibition Building. Grecian art was trabeated, Roman arcuated. Grecian was beam architecture. The Roman gave us the arch and the dome. The arch appeared in its complete form in Melbourne in the arched bridge over the Yarra. We have
man s ascent illustrated in our methods of crossing the Yarra: First the ferry, then the punt, made out of the timbers of an old ship, then the wooden bridge, then the one-arched bridge and finally the present three-arched one. When Melbourne first resolved to have a bridge, it was intended to have at once an iron suspension bridge, and John Augustus Manton, the civil engineer, took the matter in hand. This project failed, and Sutherland, the builder, arranged to put a wooden bridge over the stream for four hundred pounds. The first pile, Garryowen tells us, was driven on 9th June, 1845, and in the January of the next year (1846) it was in the hands of Balbirnie, whose men took charge of the traffic over it. Sutherland had built it in six months and lost a hundred pounds on the contract. In the minutes of the Town Council it is spoken of as Princes Bridge as early as 1848. David Lennox superintended the building of the second bridge, but it is believed that Charles Laing designed it. Laing, we have seen, was the second Town Surveyor of Melbourne, and when competitive designs were invited he received the first prize, and Russell and Jackson the second. The span of the arch was one hundred and fifty feet. It was one of the great arches of the world; the central arch in London Bridge was only two feet larger. It was built of basalt and granite, Patrick Reed being the builder. It was completed in 1850. On Friday, the 15th November, 1850, Latrobe opened it. The foundation had been laid in 1846. This ceremony was conducted chiefly by the Freemasons. It seems fitting that the men of the Royal Arch Chapter should lay the foundation of our greatest arch. The foundation stone of the present bridge was laid on 7th September, 1886. It was designed by J. H. Grainger; David Munro was the contractor; his tender was £136,998. The cost of the one-arched bridge had been £15,000. Very early in our history it was proposed to build a bridge across the Yarra at Spencer Street, and it is only now that the project seems likely to be realized, the bridge built at the falls having taken its place. In the minutes of the Council you sometimes find the falls referred to as the falls, and at other times as the dam. The dam was created in order to keep the water pure above the falls for domestic uses. Navigation stopped at the falls. Lonsdale saw that in the falls there was a natural foundation for a dam, and so by mud, stone, mortar and other materials, they added to the natural barrier against the tide and the saltwater was kept below it. At this spot in 1860, a wooden bridge was erected. It did not seem to be very substantial, for the question of repairing it came up several times before the Council. In 1883 it was superseded by another bridge, and later the present iron bridge was erected; this, the Queen’s Bridge, was opened on 18th April, 1890.

Let us now turn to some buildings that never seem to be finished. The foundation stone of the first hospital was laid by James Frederick Palmer, the Mayor in 1840. Samuel Jackson was the architect, and George Beaver was the builder. J. J. Clark, who designed the Treasury, also prepared the plans for the last additions to the hospital, the foundation stone of which was laid during the year 1912. We give in this chapter pictures both of the old and the new hospital. Charles Lang was the architect, and Samuel Ramsden the contractor of the Old Benevolent Asylum in North Melbourne.

Mr. Joseph Reed was the architect of the Public Library. Competitive designs were called for, and his design was chosen. The second prize was awarded to Burgoyne. The building represents the classical architecture, and the workmanship of the fifties; it seems to me more Roman than Grecian, with its dome towering above it, but the dome was not in the original design. The facade is Corinthian, although the mouldings would lead us to think that it was Roman Corinthian. The part which was first erected was a square building, the centre part of the present facade, a square fifty by fifty feet, and fifty two feet high. It was to have been beautified by statuary. I counted on Shepherd’s lithograph of 1871 three pieces of statuary on each wing and nine pieces in the centre. The lions were in Reeds plan, but the other statuary in the grounds are an afterthought. When the first portion was built, it was adorned only with the pilasters, the columns and pediment came later, and we have not yet thought of getting the statuary that was to surmount it. Like our Botanical Gardens, this building was largely due to the literary art and scientific tastes of Latrobe. Hugh Childers is said to have suggested it to him. Hotham laid the foundation on the 3rd July, 1854, and in 1856 the first part was completed. We know how it has been built part by part, wing and annex taking their place as the money came in. The dome was designed by Bates, Peebles and Smart, 1912-1913, and built by
Swanson Brothers. Instead of the statuary in front, Joseph Reed intended to have fountains. A building very like it in design, and which also has been built by degrees, and yet was fully planned from the commencement is the Trades Hall. The original design can be seen in the office of the Secretary. Like the lithograph made by Shepherd of the Public Library, it also contains a group of statuary on the pediment, and in the panel of the pediment is another group; both of them symbolize industry, and contrast in symbol with the warlike sculpture on the Parthenon; the plans were prepared in 1873. One contract was let to John Jude, 16th December, 1873, and another to Kenneth Gunn, 24th August, 1874. Joseph Reed was architect of this as of the Library. He seems to me to have had a mind that fed on its work and grew in conception; for instance he remodelled the design with which he won the competition for the Public Library. It was an Ionic front, yet to-day both the Public Library and the Trades Hall are Corinthian. The windows in the first design were square, but as executed they are circular headed. Just before Reed died he was a member of the firm of Reed, Smart and Tappin. He was an Englishman by birth, arriving in Melbourne in 1837, and soon after joined the firm of Wright and Kemp. Thus he was one of our pioneer architects. In 1862 he joined in partnership with Mr. Barnes. The firm which is the lineal descendant of that which Reed popularised, is Bates, Peebles, and Smart, which has passed through several transitions, amongst which was an amalgamation with Hyndman and Bates. Joseph Reed is the name that has passed into history. He designed the Government House, and his firm prepared the designs for the Town Hall. A good deal of the architectural work in the University Grounds came from their office. They designed both the Wilson Hall and the Ormond College. It is claimed for them that in designing the Independent Church, Collins Street, that they were the first to introduce in Melbourne the Romanesque into ecclesiastical architecture. They designed Scots Church, one of the finer pieces of Gothic work in the city, and in a very different style, St. George’s Church, in Carlton. Among business places designed by them was the Eastern Market, the Metropolitan Gas Building, the Bank of Australasia, and the Bank of New South Wales. Reed was the foremost spirit in all this work; he died in 1900. We cannot say that Melbourne architects have done much outside of Victoria. Sydney influenced us at the beginning, and has done so since; for instance, Sulman, of Sydney, designed the A.M.P. Building that now stands where Batman’s house formerly stood, and Sargood’s warehouse. He was lecturer on architecture in the Sydney University. Occasionally, however, a firm like that of Joseph Reed is found working in other colonies; thus he designed the Bank of Australasia in Adelaide. Our Metropolitan firms, however, do influence the architecture of the country, and Reed designed the Geelong Town Hall. He will always be associated in memory with our Exhibition Building, our greatest piece of Renaissance architecture. Renaissance means the re-birth of art, and was the restoration of classic ideals. It is seen in St. Paul’s in London. This building in the Carlton Gardens seems to me to be our greatest Anglo-classic. Perhaps Parliament House may be when it is completed. The Exhibition has the advantage of position. It stands on an eminence surrounded by spacious grounds, you can see it as you come up Hobson’s Bay. There is unity in its design. The buildings are low enough to allow of a full display of the dome; this cannot be said of the Law Courts. It may yet be true of Parliament Buildings, because according to the design the dome on these buildings will be displayed on an elevated drum, but it does not look to me as elegant a dome as that of the Exhibition, which vividly reminds us of St. Paul’s, the noblest dome in the world. Michael Angelo was a great sculptor and painter, but not so successful as an architect, and he did not reach the ideal in the dome over St. Peter’s. I think Melbourne has not to glorify herself in having one of the largest domes in the world, that over the Library, but in having one of the best proportioned, that over the Exhibition. I think that as in St. Paul’s it should be in our Public Library, and a wooden dome, symmetrically shaped, should be erected over the concrete. The Exhibition dome is singularly beautiful, because it is the central feature among miniature domes, these that crown the towers at the corners. When you look at the dome over the Law Courts you find the drum surrounded with columns. St. Paul’s has a like colonnade, and so has St. Peter’s, but in St. Paul’s every fourth intercolumniation is filled in and thus the idea of stability is imparted to the dome.

Our architects of the Exhibition avoided the danger by dispensing with columns, and throughout the building the pilaster has taken the place of the column. The building can be rendered still more distinct
and beautiful by coloration. You can see the promise of this in the coloured domes over the towers, and since I first wrote this paragraph the building has been repainted, and this renovation proves my statement. The foundation stone was laid on 19th February, 1879. There is yet work to be done beautifying the inside of the building, until it fittingly comports in furnishings with its general architecture. Reed and Barnes were the architects of the Town Hall. Competitive designs had been called for, but they did not conform to the conditions. Wardell, Terry and F. M. White, and I think also Gill, were appointed to act as a Board to decide on the merits of the designs, and they reported that they did not conform to the conditions. But the Council had already decided that the design marked Speramus should have the first prize, and Alpha the second. On receiving the report of the Board the Council resolved not to pay the premiums. These who prepared the plans defended them, and the Council eventually revoked its decision and paid the premiums but did not use the plans. They purchased from the Government the land on which the old police station stood, and from Mr. Gatehouse the land on which Sleight’s place of business stood. Then they resolved to have a design suited to the increased area, and they employed Rood and Barnes. The first hall had been erected in 1854, and in 1868 it was entirely removed to make room for that designed by this firm. The foundation stone was laid by the Duke of Edinburgh at the end of 1807. The City Council met in the Western Market until the now building as ready for them. We give pictures of both the old and the new hall.

J. J. Clark designed the Treasury, and Peter Kerr the Parliament Buildings, while the Law Courts were the work of Smith and Johnson, their designs being chosen out of a number of competitive designs. Ferguson, in his History of Architecture, thought that there was sufficient merit in the design of Parliament House to justify his reproducing it in his book, and we have followed his example and give it here. It was designed under the direction of Captain Pasley, R.E., Commissary of Public Works. The architects were Messrs’ Knight and Kerr, although it is always spoken of as the work of Kerr; a picture of the opening of it in 1856 can be seen in the Public Library. It seems to have been opened the same year that we received our now constitution. It is as impressive within as without. Mr. Nahum Barnet argues that the Queen’s Hall is the finest hall in Melbourne. Mr. Pigdon, who became Lord Mayor, was the contractor. It represents the highest form of Doric architecture in the city. In Greece the Doric was with sculpture, and our Parliament House has its architectural beauty enhanced by sculpture.

In addition to which there has been placed in front of the building, in the year 1921, the head of Victory, presented to the Commonwealth by McKenna. It is a very pleasing coincidence that at the Exhibition in 1880 the Germans presented to the trustees a large gilded statue of Victory. There have not been many German architects in Melbourne. I only know of one, Koch, and it is not right to call him a foreigner, for he was born here. He designed A. Stewart’s printing and publishing house (McCarron, Bird and Co.) in Collins Street. The first printing house in Melbourne was built of logs, in Market Street, and we now have this large printing business near to the same locality. The Germans built the Oddfellows Hall in Latrobe Street; it was then the old Gymnasium (Turn Verein,) that was for a very long time an institution in Melbourne. When they left Latrobe Street they went to Victoria Street, but gave up their gatherings during the war. We can’t say that either of these places gives us an idea of any distinct variety in architecture. Most countries have varied styles, thus we have the German and French Renaissance. The various styles of architecture are represented in Melbourne as well as the orders, unless it be the Byzantine.

Something like this is seen in the Commercial Bank. If you step into the building and look up, you will see the pendentives resting on columns, as in St. Sophia, in Constantinople. That Mosque was once a Christian Church, and is therefore Byzantine. The columns in the Commercial Bank are beaded or reeded, instead of being fluted Classical or Byzantine; the architecture is unique. I have been told that when they built it they had money to burn. The granite columns seem to be monoliths. As the church broke into two divisions, the Roman and Greek, so did architecture become Romanesque and Byzantine. The Romanesque is seen in St. Mark’s, at Venice. The Romanesque, in England, is seen in the Norman and Old English styles. The Norman is represented here both in the new
Police Courts, in Russell Street, and in the Unitarian Church, on Eastern Hill. The Police Courts were designed by an architect in the Public Works Department, a Mr. Austin; the building was erected by Swanson Brothers.

The foundation stone of the present Unitarian Church (there was an earlier one) was laid by Henry Gyles Turner, on Saturday, 2nd October, 1886. The architects were Billing and Son; the architecture is Norman.

European architecture was much affected by the Saracen. The Turks invaded Greece and took Constantinople. The Moors entered Spain, possessed Granada, and created such buildings as the Alhambra. Mahometan troops took possession of Sicily. They left behind them in these different countries their works of art. They, hating idolatry, and desiring not to represent God in images, produced a form of art that was geometrical; beautiful fret work, scrolls and curves of various forms; they freely used the pointed and horse-shoe arches. This kind of art is seen in Melbourne in the Orient Hotel and a few other buildings.

Now let us turn and see how the orders of architecture are represented in Melbourne.

The finest piece of Doric architecture is Parliament House, but some have preferred the London Bank, in Collins Street, designed by Leonard Terry. Terry was at one time a partner of Charles Laing; he also designed the Melbourne Club building. When I first looked at the London Bank I argued that it was Tuscan, but Mr. Barnet insisted that it was Doric; if so the upper stories have been added later, and are of Italian Renaissance. It is somewhat unique in being built of bluestone. It is doubtful if ever another such building will ever be erected of the same material, and therefore it is a unique feature in our architecture. It was built about the year 1865.

The Ionic order is well represented in the Bank of New South Wales, over which is superimposed the Corinthian order. We have already seen that Joseph Reed designed this building. Perhaps it is better represented in the Custom House, and Sulman and Power used it in the Australian Mutual Providence Building. The Corinthian order is honestly dealt with in the Royal Bank. It is probably more used than any other order in the architecture of this city. The Tuscan order is represented in the Titles Office. The composite has been rarely if ever used in Melbourne. The Greek sometimes used instead of pillars, caryatides. Legend says that they are intended to represent the slave women in Greece, doomed to some such labour, but as they were sometimes male, and often beautiful forms, the Greek departed from that idea. They are seen in the Melba Picture Theatre, holding up the cross beam, and at the portico of the Colonial Bank, at the corner of Elizabeth and Little Collins Streets.

The old Exhibition Building of 1854, which was erected in William Street, on the site where the Mint now stands, was suggested by the Crystal Palace. It was a unique and beautiful building but sank into decay and was removed in 1808. The mansard roof belongs to the Renaissance. The French Renaissance was illustrated in the Premier Building Society’s Building, erected by James Mirams. It stands next to The Age office, and is now the building occupied by the Blue Bird Club. It was designed by Charles D’Ebro. It has been very much modified since it came from his hands. The Bank of Victoria is Italian Renaissance. It is a replica of a Venetian palace. It seems to me that the German Renaissance is seen in the Fire Station, at the corner of Victoria and Gisborne Streets. You may not like the name, and yet not find fault with the architecture on the grounds of the name.

Governor Stanley objected to Gothic being used for a National War Memorial; that was due to the special object of the memorial. Science is universal, and cannot recognise national prejudice, but nevertheless everything has its appropriate architecture. The position of the Fire Station on Eastern Hill makes it one of the most conspicuous buildings in Melbourne. The old Fire Tower in Little Bourke Street could not now look out over the tall buildings of Melbourne. One of the first of these tall buildings was built for an American firm the Equitable Insurance Building but the first and highest of all is the Australian Building, designed by Mr. Kemp in association with Mr. Beswicke. The Federal age is not so much marked by Federal buildings. The Governor General lives in our State Government House, and the Federal Parliament meets in the State Parliament House, and old buildings are occupied as offices because Canberra is to be the permanent Capital. The change is rather due to the
spirit of the age. It is seen in the tall building and in the introduction of the elevator or lift.

I have found nearly the whole architectural profession in sympathy with the preservation of the whole or a part of the Old Cemetery. Among the architects I called on was Mr. Kemp. The firm was formerly Ussher and Kemp, and before this Oakden, Addison, and Kemp. It belongs to the later part of the 19th century, and the two decades that have just gone by. Mr. Kemp is no relation to the Kemp of 1837, one of our first architects. The present Mr. H. H. Kemp came from England 34 years ago. His firm has done some of our best work in recent times, notably the New Zealand Insurance Office, which was erected in 1888. It is Gothic, as I stated when treating with the Gothic style; the facade is formed of terra cotta. The spandrels of the arches are decorated with tiles, and the building arrests attention by its colour and its ornament. Mr. C. Butler was the builder. The Australian Building was erected the next year (1889).

The Working Men’s College came in 1891. Oakden and Nahum Barnet were the successful competitors. Oakden and Kemp carried out the work. It is to be regretted that when the College erected another building recently facing LaTrabe Street, they did not carry out the same design, then the memorial to Ormond would have stood between two creditable Gothic piles.

The Norwich building, from its smallness, would lead you to believe in its antiquity, but its dimensions proceed from the economy of the company, and it is but a comparatively recent work of this firm. Perhaps the firm’s greatest work is the Assembly Hall, built in 1913.

The Block Arcade was designed by Twentyman and Askew. Twentyman had been a carpenter; he became an architect, as several other carpenters technically trained have done.

The architect of the Crystal Palace in London was a gardener. Twentyman and Askew have thus designed one of the most magnificent pieces of shop and office architecture in Australia. Elizabeth House was designed by Grainger and Barnet. Grainger, it will be remembered, designed Princes Bridge. He worked in conjunction with Nahum Barnet in this building. Barnet designed Her Majesty’s Theatre. We can remember it in the eighties, when as the Alexandra Theatre it was very much of an elephant; it has grown in the imagination of Melbourne, until it has become the leading theatre. Nahum Barnet designed the Auditorium; but we are not dealing with present-day architects.

Our theatres, we have seen, were largely the work of William Pitt. He designed the Princess, the Opera House (Tivoli), and the King’s Theatre. The Theatre Royal was designed by a Mr. Brown, and the Bijou by Joseph Reed. I liked the old theatre, the Bijou, before it was burned down, the old Opera House, the Apollo Hall, the Victoria Theatre, the Hall of Science.

Who was the chief architect in the seventies in this line I don’t know. Some of the smaller theatres, like the Victoria, bore the same relation to the regular theatre that the picture theatre bears to Her Majesty’s to-day. The Cyclorama was short-lived, and its history is given elsewhere. It was designed to suit the picture.

Factory architecture relates not to ornament but utility, and is so varied I pass it by, but hotel architecture is always under the gaze of the public. Some hotel buildings claim a great antiquity, such as the Adam and Eve, later called the Hopetoun Boarding House. This feature of early Melbourne has been removed this year. The Crown Hotel has also become a boarding house. They were so ancient that they lost their licences. It is claimed that the cafe and office next to the London Hotel date back to 1839, and I presume that the Adam and Eve went back nearly to the same age. Some hotels have dates on them like the Apollo Hotel, 1844, and the Clare Castle, 1847. The Clare Castle was built by Mornane, who was buried in the Old Cemetery; the place beside it is called Mornane Place. But he did not build the hotel until after he returned from the diggings; therefore while the business may date back to 1847, the house does not. There is a terrace of houses in Nicholson Street, which are now used as apartment and boarding houses, which were in existence in the eighteen fifties. These buildings have nothing to tell us beyond what we have already learned. There are not many sites in Melbourne proper that have not been built on three times, whether it be church or hotel. There have been three Scots Churches, and three Independent Churches in Collins Street; and there have been just as many
Scott's Hotel or hotels on that site. Fisher designed the last. Desbrowe Annear designed additions to Menzies. The Grand Hotel and the White Hart will soon merge into one great hotel. The Grand Hotel was built by George Nipper, of the shipping firm of Nipper and See, in 1884. On the 17th of May, 1850, it was bought by a company, who intended to carry it on as a Temperance Hotel. This ideal gave us some good hotels the Victoria Coffee Palace in the late seventies, the Melbourne Coffee Palace in 1882 and later the Federal. A more healthy study is domestic architecture. Latrobe set the example with a Swiss villa. Jackson built the Tower House with a light balcony to it, and Hotham, by making that his Government House, set Melbourne's merchants building tower houses. This is not only in Toorak, but is well illustrated on St. Kilda Road and Queen's Parade. In Queen's Road we see noble residences, like Lakeside, Widford, Lyndhurst, Kennford, Castleberg, Malliga, Brookwood, Rosenau and Glen Eira, all towered, but differing in the character of their towers. This is to domestic architecture what the spire is to church architecture. The Government House, overlooking St. Kilda Road, carried forward the idea, and the house is built to carry the flagstaff. And from its tower in a comparatively flat district like Melbourne, you can look out over the surrounding country.

Naturally in such houses a feature of the interior architecture would be their royal staircases. A good student of the building trade could show us how the winding stair and continuous handrail took the place of the old newel stair. A typical house was that lived in by Henry Gyles Turner, Bundalouh, in Tennyson Street. This was designed by Hyndman and Bates.

It was a two-storied villa, and had stables attached. Turner could be seen of a Sunday morning driving along St. Kilda Road on his way to the Unitarian Church. His carriage was drawn by two horses. He had a drawing-room hung with pictures. He believed he encouraged art, but his judgment was very much challenged. His house was tastefully furnished, and his library was bought by Angus and Robertson. At his death everything was sold. The house was bought and converted into flats. It is proposed to perpetuate his memory by scholarships for research in Australian history. He was in no sense the father of Victorian history. He was preceded by men like William Westgarth, Labilliere, Bonwick and McCombie, and much that he has written is now found to be without foundation, therefore to give him a place before Bonwick or Labilliere in the study of history is unreasonable.

Many of our fine residences have, like his, changed hands. Leura is no longer the home of the Simsons. It is a magnificent piece of domestic architecture. Some of the old houses surprise you. One will be a substantial edifice of stone and another lath and plaster. Heyington, William Zeal's old house, looks to me like a lath and plaster house, surrounded and protected by balconies and verandahs. The pioneers even when growing wealthy clung to the old home.

Toorak is a wonderful suburb; a swamp turned into an ideal landscape, covered with residences that suggest alike wealth and culture. The same was true of Beaconsfield Parade, but the private houses there are being converted into guest houses. Flats take the place of the old home and the family residence; even in Toorak this is taking place in a lesser degree. Joseph Clarke’s former house, "Mandeville Hall, "is now a guest house. It is a mansion of great architectural beauty. The facade has circular wings, planned symmetrically to meet the central hall entrance. The columns are Corinthian, and sustain an superb balcony. It is situated in spacious grounds. It is, however, some distance from the Yarra, in South Toorak. It is a reminder of the wealth of the Clarke family.

In North Toorak you have the landscape formed by the Yarra. Yarravale has a charming situation; the windings of the river give it a unique perspective. One is impressed with everything about the better houses in Toorak. The Payne's live in palaces, and so with others.

One admires the glazing of the coloured glass windows, the timing of the porches, the sculpture in the gardens, and as if part of the general architecture of the suburb there rest near to the larger residences neat brick villas. It is amid these surroundings that General Monash has chosen his home, at Iona, on St. George’s Road. It is here you meet old families, the Dight’s and the Umphelbys. Mrs. George Kelly lives in a beautiful residence, Montallo, and around you are the names of old houses, Timsbury, Elibank, and Aroona. Still there is the high walls and the iron railed fences that belong to the past, and mar the picturesqueness of the landscape. The cypress hedges, the ornamental shrubs,
and the well-kept lawns speak to us of those who knew an older land. Other suburbs are residential, and have good houses, but they are not together as in Toorak. The home of the late E. W. Cole, in Essendon, is to me historic. He lived in a mansion before which arose classical columns. His private house contrasted with his business house. It was formerly Mr. McCracken’s house, and had been designed by an architect. The Arcade, in the city, was the unique creation of his fancy. While Mr. Cole had the plans made by a draughtsman, yet he was the designer. The Arcade is under the rainbow, and the rainbow and arcade idea runs through the edifice that housed the greatest book shop in the world. He even had a floral rainbow in the garden at his house. Such was E. W. Cole’s contribution to architecture. The bungalow houses in Hawthorn remind us of our debt to India. The chateau picturesquely situated in Kew, South Yarra, Hawthorn or St. Kilda remind us of the French Renaissance. The billiard room is a popular institution in some houses in Melbourne. I remember Alfred Shaw in his palmy days in the nineties, a church-going man, and yet in his house at Brighton was the billiard table. You will find them in some comparatively small houses. In this sense domestic architecture has given rise to certain modifications in public buildings. Take the word Picture Gallery, which is to-day used to express a hall in which pictures are publicly exhibited. Originally it expressed the long hall in the English houses, which were adorned with pictures.

The State dominated by private enterprise has often failed to realise its mission. It has been said that Victoria has failed to contribute to the development of architecture in school-work, although we have millions at our disposal. A similar loss of opportunity has been observed in our war homes; here was a chance to revolutionize the living accommodation of the people. Just as the navy is expected to build a model ship, so should the State build a model house. The Commonwealth Bank dealt with 12,056 applications for war homes. Half of these received houses, and the State was at work, also the Repatriation movement, each working independently. The Commonwealth let in 1895 contracts for £1,173,165, an average price of £619 a house. Something good in the way of villa architecture ought to have followed this effort. While the builders were many, the architect was one. Everywhere tenders were called, and the successful tenderer built the house, but the architects were a Queensland firm, and they did all the plans and specifications and the supervision. This necessarily limited variety in design, and did not develop the faculty of architecture in the Commonwealth. Some private houses have already passed into history, such as the house Sir William Clarke lived in, at Jolimont, now the Cliveden Mansions; Andrew Chirnside’s residence in the country; Como, at Toorak; Tara, at Camberwell; Wickliffe House at St. Kilda; Armadale House, Boundary Road, Armadale; y referred to Leura, at Toorak. Wombala has been mentioned in the same district; Avoca, South Yarra Hiltonwood, Hawthorn; Findon, the old residence of Henry Miller, in Kew; and in Carlton Air. Abraham’s residence. Mr. Abrahams engaged Law, he architect, to design it for him. This residence in Drummond Street, which is now let to the authorities for offices in connection with the Arbitration Court was probably the most elegant house in Carlton. The facade was richly adorned with columns and carved panels, and the entablature was surmounted by sculpture. But the houses that were popular forty years ago are now rivalled by mansions in every suburb of recent growth. Each suburb has its story of domestic architecture. James Arnold claimed to have built the first house in Carlton, in Elgin Street, in 1858. South Carlton, one would think, was settled in earlier times than that. Barry once lived in a villa where the Children’s Hospital is now situated.

We cannot refer to the many architects who have contributed to clothe the hillside, the vale, the banks of the river and the seaside with forms of architectural beauty. We may mention Mr. Stapley as the apostle of zoning, and we wonder whether his residential areas will intensify class consciousness or give the ozone of life to all mankind in Melbourne. Will the factory child going on his way catch the breath of roses from the gardens of the well-to-do, and new mown hay in a ruralized city? Will the Money Miller of the future, in his home, Findon, gather around him the villas of the workers? If not, then zoning is a pretence to create class suburbs. I have not referred to military architecture; a comparatively old building is the Barracks of the soldiers on St. Kilda Road. We had barracks for them in West Melbourne in 1838. It is a strange thing that in most of our histories of architecture very little reference is made to the influence of war on the building art, yet defence in all communities was
one of the primal factors in giving form to the building. The very spire to the church seems to have grown out of a military tower. Melbourne is well provided with them, from the tower over St. James' to the beautiful spire on Scots Church. And the sky-line in places is marred by their absence, especially over our Cathedrals. Military architecture within the last thirty years has come in a grotesque form in the buildings of the Salvation Army, which is trying to rival the Victoria Brewery in that form of architecture.

Before proceeding to deal with sculpture and painting, the daughter arts of architecture, it is but right that we acknowledge the services of three societies engaged in promoting the building of the city on scientific and artistic lines, the Surveyors the Engineers, and the Architects ‘Association. For details of these I am indebted to Air Campbell, the Secretary of the Royal Victorian Institute of Architects. Just as bridges, railways and tramways are related to civic life, so also is sewage, drainage and the water supply. While architecture may not secure fresh food daily for the people, it certainly does secure for them pure water, fresh air and properly lighted streets and homes, and all our town-planning societies are but adjuncts to the work of the architect.

In 1856 Messrs’ Watts and Crouch convened a meeting of architects at the office of T. J. Crouch, 51 Swanston Street. They met on the 9th July. P. Kerr, J. G. Knight, T. Watts, A. L. Smith, R. Rogers, A. Snow and T. J. Crouch were present. P. Kerr was called to the chair. This meeting sent out invitations to leading architects, inviting them to the second meeting. At this meeting rules were adopted. Knight was elected President; C. R. Swyer, Treasurer; and T. J. Crouch, Secretary. Thus the Victorian Institute of Architects commenced. They resolved to hold their future meetings in the Mechanic’s Institute. When there, Purchas and Blackburn joined them. Reed, Gill and Laing soon came in. There is a Balmain among them, and one wonders if he be related to Dr. Balmain or to the lady in the Old Cemetery. They settled their charges at 7 per cent, up to £500, and over that amount 5 per cent. Later they amended this rule to read not less than 5 per cent, for under five hundred. Their charges have remained very much the same right through the history of the profession. Terry and early Kemp came in. He has to be distinguished from the present-day A. Kemp. He, with David Ross, joined in October. An Institute of Civil Engineers is already in existence, and a proposal is mooted for amalgamation with them. This never materialized. In 1857 a letter is received from the Plasterers Society. Trade Unionism commenced in the building trade. A Builders and Contractors Association is formed in 1857, and are congratulated by the Institute on their formation. The Melbourne Building Act of 1857 is discussed, and papers are given on Building Stones in the Colony, Ventilation, Street Architecture, and Town Planning, advocating that the waste corners of the city should be beautified. Barry’s lecture on architecture had been given ten years before this. Negotiations are entered into with the Government to create a Builders Museum, in which material for building and the science of building will be studied.

This never materialised, but has found expression later in the old Technological Museum conversation was held in St. Patrick’s Hall in November 1857, when Latrobe, the Governor, was present, and addresses were given by two professors, McCoy and Wilson, from the University, and by other leading men in the city. Reed is now a member, and is appointed with Crouch in January 1858 to wait on Captain Clarke and protest against the Government employing architects on salary instead of on commission. The Institute is interested in the competitive designs for the Post Office, and suggests that they be publicly exhibited before being adjudicated on. A Mr. Henriques brought copies of the transactions of the Royal Institute of British Architects from the Society at home. These are acknowledged, and the society comes into communication with the British Institute. Knight seems to have been a prominent architect. He is still their president. Arthur Johnston is now a member, also Billing, who plays a conspicuous part. Several honorary members have been made, among whom is a clergyman. Most of the buildings erected in 1859 were designed by members of the Institute. That year it had 27 members, beside the associates and honorary members, and at the end of the year proposed to have country members.

In 1860 the enthusiasm has passed away, and it has a fitful existence; few meetings are held; the minutes of September 1860 are confirmed in November 1861. It seems to expire that year, to be
revived in 1871. We find another minute-book commencing on the 31st of January, 1872.

The Council of the Institute is meeting in the office of Reed and Barnes. T. Watts is still with them, and other members of the old Institute come in Purchas and Lloyd Taylor. Joseph Reed is now President on 6th February, 1873. We have a period when the Society is distracted with discipline cases. Just as you have illegal practices in medicine and venality in law, so you have unprofessional acts among architects, possibly these cases developed etiquette in the profession, and led to more careful framing of the conditions of contract. Rules for competitive designs for public buildings are made.

In 1874 they are calling their meeting place the Athenaeum; the name, the Mechanics Institute, no longer appears in their minutes. On the 12th on January, 1880, Mr. Billing proposed an annual exhibition of the works of the members. Glen lent a room in his music warehouse for the purpose. It was the first art architectural exhibition held in Melbourne. It was opened by Sir Redmond Barry on 31st August, and remained open for a fortnight.

A hundred and eleven drawings were exhibited. The opening of this exhibition was one of Barry's last public acts; he died in November. He was an honorary member of the Institute, and at the time of his death was President. Many members of the Institute attended his funeral. Competitions were commenced in 1881 among the pupils of the architects, and prizes were given to those who were successful in geometrical drawing, who showed a knowledge of the principles of proportion, and for plans of dwellings and drawings in perspective. Names come before us of old architects as we read the minutes G. R. Johnson, George Wharton, Charles Webb. In 1885 T. Watts was President. He had been one of those who attended the first meeting in 1856. I find that Nahum Barnet and William Lucas are associated with the Institute in 1884, apparently as pupils. In 1886 A. Purchas, another of the 1856 men, was President; Watt and he had been associated with the movement for fifty years. In 1887 Sir George Verdon gives a prize of ten guineas to the pupil who produces the best Gothic design. Verdon is believed to have been the inspirer of the Gothic buildings at the corner of Queen and Collins Streets. William Pitt has come in, and is Vice-president in 1888.

In 1889 Lloyd Taylor is president, and in 1890 George Inskip. That year William Lucas is on the Council. He is one of the oldest living members of the Institute. On March, 1903, Messrs’ Butler, Little and Haddon brought out The Royal Victorian Institute's Magazine the Journal of Proceedings. In 1889 the Society had applied for authority from the Crown to use the term Royal, and in 1890 they were incorporated. Then in 1903 came the magazine, and later Anketell Henderson commenced lecturing on architecture in the University. The Engineers Society seems to have been the first. The following letter to the Editor of The Age gives some information about its origin:

**Planning The Metropolis**

*Sir, In a notice appearing in the press yesterday publicity is given to the fact that a committee of the city planning conference of the metropolitan municipal councils has submitted for the consideration of the general body a proposition for the systematic development of the metropolis on lines of modern town planning. It is also recommended that the Government, be at once requested to submit a bill conferring necessary authority and powers upon an advisory and executive body which it is suggested be constituted, to advise and prepare for the carrying out of consequential works. The names of certain technical institutions are included in the resolution as bodies which should be represented upon the said advisory and executive commission. In this connection the name of the Victorian Institute of Engineers does not appear, although it is the senior professional engineering institute of the State and, with one exception, of the Commonwealth. Further, it was largely instrumental in securing for Melbourne its modern building code, which entailed onerous honorary work for years. Again, together with the R.V.I.A. and the Melbourne city building surveyor, it assisted the Government to prepare the exhaustive code which has been constituted the standard for the State. Also from its ranks was drawn one of the three adjudicators who were appointed by the Commonwealth for the very responsible work of deciding upon the merits of the large number of plans submitted in world competition for Australia’s capital city.

It is therefore suggested that, covering as they do engineering in all its various branches, the proved resources of the Institute should not be ignored in a matter which must vitally affect, the interests of*
the public, nor representation be denied to it upon any commission which may be the result of the present movement.

Yours, &c.,

H. E. Grove, President V.I.E.
James Alex. Smith, Honourable Sec. V.I.E.

Among the buildings in which we see sculpture is the Union Bank, in Collins Street. These figures came from London. I am told Sempel did the work for the Equitable. The representation of Justice over the Law Courts is not blind-folded because Redmond Barry argued that Justice should always have its eyes open. It was done by Mackennal. Such figures as the flying form of Mercury over The Age office and Father Time over the Royal Arcade and Gaunt's watch-making business, find mention elsewhere. Charles Summers was our first great sculptor, and is well known for his statue of Burke and Wills. He was born in England, and in early life worked with his father as a mason. His natural love of art brought him into the notice of Henry Weekes, R.A., and he was taken into his studio, and thus began his career as an artist. He was admitted as a student to the Royal Academy in 1850, and while there received the first silver medal for the best model from life, and the gold medal for the best piece of historical sculpture. He came to Melbourne in 1853, and went to the diggings, but soon returned to open a studio in Collins Street. Some of the best historical work is by his hand, such as the busts of Fawkner, G. V. Brooke and Bishop Perry.

He left Melbourne in 1862, and while away did the statues of Queen Victoria, Prince Consort, Prince and Princess of Wales for the Public Library. Although he intended to come back, he never again returned to Melbourne, but died in Paris in 1878. His brother was for fourteen years Choirmaster and Organist at St. Peter’s, Eastern Hill, and his son is still with us. The statue of Burke and Wills was cast in Collins Street, at what is now Burlington House. The National Museum has encouraged technical work. It is a group of buildings devoted to popular education, and in it is the Technological Museum, which was opened in 1809, there we trace the history of mechanical science in Melbourne, and in the whole of Victoria. The men of science have sympathised with the working men. Not only has it exhibited labour-saving machinery, but in 1882 the trustees sent their well-wishes to Mr. Ormond, and encouraged him in his determination to build a Working Man’s College; and in a response to a request from the Trades Hall, the lending branch of the Public Library was opened in 1892. It comes to us specially in this chapter, for its work in fostering sculpture and painting. Mr. Armstrong claims that the work of every great artist who has lived in Victoria is represented in their collections. An Art Museum was opened in 18G1. In 1800 the casts, friezes and busts were received from England, and Charles Summers, the sculptor, undertook to repair and set them. The Picture Gallery was opened on Christmas Eve, 1804, with a competition between Australian artists, the Public Library buying the best picture. Forty-three pictures were exhibited, and the committee bought The Buffalo Ranges, by Nicholas Chevalier. The buildings have grown from time to time, and were specially extended by the Intercolonial Exhibition of 1806-1807. As you approach the building your eye rests on the statue of the first of the trustees, Sir Redmond Barry. It was presented to the Library by the subscribers in 1887. James Gilbert, a Melbourne man, made the moulds for it, but he died while the work was proceeding. The figure was cast at the Masefield Foundry, in London. Percival Ball came out from England and finished the work; he remained here, and died here. He did the Ormond Monument next to the Working Man’s College. The figure was cast by Robinson Bros., at their foundry on the banks of the Yarra. Ball made the bust of Bishop Moorhouse and several others in the Public Library. Mr. O. R. Snowball was Secretary to the Barry Fund; he told me that it took five years to raise the money, and it was nearly seven years from the starting of the fund until the monument was in its place. He saw that Gilbert was in doubtful health, and he suggested that they insure his life. This was done, and through that act only they were able to complete the memorial. He was in the habit of going twice a week to see Gilbert to ascertain how the work was proceeding. One day he came in and found that Gilbert had lost his mind. He was playing with an image, and he turned in a half lucid condition to Snowball, and said: I have been here all night. I often come and stay here all night. Snowball got him away to the hospital, and he soon afterwards died. Then they secured the services of Percival Ball to complete.
the work. The bronze statue of St. George and the Dragon was purchased in Melbourne in 1888. It was the work of J. E. Boehm. The bronze statue of Joan of Arc was bought in 1907. The two lions are the earliest features of the front. They were bought on the advice of Barry in 1876. We might, in connection with art take notice of the noble marble staircase in the hall. It is the complement of the statuary around it. The stone came from the quarries at Buchan, Gippsland. A feature in the city is the fountain made by a convict in Pentridge, which now stands near the Treasury Building.

Mr. William Moore, in his Studio Sketches, says that this convict sculptor, Stanford, is the hero of Mrs. Andrews book, Stephen Kyrle. Stanford was apprenticed to a stonemason, but ran away to sea on account of trouble with his stepfather. He arrived here in 1852 and went to the diggings; he was fond of horses, and in 1853 gave a voluntary exhibition of his riding on the course at the first Bendigo races, and by accident collided with a magistrate. He was about to be taken in charge for this breach of propriety, when the crowd, which admired his riding, carried him away. Three months later he is arrested for creating a disturbance in the street. He is recognized by the magistrate and sentenced to three months.

A year later he received years for horse stealing, and is sent to the old Stockade at Pentridge, where he comes into association with hardened criminals of the old convict days. After serving six years he is released as a ticket-of-leave man. In 1860 he is again arrested on a charge of highway robbery. His total sentences his time amount to twenty-two (22) years. He had a mind above the average man, and in prison writes verses, and commences carving with the blade of a pocket knife. He was sent to the panopticon portion of the prison reserved for long sentence men. The Church of England Minister noticed his love of art, and got Charles Summers to take an interest in him. He grew proficient in modelling, and in the course of time commenced the fountain, and made it out of the bluestone in the prison. His sentence was remitted on the 28th of October, 1870, and he started in business as a monumental mason at St. Kilda. Several stones in the St. Kilda Cemetery are his work. He died of the stone-mason’s disease, which he had contracted in prison, in 1880.

C. Web Gilbert, who did the head of O'Dowd, must not be confused with James Gilbert. He is not even related to him. Web Gilbert is still alive and attending to the art work in connection with the War Museum. Recently in his studio at 59 Gore Street, Fitzroy, he exhibited the clay model of the statue to be erected on Mont St. Quentin. It is the figure of an Australian boy killing an eagle. He has his foot on the eagle and is killing it with his bayonet. Mr. Gilbert said to me that the boy’s face is the face of an Australian. The Australian soldier has a different face to an English soldier; if you see them together you can tell the difference. If this be true, art verifies the scientific doctrine of natural selection. The statue is thirteen feet high and rests on a Belgian marble pedestal seven feet high. On one side of the pedestal are the words:-

To the Officers, Non-commissioned Officers, and Men of the 2nd Australian Division who fought in France and Belgium in the Great War, 1910-1917-1918.

On the other side will be the names of their battlefields:-

Battle honours, 2nd Australian Division Pozieres,
Moquet Farm,
Flers,
Malt
Trench,
Lagnicourt,
Buslecourt,
Menin Road,
Broodseinde,
Passchendaele,
Ville sur-Ancre,
Morlancourt,  
Hamel,  
Villiers Bretonnoux, 8th August, 1918,  
Herbecourt,  
Biaches,  
Mont St. Quentin,  
Beauvoir Line,  
Montbrehain.

The model went to France to be cast in bronze there.

Bertram Mackennal is our most famous sculptor. He is the only Australian who is an Associate of the Royal Academy of Art. He was born in Melbourne on 12th June, 1803, and his life has alternated between Melbourne, Paris and London. In London he met Miss Spooner, a fellow artist, and in Paris he married her. He learned sculpture from his father at 11 Collins Street, and at the school in the National Gallery, and after his marriage achieved greatness as a sculptor. In London he modelled "Hercules," and in Paris "Circe." Circe is in our Gallery, so also his head of Melba and the splendid sculptures on the tomb of Mrs. Dr. Springthorpe, at Boroondara, were done by him.

F. L. Bruford, who was the Honourable Secretary to the Memorial Fund to erect the monument to King Edward, is related to Martha Bruford, the wife of J.H.N. Cassell, who was buried in the Old Cemetery. Thus the first memorials in Melbourne have a relation to the last. The movement to erect King Edward's was initiated in June 1910, and on a rainy day in July 1920 it was unveiled by Sir Ronald Ferguson, Governor-General, in the Victoria Gardens. Mackennal was knighted in London on the 20th of July, 1921. He followed up the production of his statue of King Edward for Melbourne with one for Waterloo Place, in London, and after the unveiling he was presented to the King, and knighted at Buckingham Palace. His brother, who is living in Melbourne, corrected some statements made at that time with this letter to the Editor of The Argus:

"Sir,  
I would be greatly obliged if a correction could be made to one of the particulars given in the footnote to your cable message about my brother, Sir Bertram Mackennal. The statement is to the effect that a number of his father's friends felt it would be a pity if my brother were not given an opportunity to study in Europe, and subscribed the amount necessary. The facts are as follows: Bertram first visited London at the request of the late Marshall Woods, sculptor of that city, in whose studio it was proposed he should study. This was about 1882. Marshall Woods died when my brother was within three days sail of London, so that when he arrived he was dependent on his own initiative to continue his studies. He attended the Art School of the Royal Academy, London, and spent a considerable time in Paris, returning to Melbourne about 1887, having won the competition for the relief panels for the Victorian Parliament House.

During the whole of the period mentioned, my father (the late J. S. Mackennal) was entirely responsible for expenses necessarily incurred in travel and maintenance of my brother, excepting such help as he gave himself through commissions carried out during that period. Later at the end of his three years visit to Melbourne, being disgusted with the treatment of my brother's competitive work, The Triumph of Truth, for a companion group to that of St. George and the Dragon (intended for the front of the Public Library), some of my brother's friends did help him to return to Europe.

Yours, &c.,  
H. J. Mackennal,  
Fairfield Park, July 22nd.

It will be seen that the father of Mackennal was a contemporary of Summers, and was also a sculptor.
One of our greatest and oldest Melbourne sculptors is C. Douglas Richardson, and also one of our best painters. No work in the Gallery commands more attention than Grave where is thy Victory, O’ Death where is thy Sting. It is his only picture in the Gallery, presented by himself in 1899. He came to Australia in 1858, when he was five years old, and he was one of the first students in the National Gallery. He went to England to continue his studies and returned fully equipped for his work. We have seen him in his study and workshop in Latrobe Street, and later in a place off Swanston Street, surrounded by the many forms of his art and the creation of his brain and hand. He did the sculpture work on The Age office, The Flying Mercury. Hyndman and Bates ere the architects, he the sculptor. He has represented the features of several of our deceased councillors. The bust of Sir Samuel Gillott is his; also three of these of Mr. lovers to be soon in the reserves of Carlton. He did the monument in Macpherson street, North Carlton, to the late Cr. Cock, and the figures over the Australian Mutual Provident Building. Possibly his work which is most recent and best-known is the Peace Medal, which has been scattered in hundreds of thousands, perhaps millions, through the Commonwealth.

Another of his well-known works is the statue, The Discovery of Gold, which was unveiled in Bendigo as a National Memorial in 1906. We have seen that the foundation of art and architecture in Melbourne commenced with Robert Russell. He made not only the first survey, but the first picture, and was the architect of St. James, our first Cathedral. We give here his first picture of Melbourne. I received it from Mr. William Dudley Le Souef, of the Zoological Gardens. He was preceded as an artist by John Holder Wedge, who made sketches of the primeval hills and undulations, and his primitive work is found in Bonwick’s book on the Discovery and Settlement of Port Phillip. These were the beginnings of that art that found fruition in the National Gallery. The old newspaper room in the National Gallery is to be used as an Historical Art Gallery, and Mr. Armstrong permitted me to look over the pictures. They represent the History of Melbourne from the time of the discovery of Port Phillip down to Federation. There is a picture of Captain Cook proclaiming Australia a British Settlement; T. A. Gillfillan painted and presented it to the Public Library in 1859. There is a picture of Cook’s ship, the Discovery, when it had become a convict vessel (1828), and another of Brotherly Love, the vessel he served his apprenticeship in. The Lady Nelson, a two-masted brig, is there, which in the beginning of the 19th Century was commanded by James Grant, the man who was first to erect a house in Victoria or plant a garden. This has been variously ascribed to Dutton, Reed, Henty, Fawkner, and Batman, but in truth the honour belongs to Grant. He cleared 20 roods on Churchill Island in Westernport, built there a log house, and not having any agricultural implements dug the land with a coal shovel and planted corn, vegetables and trees, and when Murray came he harvested the corn. Murray, in the same vessel, the Lady Nelson, discovered Port Phillip on the 15th of February, 1802. The picture of the vessel was presented to the Library by Commodore J. C. Wilson. The original of the well-known picture of Hamilton Hume seen in our school books is here. It was presented by a niece of Hume, Mrs. Charles H. Barbour. A picture of Edward Henty, the pioneer and founder of Portland, is hung below that of his brother Francis, who was the second pioneer in the Western District. One misses the Woodhouse picture of Batman meeting Buckley and the early settlers; that is still in the Hull family. Fawkner is there as large a life. Robert Russell was painted by Miss Alice Panton; George Evans by Robert Dowling. There is a picture of John Stewart Spotswood, the pioneer of Spotswood. A very interesting portrait is that of the Reverend Edward Jones Brewster, one of the first judicial officials in Melbourne. He was a distinguished lawyer, who gave up his profession to become an Anglican Minister. It is recorded on the picture that he was the first chairman of the Quarter Sessions in Melbourne, and a member of the first Legislative Council in New South Wales. His wife presented his portrait to the Library. The Right Reverend Dr. Perry, first Bishop of Melbourne’s portrait, was painted by Henry Weigall. The member of the Library staff who was attending me while I went over these pictures told me that Alfred Barley, an old attendant of former years in the Library, was the butler of Bishop Perry. Lord Melbourne’s picture was painted by Robert Dowling from a miniature; it was presented by Sir W. J. Clarke. Robert Russell’s picture of The Falls has been bought by the Library, and will be on exhibition in this Gallery, along with a ketch and another painting of the same scene, Melbourne, probably in 1836. The engraving of Liardet’s
famous picture of Melbourne in the early Forties, is here, along with a drawing he did of Fawkner's house, and of his Schooner, *The Enterprise*. George O'Brien has a sketch of Melbourne in 1831, and there is an old picture of the Hospital Corner showing the Reverend Clow's house. More than one picture of Melbourne from the south of the Yarra in 1838 and in the forties, and the original of the familiar pictures found in our histories, such as Latrobe's house, are there; Pascoe Vale was painted as it was in 1839. Fawkner presented a picture of the Government offices in 1845 to the subscribers to the *Port Phillip Patriot*; that engraving, which was drawn by Pitman, and lithographed by Ham, is also here. James Graham presented to the Library a facsimile copy of the original Plan of Melbourne, giving the names of the first purchasers and the price that they paid for their land. Fawkner did not buy his hotel property at that sale but at the second sale; his purchase in this sale is a section facing Flinders Street. A map of the district around Melbourne, taking in Jika Jika and other northern suburban areas, was engraved and published in London in 1839; it bears the date the 12th of August, 1839. When we turn to the eighteen fifties we think of William Strutt's picture of the Opening of the Legislative Council in St. Patrick's Hall, in 1851, which is reproduced in this book. There is a picture of the Opening of Princes Bridge, on the 15th of November, 1851, and another view of the Yarra below the Bridge, 1853. Numbers of pictures are exhibited of mining life, and Melbourne in the early fifties. S.T. Gill has fifty original sketches of the goldfields. There is the well-known picture of the arrival of the first gold escort at the Treasury, in William Street, in 1852, drawn by an eye witness. Flagstaff seems to have been a congenial spot for the artist, and J. Scurry has a picture of Melbourne from that eminence, made in 1853; he has also a picture of the Yarra. A. Robertson gives us a picture from Flagstaff in 1854, and Rowe one in 1858. Blundell & Co. published an engraving of Melbourne. Hobson's Bay is well sketched in some of these pictures, showing the gold seekers fleets. Melbourne as seen from Emerald Hill is reproduced as an engraving in 1854, by Cyrus Mason. Henry urns has a picture of the city from Mt. Alexander-road, in 1855. George O'Brien also has one taken in the city in which you can see the old *Argus* office; he also gives an interesting picture of St. Kilda. It is later when the age of portrait painting comes, but we have a portrait (not a painting) of the Reverend John West, the founder of the Australasian League, the man who represented Tasmania with others at the first intercolonial conference, that held in Melbourne in 1851. There is a beautiful painting of Old St. Paul's by Moonlight, by Ludwig Becker; this was bequeathed to the Library by Mrs. Sarah Leage, and seems to belong to a later age, but the picture of the Old Falls Bridge I take it belongs to the fifties.

![Legislative Council in the 1850's](image)

Turning to the sixties, we come to a period within the memory of many. A picture of the city was taken from the tower of Dr. Fitzgerald house. In the recent war that house in Lonsdale-street was converted into the Naval Offices, and over it is the rigging of wireless telegraphy, and the ensign of the navy.
In the sixties a good view of Melbourne was obtained from it. In 1866 an isometric plan of Melbourne and the suburbs was made, and brought out by De Gruchy and Leigli. It is in the sixties that we strike Burke and Wills, and a sketch of their departure is given by William Strutt. There seemed to me to be a lack of pictures of the aboriginals, and I felt that this as true of the whole National Gallery, and when suggesting to Mr. Armstrong to buy Russell’s first picture, I also argued that Le Souef’s mother’s pictures of native life should also be bought. In the sixties we have a picture of the Aboriginal Cricketers who visited England in 1867. We have entered the modern period, a time when we are interested in the defence of the Empire unstained by the thought of conscription, and the volunteer troops are reviewed at the Werribee. A picture is made of their review, and dedicated to them with special mention of Colonel Pitt. It is in this era (1866) that the working men go to Sandridge to say farewell to Governor Darling, and present him with their eloquent testimonial, that will be now hung in the Historical Gallery. In the sixties De Gruchy and Leigh brought out a panoramic view of the city from Parliament House.

Coming to the seventies, we see the Botanical Gardens as they were in 1871, by H. Gritten, and we have Henry Burns picture of the Domain for the same year in oils. J. King received his testimonials to his valour and endurance in the Burke and Wills expedition. In the seventies we strike here worship, and the worthies are getting their pictures painted. Duncan Gillies, Sir Andrew Clarke, James Service, and the Honourable James Patterson, by A. H. Gordon Coutes. I looked in vain for the picture of W. J. T. Clarke, the millionaire and founder of the fortunes of the Clarke family. I presume that his picture will be found somewhere; his son is there, Sir William Clarke is there, painted by Flintoff. What pleases one is to see the picture of Summers, by Margaret Thomas; Folingsby, by John Longstaff; and Louis Buvelot, by J. C. Waite. The artist remembers his master. Augustus Falk, the first Librarian, is there. Frederick Sargood was painted by K. P. Fox, and Peter Lalor, a very different man, is painted when he was Speaker (1880-81 to 1886), by Ann Fitzgerald Thunder. Finally both Roberts and Nuttall have pictures here of the Opening of our Commonwealth Parliament by the Duke of York.

Turning to the National Gallery itself, let us see a few of the pictures that are placed there only for their value as works of art. One of the earliest gifts to the Gallery was a picture of fruit, flowers, and fish, presented by Henry Short, author and artist: this was in 1861. His son told me that he is buried in the Old Cemetery, and he was one of the founders of our Art Gallery.

It is claimed that William Strutt was an art pioneer of Melbourne. He came here in 1850, and his album has been purchased by the Public Library, while at least one of his pictures is on exhibition in the Gallery. When Mr. Thomas Ham started the first illustrated magazine Mr. William Westgarth was the chief literary contributor, and Mr. Strutt furnished the illustrations. He painted Fawkner, and a picture of the installation of Latrobe, our first Governor. It is said that Strutt’s picture of Native Thursday can never be beaten. His picture of the Opening of Victoria’s First Parliament in St. Patrick’s Hall, finds a parallel in Nuttall’s picture of the Opening of the Commonwealth Parliament in the Exhibition Building. He, with others, founded the Melbourne School of Art in 1854. In 1856 they had their first exhibition, and in 1857 the Victorian Artists Society was founded. Judge Wilkinson was made President, and among its members were William Strutt, Chas. Summers, Nicholas Chevalier, Eugene Von Guerard and Ludwig Becker. Strutt painted two pictures relating to Burke and Wills expedition. His Order of March is a beautiful drawing now in the National Gallery. His Burial of Burke was painted fifty years after the event, when the artist was 86 years old. We must not turn down old artists. John Mather died at the age of 70, on the 8th of February, 1916. He was at one time President of the Victorian Society, a Trustee of the National Gallery, and on the Committee of the Felton Bequest. He was born in Scotland in 1848. We all know his picture. Autumn in the Fitzroy Gardens. This was purchased from the Victorian Artists Society in 1894. On the other hand is the sad story of Hugh Ramasy, our artist of greatest promise, struck down at the age of 29. It was fitting that he should supply the Gallery with the portrait of David Mitchell, the builder of the Exhibition Building and the father of Dame Melba. He met Melba in London while he was studying art in Europe, and was to have painted her, but on his return painted her father. Though born in Scotland, he came out as an infant with his parents, and was educated at the Grammar School at Essendon. I know his father well, and knew how
he deplored the loss of his two sons; this one so distinguished in art and music. At 18 he was the organist in the Congregational Church at Essendon, and later its choir master. An appreciation of his work as an artist was written by Edward A. Vidler, and published by the Fine Art Society. He died on the 5th of March, 1906, and twelve years later fifty-four of his pictures were exhibited at the Fine Arts Gallery, Alfred Place. Those who had bought them lent them for exhibition, that the public might know the value of his great work. Excelled only by the greatest artists, says Vidler, he received unqualified recognition. Few works are more beautiful than The Lady with the Fan. It is said that his equestrian portrait of Dr. Sutherland was his greatest triumph. Strength, Freedom, Sincerity and Individuality were apparent in his painting.

Art and architecture have grown with our city. It is quite proper that it should illustrate our city, and that Folingsby, the first director of the Gallery, should give a portrait of James Service, the statesman and merchant, and first Mayor of South Melbourne; that the Mayors of Melbourne should have their paintings hung in the Town Hall; that the last President of the Trustees, Henry Gyles Turner, should be painted by E. P. Fox, who painted our historic pictures.

Hans Heysen, born in Hamburg, to grow in art here, to forget the frosts of the continent, and put Australian sunshine into his pictures. He, however, is more South Australian than Melburnian. Arthur Streeton was born in a Victorian township, Bellarine, and was our official artist at the front. He exhibited Victorian and also war pictures recently in the Victorian Artists’ Gallery, Albert Street. He was born in 1867, and paints alike ‘The Heart of the Empire and its remote colonial outposts. The history of our city can be traced in its art. The works of our own men, Walter Withers, Arthur Streeton, Hans Heysen, C. Douglas Richardson, Bernard Hall, T. Cohen, Penleigh Boyd, and J. Mather, help to tell our story, and as their pictures hang beside the selections made for us by John Ruskin, and by such works of art as Stanfield’s Morning After Trafalgar, they associate Australian history with that of the Empire. Art reacts on commercial life, and commercial and social life aids in the development of art. The city beautiful comes with town planning, which relates to colour as well as to form. Our byelaws relating to streets and edifices react on the art and architecture of the city. We feel glad to acknowledge that in our effort to preserve the art forms in the Old Cemetery, through the instrumentality of Mr. W. Butler, we secured the co-operation of the architects. He wrote to us: “The objects your Union have in view, are entirely my views.” He and other architects realized that the art work of early Melbourne was being swept away by the vandalism of the City Council. If we wish to study the beginning of art in our city, we must go there, and to the honour of our architects let it be known that they saw this, and sent their students to sketch the tombs, while they tried to save the ground.

Chloe was taken down and purchased by Dr. Fitzgerald and when his effects were sold Young and Jackson bought it and hung it in their hotel. Art in Melbourne is much indebted to Mr. Alfred Felton, a merchant, who died in 1904, and left the half of his income to the Gallery. Through his generosity the Trustees have been able to buy great works of art all over the world. To me
it seems a mistake that five thousand seven hundred and fifty pounds of this money should have been put into J. B. C. Corot’s small picture of a bent tree. I have heard that the artist sold the picture in his day for less than one hundred, therefore it was not the artist who was helped. When we compare it with the beautiful trees of England, it reminds us of an umbrella stick, hanging not far from it at the other side of the same wall, one could have seen this year George Clausen’s picture of The Ploughman’s Breakfast. As a subject we must much prefer it. One may talk of the tone in Coro’s picture, of the peculiar subtlety of the colour, and of the full-orbed outline, but we could have that for a much smaller sum, and without overrating the picture. The chief element in a picture is what it portrays. Nature is in McCubbin's picture of The Pioneer. You see him enter the forest alone with his wife; then the child is born, and in the third scene he buries wife and child in the forest and puts a rough wooden cross over their grave. Here is nature pathetic and eloquent in a picture. You cannot find that in Corot. Here is George Coates’ picture of Motherhood; you can stand before that and love the little children. If you want tone and outline, you can find it in Richardson's picture of Death. Art is not photography but idealism. Mackennal fails in his idealism in Circe; it is a beautifully executed figure, but it is an amateur actress rather than Circe, and the execution does not atone for the loss of the idealism. Architecture is art, but you cannot parallel it in nature; it is the growth of man’s imagination and reason. The art of the Arabian is not from objective nature but from geometry, yet it is beautiful and true. We see the same extravagance in the purchase of Van Eyck’s Madonna. In 1905, for two hundred and thirty-nine pounds and ten pence, one of Rodin’s Marbles was bought, Minervé Sans Casque. (Sans casque means the top off its head). All the Minerva's that Rodin made were not so mutilated, but I suppose a fair face does not always carry with it a good head, and in this case the image of Beauty is mutilated. Minerva, the Goddess of Wisdom, of all creatures ought to have her casque. Why should we pay for the eccentricity of an artist? Let us have Ponleigh Boyd’s picture of the Spring; Longstaff’s Bush on Fire in Gippsland, on Sunday night, 20th February, 1898. This is worth the £250 paid for it. It is art and history. I tried to sell to the Gallery the first picture ever painted of the Yarra, that by Robert Russell, and all we were offered was ten pounds, That it was of infinitely more value to the community than Corot’s picture. They paid more for it later and secured it. There is yet hope that this view will be accepted. The Trustees are about to open a Historical Art Gallery in the old newspaper room. There will appear the pictures of Lord Melbourne, Banks, and Robert Russell, drawn by Alice Julie Panton; Francis Henty, by Edward A’Beckett; Edward Wilson of yore of The Argus, by Thomas Woolnor. Spotswood’s portrait, presented by his son-in-law, Richard Seddon, will be there. Perhaps they might intrude a little marble and give us Charles Sturt, the Explorer, by Charles Summers. A portrait of Flinders will be there, and Robert Hoddle, the surveyor; Latrobe and other notabilities. Art should be represented there in its infancy, even if imperfect. It is Melbourne’s first art, and has a right to a place in the Gallery.

A, J. White was a student in the National Gallery. While here he was not known, but he went to England and won distinction. He painted an advertisement for Pears’ Soap, which the world took note of. It reminds us of Withers painting one for Edwards, our tea merchant, which is now recognized as one of his best productions. A painter unknown in our Art Gallery is Burt. He painted a picture of Batman making his treaty with the aboriginals at Merri Creek.

This was hung for a time in Parliament House. I saw it in an auctioneer’s shop in Collingwood. Burt claimed that he knew the creek before it had been transformed. Did he, however, give the correct features to Batman? If he did, then it was a good picture neglected. His father had been a Member of Parliament, and lived to an extreme old age; not so the son, he died some years ago. Walter Withers wife recently gave an exhibition of her husband’s paintings, and she wrote the biography of him for the series of biographical sketches being brought out by Alexander McCubbin. He was born in England on 22nd October, 1854, came to Victoria in 1887, and died on the 13th of October, 1914. He is therefore one of our recent artists, and one who developed his art in Victoria. He is specially known for his sketches in Garryowen's Chronicles of Melbourne. His pictures in the National Gallery are Tranquil Winter and The Silent Gums. For a time he was a
draughtsman in the firm of William Inglis & Co., and later was with Ferguson and Mitchell. He exhibited his work in the Old Academy Melbourne. He knew most of our artists, and was friendly with e., Fox, Mr. and Mrs. John Longstaff. He lived for a time at Kew, and was there visited by Arthur Streeton. Conder and Streeton, together with Tom Roberts, writes Mrs. Withers, were three painters who first settled in the large deserted wooden house on the Eaglemont Estate, in Heidelberg. To them Fred. McCubbin became a frequent visitor. He is known for his threelfold picture of The Pioneers, in the Gallery. Withers spent his last days at Eltham, and some of his best pictures pertain to the Lower Plenty. His home was abode of the Muses. His wife and widow was and is a musician, and the gums were not always silent. He could see the beauty of the forest, and she caught its melody, and associated with art and music a love of literature.

Withers, in his day, was in the Old Cemetery, and sketched Batman's monument, and made one or two sketches there. Frances Tyrrell Gill was there in 1889, and made her sketches for the Centennial Magazine Batman’s Grave, The Mutability of Fame, A Neglected Walk and Frequent Visitors, the birds. When we were carrying on the agitation, Miss Leschkan came from her study in Temple Court and painted Batman’s monument amid its old scenes. Miss Portia Geach came. She had an exhibition of her etchings in the Athenaeum, and she, too, etched Batman’s monument. So the earliest art, that recorded There, is associated with that of the present time. I look back a quarter of a century and see a tall old man walking up the aisle of the church in Lygon Street. He is generally accompanied by a friend. It is T. Flintoff, the portrait painter. He is an artist and a Christian. I do not mention this to reflect on the artists who are not Christians, but because this man had an enthusiasm for making converts, and put his religion into other men without intruding his personality. He induced men to come with him to church, brought them under the spell of the preacher, and then left the preacher to do the rest. It is said that in this way he induced one hundred persons to join the church. Yet there is a strong suspicion that this man committed suicide, from the bottle of poison beside him at death. We took the generous view that he drank the wrong medicine. He was an artist of merit, and in the National Gallery is his paintings of Sir William Clarke and George Augustus Thomson. Thomson visited Melbourne in 1836, and returned and settled here in 1872. There is also a chalk drawing of his there, it is of the Honourable John Basson Humphrey, first Commissioner of Mines in Victoria; this was drawn in 1860. He painted some of my friends, and was known as a pioneer artist.

We are living in an age of science, and that ago, like the periods that brought forth Classical, Byzantine, Romanesque, Gothic and Renascent architecture, will beget a styles of architecture and art eclectic, but yet its own. As long as the mind of man grows will we have manifestation in form of his higher thinking. Liberty will in itself find expression in temple and memorial, but science will perhaps find its best expression in the homes of the people, but our memorials to the dead will also be subject to this higher thought. Mackennal tried to symbolize it, when he proposed that the Triumph of Truth be placed in front of the Public Library with St. George and the Dragon, but instead of this we get Joan of Arc. I cannot think that the monument of General Gordon came out of mere admiration for a warrior. Robert Burns statue represents literature and democracy as much as he does Scotland. Our many war memorials should reflect rather the principles for which we fight for the virtues of the battle. We have two on St. Kilda Road to the men who fell in the South African war the obelisk erected to the entire body of men who volunteered, and especially to those who lost their lives, and that erected to the Fifth Contingent, designed by George De Lacey Evans, and built by J. Hamilton. Mr. Hamilton told me that he finished it in February, 1905, but that it was unveiled later, and that the money to build was subscribed chiefly by the contingent themselves. What it symbolised he was not able to tell me; that seems known only to the architect himself. It is nevertheless an ornament to the road, and a historic reminder of the war, and seems to symbolize Defence. The tower idea is well expressed. That recently erected opposite the Domain Road will be unveiled this year. It is chiefly due to the benevolence of Cr. Allen, who gave a large sum of money towards its erection. It took ten years to get the full amount, and was practically completed in October, 1923. Irwin and Stevens, architects, won the first prize when competitive designs were
called for. The National War Memorial is dealt with in another chapter. But we may mention here that we proposed to the Committee that a portion of the money should be spent in placing the tomb of an unknown soldier beside our memorial to the pioneers on Flagstaff Hill and we suggested to the returned soldiers that it be a star memorial. There are star temples in India, and Captain Cook erected a star memorial at Tahiti to commemorate the observation of the transit of Venus. A seven-pointed star plan could be appropriately used, and at each point of the star a marble tent. While from the centre there would arise spear-like, a star obelisk seven times steepled like the steeples of Christopher Wren, and pinnacle with a golden star, Native and white marble, touched with gold. Thus would Patriotism, Valour, Truth, Liberty, and Righteousness be memorialized. England has accepted our proposition, and France, Italy, and America followed in memorializing the soldier in the Cemetery. Just as the Statue of Washington is placed in Trafalgar Square by the side of the column of Nelson, so we associate the old and the new, on the Broadway of federation. Art and Architecture have yet to minister to the building of the Temple of Liberty on Flagstaff Hill to the memory of our old pioneers. The old pioneer age from the standpoint of the architect, represents an event in the life of mankind. It brought forth men gifted by God with power to recognize worth in others. The pioneer saw the value of the carpenter, the man who framed the farmhouse. He became under primitive conditions especially a man of worth, just as the architect of a great church was to the old world.

The fishers dwelling in the whaling settlements made their house the manor house of the district. The man of resource in the wilderness made the plan of the colony both generally and in detail. The main street in Sydney runs along the line of the bullock track. We are building on their foundation, and it is because they saw rightly, and understood the appropriate use of materials, that we have a beautiful city, and can march forward without hindrance.

CHAPTER 9
NAVAL AND MILITARY MEN.

During the season of the war we grew enthusiastic over the multiple battle line which guarded the shores of our motherland. Our colours floated from every masthead as far as the eye could reach
and we felt ourselves secure, but war is only for a brief period, and to-day these ships rest securely in the quiet and secluded waters of Esquimalt in Canada, or in the picturesque harbour of Sydney; or, clothed in bunting, visit some fete, or travel around the world like the recent fleet that visited Melbourne. Wilson’s Promontory. Lighthouse, Point Lonsdale, before the war Britain and America remembered together the achievements of Hudson and Fulton. The one who explored the seas and had his name bestowed on the Hudson River, and the other who invented a steamboat to traverse that river. These men were Anglo-Americans, and at the Hudson-Fulton Fete, our ships in New York Harbour helped to cement the long peace between the two divisions of the Anglo-Saxon world. There are therefore grounds for enthusiasm over the fleet alike in war and peace.

Our enemies talk of the freedom of the seas. They are free, because England made them free. The British Israelite says Britannia came from two Hebrew words, Brith, a covenant, and Annia ships, and that God made a covenant in ships with England, and chose her from the many to be the mother of nations and the mistress of the seas. I, however, would rather believe the legend that the word came from Brutus, and that our motherland is the land of Brutus. However, it is true that she has a covenant in ships, and has fulfilled that covenant by keeping the seas free. She has banished from them the pirate and the slaver, and given the world of commerce a universal code of signals. By her influence came the submarine cable, wireless telegraphy, and our broad international fellowship. She tells us where the icebergs, the icefields and the waterlogged vessels float. She erects lighthouses, sounds the deep sea, surveys the coast, and builds stations and observatories. Is present to help after the earthquake and the volcanic eruption; saves the merchant vessel from scurvy, and banishes starvation from the high seas by prescribing the diet of the sea. You cannot load your ship below the plimsol line, nor carry infection to a port. The fisheries of the world are guarded, and you cannot any longer ruthlessly massacre the game of the high seas. All our seals are gone from our coast, where they once abounded. Had England’s present policy been pursued they would be still here. We rush to the sinking Lusitania, and demand benevolence in our ocean empire. Darwin goes on a naturalist’s voyage around the world in a man-o-war, and Livingstone’s body is carried from Africa in the same kind of ship. Cook explores the South Seas, Flinders surveys and circumnavigates Australia, and Captain Collins comes to Port Phillip in a ship of the navy.

England, when the great war was over, joins the disarmament conference at Washington, and on the 12th of November, 1921, agrees to Harding’s proposals, and went further and argues that the submarines shall forever be abolished. When war is no more her disarmed navy remains, as a bond of fellowship in an ocean empire, and a forerunner of national shipping.

The first vessels in these waters were sealers and whalers, who followed Bass in his discovery of the Straits. They were off the coast before Flinders entered the port, such as the Britannia and Harrington. It is said that the first vessel that filled with oil around Portland was The Socrates. Her venture was successful, and stimulated whaling on this part of the coast.

Eighty vessels went into Port Phillip during the first year of its existence as a port (1836). The early seamen, the men who frustrated Napoleon and guarded our seas, were buried in our Old Cemetery. Foremost among these I place George Ward Cole, who built here the first screw steamer south of the equator, The City of Melbourne, and who erected our first private wharf, long known as Cole’s wharf.

Captain Cole was born in Durham, England, at Lumley Castle, on the 15th of November, 1793. He entered the Royal Navy as a volunteer, and fought for us during the Napoleonic War. On retiring from the navy, he traded around the world, and at length came to Melbourne in the Water Lily. There are men alive to-day who can remember the launching of his vessel, The City of Melbourne.

He was truly a great man, and his life is sketched in Blair’s Australasian Cyclopaedia, and in the Australian Men of the Times. He was but one of several naval and military men buried in the Old
Cemetery. Miss Cole is now alive, though very far advanced in life. I quote here the letter she sent me:-

28th May, 1918.

Dear Sir,

In answer to your letter of the 23rd inst., you are quite correct in saying my late worthy and much-loved father is buried in the Old or Founders Cemetery. I have my family burying place, 20 ft. x 10 ft., a bluestone and iron rail round it, and it is flagged all over. No monument is there. My father, the Honourable George Ward Cole, Commander in the Royal Navy, Fellow of the Royal Geographical Society, England, Member of the executive and Legislative Councils, died 25th April, 1879. Born 15th November, 1793. My mother, homas Anno, daughter of the late William Gordon McCrae, Esq., of Westbrook, near Edinburgh, County Midlothian, Scotland, died 20th June, 1898. My step-brother, Ward Lake, by Eliza, daughter of the late Colonel Charles Brietzke, of the H.E.I.C.S., widow of the late Robert Cantey, Esquire, M.D., H.E.I.C.S., who was drowned in Hobson's Bay 1st January, 1846. My father’s step-son, George Cantey, by his first wife, Eliza, daughter of Lieut.-Colonel Charles Brietzke, of the Honourable East India Co. Service, died aged 23, before 1846. My brother, George Ward, died 16th April, 1852. My brother, Willis Gordon McCrae, died 5th May, 1866. My sister, Elizabeth Lake Ward, died 18th April, 1848, aged one year. My brother, Farquhar McCrae, Barrister-at-Law, died 7th May, 1879. My sister, Agnes Bruce, died 20th October, 1895. My cousin, Phillip Henry James, son of the late Reverend Alfred James, M.A., J.P., Fellow of the University of Durham, Rector Burwarton, Salop, by Lucy, daughter of the Reverend Thomas Woodward, Rector of Hopton Wafers, Salop, England, died 9th October, 1917, buried 11th October, 1917.

Mrs. Roach and her infant child are buried in my ground, at the north end. She was the daughter of an old friend of my father, the late Mr. Nicholson. She was buried in the forties, before my brother Ward died. All these I have mentioned are buried in my ground. At the end of it is the family burial place of late Undo Farquhrn McRae, M.D., 5th Dragoon Guards, the Enniskillen’s, a very clever man, who came from Europe for his health, and held the highest testimonials for his talent. He died in Sydney, but his remains were brought from there and buried beside his mother, the late Mrs. William Gordon McCrae, who came out with him and his wife and child in the first ship that came direct to Melbourne in June, 1839, The Midlothian. Captain Morrison. My late mother and her sister Margaret accompanied them Margaret, married the Late David John Thomas, M.D., who came out in 1838 and was very talented. He was the eldest son of William Thomas, Esq., of Llagnyberllan, Carmarthenshire, South Wales. He was the first surgeon elected to the Melbourne Hospital. He was buried in the Melbourne General Cemetery 3rd June, 1871. In Dr. F. McCrae’s ground lie his own remains, his mother, his infant grandchild, George Ward Cole Cadell, son of George Cadell, Esq., cousin of the explorer, and Agnes George Gordon McCrae, daughter of the Late Andrew Murison McCrae, Esq., Police Magistrate, Victoria. Do excuse my not tidy letter; I have been writing in haste. I well remember one could hardly walk in the Old Cemetery for the graves were so thick, and nearly every funeral used to pass my father’s old house at the corner of William and Latrobe Streets, opposite the Royal Mint. The tombstones were wood, hence their coming to decay.

Captain Cole, I learn from the minutes of the City Council, was auditor for the Town Council and resigned the position 25th April, 1843. Captain Cain resigned the position of assessor of Lonsdale Ward at the same time and for entirely different reasons.

The old caretaker used to save up bits of them. I do hope and trust that it may be kept sacred to the memory of the early brave and courageous pioneers, for all whom did their part in life towards founding the State of Victoria, with its Capital, Melbourne.

Yours faithfully,

Margaret M. Ward Cole.
Among the many positions that Captain Cole held was that of Member of the Legislative Council. In his old age he was the Honourable George Ward Cole. This is Judge Higginbotham's tribute to him, published for the first time:-

A short memoir of the late Honourable George Ward Cole, Commander in the Royal Navy, Member of the Executive and Legislative Councils of Victoria, by the Late George Higginbotham:-

Esq., Chief Justice of Victoria.

From 1863 to 1868 Captain Cole gave a constant, earnest and effective support to the Government of Mr. McCulloch, of which he was during a part of that time the representative in the Legislative Council. A diligent student and admirer of the American statesman, Henry Clay, he was a convinced and an ardent Protectionist, and he earnestly supported the scheme for the revision of the tariff introduced by the Government. In the contest which followed between the two houses of the Legislative, he upheld almost alone in the Legislative Council the claim of the Legislative Assembly to the exclusive control of the public finances both in the imposition of taxation and in the appropriation of public money granted to the Crown by the representative branch of the Legislative.

In that long, arduous and fruitless struggle the subject of this notice displayed a high courage and constancy in the face of extraordinary difficulties, aggravated for him by physical infirmity, which obtained at the time hardly adequate attention, and have, perhaps, never since received due recognition. His fairness and moderation of speech compelled even the most exasperated of his opponents to pay to him the tribute of personal respect.

From 1868, when Mr. McCulloch’s Government went out of office, Captain Cole took no prominent part in public affairs, but he never ceased to advocate with his pen his favourite plan of defence of the Australian colonies from aggression in time of war by gunboats rather than by forts. He insisted in the same way upon the necessity for establishing agricultural training schools, and he disseminated information gained by diligent reading respecting the best methods of cultivating various plants suitable to the Australian climate and soil. Upon these and many other subjects connected with material and industrial progress which constantly engaged his attention, the simplicity and straight forwardness of his intellect led him quickly to practical conclusions which were some time in advance of the prevailing opinion of the hour. He was always thinking of the public welfare, and was never wearied in advocating measures which he thought calculated to promote it. To the writer of the paper, who had the privilege of intimate acquaintance with him during nearly the whole of the last twenty years of his life, no politician in recent Australian history appears to present a record of purer and more sincere patriotism, or of more unselfish and benevolent political action than Captain George Ward Cole.

While I have given preference to Captain Cole because he built the first steam vessel built here, yet we must not forget that the first vessel built here was a brig, the Jane Cain, built by Captain Cain. She was launched on 27th January, 1848, on the south bank of the Yarra Basin. Five thousand people were present, and the Temperance Band played selections. Cole’s screw steamer was not launched until three years later, 20th February, 1851. The Jane Cain was a beautiful barque, fitted with spars chiefly of New Zealand growth, and it was intended that she should carry our produce to England. Captain Cain contemplated going with her, but that year (28th June, 1848) he died. He was 45 years of age. His loss was deeply regretted, and he was buried in the Old Cemetery. There is now no reference to his death on the stone, but his eldest son, James William, who was only twenty years of age, is mentioned on the slab that was stretched horizontally over the grave. He died in the year 1850, and Captain Cole’s son, Ward Luke Cole, when a mere youth, was drowned in Hobson’s Bay in 1846. The first naval funeral in Melbourne was in 1840. It was given to Captain William Chessen, Captain of the Mary Ridgeway.

He died of consumption, and all the masters and officers and many of the crews of the vessels lying in the bay followed his body to the graveyard. His grave was in line with that of several of his seafaring brethren. For instance, in the same line, in the Episcopalian ground, was the stone over the grave of
William Stephenson, aged 22, third mate of the *barque Heroine*, commanded by Captain Coltish. The epitaph says: Drowned while discharging his duty, 6th March, 1845. This stone was leaning over, and that of Chesser had fallen down, and on it was a broad arrow, showing that it was made in the Government service.

The first steamer anchored in the bay was the *James Watt*, on the 4th July, 1837. The first shipping company was The Port Phillip Steam Navigation Company. Directors: Arthur Ivemmis, J. D. Lyon Campbell, P. W. Welsh, Hugh Jamison, G. W. Cole, W. Langborne, C. Howard and J. Graham. I think that all these were represented in the Old Cemetery. The company was established in 1840. In the early days they moored their vessels to the trees. Cole's wharf was the harbinger of our great and animated waterfront, where ocean vessels discharged their cargo. In those days they lay out in the bay. The long voyages killed many. We remembered how William Ross was killed; then there was a young man here, Henry Gisborne, Private Secretary to Richard Bourke, a great sport, and one of these who selected Flemington for a racecourse. He wrote the first petition for Separation. This was before 1841, for in that year he starts for England, and dies between the Cape of Good Hope and St. Helena. He is not here, but James Jackson, who died at sea, was here, and John Thomas Roll, a lad of sixteen, is drowned at sea and was mentioned on the monument in Captain Roll’s grave. Cecilia Sarah Cohen died on a voyage of the steamship *Great Britain*, in October 1853.

They did not commit her body to the deep, but brought it into port, and the Jews buried it here in a neat grave, surrounded by a railing. Recently the City Council exhumed her remains, and carried them out to Fawkner. When they did so they removed a valuable memorial from the city.

The *Great Britain* is described as one of the most famous of the early liners, and the first steamer from England to visit us. There are men alive who can remember the gun salute when she arrived in Port Phillip. She was the first iron screw steamer to cross the Atlantic, and was the precursor of the modern liner. She was beautifully fitted up. Her dining room extended the whole breadth of her hull, yet to-day she would be regarded as a comparatively small vessel, only 274 feet long, with a tonnage of 3270 tons, and a speed of eleven knots.

*St Kilda Pier in the 1880's*

Among the many captains who were buried in the Old Cemetery were David Roy, of the *Gipsy Queen of Alloa*; also William Mattinson, G. Stitt, J. K. Smith, mariner of the Port of Hobart Town,
and Frederick Branson, the Captain of *The Thames* steamer. He was drowned in the Yarra. When living he was highly respected, and now he is truly and deeply regretted. These men are mentioned on the stones that were in the Old Cemetery. Close by is Flagstaff Hill, on which we buried the first dead shepherds and ship workers, and they called it Burial Hill. When our Cemetery was opened it became the Signal Station for the ships entering port. Buokland an ex-convict, had charge of it. He was a well-read man, and accumulated a library. There is generally a prejudice against a man who has been in prison, and it operated against him, and he had to give up his position. He went to live in Fitzroy. He sustained himself on what he had earned for some time, but when it was about expended, he took his books down to the Mechanics Institute, and made a present of them to its Library, and then he went home and blew his brains out. They brought his body to the Cemetery in a cart, and buried it on the eastern side, near the fence, but they did not dig the grave deep enough, and when it rained, the coffin was disinterred, and he had to be buried a second time. Now he sleeps in a nameless grave. His successor was George Fisher. He had a splendid telescope, through which he looked at the ships by day and the stars by night. He, in course of time, retired, and a Scotch brewer sent him every week a keg of ale to make merry with his friends. Whether he died from this, or from some other cause, I know not, but he in his turn comes to the Old Cemetery.

Different countries develop different phases of character, and exhibit different forms of heroism. Heroism of a high order is brought out by the trials of pioneer life. In America our men faced Indians, bears, rattlesnakes, blizzards and cyclones; in India, mutiny, tigers, the cobra, famine and leprosy: in Africa, native bears, wild beasts and slavery. Australia is different. Her life is peculiar, and her ways at the antipodes of many lands. The sun circles north, the trees shed their bark and are evergreen, the animals carry their little ones in a pouch, the aboriginals belong to the childhood of man, and the ocean isolates us from the old civilizations. So our calamities were all our own. They were the trials of a long voyage; the struggle to keep the convict under control, a treacherous association with the aboriginals. No wild beasts, but snake bite, fires without water to extinguish them, explosions from having nowhere to store our gunpowder, cattle troubles: they will not swim the stream, and they die under the drought, and the dingo preys on the sheep. The man has a strenuous life, and wearied lies down and dies young. If the great flood or the swampy ground, did not kill him, if he would not die from bad water and improper sewage, and he would neither get dysentery or fever, then the bushranger would come and kill him; and so the pioneer, as the Old Cemetery shows, generally died young. But the special phase of calamity that this chapter brings me to relates chiefly to the perils of the sea.

The two first sailing vessels direct from Britain were the *Midlothian* and the *William Bryan*; they got in the same day, the Scotchman coming in first, on the 17th of June, 1839. Both barques were 600 tons burden.

Our first great shipwreck was the wreck of the *Catarque*, on King Island, at the entrance to Bass’s Strait, on the 4th of August, 1845. She sailed from Liverpool and was a vessel of 800 tons burden. She had on board 408 souls, 302 emigrants, two doctors and a crew of forty-six, nine only of whom survived the wreck, and among those nine only one emigrant, Solomon Brown, and strange to say this man a few months afterwards was drowned in a creek a short distance from Melbourne. I presume that his body was buried in the Old Cemetery. C. W. Finlay was master of the vessel. He perished in the wreck, but his chief mate, Thomas Guthrie, was saved, but later on drowned in the wreck of another vessel of! the coast of South Australia. 304 bodies were washed up on the shore, and buried by Mr. David Howie, who had a sealing party on the Island.

The Government erected a fitting memorial over their graves. Two passenger vessels were burned at sea prior to this wreck *The Australia* in 1840, and *The India* in 1841, and the wreck of the *Clonmel*, without loss of life, took place earlier. The Hunter River Company brought out *The Shamrock* and *Clonmel* for the inter-colonial trade. *The Clonmel* was a paddle steamer, which left Sydney with 75 passengers and crew, she went on shore at Corner Inlet, and every person was landed in safety. A Mr. D. C. Simson, with Mr. Edwards, a fine seaman, left the inlet in a whale boat, and carried the news of the disaster to Melbourne. Simson’s account of the wreck appeared in *The Gazette*. Captain Roach was the Melbourne agent for the *Clonmel*, and he with the harbour
master went at once with two small vessels to the rescue, and brought all the shipwrecked people to Melbourne in safety. The Clonmel was totally destroyed, but the loss led to the exploration of the inlet, and the discovery of the land-locked lake. Bass had seen the inlet, but did not explore it. The vessel was replaced by the Sea-Horse. There was a tomb in the Cemetery with this simple epitaph:

CHARLOTTE AIERY
8th November, 1845
A lady wrote to Mr. A. H. Padley, saying that this was the wife of Commandant George Sherbrook Airey, R.N., so I looked up the notices of that date in the press, and found one referring to her; it ran thus: "On the 8th inst at the Cheviot Hills, Goulbourn, Charlotte, the beloved wife of George Sherbrook Airey, deeply regretted by relatives died friends. Airey's Inlet is named after one of this family.

We have two Ports, Williamstown and Port Melbourne (Sandridge). Willbraham Frederick Evelyn Liardet built the first house in Port Melbourne. He arrived from Sydney in the William Metcalf, which came in 15th November, 1839. He says: "I was the Founder of Sandridge, 1840, and was appointed the first ship mail contractor, which myself and sons conducted for upwards of 20 years. My boating establishment at Sandridge was very useful in the early days of the colony, when much anxiety was felt for the safe arrival of friends and goods that were in great demand at highly remunerative prices. During the above period my sons and theirboats saved forty lives. Forty people saved from drowning! His lamp on the beach was the lighthouse." Liardet believed in Batman, and gave Batman's grandson a picture of Batman's first house, which I have reproduced in an earlier chapter. No man knew early Melbourne better than he did. He has left us forty pictures of its buildings. These are preserved in the Public Library. We know that they are correct, because in the Port Phillip Gazette, of 17th January, 1844, the following paragraph appeared: Liardet's View of Melbourne. This is a drawing of Melbourne upon a scale so extensive that nearly every house is visible, and may be separately recognized by these who have an intimate acquaintance with the town. The figures of his Honour, the Mayor, and the late Police Magistrate are exquisite; the price is but a guinea, and we advise our readers to encourage the artist. On the 26th of September, 1843, I learn from the minutes of the City Council, Liardet submitted it to them for inspection and patronage, so it ran the gauntlet here and was then reproduced in London. Liardet buried his little daughter, Rosalie, in the Old Cemetery, 9th December, 1841. Seafaring men from Williamstown and the Beach buried their children in the Old Cemetery, and these who died on the immigrant ships went there. Liardet says that the first regularly recognized immigrant vessel was the David Clark. An encampment was made for the immigrants on the rising ground where the Government House now stands. The aboriginal encampment was right opposite. He affirms that the first regular dwelling house after that of Le Souef’s, built in South Melbourne, was one erected in 18515, on Emerald Hill, built at the corner of Clarendon Street and Grant Street, by John Orr, who was represented by a grave in the Old Cemetery, which had apparently been a good monument, but when we took up the work of trying to preserve the ground it was a total ruin. Liardet was an admirer of Robert Russell. He says that he came in the Stirlingshire in 18U6, accompanied by Dark and Darcy. Dark erected the first monument in Sandridge, a cask on a pole, to show the way to Melbourne. When at the week end some Melburnians would wander down to the beach, they would ask Liardet what the cask was doing on the pole. He would tell them that Latrobe had filled it with bottled beer, and that if they would only climb the pole and touch the spring on the top of it they could have a bottle of beer. He was safe from exposure, because the task was impossible. A ferry plied between Williamstown and Sandridge, and you called it over from Williamstown by lighting a fire. Spotswood ran a ferry across the Saltwater River.

The first man who tried to settle south of the Yarra was Fawkner, who had the first field ploughed there, but he soon returned to the north, and these others came and settled. Liardet’s pictures are deeply interesting. He gives a picture of Cole's wharf in the eighteen forties, and of his own home at Sandridge, showing the beach and the baths. I presume that Liardet was the first man to make provision for salt water bathing.
As early as 1844 there was a good fresh water bath in Melbourne (Riddle’s). He opened it in January that year, and 200 people swam in it on the first two days. The bath was eighty feet long. Dr. Palmer also had a floating bath; and as I read the minutes of the City Council of the fight of the first Councillors to keep the Yarra pure, I also read of their objections to the baths on its banks, and of the rise of the St. Kilda water front as a bathing place. The Council objected to lost cattle, fellmongeringestablishments, or the offal from Watson and Wight’s melting-down establishment being thrown into the river; and with that came objections to the river being polluted by bathing establishments, and so people went to bathe at South Melbourne and St. Kilda. Palmer fixed his baths between the Falls and the Pumps, below where the drinking water was obtained. Others took up the idea, and the Council gave permission for the erection of good floating baths on the Yarra on 24th October, 1849; but in 1852 the Council doubted whether they were being properly conducted, and appointed a committee to inquire into the expediency of their being removed. Dr. Alexander Hunter, Fellow of the Royal College of Surgeons of Edinburgh, then owned them, but when the Council threatened to remove them, he sold or transferred them to John Ditchburn, who was permitted to continue them a year or two longer. At the end of 1854 Frederick Buck, a ship-owner and merchant, secured permission to place a hulk in a suitable depth of water on the sea beach at St. Kilda, to be used as a sea bathing establishment. There had been bathing for some time on the open beach at St. Kilda, but the police were now restricting this, and Buck seems to commence the baths there. They went out to them in a ferry. In June, 1856, A. J. Kenny petitioned, on behalf of the St. Kilda Sea-bathing Co., for permission to erect a platform within the limits of the city for bathing. This is the beginning of Kenny’s Baths and the baths along the water front. They all have to recognise Liardet as their pioneer.

When Melbourne was incorporated, it was north of the Yarra, but soon after incorporation the council objected to people living south of the Yarra being made magistrates of the town. This lead to Lonsdale and Latrobe Wards being carried south of the Yarra, and the names of people living there passing on to the roll. Soon it was found necessary to have wards south of the river, but it took a long time to get a separate ward for Port Melbourne. A letter was received in 1853 from Governor Latrobe, assenting to the establishment of a South Melbourne Ward, to be called "Newcastle," in compliment to the Secretary of the Colonies. The council tried to get it called Smith Ward, after John Thomas Smith, but Carlton became Smith Ward, and Latrobe ceased to be Governor. Hotham came, and Sandridge petitioned for a Sandridge Ward, but it was not proclaimed. Hotham died, and General Macarthur, the eldest son of the man who brought the Merino sheep to Australia, was made Acting-Governor, prior to the coming of Governor Barkly, and the ward was called Macarthur Ward, after him, and Sandridge did not become a municipality until 1860. Then it was made a borough. It changed its name from Sandridge to Port Melbourne in 1884, and did not become a city until 1919.

On Saturday, 17th May, of the same year (1919), the State Governor proclaimed Williamstown a city; his was the seventh suburb which had received that title. Did Bourke foresee this when he named it William’s Town, after the bluff sailor, King, then ruling? Melbourne became a city on the old plan. The arrival of the Bishop made it such. But since then authorities have differently defined the constitution of the municipality. They now say a city must have an annual revenue of not less than £20,000, while a town if it be suburban must have a revenue of £10,000 a year, and thus our suburban cities have become such without a Cathedral. This great wheat shipping centre commenced as a port when Batman landed his sheep there. It is said it had in 1837 about ten houses and stores. However that may be, this much is certain, Lonsdale wrote to New South Wales on 10th July, 1837 just four months after Bourke had been here, saying that one, Leard, wished to erect a public house there. The first stone jetty there was completed on 22nd March, 1839, and in 1840 William Langhorne advertises in The Herald that he has a cottage for sale there, and in the following year it is announced even in the Geelong Advertiser, that Mrs. Langhorne has died at Williamstown. Her body was carried to the Old Melbourne Cemetery, and her name appears in the epitaph on the Langhorne tomb. Evidently there were several inhabitants there then.
W. A. Hall wrote a succession of articles to the Williamstown Chronicle. The spirit of history prompted him to co-operate in the fight for our historic ground in Melbourne, where a relative of his was buried, and this same spirit led him to tell the story of early Williamstown. He is the grandson of one of its pioneers. His grandfather landed at what is now known as the Gem Pier, on the 23rd of June, 1840. He was a contemporary, therefore, of the Langhorne’s. In those days wheeled carriages were not allowed on the jetty, and no goods were landed after sunset; the primeval wilderness was all around. The native name of Williamstown is Koori Boork, the equivalent of she-oak, a tree-clad country over which roamed the wild dogs. The Hall family’s tent was pitched in the belt of trees where Victoria Street is now. The first metalled thoroughfare, the metal of which came from the Stockade, was Thompson Street. This, of course, was much later. The first good house of accommodation erected is believed to have been The Ship Inn, which Captain W. Leard owned. The first steamer from Melbourne to Williamstown was The Firefly, 28th October, 1838. From 1st August, 1840, there was a light in the lighthouse at Gellibrand Point. It was in 1840 that Langhorne erected his wool stores there. In the forties Hall’s father had a rowing boat plying between Williamstown and Melbourne. His was the first daily communication between the two places.

During the great flood of 1849, Hall’s father rowed his boat over William Street, and other parts of flooded Melbourne. One morning in 1842 the emigrant ship Manlius (a plaque ship) arrived in Hobson’s Bay, flying the yellow flag. The people on board were quarantined, and buried where they died. This was the beginning of the Cemetery near Point Gellibrand. The last burial there was in 1856. The stone wall around it was built by convicts.

I went to Williamstown to look on the vault that contains nine hundred and twenty bodies taken from the Old Gellibrand Cemetery. Among the memorials cemented over the vault, was one in memory of Owen Owens, who was killed by the prisoners when in the performance of his duty as a Warder boatman in the Penal Department, on the 22nd day of October, 1856. Another was a licensed pilot, who died in 1855, John McFarlane Stewart. A third was Thomas Hamlin, a ship master, who passed away in 1854. The earliest memorial was dated March 1842, over the remains of Donald Smith. The old burial ground was abolished in September 1899, and the graves transferred to this vault in the present Williamstown Cemetery. Our Old Cemetery in Melbourne had a better revelation of Williamstown in the forties than this. Not only have we the grave of John Stewart Spotswood, but also that of the Langhorne’s, which takes us back to Williamstown in 1841. The present Williamstown Cemetery was opened in 1858, and the earliest interment in it was Laurence Lawson, a master mariner. Richard Seddon’s father, Thomas Seddon, is buried there, and also old Granny Spotswood, who so long outlived her husband. She lived to be 83, and died on 15th September, 1891. Mrs. Seddon put a stone over her grave and wrote on it:-

Father, in Thy gracious keeping,
Leave me now Thy servant sleeping.

George Spotswood, a son, is still living at Spotswood. He told me that his father came into the possession of Fawkner’s Enterprise, and that she finished up by being wrecked on the beach at Warrnambool. Spotswood was the eldest son of Captain John Spotswood in Her Majesty’s 84th and 95th Regiments, and grandson of Major-General Woddington, late of the Honourable East India Company’s service. Spotswood, himself, was a merchant captain. He arrived here a few months after Fawkner. He bought the block of land now known as Spotswood from the New South Wales Government. Mrs. Seddon, widow of the late Rt. Honourable R. J. Seddon, Premier of New Zealand for thirteen years, is Captain Spotswood’s daughter, and Seddon’s son, Thomas Seddon, kindly directed me to the papers containing this information.

In January 1850, a petition signed by 320 resident householders of Williamstown was addressed to the Government, asking that the settlement should be made a municipal district, and on the 12th of March that year it was so proclaimed.

It was about this time that John Price was murdered by the convicts. He was formerly Commandant at Norfolk Island, but had been placed in charge of the Penal Institutions here, and while inspecting
the work at the breakwater at Williamstown was struck down, 20th March, 1857, and died the following day. The prison hulks, *Success, President, Sacramento and Deborah*, were near the breakwater. He seems to have been struck first with a shovel, and then stoned and trampled to death. He was 48 years of age. The prisoners were tried before Judge Barry. Of fifteen tried, seven were found guilty and sentenced to death. A descendant of John Price became Commander-in-Chief of the Victorian Forces.

When Williamstown was proclaimed a municipal district in 1850, it had a revenue of £700, now its revenue is £25,725, and it is a city, and its residents propose to erect a Memorial City Hall to the men who have fallen at the front.

Joseph Forbes lived for some years in Williamstown. In 1839 he was rescued by Captain Thomas Watson from the natives of Timor Land. When a boy he had gone to the seas to the north of Australia. The vessel was seized by the natives and all on board were killed except two boys. Joseph Forbes was then fifteen years of age. His comrade soon died, but he lived on among the natives for sixteen years, and when rescued by Watson had, like Buckley, almost forgotten his own language. His story has been told by Captain Pascoe, R. N., and is preserved in the Transactions of the Historical Society of Australasia. Watson interviewed Forbes at Williamstown in 1876, just before he died. Watson himself was an interesting man, having been a protégé of Captain Cook, and by her sent to sea.

*H.M.S. Nelson* arrived in Hobson’s Bay in 1867. She was the first line of battle ships owned by the colony, and was built in 1800, just after the death of Nelson, but she had never been at sea until she came to Melbourne, and came here only as a training ship. We have seen how, from very early in our history, we built ships, but the first two cargo ships made of steel were launched in 1919, the *Dromana* and the *Delungra*, the *Delungra* in New South Wales, and the Dromana at Williamstown. They were launched almost simultaneously, the *Delungra* at the end of March, and the *Dromana* on the 11th of April. This is the commencement of ship building work in at least four States in the Commonwealth.

The displacement of *The Dromana* was 7080 tons. She was 341 feet long, 48 feet broad, and 20 feet deep, and was christened by Lady Helen Ferguson, in the presence of nearly all Members of the State and Federal Parliaments. *Dromana* is the name of a watering place near Melbourne. This local naming contrasts with the naming of the vessels bought by Mr. Hughes in England, such as *Austral Stream, Austral Mount, Austral Bush*, &c. This Commonwealth Line of Steamers was bought in 1910, when Mr. Hughes was on a visit to England, and was the beginning of the Government ownership of merchant vessels. The first Commonwealth passenger ships were built in the United Kingdom; the first was christened by Mrs. Storey, the wife of the late Labour Premier of New South Wales, when on a visit to England, and was called the *Moreton Bay*. It was launched at Barrow; and the second was the *Largs Bay*, which was built on the Clyde, and named by Mrs. William Morris Hughes, when Mr. Hughes was in England attending the Imperial Conference (1921). *(There became 5 ships, which were known as the Bay Ships)* She broke a bottle of Australian wine on the bow of the vessel. Liardet says that Joseph Latrobe named St. Kilda after a vessel that was lying in the bay, and that the first regatta in Hobson’s Bay was arranged by Captain Addison, of the barge *Eulura*.

The recent war has led us to ask about Australia’s first war vessel, and A. W. Greig writes to *The Argus* on the 30th January, 1919, as follows: *The Victoria* was built in Great Britain in 1855, to the order of the Government of this State, and arrived in Port Phillip on 31st May, 1856. She was engaged in the conveyance of troops to New Zealand, and in other services connected with the Maori War between April, 1860 and April, 1861, and in August of the latter year was sent to the Gulf of Carpentaria with an expedition in search of the explorers Burke and Wills, returning to Melbourne in March, 1862.

Apart from these two expeditions, *The Victoria* seems to have done little else than marine survey and lighthouse work on the Victorian coasts, and after the arrival of *The Cerberus* in April, 1871 she naturally lost importance as a means of naval defence. The last official reference to her I can find is in
the Blue Book for 1880, and I have been quite unable to ascertain when or how she was finally disposed of.

Captain Robinson, of the Prince of Wales, was the first to bring his vessel up the Yarra without a pilot. This he did in 1852. Mona Marie (Mrs. Bones) wrote a beautiful elegiac song on him, Rest, Gallant Heart, which W. R. Furlong set to music.

William Howard Smith arrived in Hobson Bay from the Old Country as joint owner of the steamer Express, which he ran in the Melbourne-Geelong service in 1854. In 1862 he sold his interest in that business, and purchased a vessel in England for the intercolonial trade, the ??? lef, which had been built for service in the Crimean War by J. S. Russell, of London. She was an iron screw steamer, and Smith renamed her the You Yang’s. She succeeded from the trip, and vessel after vessel were added to the navy, until they number to-day about thirty vessels. As evidence of progress in shipping, we may say that the You Yang’s was of 620 tons burthen, while their great ship of to-day, The Canberra, is 8000 tons, and these vessels traverse the entire coast of Australia.

The firm originated in Melbourne. The firm of Huddart, Parker & Co. is a Melbourne firm, which Arose out of the coal trade; the partnership commenced in 1876, when James Huddart, Thomas J. Parker, Thomas Webb and J. Traill entered into partnership. They ran their colliers chiefly from Melbourne to Geelong, and from Newcastle to Melbourne. In 1878 they had seven vessels, but the following year they had a set-back, losing three of them. Not discouraged, they resolved to commence a steam service, and they purchased their first steamer, The Nemesis, 2000 tons, then The Indus, 2600 tons, next the Heriwee and then The Colac, and in 1884 they resolved to put on passenger ships to run between Melbourne and Sydney, the first of which were The Coramagame and The Burrumbeet. They have gone on developing, even entering into the New Zealand trade, and competing or co-operating with the Union Shipping Company, and have extended their work across the Pacific. I travelled in one of their well-appointed boats from Sydney to Vancouver, and can testify to the merit of their ships.

The Union Shipping Company has brought Melbourne into communication with Polynesia and America. It originated as a Shipping Company in Dunedin, New Zealand, in 1875, and three years later took over in Melbourne McMeckan, Blackwood and Co.’s business. The first passenger vessels of this company to come here were The Itiuvarooma and The Aramitta.

In 1891 the company absorbed the Tasmanian Steam Navigation Company. When the Company was formed in Dunedin in 1875 it had a nominal capital of £250,000, or 25,000 shares at £10 each. In the first year there were fifty-three shareholders, and the paid-up capital amounted to £119,170. In starting out they took over the small fleet of the Harbour Steam Company, New Zealand, owned by Mr. James Mills. He became the manager of the Union Steam Ship Company of New Zealand Limited, and is now Sir James Mills. Under his direction the licent grew to be the great intercolonial fleet of to-day. Two other vessels were being built in Great Britain, and thus with five vessels with an aggregate tonnage of 2120 tons, the company started out to do the coastal shipping of New Zealand. Its two first steamers were The Hawca and The Taupo, which were the vessels built in the Mother Country. Captain Neville is one of the oldest retired servants of the company living. He entered its service in 1870, and on retiring went to live in Bendigo. The company has successively increased its capital as its business expanded. In 1879 it increased it to half a million. In 1891 it had a fleet of fifty-three steamers, and in the eighties large vessels like the Manapouri were running to Melbourne across the Tasman Sea. The capital of the company in the nineties was a million, and other developments have since taken place, yet it goes back in New Zealand to the pioneer days when Johnny Jones ran his vessels up the coast of Otago. Mills was a trustee of the property of Jones. The Harbour Trust Commissioners report that the gross tonnage of shipping visiting Port Phillip in the year 1920 was 7,055,233 tons. hen George Stewart came in 1830, he gave the names of the following vessels engaged in bringing stock from Van Diemen’s Land:-

Enterprise, 55 tons, 9 trips
Adelaide, 100 tons, 14 trips
Norval, 300 tons, 7 trips
Caledonia, 300 tons, 4 trips
Champion, 110 tons, 3 trips
Van/rrHfirt, 110 tons, 2 trips
(lent, 80 tons, 3 trips ;
illyy, 100 tons, 1 trip;
Henry Chilli , 200 tons, 3 trips
Henry, 150 tons, 2 trips
Edward, 60 tons, 1 trip

total tonnage, 1565; trips, 48. One or two other vessels, however, like The Rebecca, had been in. Rear-Admiral Tickell, Director of Naval Reserves in the Commonwealth Navy Office, died recently (1919) at his residence at Kew. He was born in 1857, and was the son of Captain G. Tickell, R.N., of Melbourne. He received the rank of Commander in August, 1897, and Captain in 1908. He was Naval Commander of Victoria from 1897 to 1904, and commanded the Victorian Naval Contingent that was sent to China in 1900. Since 1911 he had been Director of the Naval Reserves of the Commonwealth.

In the year 1922, the pilot service was transferred to the Commonwealth. It had become known throughout the world for its efficiency. The Port Phillip pilot claimed that not only was he thus renowned, but that his history antedated all forms of administration in Melbourne. That the port had its regular Government before the city. Pilots were licensed and sent here in 1837, but it would be difficult to prove that they antedated the arrival of Lonsdale, so when they tell us this seafaring yarn, we ask them to tell it to the marines. A license was issued in 1839 to Henry Falk Sutton, and in 1840 there were six pilots. The vessels entered the Heads, and were then boarded and brought into Hobson's Bay. The pilot vessel was a whale boat. However, in the Old Pioneer Letters and manuscript, there is mention of pilots being here as early as 1830, but they seem to have been volunteer pilots. Several of the little vessels coming in at that time were run ashore, and even wrecked in the port. The efficient service did not come until the eighteen forties. These pilots were old captains, and they dressed in frock coats and wore sea boots and chimney pot hats. They were the lords of the port. When the State was created they ventured outside the port and patrolled the Heads in The Corsair, The Boomerang and The Anonyma. The discovery of gold filled the port with shipping, and it is at this era we get the Nautical Almanac and our shipping discipline. The pilot service grew rapidly. The Pilot Board is now established by our own Government. 1854 finds us in a state of transition and of experiment in the management of the service, but the individual pilot was a reliable man, and but few accidents occurred. The Anonyma capsized in a squall in 1865, and foundered without loss of life. The schooner Kip eventually took her place. She was run down by the Palm Tree in 1809, and in 1873 is driven ashore in a gale, when Pilot McKenzie and three seamen are drowned; yet we find her at work in 1882. She was built in North America. The Victoria, a comparatively recent vessel, was a steamer, built at Williamstown in 1901. The steam yacht, Alvina, was built in England, and purchased by the Victorian Government in 1903. The Argus is our best authority on shipping. One reads its records back to the forties, and recent writers in its columns epitomise its mass of facts. The service has multiplied in ships and men, and for thirty-four years has been under the Marine Board. This service, under the direction of the Naval Authorities, carried to a successful issue the shipping of the port during the world war. Under their protection the port was secured, and the transport of the troops speedily effected. “Within an hour of the declaration of war, the German vessels were held up. The pilot service claim that they fired the first shot in the war when they stopped by gunfire the outward bound Pfalz, and they made the first capture of the enemies property.” They now pass under Federal control.

Coming to military men, we remember that in pioneer days, as now, repatriation and settlement was a part of their problem. Provision had to be made for the Napoleonic heroes, and the Government, to strengthen the Empire, encouraged a settlement in their over-seas possessions. The law of settlement was that Field Officers who had been 25 years in the service could, when buying land, have a rebate of £300; if 20 years, £200; if fifteen, £150; if 7 years, £100. Medical men and military
chaplains were also granted concessions. We might include Batman among our military men, because he by his adroit strategy helped to bring the Native War to a close in Tasmania. However, we properly date the use of military institutions from the coming of Lonsdale, who brought over a detachment of The King’s Own, or the Fourth Regiment. Other regiments were represented after, but we never had them in large numbers until the goldfields opened up, and through the unjust system of taxation, the revolt of the miners, and the fight at the Eureka Stockade, soldiers in numbers came. Lonsdale, whose family now sleep in a neglected grave, represents the kind of Government in vogue in New South Wales.

Australia’s first four Governors were Phillip, Hunter, King, and Bligh; all naval men. Our next four were Macquarie, Brisbane, Darling and Bourke; all military men. There are relatives of more than one Governor buried here. J. Brisbane, who is buried in a nameless grave, is said to have been the cousin of Governor Brisbane, after whom the City of Brisbane was named. One of the most distinguished military men buried here was General Charles Howard, whose son, now that Fleming is dead, is the oldest native of Melbourne living. He was born the month before Batman died, in the April of 1839, and he writes to me thus, concerning his father:-

Charles Howard, Assistant Commissary General of the British Army, went through the Peninsular War, and when the final evacuation of the troops took place after Waterloo he was ordered to Sierra Leone, West Africa. He was next stationed at Sydney, New South Wales, where he arrived by the ship Sir Godfrey Webster, on the 17th of January, 1824. After having touched at Hobart Town with a detachment of the 4th Regiment, he was for a time stationed at Windsor, and was in charge at Bathurst three times, where a number of Imperial troops were sent to keep in order a gang of convicts road-making over the Blue Mountains. His next station was Port Phillip, where he arrived by the steamer James Watt, at the end of September, 1837, to relieve Mr. Skene Craig, who had been temporarily in charge of the Commissariat Department. He retired from the army in 1841, and then resided on his property, about 100 acres, at Darebin Creek, his death taking place in Melbourne on the 2nd of February, 1852. He was given a military funeral his remains being borne to their last resting place by a detachment of the 11th Regiment. Though thus honoured, he sleeps in an unmemorialized grave. Decay and vandalism have swept away the landmarks, and to-morrow, if we did not remember him in history, he might be forgotten with eight or ten thousand others.

Lonsdale had only been here six months when one of his regiment was buried in the Old Cemetery. His Christian name is not given in the Registry. We only read that a Kirby, soldier of the Fourth Regiment, is the fourth burial in the Church of England ground. He died on 11th April, 1837, and seems to have been the first soldier buried in Melbourne. The life of the beginning was coloured by the convict life prevailing throughout Australia. Fawkner bears evidence of this, coming with his father, who was a convict, to the settlement at Sorrento, and afterwards passing under the surveillance of the law himself. This led to the building of barracks, such as these they had in West Melbourne, and the settlement in the community of detachments of military men. As early as 11th March, 1845, we had a military funeral, which Garryowen said was the first military funeral in Melbourne. There is evidently a printer’s error in the date, for according to the register, John McCulloch, Colour-Sergeant of the 99th Regiment, died in 1845, and not as Garryowen has in 1844. He died on 11th March, and the burial service was conducted by the Reverend Adam Compton Thomson. The Dead March was played and a farewell volley fired over his grave. Earlier than this, both J. D. Lyon Campbell and Phillip Groves Beers had been buried. Beers was a Captain in the 80th Regiment, and the Reverend Thomson also conducted the service at his grave on 2nd March, 1842. Other soldiers, such as Thomas Minton, formerly a Captain in the 1Cth Regiment, and the children of soldiers and their relatives had preceded McCulloch, therefore, if McCulloch’s funeral was the first military funeral, these others had a civil burial.

J. D. Lyon Campbell, on whose grave we read, Late of the 9th Queen’s Royal Lancers, departed this life on the 31st of May, 1844, aged 35 years. When McCombie moved in the Town Council that C. Joseph Latrobe be requested to resign, he accused him of venal conduct, of building a road out
to J. D. Lyon Campbell's house. This, he affirmed, was partiality and favouritism, and we were reminded of this event as we stood by the grave of Campbell.

Although the pictures of Latrobe represent him in military uniform, those who knew him tell us that there was an absence in him both of the military spirit and the military bearing, and one coming away from his writings feel that they have been in the presence of a literary man, and if he favoured Campbell, it would not be from venality, but because he found in him an enterprising man and a congenial spirit. Not far from Campbell's grave was a stone to William Parker, of the Royal Engineers. Two of our great generals in the war came from that branch of the service, Joffre and the late Lord Kitchener. It was curious that in the same grave with this ex-soldier were the remains of John Makepeace. Perhaps the union is appropriate, and that a just war may end in a continuous peace.

Lonsdale's grave contained only his relatives. H. W. H. Smythe, I presume, was Lieut. Smythe, but perhaps not. On the stone it says that he was born 27th of May, 1815, and died 8th May, 1850. Dr. Farquhar McCrae, buried nearby, was also a military man, an officer in the Inniskillen Dragoons. Men talked of buying a square mile of land at Pozieres, in France, that they might keep the memorials, the wooden crosses erected over the graves of the soldiers buried there, and they want to pilgrimage to the graves of the Anzacs, and yet could not keep eight acres sacred to the memory of the Old Grenadiers, the Napoleonic Heroes, and the Pioneer Soldiers of Melbourne. Yet they were proud that at Pozieres their sons were known as the pioneers of battle. Around us were the graves of heroes from whose loins came the men of Anzac, Pozieres and Arinentreiers. We condemn the Germans, who stole the coffins to procure lead and other metals for ammunition; yet we will pray for the knighting of the members of that Council who desecrated the graves of our Old Pioneers. Among the troops that followed the detachment of the Fourth Regiment, commanded by Lonsdale, was the Grenadier Company of the 28th, then came a detachment of the 80th, commanded by Captain C. Lewis; then a company of the 99th, which later is relieved by two different companies in succession of the 58th. The last company of the 58th was sent to one of the early Maori wars. They were succeeded by a company of the 11th. This was the corps that dispersed the Orange and Green Rioters in 1846. The 11th were succeeded by a body of the 99th which remained here until the 40th Regiment came in 1852. This last has been made known to us by Mr. Howard in his articles to The Argus. He tells us how he enjoyed listening to their band on Batman's Hill. This fine body of men left for New Zealand in 1860. Provision, of course, was made from the first for housing these men, and Garryowen. who saw the barracks, can be trusted to describe them. He tells us that for the first years they dwelt in hovels on the Government reserve in West Melbourne; the officers had slightly better huts than the men. They were built of clay, bark and other bush material; these were succeeded by a long slab building. Then they inhabited the old brick gaol, in Collins Street West, when it ceased to be used as a prison. Then they went back to the western reserve to a corrugated iron building off Spencer Street at the corner of Latrobe Street and, finally, were moved to St. Kilda Road, which has become the military headquarters of the city.

One of our greatest military men was Lieutenant-Colonel Joseph Anderson, C.B., K.H. He entered the British Army in 1805 and retired from it in 1848, after forty years of faithful, brilliant, and distinguished service. He came here as a retired officer, and enters into public life in 1852. We had just buried A. C. W. Dunlop in the Old Cemetery, and he succeeds him in our first Parliament as a Nominee Member. In 1854 he acted on the Committee (which I believe was the first Committee) to consider the subject of Defence. He, too, was a pioneer of anti-Chinese legislation. We think of this only as an industrial question, but here is a man opposing the influx of the Chinese both from a social and a military standpoint, and that at the very commencement of Chinese immigration. He died at the advanced age of 88, at Fairlie House, South Yarra, and was buried in the St. Kilda Cemetery. I cannot enumerate his many deeds of heroism, but it is proper that I mention here his respect for the dead. When at the Battle of Fuentes de Onero his brother officer, Edward Kelly, was killed, he, at the peril of his own life, recovered his body from the French and gave it decent burial. His son, Colonel William Acland Anderson, became Commandant of the Victorian Land Forces, and organised both the Volunteers and Regulars in the eighteen seventies. I had to piece the
stones together in Lonsdale's grave, in order to read the inscription over the remains of Sinythe, and I reflected on the contrast between such men as Anderson, who would give their lives for the sake of honour, and these men who would build a vegetable market over our oldest dead. Surely this is the place for the Hall of History, a Tower of Strength and a Hall of Fame, in which our University Extension Lectures would be held, where we could remember alike the repatriated soldiers of the foundation, and those who to-day stood guard on the frontiers in Mesopotamia, Central Africa, New Guinea and like places. We will remember the men who died young, borne down by the strenuous life of yesterday, with the young men who have given their lives to save the Empire to-day.

About fifteen miles from the Post Office is a spot called St. Helena. It was so named by Anthony Beale, who had been a warder in St. Helena in Napoleon's time. Here among the hills, Beale settled, built an Episcopalian Church, and buried his dead in the little churchyard, and was himself placed there. We read on his daughter's stone, that he arrived here in 1839. The beauty of the country reminded him of his early island life. With this, I reflect, that our interest in European wars commenced with the Crimean, and in reading the Minutes of the City Council I find that the Imperial Government acknowledged that interest by sending us two guns, trophies taken in the war. They came by a vessel called The Crimea, in 1858, and suitable sites were chosen for their erection. Major-General W. A. Pitt first organised our Volunteer Forces in 1858. He must not be confused with Major Dean-Pitt, who was appointed to command the Victorian Artillery Forces in 1889, with the rank of Lieutenant-Colonel.

In 1870 the Imperial Troops departed forever, and Colonial Forces took their place. The Land Forces in the seventies embraced a paid artillery corps and volunteers of various arms of service. The Cerberus and The Nelson were our only vessels. The Cerberus had been built expressly for the colony in 1868. She arrived in the bay in April, 1870. She was a turret ironclad, carrying two four-hundred-pounder guns, and the Nelson was a wooden war vessel of 48 guns. The first Victorian flag as distinct from the Australian flag was a blue Union Jack with live stars, which the Nelson hoisted 9th February, 1870. The paid artillery were disbanded on the 31st of December, 1880, and in the succeeding years the entire land force of the colony was volunteer, consisting of cavalry, artillery, rifle, engineer, torpedo, and signal arms of service.

The total strength for the colony seems to vary at that time between three and four thousand men, a large proportion of whom were drilled in Melbourne and the suburbs, Places like Collingwood and Richmond took pride in their military displays. The total expenditure for twenty-eight years from 1854 to 1881, was far less than we expend in one year. It totalled for all these years £2,018,028, and that included our contribution to the maintenance of The Cerberus and The Nelson. Batteries had been erected for the defence of Melbourne in 1801 and 1802. They were built at Williamstown, Sandridge, and Queenscliff. When Colonel W. F. D. Jervois visited us, in 1877, he declared that Melbourne was best defended from the Heads, and thus the defences of Port Melbourne and Williamstown became neglected. He Government adopted his plan, and the construction of the works was commenced, under Colonel Scratchley. Jervois was knighted, and is known to us now as Sir William Francis Drummond Jervois. We remember him as Governor of New Zealand. In 1883 Major F. T. Sargood was a member of the Government, and came forward with his scheme for re-organizing our defence. The complexion of our system commenced to change. We wanted torpedoes and gun-boats, and soon the Childers, the Batman and Fawkner gunboats appear in Port Phillip. A paid artillery force had been introduced, and a volunteer militia created by the suggestion and under the direction of Colonel Hutton. At the end of 1883, the batteries at Queenscliff and Swan Island are completed, and in the following year that at Point Nepean. A stone rubble ring was in the South Channel as the site of a fort. It was in 1884 that Sudan came vividly before us by the death of Gordon, and New South Wales sent a contingent to Egypt. Our sympathies were also moved, and later found expression in the Gordon statue on Spring Street. By the time the South African War came the character of our fighting forces had changed. Steel had come into more general use in the weapons of war, and South Africa so armed us that when the Commonwealth took over our fighting forces they found us fully equipped for service in defence of the Empire, and took over a going concern. That war of 1899-
1902 comes before us so often in the narrative of the city, that we will allow our memorials to speak for it, as we describe and proceed to the narrative of the great war, which illustrates and recalls what was done by us in the South African War. As we celebrated the eventful movements in France, we recalled the scenes in Melbourne on Mafeking Night.

Lord Kitchener and his military staff inspected our cadets in Melbourne in 1910. He lost his life in 1916, and Melbourne remembered him, and mourned his loss in a great memorial service in the Exhibition Building. The sea still keeps the secret of his death.

The first Battery erected in Victoria was built by Capt. Collins at Sorrento in 1803. A Fort was built on Phillip Island, at Rhyll, in 1826, by Captain Wright. The first gun ammunition fuse manufactured in Australia was produced at the Cordite Works, at Maribyrnong, in 1921. It is believed that all the ammunition necessary to the defence of Australia will yet be made in our own factories. The storing of gunpowder was one of the problems the Town Council had to face in the forties. In 1846 we find them discussing plans for a suitable powder magazine. Some proposed that it be stored in a hulk in the bay.

Twenty-five years ago I left Melbourne to take a trip around the world, and before leaving read what was then written of Fitchett's book, The Deeds that Won the Empire. I thought that these related by him were not the deeds, for I believed with Shakespeare, There is no sure foundation set in blood. No certain life by others death, and I would write a book showing how the world ence was created. I wrote it, but it was never published. I contended that the discoverer, explorer, missionary, engineer, author and statesman had built our Empire, whether it comes to us in the form of a United Kingdom, a Republic, a Dominion, a Commonwealth, a Union, an Indian Empire, an Egyptian Dependency, a Crown Colony, or Island Home. From the Channel Islands to Hong Kong, from Borneo to Newfoundland, from the Isle of Man to St. Helena, from New Guinea to the Seychelles, from Trinidad to the Fijis, from Mauritius to the Barbados, from Jamaica to Bermuda, from Melville Island to the Falklands, among them a Melanesia, a Malaysia, a Micronesia, and a Polynesia. We lose an island as a millionaire loses a shilling. We steal one, and the world never knows it. Some of them with great histories, like Malta or Cyprus, or one with a unique story, like Jamaica, of the redemption of the negro slave, or the Pitcairn Islands, with their miracle of conversion, or the Norfolk Island, with its tale of horror. They have all been founded on the character of Britain, and our National Federation must be constitutional and great enough to embrace the smallest coral fragment, and the greatest Empire, and to protect and do justice to all. Plain English, whose basis is plain truth, must be in all our parts, and our simplicity, strength and honesty be apparent to all. We have reached the limits of expansion by forcible annexation, and now being lifted up, we must draw all men unto us. We commenced with devotion to freedom, and we have found it culminate in Democracy. When America feeds Belgium during the world war she adopts the communal system, and puts sufficient canteens in every commune to secure two meals a day to every Belgian. Thus did she fight starvation during the war. She mobilized the forces of mercy on socialistic lines, and every unit under our flag must be provided for, always remembering that man does not live by bread alone. The navy is only a means towards an end. In the recent war some brilliant battles were fought at sea, but the general service of the navy counted for more than battles.

In one month, the ships of our navy steamed eight million miles. That was one month's work. Great Britain supplied herself and her Allies with food and coal and all other material and munitions. She gave to the world the true freedom of the seas, by keeping them open for transport and commerce. Besides carrying about armies of many millions, she provided transport for twenty million animals. One thing is certain, war will never cease until the world is but one Empire, with God only as Emperor, with a Supreme Court to arbitrate on all cases between the different States. Our share in the war was just. We entered because Austria refused Serbia the right to take her case to the Hague Tribunal, and Germany refused to observe treaties. Society is held up by social contracts, both between individuals and States. The Australian soldier is immortal, because he fought for immortal principles. Serbia acceded to all Austria's demands but that one in which Austria asked that Austrians be put into the civil service of Serbia. Serbia said that would be giving up her independence, and asked that that matter
might be submitted to the Hague Court. Austria’s reply was the bombardment of Belgrade. Therefore we fought for international law, and from that standpoint I tell the story of Melbourne’s participation in the fight, recognizing that we contemplate the loyalty of Melbourne in other things than war.

Duellum, a duel, etymologically is the same word as bellum, a war, and as the words are identical in their origin, so in their significance. Both words mean two, duo two, and two. War commenced with a dispute between two persons, a duel, and was destroyed as a duel by a Court of Justice. So now let it be between two nations.

As soon as Austria went to war, Russia commenced to mobilize her forces, and on 31st July, 1914, Germany sends her an ultimatum. England had in vain asked for a conference; Earl Grey found that the great powers would not heed him, therefore, on the 29th the British fleet had left Portland to safeguard the North Sea. France did not mobilize until Germany’s ultimatum to Russia was known in Paris, and not until 4th August, 1914, did Britain decide for war.

Belgium appealed to her to protect her in her neutrality. On the 5th the Germans commenced the attack on Liege, and on the same day the British sunk the ??? Koenir/in Luise, which was found laying mines in the North Sea. Although the nations had benevolently agreed not to grant letters of marque to privateers, yet still the sea might be sown with mines, an act many times worse than privateering. The privateer could take his prize into port, but he could not murder non-combatants. Submarines partook of this inhuman warfare, and brought America into the war. The sinking of the Lusitania was the act of a Government that talked about the freedom of the seas. England is not keeping men from fishing in the sea or navigating the seas. Her Suez Canal is international. She freed the seas from piracy, and to her own injury proclaimed free trade to all ports of the United Kingdom. Greece, after Salamis, forbade Persian men-o-war the right to appear in certain parts of the Aegean. The Romans declared against Carthaginian men-o-war entering certain zones. Britain has not restricted any power in the movement of their fleets. What President Wilson has contended for, Thomas Paine pleaded for in his Maritime Compact and Hugo Grotius, presented in his Rights of War and Peace. England’s benign Government, without saying it, has taken over all that is really just in their contention, and during this war, when she carried men from all parts, her moderation was a marvel of equity.

We have to say this, because our fighting has all been over the sea. Our Imperial Conference of 1909 affirmed that, without superiority at sea, the Empire cannot be maintained. From The Argus of 6th January, 1919, I take the following:- On the day that the Invincible Fleet was summoned to save civilisation, the Australian Squadron was distributed around the eastern coast of the Commonwealth. The flagship Australia, the cruisers Melbourne and Encounter, and the destroyers Warrego and Yarra were at Maryborough Queensland, the cruiser Sydney was at Townsville (Queensland), the destroyer Parramatta, and the two submarines AE1 and AE2 were in Sydney Harbour, and the light cruiser Pioneer and the gunboat Protestor were at Melbourne."

Early in August, the Australia, the Sydney, and Encounter, Yarra, Warrego, and Parramatta were on their way to Thursday Island. The flagship Australia, and the cruiser Sydney, had only arrived in Australian waters in 1913. It was not, therefore, long before they were called into active service. On 18th August the first detachment of troops left Sydney for the front. By the end of the year 31,881 had been sent away, and by the close of the war nearly 400,000 had gone, among whom there were nearly 300,000 casualties. On the 30th August, 1914, Samoa was taken and occupied by New Zealand troops.

Australia and New Zealand were one in the war. The word Anzac was made up from the first Jotters (Notebooks) of the phrase, Australian and New Zealand Army Corps. On the 8th September the Pacific Cable was cut, at banning Island, by a German cruiser. On 11th of September, Herberstsloho,?? the Capital of German New Guinea, was captured. H.M.A.S. Australia landed troops, and in three days New Guinea was occupied, and in a fortnight the whole of Kaiser Wilhelm’s Land was ours. On 19th September we lost our first submarine, Adel, with 35 officers and men. No one knows how. On 29th September, the Melbourne Stock Exchange, which had been closed during the war.
reopened. It was not until 1st November that the first convoy of Australian and New Zealand Forces sailed from Albany. During their voyage, the Sydney engaged *The Emden*, which had destroyed £4,000,000 of British merchant shipping in the Indian Ocean. On 9th of November, they met at Cocos Island, and *The Emden* was left a ruin on Keeling Island.

On 19th November, the Japanese handed over to Australia the islands taken by them in the Pacific.

It is not necessary to repeat here what has been so fully recently described in our papers of the “Mena Camp.” in Egypt. The Australian, British and French land at Gallipoli, 25th April, 1915, and the death record commences. The submarine, AE2, was lost in the Dardanelles, and the crew were taken prisoner by the Turks. On the 19th May, Sir William Bridges died. He had been wounded while surveying the trenches. Before the war there was but one man with higher rank than Colonel, that was Brigadier-General Bridges, Commander of the Royal Military College at Duntroon. He was made Commander of the first Australian Division. Now there are over 60 men among us with the title of General. General Bridges will be remembered for his urbane manner as well as his courage, for his deep sympathy with his men. We gave the right reply when our submarines blew up the historic bridge over the Golden Horn, and we associated that act with the death of our great soldier.

The War Census Bill was introduced on the 14th of July, 1915. By October they had ascertained that there were 1,349,597 males in the Commonwealth, between the ages of 18 and 60. Of these they computed that:-

810,806 were fit for service.
455,128 were married.

When we remember that the proper military age was from 21 to 45, we may say that nearly all the available men in Australia volunteered.

That army of 400,000 men which we sent was bigger than the army in the Crimea, and sixteen times the size of the British Army at Waterloo. Wellington never had such an army to lead against Nicolas Soult, and with only a fraction of it, Clive conquered his enemies in India. Julius Caesar never had so many men under him. At a farewell dinner at the Savoy, in London, Mr. William Morris Hughes, Prime Minister of Australia, and General Sir W. R. Birdwood, spoke enthusiastically of Australia’s effort, and said that of 412,066 men who enlisted, 58,132 were killed, while 16,814 had received honours, including 63 Victoria Crosses, and the only Military Medal with three bars. A few other honours given later than this made the record even higher than Birdwood said.

The War Income Tax was introduced on 8th of July, 1915, and among its features was the tax, 5 shillings, in the pound on all incomes over £7600. On 1st September the Commonwealth authorized loan of £5,000,000, and £13,800,000 was tendered. The War Census showed that the net income of the men taxable in the Commonwealth was £257,650,251, of which Victoria possessed £78,987,957. Before the war the Commonwealth was practically without debt, now we have a debt of about £400,000,000. On 29th November, no male person of military age from 18 to 45, was allowed to leave Australia without a passport. On 21st of December, the Allies evacuated Anzac and Suvla Bay without casualties.

early in 1916 the Federal Ministry fixed the prices of flour and bread. Bread was to be 6 pence for the 4-lb. loaf, and on 11th of October, 1916, all hotels were closed at 6 o’clock. On 28th of June, Mr. W. M. Hughes buys fifteen steamers for £2,000,000 for merchant vessels to ply between Australia and Europe. On 25th of July, 1916, Pozieres was captured by the Australian and New Zealand Forces. On 28th of October, Australia declared by referendum against compulsory service. This split the Labour Party, and changed the aspect of Australian politics. 1917 found us fighting at Bullecourt and Ypres. We were present in March at the taking of Bapaume. The Australians break through the Hindenburg Line. The Melbourne boys can remember all this; they were there in the fight around Bethlehem Farm and Polygon Wood. Concrete and steel failed to keep them back. Their part is memorable in defeating the Turk in Palestine, in the taking of Gaza, for 24 hours marching and fighting without water. The Australians were the first to enter Damascus.

In the meanwhile the Germans had moved into the Pacific, and had bombarded Papeete, at Tahiti; had sunken and taken vessels. This ended with our capture of the German Raider, *The Adler*. 1918 brings
the final battles and the retreat of the Germans. During the war I followed the course of its development in my lectures, and made twenty forecasts which came true. I hold that my memorial work is a fitting finish to my war lectures. The climax to the war came at Mont St. Quentin. There we fought at dawn, and the summit of the hill was won at seven o’clock, lost in a counter attack and re-won the next day, and won by Victorians; and then later the debacle, the defeat, and signing of the Armistice on 11th November, 1918. Australia had redeemed her promise, and had given her last shilling and her last man without sacrificing the freedom of any. Our men have gone abroad only to save us from assault at home. Port Phillip was not impregnable as a natural stronghold. But our first line of defence, as Nelson put it, was right up against the enemy’s coast. All the defence in war is offensive, and to have waited till we shared the fate of Belgium or Serbia,was to be without defence. Once war was declared, it was declared against us, and Australians had to choose the battlefield, whether it should be here or on the enemies ground; therefore the equipment of an expeditionary force was essentially defensive. I advocated sending it in the first instance to Serbia and to Palestine. Serbia would then never have fallen. We would have done as the Turk did when he entered Europe, passed through Serbia to the gates of Vienna, and there would have been no Balkan difficulty. It seemed to me that the country that offered to submit its case to the Hague Court should have been saved. It was the cradle of Slavonic socialism in Europe, and should have been preserved. How nobly we did fight is attested by the sixteen Victorians who won the Victoria Cross.

The Cross had been won by us before, by Whirlpool, in New Zealand, in the Maori War, and by Burge, in India, and perhaps by others. In this case the first to win it was Lance-Corporal Jacka, and the last, Lieutenant Ingram. Albert Jacka was an unknown working man of Wedderburn. While he was away fighting, his old father was standing by the anti-conscription campaign, and helped to secure the referendum in favour of a free Australia. Jacka first won the Victoria Cross in Gallipoli, then the Military Cross at Pozières, and lastly he won a Bar to the Military Cross at Bullecourt. Sixty-five from all the States in the Commonwealth won the Victoria Cross. These are the names of the Melbourne men: The Late No. 2742, Private Beathaam, Robert Matthew, 8th Battalion; the late 2nd Lieut. Birks, Frederick MM., of the 6th Battalion; the late No. 483, Corporal Burton, Alex. Stewart, 7th Battalion; ex No. 2130, C. S. Major Dunstan, William, 7th Battalion; ex Captain Grieve, Robert Cuthbert, 37th Battalion; Lieutenant Ingrain, George Morby, MM., 24th Battalion; Captain Jacka, Albert, M.C. and Bar, 14th Battalion; Lieutenant Joynt, William Donevan, 8th Battalion; No. 2358, Sergeant Lowerson, Albert David, 21st Battalion; the late No. 6939, Private Mactier, Robert, 23rd Battalion; Captain Moon, Rupert Vance, 58th Battalion; Captain McNamara, Frank Hubert, Australian Flying Corps; ex No. 114, Sergeant Peeler, Walter, 3rd Pioneer Battalion; ex Lieutenant Ituthven, William, 22nd Battalion; ex Captain Symons, William John, 7th Battalion; the Late Major Tubb, Frederick Harold, 7th Battalion. Lieutenant A. Borrella MM., 26th Battalion, enlisted in Queensland, and 6594 Sergeant 31. V. Buckley, D.C.M. 13th Battalion, enlisted in New South Wales, but their next-of-kin were in Victoria, they too were awarded decorations and the late No. 2870, Sergeant S. Pearce, MM., 1st Machine Gun Battalion, enlisted in Victoria, but on being demobilised in England, went to serve with the Russian Relief Force, and was awarded the Victoria Cross for services in Russia. These names were given to me by Major J. M. Lean of the Base Record Office. Evaline Jones, of Auburn-road, won the Royal Red Cross. She sailed in 1915, and was at Merville when the hospitals were bombed, and followed the hospital along the line to Peronne.

These are names that may live when others will be forgotten; but the many hundreds whose in memoriams appear in our papers, did immortal service, and as we remember the song, but forget the singer, so will we remember their service while we forget their names. Here is one taken at random from our papers:-

DEATHS.
On Active Service.
Daborn: In loving memory of Private W. Daborn, who died on 22nd May, at Sydney Hall Military Hospital, Weymouth, England, after three years’ service with A.I.F., second surviving son of
Edmund Daborn, of 15 Rosslyn-street, West Melbourne, brother of Albert (Victoria), Gorge (England), and James (America). Thy will be done.

Each Battalion is mentioned in some memoriam. Each battle, each great episode, and so these advertisements expressing the heart feelings of the bereaved are a memorial history. Thus we read that Lance-Corporal Murdoch McKenzie, of the 60th Battalion, is remembered by his bereaved sister; that Gunner Stanley Paul Vaughan, of the 6th Battalion, fell at Lone Pine Hill, and is remembered by mother, father and sisters; Lieut.-Colonel White, of the 8th Light Horse, fell with his comrades at Walker's Ridge, and is remembered by relatives and friends. A private falls at Pozieres, only 18 years and six months old, Charles H. I. Horrocks, and is remembered by his sister Nellie. Stan Taylor is killed at Lone Pine Hill, in August, 1915, and his sister writes:

He is resting in an honoured grave,
At Walker's Ridge, where he was laid,
With a wooden cross to mark his grave,
One of Australia's Eighth Light Brigade

Some may criticise the verse, but none can challenge its spirit and sentiment. Fred Mitchell, private, of the 5th Battalion, died of wounds on the 11th of August, 1918, and is buried in the British Cemetery at Vignacourt, in France; his mother and father and brothers at North Melbourne remember him. Thousands of such notices appear in our press, and will appear for many a long day. During the war we held a great memorial service to Lord Kitchener in our Exhibition Building. Now the spirit of the age calls for like demonstration for the unknown private.

The Argus represented Sir John Monash as the Australian Infantry force personified. Citizen, scholar and soldier, he represents an army of citizen soldiers. He was born in West Melbourne in 1865, and was educated at the Scotch College, with two years spent at Jerilderie, NSW. He secured his degree of Bachelor of Arts in 1887; that was at the age of 22, and he was made an LL.B. in 1890. He commenced an engineering course, and qualified as a Master of Civil Engineering, and in 1893 won The Argus Scholarship. He has been president of the Victorian Institute of Engineers on four occasions, and was Secretary of the Monier Concrete Construction Company, which built the concrete bridge over the Yarra to the Botanical Gardens. He was in the Australian Garrison Artillery as early as 1887, and arose in this volunteer work until he became in 1908 Lieutenant-Colonel Monash. He met lan Hamilton when Hamilton was in Australia in 1913, and on the outbreak of the war at once volunteered for service, and in December, 1914, left Australia in command of the 4th Infantry Brigade. He fought at Gallipoli, and joined in the work of guarding the Canal, and then went to England and took charge of the training at Salisbury Plains. He thought men should know their officers before war, and held that an educated army was the fighting force. Then he went to France, and commanded his men at the Battle of Messines, and remained with the army until the close of the war. He was made a Lieutenant-General. His work after the war, in demobilizing the army and getting them safely home, was a crowning feature of his work. His was the triumph of mind, and an evidence that the engineer can save us in our day of conflict. He appeals to us, it seems to me, rather as an argument for technical education than military training. He is also distinguished as a speaker and writer. From the day of his return, he worked to save our old historic ground. He knew it well, having been born in Dudley Street, West Melbourne; within a stone-throw of it. He regarded it as a national crime to destroy it, and with well-chosen words and striking illustration he pleaded for its preservation. He remembered the wooden cenotaph erected in Whitehall, London, and the outcry that was raised when they proposed to destroy it before a permanent monument had been built, and he thought if this feeling existed for a temporary structure, how much greater should the feeling be for ground containing the earliest memorials of a city. This man, whose genius so hastened the victory of the Allies that all the world pays tribute to his worth, stood up in the open air in the Old Cemetery at one of our meetings and declared that this as the most sacred and most historic spot in all Victoria, and that he could not believe that the people of Melbourne were so utterly devoid of sentiment, so entirely lacking in gratitude to the pioneers who had blazed the trail, to callously permit its desecration. It would be a great breach of faith, amounting to robbery, which when we were erecting memorials to our soldiers
here, would show us to be a community of hypocrites. This man, who thus spoke is credited by *The Daily Mail*, in England, with hastening the day of Peace by at least one year.

The whole district around knew this man. The North Melbourne Battery of Australian Garrison Artillery entertained him, and Major-General Stanley, who was one of General Monash's first comrades, proposed the toast of Our Guest. General Monash had been associated with the Battery from 1887 to 1908. Therefore this district, in which our Cemetery is situated, knew and welcomed the man who gave both the final blow to the war, and also struck at that scheme for destroying our oldest memorial ground. I doubt not but his memory will live for his work in the war, and that his book on it will be long read, but he will also live in the affection of Melbourne for the stand he took to save our Old Memorial Ground. He is further remembered in Monash Valley, at Anzac, which was named after him.

To see General Monash on the battlefield, I turned to his book, *The Australian Victories in France*. In looking at the title page, we find that it is not only published in England by an English firm, but also issued here by Gordon and Gotch. That publishing firm is historical; they published one of the first editions of poems brought out by Adam Lindsay Gordon, and ever since they have been sending forth the work of Australian authors. This book is dedicated by the General To the Australian Soldier, who by his military virtues, and by his deeds of battle, as earned for himself a place in history which none can challenge. In that story we see the familiar faces of Gellibrand, Elliott, Rosenthal, and other men well known in social circles in Melbourne, who distinguished themselves at the front. We all know that the Anzac Corps ceased with the evacuation of Gallipoli, and there was never a united Australian army until they came together once again under the command of Monash for the final offensive. The Canadians, in going to France, had preserved their Canadian unity; says our writer, they were the first to become one homogeneous unit. By that fact they were victorious at Vimy Ridge in the Spring of 1917.

Australia in the fields in France was scattered and diversified. In Egypt they were the Anzac Corps, but were then associated with New Zealand. Birdwood and Godley were their commanders. There they gathered in strength and numbers, and became familiar with military movements. Fruitless as seemed that sacrifice at Gallipoli, yet we never lost heart. We at home stood before the Town Hall and watched the thermometer rise under adversity, and saw men in thousands volunteer to help their comrades at the front. Never in the history of mankind was there a more noble or more patriotic response.

General Monash believes that Australian nationhood found its highest development at the front. This, I doubt, but I do not believe in national sectarianism within the Empire. I therefore may be biased in my judgment. When the Australians were transferred by sea to France, they were under the command of Birdwood, and some Australians and New Zealanders together were under Godley. In France they were grouped differently, and separated at the Battles of Messines and Ypres; but the whole five divisions were found together at Paschendaele Ridge, but still under two different corps commanders. Monash argues that the sense of nationhood arose under single leadership. He is transferring to the battlefield that which originated under Federation, and which war never gave to a people. The name Anzac, in France, however, was superseded by the title *The Australian Army Corps*; thus the partnership between Australia and New Zealand was dissolved on the French battle front, in 1917, and the Australian troops were broken up and divided in different offensives, and not until 1918 did they come together again.

Then they were rallied for the final offensive under Birdwood. He, however, as we learn from the narrative of Monash, was appointed to the command of the Fifth British Army, and the Australians came under the leadership of a Melbourne man, an exceptional man, heroic, and profoundly a General on the field, and one of our best citizens at home. This man, Sir John Monash, took command in the month of May, and held the position until after the Armistice.

The Victorious offensive came under his leadership. He had an effective army of 200,000 men, exceptional men, as their leader was exceptional. But we cannot tell in memorial history the story
of each soldier; those that are mentioned must be multiplied to know the army. At times they had 1200 guns in their batteries. A feature was the invention of the tank by an Australian; as the periscope was thought out by an Australian, so, too, the tank. A large number of tanks were present at the Battle of Hamel. We know how the Australians fought in Belgium and in Flanders. But more glorious victory came to them before Mont San Quentin.

St. Quentin is their great memorial. The check to the Germans had come by a river, marked on the map the Ancre. The men by the Somme and the Ancre stayed the German advance. Ancre means anchor, and in that symbol was the message of hope. How many Melbourne men were in that fight we cannot say, but an outstanding figure in that first struggle was General Elliott.

He led the men at Villiers Bretonnoux, and on the third Anniversary of Anzac Day (April, 1918), we were in the possession of that town. The fight, henceforth to be known as the Spearhead, thrust into the heart of the enemy, is from west to east. The Australian Army being to the south of the British, and to the north of the French, became the pioneer of them both, led by General Monash. Elliott, Gellibrand, Rosenthal, Glasgow, Maclagan, and the other Generals who were with him in the fight were nearly all well known in Melbourne. Gellibrand succeeds him in command of the Third Division. When he gives it up to take supreme command, in leaving them, Monash said, “Good-bye and good luck.”

On becoming Commander-in-Chief of the Australians, he at once enters into full fellowship with the Home Office, and is wonderfully helped by the Secret Service. He was kept informed on the movements of the enemy along all fronts. This information showed him that the enemy was weakening in certain places, such as before Amiens and at Chemin de Dames, and he wanted to prove to us in his own words, “that there was some kick left in the British Army.” So he submitted what he thought was a concrete proposal to General Rawlinson that was that he should capture the villages of Hamel and Vaire, and Hamel Wood. The battle plan being agreed on, and crystallized, he moved on in July, and for sentimental reasons asked the Commander-in-Chief to allow a body of Americans to fight with us. “This was the first time any American troops had fought in an offensive battle.”

Mr. Hughes and Sir Joseph Cook visited the army two days before the battle, and heartened the troops with their addresses. All the watches were synchronized the night before, so that the whole army employed might enter on the action at the one time. The morning was the fourth of July, and it opened with a fog. Nature’s smoke screen assisted the troops in surprising the enemy. The battle was fought in 93 minutes. The French Prime Minister Georges Clemenceau, on 7th July, visited the Australian Army and congratulated it on its victory. He closed his address to them with these words:-

“I have seen the Australians, I have looked into their eyes I know that they are men who have fought great battles in the cause of freedom, and will fight on alongside of us till the freedom for which we are all fighting is guaranteed for us and our children.”

This capture of Hamel on 4th July was the end of the Fabian strategy that had characterized the war. It came just before the days when France celebrated the Fall of the Bastille. This occurred on 14th July, and this year it was the beginning of a general offensive along the Allied line. The next attack by the Australians was fixed for 8th August. This time some Canadians fought with us, and the game of leap frog commenced; that is, that when one Division is tired, another fresh one passes over it into the battle line. Thus fresh men are always fighting at the front. This had been done with small bodies of men before, but to Monash is the credit of applying this method of warfare to Divisions.

Secrecy was one of the great means which led to the surprise of the enemy. They never expected that a hundred and sixty tanks would attack them. Trench warfare was gone forever. It was now a moving battle. Monash describes the artillery bombardment in these battles as the most spectacular thing he had ever witnessed, 1000 guns in symphony. The great main road from Villiers Bretonnoux to San Quentin is a Roman road, and along this the armoured cars travelled.

The tanks were not so particular about good roads; they went straight across the battlefield. Men were killed, but not at all in proportion to the destruction wrought in the enemies lines.

266
Monash said: “Such small losses as had been incurred were more than counterbalanced by the elation of these volunteer troops at this further demonstration of their moral and physical superiority over the professional soldiers of a militarist enemy nation.”

The victory of the Australians is followed up by a forward movement of the entire Allied Army. The high Command could only give a general direction to the advance. The Corps Commanders took the initiative in their districts. This pre-eminently suited the Australian.

Monash says that “the world war dispelled all idea of iron discipline, and the Australian, a volunteer and a pioneer, in the sense that he came from the newly-settled districts of Australia, was able to naturally determine how far he could go on any given day and still keep in touch with his comrades.”

The Battle of Chuigres was fought on the 23rd of August, and led the enemy to abandon all hope of retaining the country west of the Somme, and now daily he moves towards the Rhine. The great personality in this battle was Major-General Glasgow, a man well known in Melbourne. He had fought at Gallipoli, and for two years had led his brigade in France. It was at this time they captured the great naval gun, the greatest trophy won by anybody of men in the war. Constantly had it bombarded the cities west of the Somme. It was too big to ship to Australia for our War Museum.

The design was being fulfilled, the enemy was being beaten out of the??? nds of the Somme, and our men restored the crossings of the river, and thus commenced the work of reconstruction. The roads were rebuilt, and even the railways behind the army, and as towns and villages were released they came again to life under the flag of the Allies. The war is becoming a pursuit, and General Fraser is praised for the way he brings on his Artillery. The Somme, on the way to Mont St. Quentin, is almost a marsh, in places 1000 yards wide. Our engineers build ways and bridges over it, and carry the army to the Mount. The fight for this hill and the town of Peronne wages from the dawn of the 31st of August until nightfall on 3rd of September. They fell before our infantry, and the enemy fled to the shelter of the Hindenburg Line. The fight had been an open fight with Australian Infantry, who shatterered forever the most famous of the Prussian Regiments.

This hill of St. Quentin is not to be confused with the City of St. Quentin, in the north of France. The taking of this hill and the town of Peronne was the finest single feat of the war.

The outstanding personality in it was Major-General Rosenthal. He was an architect before the war, and is associated in this victory with General Hobbs. Monash, while directing all these operations, had lived in a chateau at Bertangle, and it was to this chateau that a stream of visitors had set in. Lord Milner, Winston Churchill, Robert Blatchford, Conan Boyle, artists like Streeton and Longstaff, celebrated journalists, and, of course, Haig and other Generals. It was here the King knighted him, on the 12th of August, 1918, in the presence of 500 men, 100 taken from each Division. Now that Monash must move forward and break the believed-to-be impenetrable barrier of the Hindenburg Line, all these associations and luxuries have to be left behind. The Germans called this line the Siegfried Line. The part we were interested in stretched from St. Quentin to Cambrai. This is high ground separating the Scheldt from the Somme. Through this Napoleon cut a canal that is to-day known as the Canal de St. Quentin. This canal is partially open and partially tunnelled. Upon this, Monash tells us, Hindenburg based his great system of entrenchments, embattlements, and entanglements. The canal was the rear of this fortified frontier, and our men had to fight through a mile of this before they struck the canal. Monash saw that the weak point in it was the tunnelled part, and this he asked leave to attack. It involved turning his forces toward the north, and instead of going due east, as formerly, he would have to move in a north-easterly direction. To this the headquarters consented. A transport vehicle was taken from the Germans containing maps of the district in front of the Australian troops, showing the complete scheme of the Hindenburg defence in that district. They were old maps, and did not cover all the ground, but by their help the attack was launched. In this fight there stand out some Scotch-Australian names: Maclagan, a man, though not Australian born, yet so fully ours, that he had been a director at Duntroon, and had led us at Gallipoli. Glasgow, Mackay, and Fraser were others. The enemy was deceived in the first offensive at Hamel by our firing smoke
shells, instead of the gas shells always fired; thus, when German prisoners were captured, a number of them had on their gas masks. So in the taking of the Hindenburg Line they were again duped by dummy tanks. The terrible array of tanks, accompanied by a most terrific hail of machine gun fire, led them to quickly surrender. The attack commenced before dawn on the 18th of September, and by midnight the outposts of the line had fallen, and from the position they attained, they could look down into the canal. This great victory was won with proportionately less loss than in any other battle. The Americans are with us in great numbers at the end.

They started with a thousand men at Hamel, and now have two Divisions, under the command of Monash. The Allies were now fighting all along the line from Belgium to Verdun, but our troops stood out before the line, like a spear-head plunged into the heart of the enemy. General Read led the American troops; they were inexperienced, and often neglected to mop up the trenches as they went along, and thus not uncommonly got it in the back. The Australians followed after and cleaned the trenches out. A mission from the Australians had been in the American camp to explain this, but inexperienced men forget instructions when in the battle.

For seven days the struggle was sustained, until the canal was crossed and the Hindenburg Line was in the hands of the Australians. It had been crossed a little earlier in another part of the line, but our men went further afield, and seizing Beaurevoir, completely compelled the enemy to give up all hope of retaining his hold on France. We remember the cablegrams, and how they were discussed. How we doubted the sincerity of the German, when he proposed an armistice. But no sufficient story ever reached Melbourne, yet we knew the proposals for the Armistice; but the general feeling seemed in Melbourne to be against granting it. War had made bitterness at home. We did not know or

...
alike in war and peace. I regret to say that so great a man as Monash should have closed his book with an appeal for military preparation, in such a form that it seems an encouragement to the Jingoes. No man of the artisan class became a General on the side of the Allies, although Russia after withdrawing from the war became Bolshevist, and Joffre was the son of a well-to-do peasant, but he became a General before the war broke out. While Monash is in sympathy with his class he cannot be rightly called an apostle of war, for he says: "From the far-off days of 1914, when the call first came until the last shot was fired, every day was filled with loathing and horror. I deplored all the time the loss of precious life and the waste of human effort. He is therefore without satisfaction or enthusiasm for war, but as a military man thinks that the British Army will do more to preserve peace than the League of Nations".

England calls on the whole Empire to do as they have done in Whitehall. The Graves Commission arranged that Sir John Burnett, the architect, should report on the graves of Gallipoli and Palestine, and a body of Australians were sent to work in these places constructing cemeteries. It is a coincidence that the first burial in the Melbourne General Cemetery in 1853 was a Burnett, so we readily think of the name.

Sites for cemeteries have been reserved in Belgium, at Passchendaale, St. Julion, Gravostafel, Zonnebeke, Hooge, Polygon Wood, Hill 03, Neuve Kglise, Ypres, Messines, Zillebeko, Wytschaote, St. Eloi, Hill CO. and Kemmel, and in like manner in France Pozieres, Vimy, Monchy le Proux, Bourlon Wood, and Villiers Bretonnoux. Melbourne shares in England's dead, of which Mrs. Hemans has sung. Melbourne has memorials on the battlefields of Europe. If the dead men there could stand up, they would ask to be remembered with the pioneers here.

Among the troops who arrived in 1919 by the transport Armagh were two French army soldiers, each wearing the Croix de Guerre and the Verdun decoration. They were two brothers, Messrs' Albert and Emile D Assonville, of Russell-street, Melbourne. Being found unfit for service by the Australian authorities at the beginning of the war, they proceeded to France, and enlisted under the tricolour in time to take an active part in the Verdun battle. They returned having done their duty.

Geoffrey Wall, a Wesley College boy, who obtained his wings in the Royal Flying Corps in June 1917, was killed in an aeroplane accident two months later. He was only twenty years of age, and was a poet. Some of his poems, Songs of an Airman, have been published, with a memoir by L. A. Adamson. A Memorial Stair has been erected to him at the Wesley College, St. Kilda Road, and on a panel of it is the following verse, written by him, showing that he belongs to the people who gave Chatterton to the world:

\[
\text{Still true to thee shall each one be,} \\
\text{Where ever he wandereth,} \\
\text{And scorning fame shall play the game,} \\
\text{Although the prize be death.} \\
\text{A cairn of stones or bleaching bones} \\
\text{To show the deed was true,} \\
\text{And though they die their souls shall fly} \\
\text{Old School once more to you.}
\]

R. Collier was a goods guard in the Melbourne railway yards. He was killed at Rabaul, New Britain, by an explosion on a motor launch, on the 4th of July, 1915. He had enlisted for service with Tropical Expeditionary Force. They buried him in that remote north; put up a cairn of stones over his grave, and on the top of it an open book, carved in stone. The poetic prophecy of the boy from Wesley School was literally fulfilled in him.

Victorian soldiers have been released from all the prison camps of the enemy. They have known service in Germany, Austria, Russia, Bulgaria and Turkey, but very little has appeared about their experiences in our press. An occasional list of those who returned appeared.

Here alone are the names of Melbourne and 27 Suburbs. Melbourne's Military Roll of Honour is lost sight of, owing to statistics being all Australian. Localities disappear, and the record is that of the
Commonwealth. We lost sight of men like W. F. Langdon, ex-Mayor of Fitzroy, who spent two years and a half in service, because he is back at his ironworks in Fitzroy. Dr. Springthorpe returns to Collins Street, and is again a consulting physician, and the Colonel at the front is no more. He sits down and writes The Spear Head for The Age, confirming us in our belief that the Australians commenced the movement that led to the wreck of German militarism. He convincingly demonstrated that victory commenced with the Battle of Hamel, initiated by Monash. The Australians twice saved the situation. At Hazebrouck as well as at Amiens. They led the way, the French followed. By their action, Rawlinson says, the end was victory. He passed the word on to Haig, and Haig to Foch. Springthorpe knew the men at the Camp of Mena, and was in touch with the soldiers of Gallipoli. He was with them in London and in France, and knew their divers conditions of life, from Royal Park, Melbourne, to the last fight at the front. Bean, Schuler, and Springthorpe must be mentioned together, as Melbourne's Historians of the War. Springthorpe is especially dear to the old pioneers, because on Empire Sunday, Batman's anniversary (1919), he stood on Batman's Monument and said that in Australia we were making every effort to keep green the memory of the dead who had fallen in defence of the Empire; but to these who had rested here for so long a time, we also owed very much, and it was incumbent upon us to keep them in remembrance, for many of the dead bore historic names, and he recalled the names of several naval and military men buried in our Old Cemetery.

Before the war broke out, Dr. Springthorpe presided over our civil ambulance work. He was to Melbourne what Dr. Storey Dixon was to Sydney, and therefore was ready to enter at once into Red Cross work. He was but one of many medical men who volunteered for service, some of whom are misunderstood or almost forgotten. Dr. James Barrett became the subject of a good deal of criticism in 1915, in connection with Red Cross work. He finished by becoming a Lieutenant-Colonel, and being knighted by the King. He acknowledges that he did an important work at the front as an anglican and being knighted by the King. He won respect for the Anglica Ace, son of Dr. Archibald Grice, at 4th March, 1917, aged 22. He was buried at Bapaume. Prof. R. S. Wallace, Dean of the Faculty of Arts and Professor of English at the Melbourne University, relinquished his University duties, joined the Artillery, and went to the front. He resumed his duties at the University on his return. Sir John Grice said that one thousand eight hundred and sixty-four students had gone to the front, of whom two hundred and twenty (220) would never return. Professor Wallace went with them, but happily returned. A Chair of Architecture or an Atelier has been created in the University through the influences of the Royal Victorian Institute of Architects. Lieutenant H. R. H. Butler, a past student in the University, and a member of the Architects Students Society, enlisted, and after two and a half years of service lost his life, killed in an aeroplane accident at Turnberry, in Scotland, on 2nd June, 1918. He was the only son of Walter R. Butler, the architect who arranged that prizes should be given to the students of special merit, who sketched and measured and made plans of certain tombs in the Old Cemetery. He died at the age of twenty-one, a brave and fearless youth, full of life and hope. He had completed the conquest of the air, and was a thorough master of the aeroplane. They carried him with an aerial escort to his grave in Scotland.

The women of Hawthorn, members of the Australian Women's National League, secured the erection of a tablet in the Scotch College to Captain Clive Crocker, who was killed at Cape Helles on the 12th July, 1915. He was an Old Boy of the College, and when the tablet was unveiled, Brigadier-General Brand said he knew of no more appropriate place for such a memorial than the Hall of a great Public School, where character was being so finely moulded. Captain Crocker he said, was the ideal of an officer and a gentleman, and he met his death in circumstances of great bravery.

270
The Scotch College is expanding, and they have erected a new building, a Memorial College. Every little suburb or district does its work. Balwyn is only a part of Camberwell, but on One-Tree Hill, Beckett Park, the highest spot for miles around, they unveil a memorial to the men of Balwyn, and the State Commandant, Brigadier-General C. H. Brand, a valiant man from the front, speaks on the deeds of the Anzacs, which he thinks will serve as an inspiration to future generations. These and other suburban memorials are referred to in our historical sketch of the suburbs.

Mrs. Hughes, the wife of Brigadier-General F. G. Hughes, C. B., V. D., took a deep interest in our movement, and represented the National League of Women at an Assembly hall meeting. General Hughes long and honourably served his country. He was one of the first Victorian militia officers to volunteer for service, and he organised and trained the third Light Horse Brigade, which he commanded at Gallipoli, and which will go down in history as the parent unit of the immortal 8th Light Horse Regiment, which at the Battle of Lone Pine made a glorious and wonderful charge, accounted to-day as one of the most heroic achievements in the Gallipoli campaign. (Brigadier-General Elliott was made a Senator. Sir J. W. McCay became Chairman of the Fair Profits Commission, and now their civilian occupations make us forget their military record.

Some cases bring home to us that the tragedy of war is not all wrought out on the battlefield. A promising young man, Vincent Smith, of the Australian Flying Corps, was struck by the propeller blade of an aeroplane. He was treated in France and thought to have been properly treated, and was sent home, and died in Melbourne. Captain E. C. Howell was drowned in December, 1919, off the Island of Corfu, while on a flight from England to Australia. His body was found and brought to Melbourne, and he was buried with military honours in the Cemetery at Heidelberg, the suburb in which his parents lived.

One of the saddest cases of a returned soldier passing away soon after coming home was that of Major-General Burston, who in the early part of 1920 was buried with military honours in the St. Kilda Cemetery. We have a right to think of these men Dr. Springthorpe once said: On the 4th of November a ceremonial service in memory of the soldiers of the First Australian Division killed in action before Amiens was held, at which the Bishop of Amiens expressed his gratitude to the Australian troops who had been there to save Amiens, and redeem the province of Picardy. Not only had they stopped the Hun, he said, but they had launched an attack from which the victory which followed had sprung. In the Cathedral is to be erected a statue of an Australian soldier as a memorial to the Australian army from the people of Amiens. On top of Mont St. Quentin is a site given by the French Government for a national monument expressing the thanks of France. Marshal Foch bore tribute to the valour of the magnificent Australian troops, and Marshal Haig declared that the part played by Australia both on the battlefield and at home would live gloriously for all time.

We were represented at the Peace Conference by more than our British delegates. Signor Miechel Orlandi, Prime Minister of Italy, married a Melbourne girl. In 1902 he came to Melbourne to transact some business for his father, and stayed at the Victoria Coffee Palace. There he fell in love with one of the waitresses, and married her. Her mother was Margaret Jones, the Licensee of the Mulgrave Arms Hotel, at Oakleigh, and her sister is Mrs. M. Mikkelsen, who resides at Thornbury.

The losses of men to the British Empire during the war was 2,917,718 killed and wounded.

| Killed or presumed dead | Military 835,743 | Naval 22,281 |
| Wounded | Military 2,047,211 | Naval 4894 |

The casualties in the air force totalled 589. As opposed to this we take the following cablegram from The Age:-

“A Berlin telegram received via Copenhagen states that a final adjustment of Germany’s war losses shows that:

1,077,000 Germans were killed;
384,000 are missing (nine-tenths of whom may be regarded as having been killed
4,317,000 were wounded, and that 010,000 are prisoners who have not returned.

271
The grand total of the Empire's forces during the war, exclusive of labour and Chinese units, was 8,054,407. The naval tonnage was 6,500,000. The war debts of the Empire at the close of the war (1919) were: United Kingdom, 6,500,000,000, or about £141 per head of population; Canada, £300,000,000, or about £37 per head; Australia, £300,000,000, or about £60 per head; New Zealand, £70,000,000, or about £60 per head; South Africa, £30,000,000; India and other Dominions, £150,000,000. Empire total, £7,350,000,000.

The war put every white man, woman or child in the Empire in debt to the extent of at least £100. The memorial idea has transformed Melbourne, and indeed Victoria. The Great Ocean Road running west, touching at Lorne and Apollo Bay, was a Geelong movement, yet it was of value to Melbourne, bringing the seaside watering places within reach of the motorists from the city.

The suburbs have their separate memorials. It was claimed that a Monument in Harcourt granite, in memory of nineteen soldiers, unveiled by Mrs. W. H. Poole, the wife of the President of the Broadmeadows Shire, and Brigadier-General Brand, at Mickelham, was the earliest, but an earlier one had been unveiled at Surrey Hills. The Footballers of North Fitzroy put up a Colonnade at the entrance to their grounds to commemorate the death of their comrades. The Avenue of Honour along North Road, Brighton, commemorates the fallen soldiers from Brighton to Caulfield. Each tree bears some soldier’s name. At Mortialloc a Flagstaff and Obelisk has been erected. A Memorial Window was unveiled at Scots’ Church, Heidelberg, and an Honour Roll at the East St. Kilda Presbyterian Church. Reverend J. J. agan, of St. Mary’s, East Camberwell, is leading a movement to build a Roman Catholic Church as a memorial to the soldiers, and they may have the memorial cloister. It is interesting to hear politicians join in the chorus. The State Treasurer, at the Lord Mayor’s Banquet, in congratulating Councillor Aikman on his elevation to the Chair of the City, said that he had arranged for the transmission of a Statue of the late King Edward to the Alexandra Gardens; yet at the same time he had also arranged for the casting out of 500 city memorials.

While we have been transformed by the War Memorial idea, old Melbourne was sensible of the value of memorials. This is shown in the naming of its streets, and the great roads which indicate the way of settlement. They are both historical and geographical. Sydney Road is the way to Sydney. Mt. Alexander Road is the old way to the gold fields. The Dandenong Road to the way to Dandenong. Punt Road to the old punt. The Racecourse Road to the Races. Now that some of these roads cease to be used for their old purpose, the names become historical.

But the greater number of them were designedly so. For instance, I read in the Minutes of the City Council the proclamation of the streets of Fitzroy. The Councillors named them after themselves, sometimes displacing older names to do so. Thus there was a William Street in 1851, which was changed to Moor Street, and part of King William Street becomes Condell Street. Belle View Street is made Palmer Street. Latrobe Square, which you can see on our 1856 map, is then proclaimed; it has since disappeared. Albert Street is proclaimed as Bell Street. Western Road is called Nicholson Street, Eastern Road Smith Street, and the Government Road, running east and west, is called Johnston Street. Charlotte street is proclaimed as Young Street. Argyle Street becomes Kerr Street, but an Argyle Street still remains in the district, and New Street is named Westgarth Street. These old streets are now a reminder of old councillors. You find these memorial names in every suburb. St. Kilda has the memorials of the Crimea, in Inkerman and such streets, and our nineteenth century literary men in the Poets’ Corner, in such streets as Dickens and Tennyson Streets.

I have deviated from the narrative, to show that the pioneers anticipated us, and indicated the way to the present memorial sentiment, and I thought that we might name the way to our National Memorial, Alliance Avenue, Military glory is ephemeral. Franklin Murray new that, when he organised in this city the returned soldiers’ movement.

In earlier times, old Cincinnatus was a Roman farmer, and when the war was over he went back to the plough. Washington did the same, and became President of the State of Ohio including the town of Cincinnati. The city of Ohio, was where his soldiers settled, is called by that name Cincinnati; and I have walked down Walnut Street, Vine Street, Plum Street and other streets in that great city, which
recall the farm worker and the pioneer rather than the soldier. The 30th of May in America is Memorial Day. It was made a National Holiday in 1884. On that day they decorate the graves of the soldiers and the pioneers. A tribute of flowers to the fallen braves. A holy sentiment in all lands. The widows weep over their husbands, and the orphan recalls his father.

Here in Australia, we have walked across Royal Park when the recruits were preparing for Anzac and Pozières and I think of like scenes at Broadmeadows and Seymour and I wish I had done sentinel duty there; and although getting old, I had taken my turn at drill, for these are historic grounds. How often have we sung the Marseillaise. Will we forget it to-morrow? Are we going forward? Let us keep what we have won at so great a sacrifice. Let us see the noblest side of military service.

“I know the Australian soldier. I have seen him take his clothes off in the recruiting room, expand his chest; I have taken down the measurements and drawn up his papers. I know he was a man, that he meant it all, realised the horrors of war, but also the necessity for action. He never went hypnotized by war fever to the front, but simply know that he was wanted, and went and fell as our men centuries ago fell at Cressy, Agincourt and Poictiers. The Light Horse, the Artillery, the Australian Infantry, a legion of heroes, sleep in foreign graves, and therefore I proposed that their monument should be by the side of that of the fathers of our city.”

Forty thousand Australians fell at Gallipoli alone, and when struck they simply said: I’m off for a holiday. Our opponents recognized them as fearless. We know the moral element in them. We know the thinking man, and call them heroic. Big Lizzie is firing over the Peninsula, the transports are out on the blue sea, a lovely day for sport, and these men, as if at Flemington, face Lone Pine Hill. The Battle of Sari Bair is in many acts. It seems to stretch from the Rocky Lomnosor from Mudros Bay to Ryrio’s Pos aye, yrie, the name of the old pioneer. Empire Day comes, and will ever be remembered as Burial Day. On that day they buried their dead. We go back and plant on their graves the wattle, the kohai, and the rose; living or dead, they are ours. They should have landed at Gaba Tepe, but by mistake struck Anzac Bay. God cared for our men, and saved them from what awaited them at Gaba Tobo. Not they, but we who stayed at home, should have gone there. They died for us; died with the Australian sunshine in their faces. They go swimming in Anzac Bay. Beechy Bill is firing, a shell comes in among them, some sink. They pick them up, bring them home, and go on swimming. If things are wrong, we cannot find fault with them. We will immortalize them, treasure the names of the transports on which they travelled The Sunties, The Persies, The Ceramics, great liners turned to patriotic service. Whether under the shadow of the Pyramids, or near the Field of Troy, or among the white tents on the Mount of Olives, they are always in the classics. Back some come in their hospital ships. The first batch came in The Yarra in July, 1915. The welcome home continued over many months with enthusiasm, but there were 60,000 who would never see their friends again in Australia. We are decorating their graves on the battlefields of many lands. The war ships, H.M.S. Melbourne, The Yarra, Huon and others came in. They had been in the West Indies, in search of the German ship The Karlsruhe; had cruised in the Caribbean Seas, were out on a long Atlantic patrol, touching at Halifax, Bermuda, Jamaica. The Melbourne caught the Dutch steamer Hamborne carrying contraband. She remained with the North Sea Fleet for nearly a year, then acted as a convoy between the Shetland Isles and Norway. She was present at the surrender of the German Fleet. She took the Nurnberg to the Firth of Forth, and a squadron of light German cruisers to Scapa Flow. The sailors from our war ships had their own story to tell us. There is nothing so ephemeral as military glory. Who today knows anything about Whirlpool, the man who in the sixties won the Victoria Cross. A few names stand out, which we will probably always remember. We cannot forget Ian Hamilton, who wrote a great book against Conscription, gave the Commonwealth a plan of organised defence, and afterwards led our forces at Gallipoli. We will remember that Tom Price was Commander-in-Chief of the military forces in Victoria in 1902. That General Bridges perished at Gallipoli, that Jacka, a Wedderburn young man, won the Victoria Cross, that Birdwood, Monash and Godfrey were with the Australian Forces in France; but the myriads who went down to death in the struggle are forgotten.

273
Each suburb has tried to remember its own. Remote places like Phillip Island, in Westernport, have a memorial. That on this Island stands near the landing place, and has on it the names of the Phillip Islanders who fell, and they are nearly all, if not all, the sons of old colonists. Before the Town Hall in some suburbs you see the memorial or on a mural tablet in a hall, or a memorial window in a church. These will focus in the national memorial on St. Kilda Road.

The very thoughtful discussion at the Royal Victorian Institute of Architects led to but one conclusion, that was, that the only open space in the city suitable for it was the Old Cemetery. The Governor laid the emphasis on spaciousness, and nowhere else near the heart of the city were there ten acres available. It was no longer a burial ground, but a memorial ground, and even if it were still a burial ground it would not matter, for the Imperial Graves Commission has resolved to see memorials erected in a thousand cemeteries near the scenes of action.

Richard Howitt, in 1843, thought on its height and central position, and said that from that eminence he could look out over Port Phillip and think of the great ocean way. A light from the Statue of Liberty could be seen at Sorrento. It is 130 feet above the level of the sea. Looking west, Howitt could see Mount Cotterill and north, Macedon; and he reflected that away east was Westernport. From that position he could think of Port Phillip within and without, and as it was in his day so it was in ours. Some architects advocated destroying such buildings as the White Hart, the Grand Hotel, and the Empire Theatre, and creating a garden and boulevard in front of the Parliament House. But here is the hereditary spot, near the heart of the city, symbolizing the place of the men in our affections. Our burial place in France is called The Pioneers Cemetery. Now, in return, call The Pioneers Cemetery in Melbourne, The Soldiers Memorial Ground, and build there your Hall of Fame, which will be a Hall of History, built on the most historic spot in Melbourne.

While we were bargaining for sites in France for our cemeteries, it was said that generally they were ten acre blocks, about the size originally of our Old Cemetery. Paragraphs appeared in our papers that we were going to destroy ours here, where lie the bodies of the pioneers, but that such was our interest in the French graves that on the Continent they were looking for a rush of Australian visitors. The Frenchmen and Belgians agreed not to charge the visitors more than seven and a half Francs for bed and breakfast. That is, we would dig up our own graves here, and then travel to France to see graveyards exactly the same size. There. Only, instead of the various and beautiful monuments here, you would see regular rows of mediocre stones. You would stay a night near the graveyard, give 6 shillings and 3 pence for bed and breakfast, and then return to Paris, and come back and call us sentimental fools for looking after your property while you were away. There are over one thousand five hundred British burial grounds in France; three hundred of these have been taken over by the Graves Commission, and one design has been approved for all cemeteries. The largest British Cemetery in France is said to be that at Etaples, one of the hospital bases during the war. It contains 11,017 graves, 10,439 of which are British. In the report of the Graves Commission, we read: The allied nations, too, have freely given their land forever. That, according to a recent law, means till they want it for a vegetable market. Mr. William Lucas, of the Victorian Institute of Architects, suggested that the National Memorial should be at the foot of Exhibition Street, with a frontage to Flinders Street; that it should stand opposite to Government House, and that beyond it on the Railway side of the street there should be the statue to Flinders. His ground plan was published in the London Building News. Provision was made for sculpture, stones of panegyric, altar bays of honour, rolls of honour, colonnades, and platforms for orators. With the exception of his idea of an amphitheatre, all that he proposed could be worked out in our Old Cemetery ground. His colonnades could be at the entrances, and his honour altar bays at the corners. Here it would have been in touch with the arteries of the city, and approached from the western side over Flagstaff Hill, through a green arcade, The Alliance Avenue. He admits that the War Museums must be at Canberra, therefore they would not be admitted to our Place de la Concorde, which the President of the Royal Institute of British Architects in England has referred us to for illustration. Here would be the place for leisured contemplation, and from the monument you could see the whole panorama of Port Phillip. A crypt under the memorial would be a suitable place for souvenirs, like the crypt under St. Paul's.
Take down the sheds at the north end, and carry a street through behind the first Markets, and you then have a memorial square in which on Decoration or Remembrance Day the Anzac Band would play the old memorial tunes. Displaying it on Burial Hill would be better than hiding it in the Valley of the Yarra. If you go south of the Yarra, you are suburban, if you go north of Victoria Street, you are suburban. You cannot go west because of the railway station; nor east, because of Parliament House, but here we are in the area of the city proper, near its heart, where we can remember the men who defended our Empire with these who created our city. Lloyd George’s proposal was carried out in London, where they have erected a Catafalque (a raised platform upon which lies a coffin) in Whitehall, taking the form of a richly-decorated tomb, as a permanent central memorial. A guard with reversed arms keeps perpetual watch over it. Bonar Law referred sympathetically to the proposal that an unknown private should be buried in Westminster Abbey, and said that the Government adhered to its intention to bury the body of a private in the Whitehall Cenotaph. He is gone, but the proposal has materialized in the soldiers grave in Westminster. A movement was on foot to erect replicas of the cenotaph throughout the Empire, and the cost was declared to be between £15,000 and £20,000.

The Australian and New Zealand soldiers in London, the cables said, daily thronged to see it, it so touched the imagination of the people. If, then, a replica had been placed in our Old Cemetery, and an Anzac buried there, that national funeral would have an abiding place in our history. A few days after Jellicoe closed his visit, the following cable appeared in our press:

In France, The great Australian war memorial, to be erected on the ridge overlooking Amiens, will be of Australian trachyte marble. It will stand in grounds covering ten acres, and will be clearly visible from Amiens. All the graves of Australians who fell in this region will be placed round the memorial.

Mr. Hughes, addressing a number of soldiers in the site, said “It was fitting that Australia should erect her greatest memorial on the spot where, according to Marshal Foch, France had been saved. These men had not only saved France; they had saved Australia and civilisation. If the Germans had gained a victory Australia would have been the first to fall into her net, and there would have been no talk of a League of Nations or mandatories.” While we win ten acres in France overlooking Amiens, we lose ten historic acres in Melbourne overlooking our own city. A light from which could be seen out at sea.

Governor Stanley did not think the Gothic style appropriate, because it suggested the German. Nor did he think the old classical orders were suited to the occasion. What then is better than the first view presented by our Memorial Union: That it should have had in it the features of the Tower of London, and be surmounted by the Statue of Liberty; that it should express in stone the ideals for which we fought, the strength of alliances and the history of the conflict; that brotherhood, liberty, justice and consequently perpetual peace would find representation in a replica of the round towers grouped around a central square tower, above which would be the form of Liberty. We only suggested, we left the form to the architects, but that would have been Anglo-French, Anglo-Celtic, Anglo-American, while in the garden around we would see the Victorian flora, and from the gate leading down to the memorial, there would be the old Elm Avenue, and in the Hall, periodically we would hear the University Extension Lecturer on Australian history. Within that Hall of Fame, mural tablets, and statues, and forms of beauty, benevolence, utility, paying tribute to the sacred memory of the dead. The National Memorial of Germany celebrating the events of 1870 and 1871, stands on a spur of the hillside at the south end of the line of hills that narrow the Rhine Valley, Wiederwald. It is seven hundred and forty-five feet above the water level, and is situated opposite the Bingen Railway Station; on a huge base eighty feet high stands the image of Germania, thirty-four feet high. The principal relief on the base facing the Rhine symbolises “The Watch On The Rhine”. It is said to be an emblem of the unity and strength of the German Empire. In like manner let us place our memorial in a conspicuous place, an emblematic and historic spot, and let it above all symbolize that unity and liberty to which our Cemetery was consecrated in 1857. We perhaps plead in vain,
for the site of the memorial is now accepted, and the first to place a wreath on the site of the National Memorial on St. Kilda Road were the French officers from a visiting warship.

Still, the unknown soldier might be buried not far from the Old Pioneers Memorial. I have often stood before a wooden slab in the Old Cemetery and wondered whose grave it was, and I wrote to Miss Maud Cole to ascertain, and she thought that it was the grave of a heroic captain in the Royal Navy. So if we buried our unknown Australian soldier here he would not be the first. A memorial is to be erected on the banks of the Suez Canal to our men who fell in Egypt, and the selections for designs for it will take place in Australia. Why take so much trouble to remember these men, and at the same time lose sight of this grave of a captain in the navy?

Let us turn, however, to our visitors, General Pau and the French. The mission came to Australia on Friday, 11th October, 1918, and left in the second week of January, 1919. Pau was always recognizable by the red cap that he wore, and he seemed to be pleased with his visit. When in 1919 a number of Australians toured the Northern Battlefields of France, he warmly welcomed them, saying, that they had come from that beautiful country to which they owed everlasting gratitude.

General Sir William Birdwood arrived in Melbourne on Tuesday, 20th January, 1920. His stay was a round of festivity, as well as one of service to the military life of Melbourne. Not only was he at the Domain Camp, the office of the Minister of Defence, the Anzac House, the Repatriation Offices, the Returned Soldiers Hostel at Brighton, the Military Hospital at Caulfield, not only presenting medals and decorations at different places in Victoria, but he has a quiet Sunday with the Lieutenant-Governor at his cottage at Mt. Macedon, and is the guest in the country of men like W. Russell Clarke, M.L.C., at Sunbury. He attends gala performances at our theatres, meetings at our racecourses, lunches with returned soldiers and Australian Natives, dines with Parliamentarians and officers in the navy and army who have won distinction, and takes supper with the Lord Mayor in the old Council Chamber, while Madame Minnie Waugh and others discourse sweet music. A round of pleasure and labour, an enthusiastic welcome, a glorious greeting to the Commander of our forces at Anzac. This led him to say to the Y.M.C.A. gathering I have been overpowered by the warmth of my welcome to Australia, and to tell them how he had been touched by the way the Diggers had met his train at all hours of the night as it moved over the continent. From all this round of festivity the Trades Hall stood aloof, dreading the creation of a military caste in Australia. This is one view. Another equally odd of a different kind was the displaying of flags dipped in the Rhine in the procession of welcome. The blue ensign dipped by Lieut.-Colonel Wiltshire, and the other was the Battalion Colours presented to the unit by Mrs. W. M. Hughes, also dipped in the Rhine. They were carried by the 22nd Battalion.

Jellicoe’s visit came before Birdwood’s, but I reserved the account for the close of our story of our naval and military men. The visit of Viscount Jellicoe, of Scapa Flow, Admiral of the Grand Fleet for the first two years of the war, was on the 84th Anniversary of Batman’s arrival. Batman passed through the heads on the 29th of May, and Jellicoe did the same 84 years later. He came in the war vessel the New Zealand, and was received at the St. Kilda pier, accompanied by Lady Jellicoe. The gathering at the pier included Mr. Poynton, the Acting Minister of the Navy; Rear-Admiral Sir William Clarkson, who had control of the mercantile shipping taken over by the Government, and was facing at that time the shipping strike; also Rear-Admiral Sir William Cresswell, the State Commandant; Brigadier-General Brand; Brigadier-General V. C. Sellheim, and many civilians. He was borne on along the St. Kilda Road, and at South Melbourne Lady Jellicoe was presented with a Boomerang bouquet of pale pink carnations and Australian wild flowers. The party motored slowly through crowds to the Melbourne Town Hall. After drinking the health of the King, they proposed the toast of their distinguished guest, and Jellicoe said, among other things, in his response, that we have here to-day officers and men of the Royal Australian Navy, the navy which started so well by getting rid of The Emden (cheers) and whose submarine AE2 led the way to the Dardanelles. (Renewed cheers.) I can claim personal association with the Australian navy, for my cousin, the Late Sir W. Loring, was the first senior naval officer to command ships on the Australian station during the year in which I
was born. (Laughter and cheers.)

The Age afterwards, referring to his speech, said that the House of Lords had added to its debating strength in securing such a speaker. After Jellicoe had spent an hour with our City Fathers in the old Council chambers, he appeared on the balcony, and kindly said to the concourse of people present:-

“Citizens of Melbourne, I shall endeavour to convey to my comrades of the British navy an impression of the welcome you have given us to-day. I am much touched at this display of affection for the British navy. I thank you from the bottom of my heart.” These human words, uttered feelingly, changed all our ideas about the silent Admiral. No enigma, but a real man, stood before us. Although not thought of as an orator, yet his few words, expressed in a clear voice that all heard distinctly, moved all. Later he was interviewed by the representatives of the press, and said: “You want to know my opinion of the Australian sailor?” he queried in reply to a suggestion by The Age representative. “Well, there is no doubt that they have got the spirit of the sea in them. The Australian navy rendered incalculable service to the Empire during the war.” The gallery part, of course, was confined to the work of H.M.A.S. Sydney in the fight with the German raider Emden, and the exploits of the submarine AE2, which was the first submarine to enter the Dardanelles. The rest of the fleet had a somewhat monotonous time watching for the enemy that never appeared. The flagship of the fleet, H.M.A.S. Australia, had bad luck. She did not arrive until after the action off Heligoland and the Dogger Bank fight, and when the battle of Jutland occurred she was in dock refitting. The cruiser Melbourne was in port, and the ladies of Melbourne resolved to give it another white ensign as they made the first. The Australia also came and received an Australian welcome.

She was the biggest ship in the Australian fleet. When the German fleet surrendered to Admiral Beatty at the close of the war, The Cardiff led them between two lines of British warships, the one line led by The Lion and the other by the Australia. Admiral Jellicoe inspected our naval depot at Williamstown and our base at Westernport. Jellicoe said Phillip Island resembled the Isle of Wight, and the general surroundings resembled in many respects the waters off Spithead. Later he visited the aviation course at Laverton. The name recalls our old Cemetery. On the tomb of the Langhorne’s, the nephews of Lonsdale, are the words:-

Alfred Langhorne, Late of Laverton.

Land at that station (now our aviation ground) (Point Cook) was apparently originally in the hands of the Langhorne’s. Jellicoe was entertained by old and young institutions in the city; by the Navy League, before whom he gave an address on The Lessons of the War; by the Returned Soldiers and Sailors Imperial League, to whom he said The soldiers of the Commonwealth had immortalised the name of Australia in military annals. The landing at Gallipoli had been the admiration, not only of the British navy, but of the whole world, and it would go down in history, he was certain, as one of the most wonderful military achievements that had ever been carried out.

Lady Jellicoe addressed the Friendly Union of Sailors Wives and Mothers, and said: “early in the war she had discovered many very lonely sailors wives. They were brought together in friendly clubs, where they worked and entertained each other. It was splendid, because they got to know each other and to help all round.” Her husband had asked her to convey his personal sympathy with these members present who had lost dear ones during the war, and also to congratulate these whose men would be very shortly welcomed back home.

General White returned while Jellicoe was here, and received an enthusiastic welcome. Later he took an interest in trying to get the Prince of Wales to wreath Batman’s monument.

Jellicoe had been requested by (Lord) Baden Powell to see as many scout troops as he could while here. It is perhaps the only noble phase of boy militarism in Melbourne. He visited the headquarters of the Victorian Sea Scouts at Albert Park, and after seeing the boys was entertained by the Ancient Mariners, who initiated the movement. They are the retired members of the Merchant Service, and the press said Jellicoe received a nautical welcome. The Sea Scouts sang Whiskey Johnny, and Blow the Man Down.
Long ago, but in our own time, Mr. W. P. Buckhurst had the Albert Park Lake chosen as a yachting place, and his boat was the pioneer on the lake. As we think of Jellicoe, we recall the first ships, The Rebecca, Enterprise, Gem, James Watt, the Clonmel, and The Shamrock, and contrast them with The Hood, The Repulse and the rest of the British fleet that this year (1924) visited us and berthed at Port Melbourne.

On Saturday, the 19th of July, 1919, Peace was celebrated. There was not the enthusiasm which marked the earlier days of the war, when with the cry of liberty on our lips all parties unreservedly gave themselves to the service of saving France, and preserving our own Empire. The Market Committee resolved to open the market on that day, an act on a par with digging up the bones of their fathers. The public, however, would not tolerate this. Early in the war a section of the Socialist Party gave up singing the Marseillaise, on the ground that it had become a patriotic song. This feeling, however, was not accepted by the Socialist Party generally, nor by the Labour Party.

The red flag grew in popularity among the workers, and the effort of the Government to suppress its use only tended to extend a feeling among the working men that they were oppressed. About seven weeks before Peace celebrations the seamen struck. The ships were held up, and this led to a shortage in coal, and consequently a curtailment of the tram and train service, and a restriction in the use of gas and the electric light; therefore there was no general illumination of the city. That strike lasted three months, and the working men lost in Victoria three quarters of a million pounds in wages, and in the whole of Australia three millions; yet George Arnott Maxwell rightly held that the strike could have been settled in one minute if masters and men had met in a good spirit in conference. Labour jurisprudence in Victoria has penalized labour, and not saved us from industrial strife. The men seemed to have no confidence in Judge Higgins. Alexander Peacock did the best for Labour that has been done when he created Wages Boards, on which both master and man sat. Compulsory arbitration carried in its train litigation, and has proven itself a failure, and at this season marred alike the welcome to Jellicoe and the Peace celebrations. Instead of acting as after the defeat of the Armada, and lighting bonfires on every hill, roasting the bullock in public places, and giving food and refreshment to all, every public house and every cafe closed its doors. Two days before Senator Andrew Nelson McKissock, a labour representative, died, and the flag on the Trades Hall hung half-mast high. He had served in a Ballarat battalion in the Matabele war.

Still, in spite of the gloom, the march through the city of the heroic men and women who had served us on sea and land was the finest seen in Melbourne. They carried their battalion colours, and were led by their bands, and in the procession were a few trophies of the war. They paused for a few moments in Bourke Street to sound the Last Post, in memory of their dead comrades. It was the anniversary of Fleurbaix, the battle in which we suffered so much, and many thought that our quiet way of celebrating the day was a fitting anniversary to so dreadful a battle. This was an error, for we had no right to think of one battle more than another, but to commemorate the closing of the world’s greatest war, and to rejoice in a victorious peace. Therefore, the city should have risen in enthusiasm and revelled and feasted on the birthday of the New World.

July is named after Julius Caesar, yet in that month the Americans declared their independence. and the French destroyed the Bastille, and we became a separate colony, and once again in that month we rejoice in the promise of perpetual peace, and the death of Caesarism. This was the Governor-General’s message: To-day we close a great war era, the Peace we celebrate has a special significance or our Commonwealth, which commemorates the achievements of the first Australian Imperial Force ever put in the field by a united Australian people, and to-day the victory won, we enter on days of peace. Let us grapple with equal unity and courage with its problems, remembering the great sacrifices and triumphs, and set ourselves to secure the progress and prosperity of our country.

The Defence Department has issued a Memorial Scroll on which are these words: “He whom this scroll commemorates was numbered among those who, at the call of King and Country, left all that was dear to them, endured hardship, faced danger, and finally passed out of the sight of men by the path of duty and self-sacrifice, giving up their own lives that others might live in freedom. Let these who come
after see to it that his name be not forgotten."

The Peace Treaty was finally ratified on the 10th of January, 1920, and the League of Nations accepted. Melbourne has had the honour of giving the first Exhibition of the War Memorials for the Museum, at Canberra. General Sir John Monash opened it; it is a unique collection of the guns, boats, planes and other war machines used and the method of war pursued. There is the first flag displayed at Gallipoli in the Anzac collection, and one of the very last taken from the enemy. A collection of the buttons sold on Button Day in Melbourne is an interesting reminder of how we raised the millions for Red Cross work and other war charities. The model of San Quentin and that of Villiers Bretonneau are of great value to the student of history. The methods of camouflage here exhibited must pass into universal military history. The removing of a good tree and the replacing of it by another to be used in war tactics is not less instructive than the picture of The Australia leading a line of the German fleet when it is finally surrendered to England.

After the Disarmament Conference at Washington, it was resolved that The Australia should be scrapped, and at Christmas time (1923) they sold the fittings of the ship, and she was taken out to sea and sunk in Australian waters. On 4th August, 1921, a public meeting was held in the Town Hall, and a memorial committee formed, to raise money to build a National Memorial to the memory of the soldiers and sailors who made the supreme sacrifice. Thus that year they remembered the Declaration of War.

The site was chosen later in the Domain on the St. Kilda Road, and competitive designs were called for.

1. Messrs’ Hudson and Wardrop
2. William Lucas
3. Donald Turner
4. Lippincourt and Billson
5. Stephenson and Meldrum
6. Stephenson and Meldrum in conjunction with Desbroe Annear

The winners of the prizes were Stevenson and Meldrum, in conjunction with Desbroe Annear. The Monument is to be called The Shrine of Remembrance.

When the past has unfolded its glory,
And its strength and its weakness revealed,
And the poet has written the story
Of the widest and bloodiest field,
Then the magnitude of all shall be known,
And the volume of power be discerned,
And well tell of great treaties disowned,
And great cities and works that were burned.
We will tell it in verse, in our Iliads,
Great armies whose numbers were millions,
Great heroes who perished in myriads,
Great aeronauts flying on pinions.
The five hundred mile fine of the Freemen,
Embattled, entrenched, or enwalled,
Upheld by old England’s great seamen,
The fleets from wide oceans recalled.
Did man ever dare such wild feats of war?
Face such tempests, and torrents of shell?
Such courage, endurance was never before.
or such horrible battles from Hell.
And the ideals were great as the conflict.
For they fought for the freedom of man;
New fife the Marseillaise singers predict,
With their tricoloured flag in the van
The moral is written, a bond is a bond,
Belgium stands neutral though she be small,
The nations of earth to justice respond,
And equal rights are accorded to all
Protestant, Catholic, Mahometan,
Jew. All praying along our battle line,
And fervently praying as at home they do,
For with freedom of thought our States combine.
Thrones shall be shattered and Caesar destroyed,
And dignified man made priest and king,
None poor, none oppressed, but all employed,
Halleluiahs of liberty Bring,
Universal and godlike decision
Shall in council with justice be wrought,
And we'll think with the breadth of that vision,
That alliance and brotherhood brought.
Laurel, cypress, kowhai and wattle enwreathed;
Europe united, sober and free,
Poland and Palestine restored and bequeathed
A share in the world's democracy.
Sorrow in season, yet kindly inclined,
Rejoice for their triumph as you mourn
They fought and fell for the hope of mankind,
And by their death the world is reborn.

CHAPTER 10
REPRESENTATIVE MEN AND INSTITUTIONS.
WITH A HISTORY OF THE SUBURBS.

When the movement to preserve the Old Cemetery was initiated, the Historical Society in Victoria passed an indeterminate unchangeable notation on it. They passed a resolution in which they affirmed that in view of the indeterminate state of public opinion, they could not interfere. I invited them to discuss the matter, but they declined. I was prepared to affirm that in ignoring the question, they were not true to their objects as an Historical Society. I claimed that there were a hundred monuments in that cemetery which were a thousand times more valuable to history than that erected to Captain Cook at St. Kilda, and in this chapter I undertake to make good that position, as I sketch the history of some representative bodies.

The land was given to the denominations forever, and they resold it to the grave-holder for the same period. It has been argued that, that period, according to English law, is 999 years, and a monument erected over the dead in the Cemetery should have remained there, if it did not decay, for a thousand years. Anyway, it was far more valuable than any one erected by the way side. I went over the roll of St. Kilda pier ratepayers, for 1843. The City Council, you will remember, in the Eighties commenced in 1842, and I found among the names in the first column, sixty-four that were on the stones. There were in all 840 names on the roll, and three-fourths of them were represented in our Cemetery. So that if they called the roll in Heaven, early Melbourne would
History of Melbourne - Revisited

answer corporately from the Old Cemetery. The monument at St. Kilda is of little historic value. While it keeps the name of Cook in our minds, it marks no historic spot. Once I stood at Venus Point, in Tahiti, and looked on the spot where Cook observed the transit of Venus. The base of the monument was hexagonal. Within the hexagon was a circle, and within the circle a star, and on the star a cylinder, surmounted by a globe. I read the inscription: “This memorial, erected by Captain Cook, to commemorate the transit of Venus, 3rd January, 1709, was restored and fenced around, and this plate was placed here by the Royal Geographical Society.” Here is real history. By this monument geometrical in form, we are led to think of a mind that has been thought by some to have been the greatest nautical mind the human race has produced, a mind deeply interested in science. This monument, by its very form, recalled that historic fact. It marked an historic spot, and took us back to the discovery of Polynesia and Australia, and the foundation of the settlements in this part of the world. I looked out on the ocean and remembered that if Columbus discovered the land, Cook discovered the ocean. I had come by one of the most picturesque pathways in the world. I had wandered by cool streams in a tropical climate past banana and cocoa-nut plantations; had entered the mountains and ascended them by circuitous pathways, until I looked far out over the coral reefs on an expanse of ocean, while behind and beside me were valleys folded over valleys, tree-clad, with deep ravines. By the way of beauty, I had come to science, and history was pleasantly presented to me in a unique memorial, that belonged to the time it was erected, while that at St. Kilda is only a work of art, and therefore a thousand times less valuable to the world. The stones in our Old Cemetery were archaeological, and like this memorial at Tahiti.

When you land at Kurnell, in Botany Bay, the spot where Cook landed, you read that this is the birthplace of Australian History, and it is set aside as a memorial ground. On the pier is a tablet, with this inscription: This reserve was dedicated on 10th of May, 1899, and at the public ceremony the Honourable J. H. Carruthers, Minister of Lands, said: “I hope that as the public are to be the possessors of this reserve, it will be worthily preserved by them, and that its use will ever be associated with the best character of the people. Let all right-minded men be its trustees, guarding its monuments with its memories, so that no vandal act of destruction may desecrate it.”

Here is the spot where Sutherland was buried, the first Briton buried in Australia. Across the bay, at La Perouse, lie the remains of Recoeur, the first Frenchman buried. We read on Cook's monument: “Captain Cook landed here 28th April, A.D., 1770.” This is more truly historic than the monument to Cook in Hyde Park, Sydney. In like manner in our Old Cemetery we affirm that here there slept a hundred men and women who represent discovery, exploration, trade, commerce, religion, science, leading professions, literature and art, and all the conspicuous peculiarities of early Melbourne. Some of these men were truly great, and have an everlasting place in universal history, and here were the first monuments erected by the Melbourne public.

Therefore here is history. In saying this we do not forget these who are buried elsewhere. Fawkner in the Melbourne Cemetery, William Westgarth in England, Dr. Thomson in Geelong, Gellibrand in the forest, Arden (who died in a ditch) was buried on the goldfields, William Buckley in a churchyard in Hobart, Tasmania. ut here was interred the great body of representative men and women of early Melbourne), and as we think of them, we recall the institutions of the city, such as the Masonic Order, St. Patrick's Society, the Orange Institution, and the Temperance Movement. It was not only John Batman's grave that made the ground historic, but here were buried the Langhorne's, nephews of Captain Lonsdale. They represent the first settlers in Prahran, and one of them was the discoverer of fresh water at Williamstown, a discovery which, at that time, made that district habitable. Here lay buried Alexander Moffat Allan, a squatter speared by the natives in the Loddon district. It represented the men who suffered in the conflict with the aboriginals.

There was a grave directly behind Batman’s in which were buried several members of the Crossley family. One of this family was a butcher, and gave his name to Crossley Place, off Collins Street. The name also recalls one of the Faithful Party.” That party was murdered on the Sydney Road by the natives. Crossley escaped and told the story, and Lonsdale put the police on the track of the murderers. The first wife of George Augustus Robinson was buried in the Old Cemetery. Her grave
is now unknown. Robinson seems to have been passionately devoted to her. Colonel R. A. Crouch has in his possession a tribute to her Memory, in the handwriting of Robinson. It is the outpouring of a religious man. He sent it to Bishop Perry, who conducted her funeral service. She died on 11th August, 1848, and on the 14th of that month was buried in the Church of England ground. Mr. Crouch has also a memory-card, which was sent out after the funeral. Her name was Maria Amelia Robinson. Robinson married again. A copy of his Will is also in Mr. Crouch’s possession, from which we learn that he died in England at the age of 78, on 18th October, 1806, at his residence, Prahran, Wincombe Hill, Bath. His remains were interred in the Abbey Cemetery, Lyncombe Vale.

Robinson and Batman brought the Native War to a close in Tasmania, and Robinson became the Chief Protector of the natives here, and it is also said that the wife of one of his assistants, a Mrs. Parker, was buried there also. While this is only a report, yet it reveals the value of this historic ground in that it makes us search for exact truth. Sandford Holden was a representative. Although a young man, he was the first man charged by the Protector with the murder of the aboriginals. He certainly killed them, but it was held that he did it in defence of his property, and he was acquitted. He was a pioneer of the tallow industry. The melting pot to-day is a simile of revolution. We say that the nations of the Old World are in the melting pot, but the expression was in use in early Melbourne. It saved our early pastoralists from ruin. When the price of stock fell, the sheep and cattle owner saved himself by the manufacture of tallow. The Bolden tomb reminds us alike of the conflict with the aboriginals and the financial crisis of the forties.

James Malcolm’s wife and children were buried in the Presbyterian ground in the Old Cemetery. He was reputed to be the wealthiest man in early Melbourne. He was a native; of Caithness, Scotland. In 1820 he arrived in Van Diemen’s Land with fifty shillings. In 1836 he came to Port Phillip, when there were, he said, only two huts here. In 1851 he was the largest individual sheep owner in Victoria, having 30,000 sheep and 50,000 acres of land, and an income of £3000 a year. He was the friend of Dr. Lang, and took a deep interest in Separation. In 1851 he took a trip to England, and when at Colombo bought a gold chain, and on the voyage found that the trader in India had sold him a brass one. He who had seldom, if ever, been outwitted in Port Phillip, found himself taken in when abroad, and he laughed over it as heartily as anybody. His wife was Caroline Nesbit Wilkie, and she died 15th November, 1853. On the tomb were the words, of Olrig. Air. Malcolm's name is on the Electors’ Roll of 1843, and from the address there we learn that the Estate of Olrig was near Merri Creek. Another settler who built near Merri Creek, whose name appears on our old stones, was Locke. Lucy Locke was buried in the Church of England ground. We resolved that if the City Council had transferred the graves to Flagstaff Hill, to have the bones of the children placed under the Central Memorial.

Children's graves, like Skene Craig's child’s, the earliest memorial, are historic. William Dods arrived in 1838. This memorial was the stone over his children. Alexander Beatson Balcombe, the Founder of Mornington, was recalled by the grave of his child. Thomas Mouat was among these who tendered a breakfast to Dr. Lang, and his little son's grave reminded us of the fact.

**ISABELLA WILLIAMSON.**

*Her Christian name stood out at the head of the stone.*

*Sacred*

*the Memory of*

**ISABELLA.**

She was the widow of an Edinburgh lawyer, and came to Melbourne with six daughters. George Gordon McCrae told me that one of them married Captain Cain. She brought her girls into a young community, where there were five men to one woman, and they married some of our leading men and became the mothers of representative men in Melbourne. She died at a house called Airlie Bank, South Yarra, in the home of her son-in-law, Air. Ogilvie. I think she is representative, and the fact that so few female names are found in the Cemetery in proportion
to males is a revelation of the social life of early Melbourne.

There were three graves with the name Brock on the stones. First there is this grave of John Brock, of Bullanda. Then another of Mrs. Thomas Brock. The third is that of the Goodsirs, who have buried there, among other of their children, John Brock Goodsir. Mr. Brock, of Bundoora (near Preston), writes to me that The Goodsirs were close friends of the Brocks and in the Registration Book of the Old Colonist Association there is an entry to the effect that David James Cook Goodsir, of HM. Customs, came here from New South Wales on 2nd January, 1842 There are four in the Good Sir grave. Mr. Brock, of Bundoora, Preston, is a grandson of James Brock, who took up land in 1836, and a nephew of Thomas Brock, the remains of whose wife was there. George Gordon McCrae told me that he stopped at the Brock’s Station, when land surveying in the district, and was hospitably entertained. Victoria cannot call back the hospitality of Australia-Felix; that is something these old families represent which was a distinct fact in our early Australian life.

On the inscription the district where they resided is designated Bullanda Vale, Macedon. On Purchase’s map the place is called Bolinda. The Brocks insist that Bullanda is right. This diversity of spelling native names belongs to old Port Phillip; it took time to settle our orthography. Garnier, in his chronicles, says James Brock was here in 1836, and Garryowen tells that the Brocks and the Boldens started the tallow industry in Victoria. We regret that the name Mollison is not on our stone. He was one of our first overlanders, and belongs to the same age. The graves of John Creux, Esq., and Mrs. Charles Dodds were two Westernport graves. Mrs. Dodds died in 1841, and Dodds was one of the original settlers in the district. Charles Vale Sherard mentions him in his letter in the Old Pioneer series sent to Latrobe. Dodds Station was the south side of a creek eight miles from Manton’s station.

Westernport.

Westernport has the oldest record of any place in Victoria, and it has preserved many of its primeval features. The native bear is still seen on Phillip Island, climbing to the uppermost branches of the eucalyptus. The mutton-bird has a hundred thousand burrows at Cape Woolomai. The penguins have large rookeries among the rocks. The great eagles float over the bay. The seals on the rocks are the greatest animal show in Victoria. The native fauna is protected, but the aboriginal who called Port Phillip, Narne, is gone. Some of his names have survived, like Tooradin and Yallock. In 1798 Bass discovered the Port, and he is remembered not only in the Strait, but in Bass Hills, and in Bass River, which flows into Westernport. Two cairns have been erected to his memory, that of the Pioneers at Rhyll, Phillip Island, and that at Flinders. The one at Flinders has this inscription:-

“In commemoration of the Discovery and naming of Westernport by Surgeon George Bass, on the 4th of January, 1798; and the passage of Bass Straits in the same year by him and by Flinders, both of H.M.S. Reliance. Erected by the people of Flinders, assisted by the National Parks Association, 1912.”

The settlement of Flinders must not be mistaken for the Flinders Naval Base, which is some miles away. The Australia: which was recently sunk (12th April, 1924) as a vessel scrapped by virtue of the Washington Agreement, was seen a few years ago in Westernport Bay, into which the little cutter commanded by Bass first entered. The whole district is marked on the Common wealth Map as the Electoral District of Flinders. The base and the settlement of Flinders are separate localities within this division. Westernport is east of Melbourne, and was called Westernport by Bass, because it was the most westerly spot that he surveyed. It is remarkable that it was not sooner settled, and that it developed so slowly. The largest island on it is French Island. It is a reminder that we wished a settlement there, because the French navigator had been in the port, and we believed that the French had designs on the coast. It was on Phillip Island that the first fort in Victoria was erected. Some guns had been landed at Sorrento, and a battery built in 180,?? But here Captain Wright, in December 1826, built a fort, and called it Fort Dumaresque. Wright placed Wetherill and his party on the mainland opposite to this fort, and thus the Eastern Channel was protected. He dug some wells on the island, which are reported to have been near to the present monument at Rhyll. The inscription on this memorial is: “To commemorate the discovery of this Port, by
Surgeon George Bass, on the 4th of January, 1798. 
Lieut. James Grant, March 1801; Lieut. John Murray, December 1801; The French, under Captain Baudin, April 1802; and Captain Durville, November 1826. Also the establishment of a temporary British settlement. December 1826."

We have recorded elsewhere that on the adjacent island, Churchill Island, Grant built the first hut, and planted the first garden in Victoria, and Murray ate the first fruits in the same year. The Penal Settlement planted by the New South Wales Government in 1826, failed as that at Sorrento had done.

When you look on the earliest maps of Victoria, you find that the original settlers went west and north of Port Phillip. Although the Evans-Fawkner Party and others ran into Westernport, they all crossed the neck of land or rounded the Nepean Peninsula to Batman’s settlement. Only Gardiner, Langhorne, Hobson and Balcombe went east; and all our beautiful eastern suburbs and settlements Hawthorn, Prahran, St. Kilda, Brighton, Frankston and Mornington date back to these men, who are so well represented in the Old Cemetery. Gippsland was an almost unknown country when Dr. Lang wrote his History of Philippsland. There was in the Old Cemetery, the grave of Donald Lyall, believed to be the uncle of William Lyall, one of the pioneers of the district on the northern coast of Westernport. Alt. Lyall, in South Gippsland, is named after him. William Lyall, of Harewood, Kooweerup, was a native of Aberdeen, Scotland. His father had preceded him, and commenced to farm in Tasmania, but died there in 1815; a year later the son came out and settled in Melbourne. He married, in January 1849, a daughter of John Brown. They went to live at Stoney Park, Brunswick. The house was then unfinished, and known as Rucker’s Folly. It is now a beautiful residence, where Airs. Sumner, the daughter of John Jones Peers, dwells. Here Helen Lyall was born at the end of 1849. It is this lady who has furnished me with this brief memoir of her father. He took up land in the Westernport district, and the first white child born in the Tooradin district was another of his daughter. Here William Lyall, undoubtedly a representative man. He and his partners (Mickle and Bakewell) became pioneer pastoralists in Westernport, taking up the stations Tooradin, Yallock, and Monomeith, along the coast from Cranbourne to the Red Bluff. It embraced the Tooradin Plains, Kooweerup Swamp (40,000 acres), Tobin Yallock Swamp (7000 acres). Tooradin was previously owned by Messrs’ Santal, Sparrow and Anderson. The creek is now known as Santell’s Creek. Yallock was formerly owned by Septimus Martin. In 1853 William Lyall went to England, returning on the 1st of January, 1855, the day Hotham died. He brought with him the first pheasants and hares which were brought to Victoria, some Cotswold sheep, and the Hereford cow, Star. Some years later he imported the first Romney Marsh sheep. In 1859 he imported fifty Shetland ponies. Docking was for years a first prize winner, and some of his descendants are now owned by John Mickle Lyall, his youngest son. William Lyall was a member of the Agricultural Society of England and Victoria, of the Zoological and Acclimatisation Society of Victoria, of the Victoria Racing Club. As a member of the Yeomanry Cavalry, he did duty as a guard at the Powder Magazine, when he was a Member of Parliament for Mornington. He was one of the first territorial magistrates, and was a noted judge of cattle and horses, owning the well-known sires, Touchstone and Touchit. He bred horses for the Indian market, and was requested by the Geelong people to act as judge of draught horses at their first Show, that in 1851, and his estate of Harewood is a reminder of how he turned into the country the hares and pheasants from England. He rented two inlets in Westernport for oyster culture, and brought oysters from Sydney to lay there. This was not a success, but the example is for these of this generation. He laid the foundation of the Cranbourne Shire Hall when President of the Shire Council. He died on the nineteenth of January, 1885, at Harewood, and was buried in the Cranbourne cemetery. Stoney Point, the spot where the train meets the boat for Cowes, on Phillip Island, is 45 miles by rail from Melbourne. You run along the Mornington line, but diverge at Baxter. Baxter is named after our early postmaster. The Point nearest to the Naval Base is at Crib Point. An old settler, pointing to his rudely-built home, said: “This is my crib, so the place was called Crib.”

284
It reminds us of the naming of Seaford. A local councillor wished to call it after his native place, Sleaford, but his colleagues wanted the name to refer to its nearness to the sea, so they compromised, and called it Seaford. The native names are as interesting as any. Monomeath means Friendship, Moorooduc Night. Langwarrin was a station owned by William Wllloby in the early fifties. The name of the station became that of the settlement. Tyabb is a native name for a worm, and Bittern the English name of a bird. Hastings is right on the shores of Westernport; it reminds us of the conquest of England, but Air. O'Callaghan tells us it was named in honour of the Marquis of Hastings, and was previously known as Kings Creek. Sandy Point is mentioned in Hovels's Report of 1827. It was then a name in the district; probably one of the Wright and Wetherall Party so named it. The largest island, French Island, in the port is seldom visited by the tourist. It is now a penal settlement
Cowes is now a popular watering place, in the summer time. One season the Earl of Stradbroke chose it as his seaside resort. It is customary to liken the island on which it is situated, to the Isle of Wight, and the chief hotel is called the Isle of Wight Hotel. In front of it there is erected a memorial to the sons of the Phillip Island Pioneers and residents who fell in the Great War. The granite for the Equitable Building, in Collins Street, came from Cape Woolomai. A beautiful beach stretches along the southern coast of the island.

W. H. Dutton died on the 21st of November, 1849, aged 44. He was a prominent man in early Melbourne, and was buried in the Old Cemetery. His residence was in King Street, and he was connected with the house of Walker and Co., of Sydney, and was afterwards a partner in the house of Dutton, Simpson and Darlot. He preceded William Westgarth, and co-operated with him in his endeavour to bring German immigrants here. He was a man of culture, and corresponded with several German houses for years before Westgarth took the matter up. He attended our first levee, that given by Sir George Gipps, in 1841, and was one of the founders of our Hospital. The grave of the other Dutton, the sealer, is at Narrawong. In the first number of The Victorian Historical Magazine, under Notes and Queries, Captain Dutton is described as the first settler in Portland. W. M. Rankine, the head teacher of the State School at Narrawong, says his grave is surrounded by a rickety wooden railing, and that part of it was destroyed by a bush fire that swept the cemetery some years ago. The only words to be seen on the inscription on the board, is Sacred to the Memory of William Dutton. This was so in 1910. Both William Hamden Dutton and Captain William Dutton are referred to in the Letters of the Old Pioneers sent to Latrobe.

The earliest memorial in the Roman Catholic ground is dated the 19th of October, 1839, and is that over the remains of Michael Carr; he was the sixth interment in that ground, Ann Coffee, an infant, being the first. Michael Carr died the same year that John Batman passed away. He was thirty-six years of age, and bought land at our first land sale. His name recalls a host of representative publicans buried in the Old Cemetery. When Lonsdale arrived, he found that liquor was being sold in the community without restriction, John R. Fawkner being our first publican. Lonsdale resolved, therefore, to grant licenses, and certificates were issued on 30th July, 1837, to J. P. Fawkner, Michael Carr, E. W. Umphelby, George Smith, Peter Scott, Will Harper, Robert Fleming, and Will Sharp. Fawkner called his house a tavern, Smith called his an inn, the Lamb Inn, and Michael Carr named his an hotel, the Governor Bourke Hotel, but to us they are all public houses. Our graveyard had in it both remains of the publican and the men and women who were his customers. We often read in the earlier papers of a funeral coming from a public house. In a new community, the immigrant first seeks an inn to live in. Thomas Halfpenny bought his grave in the forties, but beer did not kill him. He was not buried until 1894. He gave up hotel-keeping and became Ranger of Studley Park. He was licensed in 1839, and owned the William Tell. The wife of William Harper, the owner of the British Hotel, was buried there, and both Cowell and his wife.

He was the predecessor of Scott, and the successor of Smith, of the Lamb Inn, and was the first to supply turtle soup in Melbourne. His hotel was called the Royal, and to this day Scott's Hotel stands with the Grand and Menzies' among the fine hotels of the world. Cowell and his wife sleep in a tomb of simple classic beauty. When I stop at the grave of William Evans, I ask myself was not
this the man who was proprietor of the Duke of Kent Hotel in 1817. Mr. Brock tells me he was a relative of George Evans. James Jamieson, of the Bull and Mouth, is here, and on a stone which is lying down is the name of Westwood, who was first a carpenter and then a publican. Westwood lane is named after him. He built and kept the Albion Hotel. There, too, was the owner of the Royal Highlander, John Shanks. In his day there was one licensed house to every 450 of the inhabitants. There is not very much difference now. Any publican then giving drink to an aboriginal was subject to a fine of five pounds. Robert Sawyers, whose stone reveals the fact that he died in November 1850, kept The Australia-Felix Family Hotel, at the corner of Bourke and Russell Streets, Joseph Newman kept the Apollo, Little Flinders Street. This was started in 1844, and is still going. Newman had it in 1847.

There was a panelled stone in the Old Cemetery, with the name Joseph Cheetham on it. Cheetham buried his wife there in 1849. He was the proprietor of the Pastoral Hotel, and afterwards of the Manchester Inn. He gave up a grocery business to turn publican. His hotel was well furnished. He had a round table twenty feet in circumference, the top of which was one solid piece of wood, cut cross-ways from a cedar tree which grew in the forest at Hunter River, New South Wales. Garryowen says that the first family hotel in Melbourne was The Southern Cross, in Great Bourke Street, kept by J. S. Johnston. He became a well-known speaker and statesman. He gave up the hotel in 1846, and entered Parliament in 1851. He was co-partner with Wilson in The Argus, and sold his share in that paper to Gill, who sold it to Mackinnon. Henrietta, his wife, was buried in the Old Cemetery. Johnston Street is named after him. Timothy Lane, another Councillor, was keeper of The Builders Arms, in 1847. John Tighe, whose remains are near to these of Lane, kept The Donnybrook Hotel. John Dowling, in the same division, was the keeper of The Native Boy. John William Coulson, the proprietor of the Clarence Hotel, and afterwards of the Queen’s Head, is in the Protestant Division of the Cemetery. His boy, like the son of Batman, was drowned in the Yarra, and like in Batman’s grave so here father and son sleep together. Phillip Anderson kept the Commercial Inn; both he and his wife are in the Presbyterian ground. She died in 1848, aged 42; he in 1850, aged 45. William Hearndon kept the Bridge Inn. He buried his wife in 1849. James Cavanagh was landlord of the Brian Boru Inn, and died in 1849, at his residence in Elizabeth Street. Michael O’Shea kept the Olive Branch Hotel in Latrobe Street, and was buried in 1849. Melburnians only commenced to build in that street the year before. The Hassetts kept the Melbourne Tavern, and the Lynches The Rising Sun. James Reardon secured a wine and spirit license, but one of the James Reardons buried in the Old Cemetery, and related to the Ball family, was a builder. There are others who, I doubt not, are representative publicans of the beginning, but we have cited enough of them to prove that that industry was well represented in the Cemetery. Umphelby, who kept the Angel Inn, was buried at sea, but I cannot say where the remains of Michael Pender, of the Shamrock are, but we have Henry Conway, who kept the Travellers Rest. Robert Ormond is proprietor of the Caledonian Hotel in 1843, and one cannot help thinking that he is related to Christina Ormond, who is the wife of Peter Liddle, and who was buried in the Millar grave. Henry Baker kept the Imperial Inn, and was a poetical publican. He advertised his inn in The Gazette, with six verses of poetry, commencing:-

To these who travel what can ever excel
The pleasure which in a good Inn abide,
Where There is naught to do save ring the bell,
To bring the ready waiter to your side.

In his hotel every meal was a shilling, but by the week, bed and board was twelve shillings. Afterwards he started the first hotel in Heidelberg, as Joseph Howard did in St. Kilda, and a Mr. Crosby in Brighton. All of these started about 1847. When he applied for a license for his hotel in Heidelberg he was the oldest hotel-keeper in Melbourne. The Temperance people delayed his getting a license. We could see the primitive public house there among the tombstones. The early papers remarked on the frequent deaths of publicans. As many as three publican widows in mourning presented themselves at Court to get a renewal of licenses, their husbands having passed away in the

286
previous twelve months, and the press said their early deaths were due to their being confined to the house. Many temperance people, however, attributed it to the excessive use of alcohol. We remember that among the burials on Flagstaff Hill in 1836, was that of Mrs. Ross, who died of delirium tremens.

The public house has its good as well as its bad side. We have to recognise that the publican had full partnership in initiating and sustaining the theatre, and with the Missionaries creating hostelries in the wilderness. The Travellers Rest, of Seymour, was one of these places, and Liardet, in founding Sandridge, built there a hotel. In one of Lonsdale’s very early letters, he reports that Liardet is trying to get a license for a public house at Williamstown, and this was the first hotel, The Ship Inn, at that port. Our earliest theatre, like The Pavilion, was started by a publican. Our earliest music halls, like the Alhambra and The Coliseum, were called into existence by the public house. Jim Mace, the champion pugilist of the world, in the sixties, came to Melbourne and opened a public house, The Old England. Even George Coppin in one of his numerous moves becomes a publican. I think Tattersall’s Club originated in a public house, and Peers Old Wesleyan Church became a kitchen to the Queen’s Arms. The club life of Melbourne has been intimately associated with the public house. The Melbourne Club, the first club in Melbourne and one of our earliest institutions, was in Fawkner’s Hotel.

The Licensed Victuallers Association commenced on the 14th of October, 1850, at a public meeting that was held in the Royal Exchange Hotel, and among the names on the committee I saw that of Robert Newstead, whose wife was in the Old Cemetery. Richard Heales fought against drink being allowed on the racecourse, but was defeated. Mr. Jageurs, who was taking an interest in the life of Michael Carr, tells me that Carr was the first man to secure a booth on a Melbourne racecourse. He was out of business in 1839, and in the Old Cemetery, and his wife, Catherine Carr, gave up the license to the hotel. Liardet has left pictures of our oldest hotels, and John Mills brewery. In the year 1839, George Smith, of the Lamb Inn, and Williams, of the British Hotel, seek special licenses to keep their hotels open after 9 o’clock.

From the very start there are breaches and irregularities. While Lonsdale secured in July 1837 the Certificates of Licenses from Sydney, yet he licensed almost immediately on his arrival, and on 31st January, 1837, Oliver Adams is convicted of a breach of the License Regulation. I suppose he was one of the first sly-grog sellers. John Mills received his freedom on 19th September, 1837. He goes into the hotel and brewery business, and on the 28th of December, 1837, is charged with selling beer on Sunday. In 1837 both Umphelby and Carr are found guilty of irregularities. Moss, who does not seem to be among the first licensees, is also charged, and is later brought up for keeping a disorderly house. Lonsdale, in his letter of the 6th of April, 1838, mentions that he has been petitioned to allow a distillery to be established. Michael Carr seems to have succeeded, and we find him in June 1838 giving two pounds to the Melbourne fund to build in Sydney a monument to Governor Bourke, when a dozen or more Melburnians subscribed.

A few emancipated convicts were buried in the Old Cemetery. One day I stood by the grave of John Mills, and met his niece there. He built the second brewery in Melbourne, and became rich. Liardet gives a picture of it. It was situated on his own land, fronting Flinders Lane, near where Robert Reid’s place is now. It was built by Michael Cavenagh, one of our earliest builders. Cavenagh’s great-grand-daughter, Mrs. Thompson, took a deep interest in preserving the Old Cemetery. Mills originally came from Launceston, where he kept the Native Lion Hotel. He died in 1841, and his widow married his manager, Mr. Thomas Robinson, so Liardet says, and this is corroborated by E. H. Long, his grand-nephew. He tells me that his grand-uncle died at Somerset Cottage, on the 24th of August, 1841; the cottage was situated in Collins Street. Mills was an energetic man, with unconventional views of life, and in the days when the game laws of England were oppressive, he was sent out for poaching, arriving in Van Diemen’s Land in 1834. He married there Alice McMahon. She seems to have died very soon, for two years later he is married to Hannah Hale. By his union with Hannah Hale he had a daughter, Emma Mills. It is said that she was the first white female child born in Melbourne, and she survived him by 71 years. Mills left his wife a life-tenancy
to all his property. The daughter married William Arthur Callender A’Beckett, and on the death of Mrs. Mills a part of the property was to go to his daughter, and the remainder to his brother, Thomas Mills, and to his wife and his daughter (Mills niece). A’Beckett became an Inspector of Titles in Melbourne, and he drew up an annuity by which Mrs. Mills received £300 a year. This she agreed to live on, and leave up the management of the property to her son-in-law. There is an air of romance not only in the personal story of Mills, but in the surprising increase in the value of his property. It grew from thirty-five pounds an acre, to a thousand pounds a foot. One of his properties was that in Bourke Street where the Cromwell Buildings now stand. We have seen that Mrs. Mills married a second time. Her eldest son is still alive, living at Narre warren. Mills did materially help the development of early Melbourne. He put the first deposit into the first bank, the Derwent, and left in his will £25 to the Wesleyan Church; and while his was not the first burial in the Wesleyan ground, yet he was among the first. His grave was opened, and his leaden coffin identified. It was in a well-preserved brick vault. He now sleeps in an unknown grave in the Fawkner Cemetery. There are others who were engaged in the liquor trade. Mayger, in putting a stone over his father’s grave, mentions in the inscription, that he himself is the keeper of the Mitre Tavern, in Bank Place. And Mary Gange, on another stone, is referred to as the daughter of Robert, Cozens, of Waldron Park Isle Brewery, County of Somerset, England. Tradition says that in our old hotels they had a dead house, and when a man got dead drunk they put him up in an outer house, instead of throwing him into the street, as is done in our day. This morgue, Garryowen tells us, was not only for country customers, but was the sleeping place of some city magnates. Thomas Halfpenny, however, denied that such a dead house ever existed.

All these memorials of our old publicans, you swept away, along with that to our cricketer of 1851; but you keep a memorial of little historic value, to the Honourable II. H. Skinner, of the South Melbourne Cricket and Football Clubs. The sporting men put his statue on the Albert Park Road, 10th July, 1913. He was a well-known caterer, but no more than many, others still alive, and his memorial might have been in the Cemetery with other men of his time. He had his reward for he died worth half a million. Why neglect that of his namesake of 1851?

**The Temperance Movement.**

History is a matter of fidelity to facts, and here I must relate that the Temperance movement ran concurrently with the public house. The Temperance movement in the British Empire was organised contemporaneously with the Foundation of Melbourne. The first temperance paper in England, edited by Joseph Livesay, came out in 1834, the year Henty arrived at Portland. The temperance movement was organised by Livesay and others, at Preston, in 1835, the year that Batman came here and made his treaty with the aboriginals. Batman started the first temperance movement here, as Fawkner established the first public house. He put into the indentures of the Port Phillip Association a clause forbidding the sale of alcoholic liquors to the natives. Fawkner, in a letter to an Air. Ferguson, said he withheld the liquor from others, and drank the most of a consignment himself. However that may be, the policy he tried to establish has become the policy of the Empire in dealing with natives in Colonial States. The first lecture given in Melbourne was on Temperance. The Reverend Air. Grylls is advertised to lecture on that subject in Fawkner’s paper in 1839, a were temperance meetings conducted by members of the Society of Friends. In going into the Temperance Hall, in Russell Street, you will see a tablet, saying that the Melbourne Total Abstinence Society commenced in 1842. The foundation of the first Temperance Hall was laid in December 1840, and the building was completed in 1847. Some people think that it was a mistake to call this country "Australia-Felix, Australia the Happy, while so much liquor was consumed in it, and that one of our first burials, one of the six buried on Flagstaff Hill, was a victim to delirium tremens. The Reverend Grylls lecture on temperance would probably be on moderation, although Grylls himself was a total abstainer. He took the pledge at one of Forbes’ meetings.

It was the fact that the word temperance was not sufficiently definite in those times that led to the creation of the Melbourne Total Abstinence Society. A Temperance Society on moderation lines existed in 1838, established principally by an old Waterloo veteran, Thomas Watson. He first met that led
to the foundation of the Total Abstinence Society was held on the 22nd of February, 1842, in Scots Church. Mr. Robert Reeve was in the chair. He stood for moderation. Mr. William Wade went for total abstinence. The meeting accepted his view, and Mr. Knox was called on to preside, and the Total Abstinence Society was formed. It was in the following year that Mrs. Dalgarno, wife of Captain Dalgarno, left for England. She was a capable and enthusiastic advocate of temperance on the platform, a forerunner of women like Mrs. Harrison Lee, and of the work done to-day by the Women's Christian Temperance movement, which in America is credited with initiating their national prohibition movement. A notable event of the forties was the death of John Clark, who was buried in the Old Cemetery in 1845. The victims to drink who had gone There were many. You can read in the early issues of Fawkner's paper of their interment; one is specially referred to in 1839, and every year has its chronicle. It was an age when champagne flowed freely at every land sale. Clark represents the other side. The temperance people, headed by their band, followed his remains to the grave; three hundred were in the procession. This was just three years after the Total Abstinence Society started. Clark was a Roman Catholic, and Protestants and Catholics attended the funeral. The Port Phillip Gazette of 13th August, 1845, reported thus: “A Teetotal Funeral. The great benefits derived from the establishing a teetotall society in Melbourne become more apparent every day. On Saturday last a teetotaller named Clark died, and being a member of the above excellent society, it was resolved that his remains should be followed to the Cemetery by the members of the society, all of whom were accordingly summoned to attend.”

With the society band and the paraphernalia of the Obituary committee of the society, they marched in procession to the residence of the deceased, from whence the corpse was removed to the Roman Catholic burial ground. The band played the Dead March from Saul, and the members of the society, about three hundred in number, following. This being the first funeral of the kind, which had taken place in Melbourne, must be regarded as an event of no small importance, and we have little hesitation in saying that such a very respectable and numerous attendance has seldom, if ever before, been witnessed in the colonies. Thus the greatest funeral in early Melbourne was a Temperance funeral. It was rather a piece of irony that Fawkner, an old publican, should, in 1814, present to Parliament the petition from the temperance people, asking for a restriction of the sale of spirituous liquors. The first tent of the I.O.R. (Independent Order of Rechabites) was established in 1847. The first Sons of Temperance Lodge in Victoria was started in Geelong in 1801. The first Melbourne Lodge came into being in Richmond in 1865. The first Good Templar Lodge was The Pioneer. The Temperance Alliance commenced in the Conference at the State Exhibition of 1881, and was duly founded that year.

The leading spirit in the temperance movement in early Melbourne was Richard Heales. It is said of him, that he never allowed a Tuesday night meeting of the society to elapse. Mr. Meaden says: Speakers might be absent, audience There might be none, but at the least the doors should be opened, the hall lit, and the pledge-book in its place. He was not our only Temperance Premier. Over forty years ago, when I was leaving New Zealand, Robert Stout gave me a letter of introduction to James Munro, who also was a temperance man. Heales died on the 19th of June, 1864, and was buried in the Melbourne General Cemetery, and a splendid monument was erected over his grave by his admirers. He had been twenty years in Victoria, and was from the first a strong, steady, enthusiastic advocate of total abstinence. Temperance did more than any other movement to develop the platform powers of women. Mrs. Dalgarno, the wife of Captain Dalgarno, appeared on the platform as early as 1843. She left Melbourne for England on 28th April, 1843. James Buchanan, the proprietor of the Scottish Hotel, met Henry Froncham (who had been supporting Mrs. Dalgarno) in the street, and straightway horsewhipped him.

Froncham took him to court, but in these days temperance was unpopular, and Buchanan was let down very lightly. The first Rechabite Tent was started, we have seen, in Melbourne, in 1847. It originated in England in 1835. It seems to have been our first well-organised temperance movement here. In 1857 there was a Temperance League in Victoria, and I find that Captain Dalgarno had then made his home at Williamstown, and was organising the movement there.
The Reverend James Ballantyne and others brought out *The Temperance Times*, the official organ of the League. Ballantyne edited it. The first issue came out on 2nd November, 1807. John B. Gough was then alive, and on his second visit to England, one writer takes him to task for saying that the Maine liquor Law was a dead letter. He thought the cause was to be won by moral persuasion, and the celebrated case against Dr. Lees for slander was heard in the British Courts. While Gough proved that he was not the victim of opium and tobacco, nevertheless Dr. Loos representing the prohibition side, remained highly esteemed by the temperance party. All this controversy passed through the pages of *The Temperance Times*.

In the second number, Richard Heales has a letter in favour of complete prohibition. In reply to the cry for Liberty, he describes England seizing a slave ship and liberating the slaves, and ironically says: Call England a Land of Liberty! Pretty Land of Liberty when a man cannot do as he likes with his own negro servant. He argued that the building bye-laws in vogue in Melbourne were prohibition, in order to save the city from fire. At that time public houses were closed on Sunday, and he argued that this was prohibition. The law preventing the landing of transported convicts in Victoria was prohibition; yet withal, he said that he only worked at that time to prepare the public mind for it. He was then a Member of Parliament, and apparently had no intention of introducing a Prohibition Bill. The first thing he considered essential was to enforce the Bill for Sunday Closing. That law afterwards became a dead letter, and we can all remember how easy it was, even in our own time, to get a glass of beer on a Sunday. Heales combined, like Horace Mann in America, the plea for popular education with that of temperance, and he was one of the fathers of our State School system. The temperance movement at that time was organised throughout our suburbs.

Wilkinson was interested in the movement in Brunswick, and Mr. Francis, at Moorabbin. It was organised in Prahran, Emerald Hill, Sandridge, St. Kilda. Collingwood, Richmond, Williamstown, Footscray, Flemington, Northcote, North Melbourne, Elsternwick, and Brighton. The great stronghold then as now was in Russell Street. At Christmas time 1858, fifteen clergymen preached on temperance. The Reverend A. M. Ramsay's subject was, Self-protection, the First Law of Society. The temperance paper was sold on the railway stations both in Melbourne and Sandridge.

The Yan Yean had just commenced operations, and it was a question whether the new reservoir or the publican should liquor-up Melbourne. I notice that J. Sumner, of Grice, Sumner and Co., gives five pounds to the movement, and even J. P. Fawkner puts up two guineas, the Honourable George Harker, M.P., two guineas, and many others follow their example. It was the age when the Band of Hope originated. It seems to me that the first Band of Hope was in Richmond, or that the one in Melbourne and Richmond originated almost contemporaneously. There were Bands of Hope in Melbourne, Richmond and St. Kilda as early as June 1858, and in August one was inaugurated in Carlton, and soon they had them in nearly every suburb. They seem to have been the first organization of any kind to provide first-class entertainment for the children of the people. The present Temperance Hall was built in 1872. The public house in Melbourne has existed without drink, as can be seen in our splendid Coffee Palaces. We taught the world how to run the Temperance Hotel. It is said that the Coffee Palace at Prahran was the first. In Melbourne the first was the Melbourne Coffee Palace, opened in 1882; then came the Victoria, and lastly the Federal. In the days when the Coffee Palace originated, Local Option was in the air. A true, strong soul in that movement was James Munro. Local Option was the accepted platform of the temperance party in the eighties. Local Option for closing excess hotels and refusing new licenses came into existence about 1880, and continued down to the time of the creation of the Licensing Reduction Board; that Board replaced it in May 1907. Its duty was to reduce licenses whenever and wherever they exceeded four to the first thousands of population, and one for each succeeding five hundred. There was to be a return to Local Option in 1910, and a special time for a vote was fixed on for 1917; that was the war period when the early closing of hotels came into existence, and when other restrictions were placed on the trade. Thus the Local Option Poll was postponed to 1920. The questions submitted to the electors at that general election, when the Referendum was taken, were:

*For the continuance of the present*
number of licenses in each electorate.
For a reduction.
For total prohibition.

Mr. Barr was one of the candidates at the first Federal Election for Northern Melbourne (1901), with Mr. Higgins (Judge Higgins) and myself. Higgins was returned, and later Mr. Barr became Chairman of the Reduction Board. It is generally admitted that that Board faithfully administered the Act. I have told, in the story of the eastern suburbs, what locality went dry in 1920. Melbourne, it will be seen, has moved very slowly towards Prohibition. Our greatest temperance man was Richard Heales. There have been good men in recent times, like John Vale, who came in the early eighties, and J. W. Hunt, and Samuel Mauger, but the work in the Temperance Hall was established by Heales. The Tuesday Evening Meetings had an unbroken record for seventy years, and their only interruption came recently, when the influenza epidemic compelled the Russell Street people to close their doors for a few weeks. It seems to me that the monumental fountain in Russell Street should have been erected to Heales rather than to Ferguson.

A.N.A. Movement

We now come to the A.N.A. movement. While we were fighting to save the Old Cemetery we grew very interested in these graves that belonged to the late thirties and the early eighteen forties, such as the Coghill grave, and the Thompson grave, in which was buried Harriet Clarke, a colonist of 69 years. Thompson had a store opposite the Town Hall, in the fifties. The Anderson grave, in which the remains of Mary Anderson lay. She came in 1838, and died after a residence of 59 years. I need not multiply illustrations; there was a little army of them there, as can be seen from our record of the graves. But this brought us into communication with their children, such as Miss Sievwright, the grand-daughter of the Protector; and one Sunday afternoon a Mr. McKindlay turned up at the meetings. He was born in 1842, and he said I must be the oldest native in Melbourne. His mother was Jane Farquharson McKindlay, who was buried under a splendidly-engraved piece of old sandstone. She died in 1845, less than three years after the birth of this son I met, and her husband had himself engraved her name on the slab we saw. E. C. Howard, however, had been born earlier than McKindlay, but no living native of Melbourne has been born earlier than 1838. In view of these early natives, it is surprising that an Australian Natives Association was not formed before 1871, the year it came into existence.

Melbourne, was founded by an Australian native, John Batman, and that body were represented at the dedication of his new monument this year at the Cemetery at Fawkner, and took part with us when General Monash conducted our meeting in the Old Cemetery. Batman, we have seen, was buried in 1839, and there were four other memorials in the Cemetery with that date on them (1839) Batman, 29th of May; William Sadler, the 21st of June; Ann Eliza Liddy, the 24th June; Michael Curr, on the 19th of October; and James Douglass, on the 31st December, 1839. Douglass was in the Bears grave, and there I met Mrs. Rintoul, who knew the Bears, and was related to them. James Liddy, the father of the little girl buried There, was said by Garryowen to have grown the first vegetables in a garden behind the Adam and Eve Hotel, near to where the Punch Office now stands. But Kerr, in his Directory of 1841, says James Liddy was a carpenter. He may have been a carpenter who became a publican. Our graves dating back to 1839 and 1837 suggest that Melbourne had more of the native element in it at its origin than most of Australian Capitals, probably all of them. Adelaide arose as an English city from the commencement, but our men, like John Batman and Dr. Hobson, were Australian natives. Mr. Watson, the Secretary of the A.N.A., in Victoria, furnished me with the following historical sketch:-

“In 1871 an association was formed in Melbourne, under the title of the Victorian Natives Association, but in 1872 the promoters wisely decided that the basis was too limited, and expanded it so as to allow natives of any of the Australasian Colonies to become members of the A.N.A. When the Association was formed, the promoters seemed to have had no thought that it would ever extend beyond Melbourne, and accordingly framed the rules for the management of the Melbourne branch. Some little time after a branch was formed at Hotham but before long it amalgamated with the head branch.
Then, again, No. 3 branch was opened at Fitzroy and Collingwood, and although a very strong branch, by some means or other, after a couple of years of life, it dissolved. In 1874 Ballarat began to make enquiries about the Association, and very soon saw the advantages thereof, and in a few months had the first up-country branch opened as No.4. Sandhurst soon followed, then Eaglehawk, only to disband through an extreme depression in mining. A branch was formed at Geelong, but soon dissolved. Prahran branch followed. Some members of the Sandhurst (Bendigo) branch having migrated to Queensland, took active steps for the establishment of a branch in Charters Towers, and were rewarded by a good branch being formed, not as good as could be wished as regards number of members, but comprising Australians of the proper stamp, viz., energetic and persevering men, who will not allow difficulties to overcome them, but will work shoulder to shoulder and maintain the good cause.

With the establishment of the last-named branch, a period up to 1882 was complete. Since that time the growth of this purely Australian Friendly Society has been remarkable. To-day the Association possesses funds exceeding over half a million pounds, a membership of 33,000, and branches in every important city, town, and borough in Victoria. It also has branches in all the other States of the Commonwealth. The Australian Society of Chicago, and the similar body in South Africa are off-shoots of the parent body. It was also the means of having established in London the great Anzac Buffet which has, since the arrival of the Australian troops in Europe, performed such noble work on behalf of our soldiers. The war has cost the Association in funeral allowance, sick pay, and contributions, which are generously paid to keep members who enlisted financial, something approaching £120,000. To meet this huge amount the surplus allowed by the Government Actuary from its funds was used, and the members supplemented this surplus by willingly paying levies to make up the balance.

We are led, in dealing with representative men and institutions, to look back on the Aboriginals, already dealt with in previous chapters. Batman and Robinson, having been associated with the natives in Van Diemen’s Land, naturally allowed some of them to come here, and two of them, Bob and Jack, were executed for murder, and buried outside the Old Cemetery. They were the first to receive capital punishment in Melbourne or in Victoria.

The first Victorian aboriginals who committed murder were also buried outside the Cemetery, and under the markets. The Metropolitan Board of Works, in 1899, had some men working about the markets making improvements to their supplies, and in digging they came on the body of a man who had his clothes on. He had been buried in his boots. The Town Clerk pleaded that it must have been the body of one of the old convicts that the exhumers of 1877 had failed to find, but when they came on the body of a child this explanation was discredited. We now look for similar gruesome discoveries in the future. T. C. O'Callaghan, a late Commissioner of the Police, told me that he once captured a couple of notorious thieves sleeping in a vault in the Old Cemetery. They had perpetrated a great robbery, and by that capture he was able to restore to the rightful owners much that had been stolen. He entered the Cemetery from the King Street side, at midnight, and coming quietly up to the vault, he waited until he heard the thieves snoring, then he descended, fell on them and handcuffed them together, but when they tried to ascend he found that he could not get them both out of the opening. They were so taken by surprise that they did not know he was alone. So he bluffed them and ordered them back into the grave; there he took the handcuffs off and handcuffed one, and made him ascend while he came up with the other one himself, and then he marched them off to the city jail. He was utterly unprepared; he saw them by accident entering the Cemetery at night, as he was walking home late, and from their appearance judged that they were wanted, so he silently followed them into the Cemetery and secured them.

The first bushrangers were buried outside the Cemetery. John Williams, Charles Ellis, Daniel Jepps and Martin Fogarty. A great interest was manifested to-day in the execution of Angus Murray, because he was only associated in the crime of murder, but did not actually commit it. Great meetings were held to try and secure his reprieve. It is seldom that so many people have gathered together as were seen at these great meetings, because the feeling against capital punishment has grown in
Melbourne. In early Melbourne they had no such compunction, nearly nil associated in the act of murder were hanged.

A character something like Valjean, of Victor Hugo's Romance, Les Miserables, lived in Melbourne in the forties, Joseph Gregg. He was landlord of the Queen's Head, and was generally respected. One day, to the surprise of everybody, he was arrested as a runaway convict. Even his wife and children were taken by surprise, and a deep feeling of sympathy prevailed. Coppin took over his hotel. The name is on our stones, but if it be the same family, I would judge that the grave was that of his father and grandson; both bear the name of Joseph Gregg. The man buried there was a cabinet maker, who was living at Collingwood, and was buried by the Reverend Mr. Schofield, and may be only a namesake. This man, however, had proven himself a good citizen, yet being an escaped convict he came once again under the surveillance of the law. Today Societies would have taken up his case. We have the Howard Society, that grew out of the old Criminological Society, that Doctor Charles Strong and Samuel Mauger have taken such a deep interest in. The old Society for this purpose seems to have been the Society for Promoting Morality," and they first proposed to establish a Prisoners Aid Society. A meeting of citizens was convened by them in July 1872. I have referred before to this Society for Promoting Morality; it created the Society for Preventing Cruelty to Animals, and seems to have been a humanitarian institution of the sixties and seventies. E. L. Zox took a great interest in founding and sustaining the Prisoners Aid Society, and Sir William F. Stawell was its first President, and the Reverend Thomas C. Cole its first Chairman of Committee. For fifty years it has worked quietly for the salvation of the criminal. To its labours we are indebted for the lenient treatment of first offenders. Here, as in America, these benevolent men watch for the date of the release of a prisoner, and tender him their assistance to secure him employment and to restore him to his full place in society.

Robert Donaldson was the founder in the forties of the early Closing movement. He died in 1849, and has the words, Draper in Melbourne, on his stone. In the year 1846 the press published the names of those businesses who closed at seven, and there was only one solitary exception in the clothing trade. A great reform for that day, but it all passed away with the coming of the gold era, and merchants kept their shops opened to all hours, and thus the movement does not find full expression until 1881.

In 1881 John Gardiner, since Alderman Gardiner, introduced and carried a resolution to close the shops at six o'clock. He was supported by Alfred Deakin. He told me that he, with others, stood on the steps of Parliament House on the day that the Bill was to take effect, and watched results. As the hands of the clock approached six, a stream of men issued out from the shops down Bourke Street with shutters, and at six o'clock all places were closed, which for years before had kept open to all hours. This general movement for closing shops at six o'clock became a strong argument in the mouths of temperance men for closing the public house at the same time, and this having been accomplished, our theatres and places of enjoyment have been strengthened.

Our first great mercantile men were buried in the Old Cemetery. James Jackson is described by William Westgarth as earliest Melbourne’s greatest merchant. He was one of the firm of Jackson and Rae. His death is reported in The Gazette, in August 1851. He had left Scotland fourteen years before, advised to do so by his physicians, and he was now venturing to visit his mother country, thinking that he had overcome the enemy, but died when he had only been three weeks at sea. We have referred to him elsewhere, and also to such merchants and business men as the Honourable George Ward Cole, Captain William Cain, and the Honourable James Graham. F. H. Langwill represented the business interest of the Jackson family here. He took an especial interest in trying to keep these representative memorials within the limits of the city. He himself was the son of an early settler, who also represented the Jacksons before him. Peter Langwill came out on The John Gray, a vessel that arrived here in 1848, and he was in business in the time of P. Langwill and Co. in the fifties, in Collins Street. He owned the south-eastern corner of Collins and Elizabeth Streets. It was in 1848 that the first Government immigrant vessel arrived, The Lady Peel, and some affirm that Peel Street was named after this vessel, and not after Robert Peel. The remains of Joseph
Raleigh and his wife rested under an artistic tomb facing Franklin Street. He was a broker of standing in early Melbourne. Raleigh's "Look-out," on the Saltwater River, was named after him. T. H. Pykc, in the Letters of the Old Pioneers, says that he bought the Moreton's Bay station from Joseph Raleigh in 1856. Raleigh had held it for two years, and was the first occupier of it. Raleigh died at the age of 49, in 1852. He built our second wharf, Captain Cole having built our first. Arthur Kemmis, too, was one of our great early merchants, and the founder of steam navigation in Victoria. He was one of our First J.P.'s. I have written of these men in the early part of this book, but refer to them again to emphasize the representative character of the memorial we lost. As early as 1851 Thomas Ham brought out in his illustrated magazine a picture of Dr. Hobson's tomb, and he tells us that it was built by one of the recent arrivals from Germany. I presume that Hahn, the builder of the memorial, was one of the German immigrants that William Westgarth induced to come out. He built this beautiful monument for £102 10s. To the east of Hobson's monument was a stone which you see in the picture in our first chapter. It is to Charles Smith. He has been long forgotten. 15th in his day. although young, was a respected merchant, and died in Bank Place on the 4th of July, 1850, aged 32.

The Scotch family, the Dods, to whom we have already alluded, who were represented by a neat grave, with a clearly inscribed stone, were also highly respected in early Melbourne. Dods was a prosperous grocer; one of his children was buried there as early as 1841. There is an obituary notice in The Port Phillip Gazette of 4th October, 1847, which reads thus:-

The friends of William Dods are respectfully invited to attend the remains of his daughter, Alice Ferguson Dods, to the place of interment to-morrow, Tuesday, 6th of October, at 4 o'clock p.m.

H. Barrio, undertaker.

Charles Williamson is on the directorate of the Melbourne Fire and Marine Insurance Society and he is represented in our memorial ground. There was a Maclehose firm in Sydney, which in 1838 brought out the picture of Sydney, and The Strangers Guide to New South Wales. It contained forty-three engravings of public buildings in Sydney. Possibly it was this firm, or one of this firm, that came to Melbourne, and with Fawkner, Kerr and others laid the foundation of our printing and stationery business. John Maclehose was selling Ham's Map of Victoria in 1847, and earlier than this, in the very early forties, he was fighting for an extension of the Courts of Requests. In the first period, Melbourne had Courts of Request; in the second, County Courts; now we have Labour and Federal Courts. Thus jurisprudence grows in complexity. John Maclehose died in April 1852, at his residence in Collins Street.

John Bear, the great cattle dealer, (refer Bears lagoon, Serpentine Creek Station, Northern Victoria) is now buried in the Melbourne General. He died on the 30th of November, 1851, and therefore his body was transferred. He had a representative town and country funeral. They were burying, we have already mentioned, in the Bear grave in the Old Cemetery as early as 1839, and on that ground there pass before us an array of representative men and women who have been dealt with in previous chapters, many of our foremost citizens, but some have not come under the topics treated, such as Mrs. Isaac Buchanan. Her memorial records that she was Catharine Turnbull, wife of Isaac Buchanan, and that she died on the 24th of February, 1849, aged 34 years. Buchanan was a leading man in early Melbourne. William Westgarth mentions him as having been present at the marriage of one of the younger Miss Batman's to a Mr. Collyer. The wedding took place on John Aitkin's station, at Mount Aitkin. William Westgarth does not accuse Buchanan of being blind drunk, but he was not certain whether he saw double or couldn't see at all. He was also present at the squatters demonstration of the 4th of June, 1844. This meeting was held as a protest against the taxing proposals of Sir George Gipps. The squatters mustered on Batman's Hill, and headed by Captain John Harrison, they rode in procession to the front of the Mechanics Institute, where they held their meeting outside the Institute. Mr. A. R. Mollison presided, and Isaac Buchanan and others spoke. Buchanan's Melbourne house was in Church Lane, beside St. James Church. Mrs. J. B. Kirk was also buried there, in a good
old grave surrounded by a wooden fence, which was destroyed when the ground came into the possession of the Council. At that time there was general desecration of the ground tombs broken and railings destroyed. Mrs. Kirk had over her remains a splendid old stone, with a clear-cut inscription. Kirk was the founder of Kirk’s Bazaar. His wife did not die until the 11th of May, 1851. Melbourne has always been a great horse market, and Kirk was one of the founders of that trade. Only recently Isaac Little was breeding horses at Diggers’ Rest, eighteen miles out of Melbourne, and shipping them to India. George Russell says that Dr. McRae built the first livery stable in Melbourne, which later became known as Kirk’s Bazaar. Kirk and McCrae came out in the same vessel from England.

The first pony in Melbourne was the little pony belonging to Dr. Thompson’s daughter. Kirk seems to have been the first to specialize in the horse. James Bowie Kirk has his Bazaar advertised in the _Port Phillip Gazette_ on the 1st of January, 1842, and I take it that he was at the business earlier than this. He is connected with the race meetings of that time, and is one of the stewards. On the death of Kirk, George John Watson took over the Bazaar. He was a steeplechaser in the fifties, and owned Wild Harry. Later he went coaching, under the name of Cobb and Co., a name known all over Australasia. He was the recognized father of the Melbourne Hunt, and became the starter of the Victorian Racing Club races. He was one of Melbourne’s greatest sports, and a gentleman, but he was only the successor of the men of early Melbourne. The Melbourne Cup was not run until 1861. The Town Plate of the forties, and the Champion Race, instituted in 1859, preceded it. The horse and his trappings had a greater part in the early life of our city than it can ever have again. That phase of our life is gone. Watson was succeeded in Kirk’s Bazaar by McCullough, Campbell & Co., and this firm by that of Campbell, Pratt & Co., which finally merged into Campbell & Sons, the moving spirit of which was the Honourable James Callender Campbell, M.L.C.

Fawkner, in his paper of the 19th of February, 1838, reports that an adjourned meeting of the Melbourne Racing Club was held at his hotel on Thursday, the 15th of February, 1838. Henry Allen was in the chair. Henry Arthur was appointed steward, Mr. Nodin was made Treasurer and Secretary, and Mr. Morley was appointed Clerk of the Course. Stakes, distances and other essentials were settled at that meeting. So Melbourne had racing two years after its settlement. Yet it is but yesterday that we developed the trotting horse; formerly our trade horses walked, now they trot, and we are speeding up on the American plan. Hamilton was the earliest saddler and harness maker advertised in our press. He had a place in Collins Street. Liardet arranged horse races as well as regattas at Port Melbourne in the early forties. _The Gazette_, reporting our horse races in 1842, predicts that Victoria would have the finest breed of horses in the world, because of its climatic advantages. The prediction has hardly been realized; still we have developed a good horse. George Hagley was the first to export and manufacture on a large scale the equipage of the trotting horse, and this in our own time. While studying in the Old Cemetery we came to know men who catered for the sporting fraternity of early Melbourne, Peter Perkins, who started the first oyster saloon in the town, Alfred Wooley, one of the first wine merchants, and Matthew Neave, our first poulterer. A late supper apparently could be got in early Melbourne.

Watson went coaching under the name of Cobb and Company as others did. All over Australasia there were Cobb & Co’s coaches that Cobb knew nothing about; but Cobb’s coach did sometimes start out from Kirk’s Bazaar as it went on its way to the goldfields. Cobb was an American, who arrived in Melbourne in 1852, and in that year he organised his coach service. Mr. A. W. Greig has given us a good biographical sketch of him. He had money, and knew from his American experience how to face the new roads. I have ridden in the coaches bearing his name in New Zealand over the pioneer roads, I have sat for hours cramped in the small space allowed to each passenger, and have been jolted to death as we struck a rough spot on the road. This was the experience of the pioneer on the road to the Ovens or to Mount Alexander. Cobb got the best horses, the best American coaches for the work, and brought over Americans to drive them. We give a picture of one of his great coaches here. The day of all days in the year in Melbourne is a horse-racing day, Cup Day. It is then that all Australasia is represented at Flemington. The race was instituted in 1860, and had
been preceded by the “Town Plate” in the forties and The Champion in the fifties. The Mayor, Aldermen and Councillors gave the Cup, and it was called “The Corporation Cup.”

Phoebe was the horse that won it. It was run under the auspices of the Jockey Club. A few weeks later the Turf Club had a race, the Metropolitan Cup, when Flying Jib won. In the next year, 1861, their Cup was called the Melbourne Cup, and Archer won, and won again in 1862.

In Sydney the great racing day is Ladies Day, but here it is on the morning of Cup Day that the cavalcade of fashion, led by the Governor, rolls along Flemington Road to the course. The elite of the Commonwealth are there, and as on the road to the Derby in England, so here, every class of vehicle is seen. The winners of classic races are sometimes sent home to contest the Derby. The first Australasian horse to win that great English race was “Lurline”, a New Zealand horse. Assyrian was a noted horse that won the Melbourne Cup in 1882. On Cup morning all is babel in the city, while in the suburbs there is the silence of Sunday. I have walked across the Fitzroy Gardens in the morning, and it has been just like Sunday, but no sooner was I in Bourke Street than I heard the cries of the boys selling cards, Race card, card for the races, and the calls of the cabmen hailing their passengers. It was especially thrilling near Elizabeth Street. Forty years ago it was almost exclusively cabs that plied for hire, now we stand and look at the crowded street cars. Many of the passengers are only hanging on, and will go thus to the terminus, and will then walk to the course. Multitudes are also flocking into the railway stations. Ten thousand parties will picnic on the flat, and they are discussing their arrangements and the events of the day. Many are carrying hampers, and one of each party has a field glass. They mean to have a good time. A hundred thousand will see the race. Six hundred bookmakers are among them to prey on the crowd. Is it not life to be there? Who does not love the eloquence of a crowd. On the lawn will be seen the fashion and beauty of Australia. No ballroom was ever so beautiful. A glorious summer day, the first Tuesday in November. Why deny your children the privilege of Punch and Judy, or having a ride on the Merry-go-Round?

This is the English national sport on Australian soil. You will surely have a shot at old Aunt Sally yourself, or even go on a swinging boat. We will not damn a man for playing skittles. No, I will have fellowship with them in the enjoyment of the day. I shall feast on ice creams, and drink huge spiders, and eat quantities of sandwiches, but will have no bottled beer. It is good neither to eat flesh nor drink wine, nor to do anything whereby thy brother stumbleth or is made weak. I shall join in the shout as the winning horse comes home, but will bet no money on him, for if I win somebody else loses, and I decline, as a man, to get my pleasure out of another’s pain. Sherbet is better than beer, and tea and coffee than wine. Banish the drink booth, but don’t touch the race. Be a good sport. Let the horse grow symmetrical, fleet and beautiful. The Australian loves His horse. He has been his companion since the days of the pioneers. From his back the pastoralist has grown expert with the stockwhip, and has driven his cattle overland from New South Wales to Port Phillip, from Port Phillip to South Australia, and in time has gone as far north as Queensland, and out on the Northern Territory. He has explored new lands with his master on his back. The Australian has cared for his horse and educated him for every service. Therefore it is natural in Cup time that we should welcome the visitor from every city and from the remotest stations. The carnival is for the settler and his servants. Here on the Hill and on the Lawn they meet their old friends.

It is naturally one of the greatest racecourses in the world. The Hill overlooks the racetrack. Gisborne and others of these who chose the site must have thought that it seemed designed by nature for the purpose. We will banish the evils, but keep the living sport to exhilarate and inspire our citizens. So that every one of the hundred thousand will say, on the morrow, that it was the happiest day in his or her life.

When settling up day came for the first Cup, “Corporation Cup,” the Cup was filled to the brim with wine, and all stepped forward and each in turn drank out of the Cup. It was then the Cup of Communion to the racing world, and has remained such down to this day. The Prince of Wales, while at Flemington took a liking to a steeplechaser, Kinlark, and later on the owner, Mr. 1. M.Niall, made
him a present of it. There is a hunting season in Melbourne, and several of our old hunting men are buried in the Old Cemetery.

We have a distinctly representative business man in George Hyde, who died on the 30th of May, 1844. He was in business with Cain, and in 1842 was made a Magistrate. But before all is Charles Hilton Dight, after whom Dight's Falls are named. He and his relatives put up the mill in 1840, and originated our local flour industry. He was the brother-in-law of Hamilton Hume, our explorer, and represents industry in a much higher sense than the mere organiser of a business. He stood for free immigration against transportation, and was returned at the top of the poll for North Bourke to our first Parliament. North Bourke was somewhat akin to the Federal constituency of Batman, but more extensive. He was a working man's representative, and stood for religious equality, and no endowment to any religious body, but liberal grants for education. He said: Let the pastoralist squat until the land is wanted, until we wish to sell it; better that it be in use than idle. He believed in good wages; that meant prosperity for everybody. He was an Australian Native, and contended for the ballot when open voting was the law, and men were often made to suffer for their vote. Thus did he look to the welfare of all interests mercantile, pastoral, agricultural, and industrial. But he did not live long enough to accomplish his great ideals. He died the year after he is elected, at the age of 38, and they carried his body to the Old Cemetery (1852).

Samuel Willis and Ami Forrester, whose stone was found partially buried in the ground, were probably our first jewellers and pawnbrokers, or related to them.

Trade differentiated. Our first stores sold everything. Batman sold from his store and also lent money to his customers. Crockery, clothes, food, drink, jewellery and books were all in the one store, but gradually trade specialised, and then we see the coming of the individual trades, and special business. The jeweller and the pawnbroker are one. The saddler does not appear. The representative men of science and letters have treated fully, but here and there we read a name on our memorials, such as Dr. McMullin, Deputy Inspector-General of Hospitals, that we have passed without remark. He died at sea, on board the Stratheden, on the 17th of December, 1849. His remains were brought to Melbourne and buried in the old Cemetery, in the same ground in which rested the remains of the wife of Dr. J. N. Patterson, R.N., our first immigration officer and near to the graves of many eminent physicians, as the chapter on the Literature of the Epitaph testifies. A distinct School of Medicine has taken a place in Melbourne, that of the Homoeopath.

Like cures like; the frost-bitten man may be cured by rubbing him with snow, a burned hand is healed by holding it before the fire. In some way homoeopathy became associated with temperance, and a leading man in the creation of the present homoeopathic institution was J. W. Hunt, the old President of the Temperance Alliance. They are erecting this memorial tablet to him in the hospital: This tablet was erected in remembrance of the great services rendered to this hospital by James William Hunt, one of the founders, and for many years Chairman of the Board of Management. Died on the 30th of August 1913.

Hunt chose the present site of the hospital on St. Kilda Road, but long before that movement came into existence, a section of the community in Melbourne were interested in homeopathy. A dispensary was founded for out-patients in 1809. A hospital was opened in 1870, which was incorporated in 1877. Dr. J. W. Gunst was one of their first doctors. Drs. Teague, Rae and Emery Gould were also very early in the movement. Robert Scourfield gave the Scourfield Chambers, in Collins Street, to the hospital. Sir William Clarke, R. L. levers and Dean Macartney contributed to the hospital. Mr. A. H. Padley was one of its early secretaries; the first honorary secretary was T. J. Crouch. Mr. Padley initiated a forward movement. The father of the present Prime Minister of the Commonwealth was formerly a vice-president of the institution.

Its annual report for 1923 shows 397,012 cases have been treated. Melbourne has the largest Children’s Hospital in Australasia, chiefly created by women for children. On the 9th of September, 1870, a few ladies met together in St. James Parsonage. The Reverend M. Beecher was in the chair. The meeting resolved that it was desirable to establish in Melbourne a Children’s Hospital. The movement was
initiated and grew until we had the great hospital that now exists in Carlton. The first hospital was at 39 Stephen Street, now Collins Place, Exhibition Street. The doctors then were Dr. Motherwell, an old pioneer, Professor Halford, Dr. Singleton, and Dr. William Smith. Mrs. Perry was the first President, and was succeeded by Mrs. Bromby. Mrs. Bishop was for 24 years President. The receipts for the first year, including a gift of £75 from the Government, were £938 0s. 8d. In 1873 the hospital was removed to Spring Street, and in 1876 Sir Redmond Barry's villa was bought for £10,000. The State School children assisted in raising this money. Apparently only three years were spent in Spring Street, but it was some time before the hospital became a large institution in Carlton. A portion of the hospital was opened by Lady Bowen, in 1887, and has gone on extending until we have the huge but picturesque red brick hospital of to-day. Dr. William Snowball was a celebrated children’s doctor, who for some years served this Hospital, and Dr. F. Hobill Cole was there for thirty years.

He has interested himself in more things than medicine, and has contributed to our movement, He is one of our greatest Australian scholars, and bought from us the Captain Cook relics. By his kindness we have been able to give such pictures in this book as the First Parliament and the portrait of Isaac Smith. The hospital has been helped by public collections, fairs and bazaars. The greatest of them all was held in 1900, when the hospital was thirty years old; it is now fifty four. A beautiful souvenir book was produced for that bazaar, called “Childhood in Bud and Blossom,” to which some of our greatest artists and literary men contributed. Dr. Jeffreys Wood was a contemporary of Dr. Cole, and was a popular children’s doctor. David Chambers, Crown Solicitor of New South Wales, who with others codified the laws of Australia, was Under-Sheriff in Sydney, and had to work on the codifying of the statutes of England then in force in the colonies. He came to Australia in 1830. He was the intimate friend of the Chief Justice of New South Wales. William A’Beckett. They lived near to each other in Newtown, Sydney, in those times a very quiet and select suburb. Out of his loins have come distinguished men and women, such as Colonel Phillip Chambers, who served with honour in the war in Gallipoli and Palestine. Chambers while in Melbourne was the friend of Latrobe. He died in February 1847, and was buried in the Old Cemetery. The family of the second Judge in Melbourne, Justice A’Beckett, the successor to Judge Willis, is represented by the mother of the A’Beckett, Ann Hayley. Hers was a good grave, surmounted by an oblong casket and surrounded by a railing.

William Meek was the first regular legal practitioner. Of course, Gellibrand, who at one time was Attorney-General in Tasmania, would be the first lawyer, but he did not practise. Meek is said to have been the first to practise here. He died at Brighton on the 28th of January, 1850. His funeral was attended by nearly all the professional men in Melbourne. His friends met the hearse at the bridge, and followed the body to the Old Cemetery. There was no memorial to mark his grave, and this was also true of the grave of Mr. Rodda, an English lawyer of merit, who practised in Melbourne, and whose grandson is the probate lawyer in the firm of Snowball and Kaufman.

Farquhar McCrae Cole, barrister-at-law, died on the 7th of May, 1879, and was buried in Captain Cole's grave. In the Postlethwaites’ grave is Edward Postlethwaites, a Melbourne barrister, who died in November, 1852, aged 37. The Postlethwaites came from England in The Westminster in 1839, a sailing vessel that did the voyage in 108 days. The law was well represented here.

Henry George Alfred Stephen, third son of Mr. Justice Stephen, from New Zealand, died on the 10th of January 1851, aged 21. Closed a life full of amiability and promise. His father was the first Judge of the Supreme Court in Dunedin, Otago, New Zealand. He received a salary of £800 a year. John Bathgate, who was himself a Judge, has written an historical sketch of early Dunedin, and he says that owing to the fact that Dunedin was settled by religious people that for the first few years there was no crime, and that Judge Stephen remained for two years without trying a case, and the first case he appeared in was one brought against himself for assault. It came up in the Justices Court. He admitted the assault, and ably defended himself, and pleaded great provocation. The Court dismissed the case. The Stephen family provided jurists for three colonies. These men, with these referred to previously, were the fathers of scientific research, and created the literary spirit in early Melbourne.
Over William Clarke's family was a memorial with the Masonic emblem on it. It was the grave of one of our first musical families; the earliest date on it is 1845. It is a historic fact that the Masons were present at every function in early Melbourne. Masonic honours and ceremonies accompanied the laying of foundations of our Supreme Court, 1842; of our bridge over the Yarra, and our hospital, 1840; of the Temperance Hall in the same year; of our Benevolent Asylum, 1850; of our Gas Works and Markets. William Clarke beat O'Shanassy when he sought a second term as a City Councillor. He had a book business in the town, and later founded the business of Clarke and Co., brokers. The first Freemason buried in Melbourne, so far as I can ascertain, was a Mr. Morris, buried in 1840. The Australia-Felix, the first Masonic Lodge, was founded on the 23rd of December, 1839, and among its charter members who were interred or related to these interred in the Old Cemetery, were Adam Pullar, James Liddy, Thomas Jennings, and Samuel Crook. Samuel Crook was our second undertaker; our first was Frost. Crook introduced the hearse. They often carried the coffins all the way to the Cemetery in the first few years. John Sleight went into business with Crook, and A. A. Sleight, the undertakers of to-day, are the same firm. Their ledger of 1840 is interesting reading. George Lilly was also a charter member of The Australia-Felix, as I learned from the minutes, which were in the possession of the late Charles Mitchell, the seedsman. Lilly was also a trustee for the Wesleyan ground in the Old Cemetery. The first five initiations in Victoria took place on the 22nd of April, 1840. They were Smith (John Thomas), Peers, Thomas, Hughes and Strode. These five were initiated the same evening.

One Sunday I met the son of Henry Short looking for his father's grave. His father was Henry Short, B.A., author and artist. He gave one of the first pictures presented to the Art Gallery. I asked the oldest attendant in the Gallery if he knew it. He looked up his books and found that the picture was one of fruit, flowers and fish, and that it was presented in 1801. This was the very beginning, for in 1850 the Public Library was opened by the Acting Governor Major-General MacArthur. He was received by Justice Barry, and the Library was formally opened.

The Art Gallery came later, and Henry Short was therefore a founder of art in Victoria. We have seen in previous chapters how many religious and philanthropic men were memorialized in the old ground. William Pascoe Crook, whom Joseph King claims preceded even Knopwood in the proclamation of the gospel in Victoria, He with a few others taught Polynesia to read and to write. Reverend James Forbes, M.A., was the founder of both wings of the Presbyterian Church Symbol on the Clarke Tomb (Old Cemetery). Mrs. Forbes. here. Looking up the old newspapers, I read that he had the largest funeral seen in Melbourne up to that date, on the 15th of August, 1851. All the chief officers of the Government, every clergyman, and all the men of standing in the city who could possibly attend, were present at the service at the grave. In the same month the Reverend Daniel Newham was buried, and Bishop Perry gave funeral orations on both men. The Reverend A. M. Ramsay, the founder of the United Presbyterian Church, esteemed by some the most eloquent man in early Melbourne, was buried in the Melbourne General, but he buried a child in the Old Cemetery, as did also the Reverend Adam Compton Thomson.

I refer again to these men, to emphasize the fact that the old memorial ground was our monument to the men and women of merit, who founded our institutions, not only our churches, but such noble institutions as the British and Foreign Bible Society and the Freemasons' Order. There old mechanics come up before us. One day I met Mr. Hugh Purves, at the grave of the wife of Robert Smith, and he told me he served his apprenticeship under Smith, who was a partner in the firm of Fulton and Smith. Fulton was a founder of the iron industry in this city. In early Melbourne some mechanics combined and built a paddle-boat, The Democrat; these were James Dow, John Dutch, William Fulton, James Patterson, George Stewart, Thomas Elder and Edmund Ashley. I cannot find their graves here, but the names of James Dow and William Fulton recall the firms who made the iron memorials. Dow & Co. of the Port Phillip Foundry, made the memorial that was over the grave of James Martin, and Fulton, that to which I have already alluded, over the remains of Margaret Smith. The smallest tablet in the Cemetery is a little oval iron memorial in the Roman Catholic ground, over the remains of Mary Fulton.
Here were the graves of the representative Roman Catholics like Edward Curr, of St. Helen’s, and Thomas Halfpenny, and representative Jews like Lewis Hart, and statesmen like Cassell, and soldiers like J. D. Lyon Campbell, sailors like Stephenson, who died in the discharge of his duty. Here were the men who recall subjects of general interest, and we look through these stones to the creation of our Philanthropic Institutions and our Friendly Societies.

I met Mrs. Millar at the grave of Joseph Henderson. She told me that he came here in 1841 and engaged with Watson and Hunter. There is also a Hunter grave in the Cemetery. Henderson came out in The Frankfield from the North of Ireland. His first son was born on the vessel. He was a Life-Governor of the old Benevolent Asylum, and died in 1904, at the age of 92, and was buried there. Three generations rested in this grave. Timothy Lane was another of the founders of the Benevolent Asylum. It was in the north-west corner, and right up against the markets, and his body was one of the first exhumed, but his tomb was never transferred; it was broken to pieces in being taken down and was never replaced. He was a publican, and his benevolence won for him the esteem of his fellows and he was therefore numbered among her earliest City Councillors.

The foundation stone of the Benevolent Asylum was laid in June 1850, in the presence of 10,000 people, in North Melbourne. To-day it is at Cheltenham. It was removed to that suburb in 1910. On either side of the entrance to it are memorial tablets to the men who gave liberally to it. From 1849 to 1853 they are chiefly and probably all Old Cemetery men: anyway all the names given for 1853 are found on our stones, and three out of four for 1855, and five out of six for 1850. Some of these, however, may be only relatives of the donors. A problem early Melbourne had to solve was the prevention of fires, and the fighting of them when they came. Presence of mind, initiative and courage took the place of the training and discipline of to-day. The town was not provided with effective means to extinguish fire. The difficulties in getting a full supply of water often baffled the firemen. The problem came seriously before our first City Councillors, and we read several minutes relating to it, such as the help given by the military and the police at fires. The first large fire in Melbourne was the house of Dr. Clutterbuck, in Collins Street, on Sunday, the 2nd of October, 1842. He was one of the first doctors to take up his residence in a spot that is now the doctors quarters. He was a literary man, and has left us a booklet on early Melbourne. The greatest fire in early Melbourne was that of Condell’s Brewery. Edward Alcock behaved heroically at a fire in Fitzroy; at a time when there was the greatest danger of an explosion he carried out a keg of gunpowder. In 1852 he was buried in the Old Cemetery, and his wife erected the memorial over his remains.

The first fire brigade was formed in 1845, and one of the first to join was Daniel McIntosh, who buried his wife in the Roman Catholic ground in 1849, Ellen, wife of Daniel McIntosh. The Western Market was burned down on the 23rd of January, 1853. The greatest fire in Melbourne was in our own time, on the 2nd of November, 1897. It originated in Craig, Williamson’s, and burned out a block in Flinders Street, causing a loss of one million pounds worth of property. The Volunteer Fire Brigades were superseded by the Regular Fire Brigades in 1891. Mr. Samuel Mauger was Chief of the volunteer firemen in the eighties. Then a monthly magazine was brought out in Melbourne, called The Australasian Firemen. It deplores the fact that their association at that time (1886) was without headquarters. There were thirty fire brigades, but they all paid rent, and were without a hall, a contrast to the many spacious stations of to-day. These and the preceding years were the days of the bell tower, when a fire was announced by the fire bell.

All that passed away in 1891. Then the Government, the City Councils and the Fire Insurance Companies agreed to make provision for regular brigades. David J. Stein was taken from the insurance brigade, and made chief of the new service, and the telephone and electric fire alarm took the place of the fire bell. Among the men of the early eighties who did fire brigade work was one of the Henty’s. He died from over-exertion at a fire in Goulburn. New South Wales 1886 and was accorded a fire brigade and public funeral in that town. There is a grave in the Melbourne General on which is a headstone with the symbols of the fire brigade the helmet tomahawk, ladders and other emblems. This hero Christopher Gee was killed on board a burning ship, The Hilarion, at
the Port Melbourne pier, in 1895. John Shanks was the first Oddfellow buried in Melbourne. The hand and heart is on his stone. We have seen that he kept the Royal Highlander Hotel. He belonged to the Manchester Unity order. His death occurred on the 14th of June, 1845.

And he was buried on the 20th of February. This was about seven and a half years after the foundation of the Order in Melbourne. A hundred of his brethren in Regalia followed the body to the Church of England’s ground and the Reverend. A. Compton Thomson conducted the service. The emblem of the Odd fellows was also over the grave of Thomas Bailey and others. Bailey seemed to have been very much respected, because the Order erected the monument and inscribed on it that he was held in high estimation both as a man and a brother. The monument is dated 9th March 1850. There are only two foreign names on the memorials in the Old cemetery.

Early Melbourne was Anglo-Saxon or Anglo Celtic. There were however, two tombs on which were Gaelic. One was Welch Gaelic and the other in Scotch Gaelic and had the Council moved “a limited number of them number of them to Flagstaff Hill. Mr. O’Connell promised me that he would see that he would see that an inscription in Irish Gaelic was placed on one of the monuments in the Roman Catholic division. So that the ancient languages of three kingdoms might be represented there.

That in Welsh was on Gwen Humphrey Hughes grave, while that in Scotch Gaelic was on the grave of John McColl. The two foreign names were Marzetti and Hoffman. The Marzetti’s, the Patterson’s and the Umphelbys married together. Marzetti seemed to be well-to-do. He was an Englishman with a foreign name, having descended from the Dukes of Milan, and we find him advertising that he would lend money on the wool crop. Hoffman, we know, was a caterer. In the Registration Book of the Old Colonist Association, there is this entry: William Hoffman, land owner, arrived here from Germany, on the 14th of September, 1851. Our Hoffman of the same initials, was buried in 1845. Neither he nor Marzetti were very far away from the Anglo-Saxon. The foreign element came in the mining days. Early Melbourne brought forth our English Scotch and Irish Societies. A Caledonian Society was in existence in 1840. There was also a St. Andrew’s Society in the early forties.

The present Caledonian Society has been in existence for forty years. Its first resident was the Honourable Sir James MacBean (1884). Other representative Scotchmen, like Sir John McIntyre, have presided over it. It is affiliated with the Victorian Scottish Union and through its influence the Burn’s Statue was erected. In 1922 it entered into its new building in Russell Street, which is now the headquarters of the Scottish Societies in the city. It is Scotch but it is also British.

St. Patrick’s was formed in 1842. The English hung fire, and St. George’s came later, it originated in February 1845. Rudolphus Quin, in the Episcopalian ground, was an Orangeman and also a member of St. Patrick’s Society. Originally that Society was composed of both Roman Catholic and Protestant Irishmen, but a service having been arranged in St. Francis, the Protestants broke away. Edmund Finn (Garryowen) was one of the founders of St. Patrick’s Society. It is said he was as well-known in early Melbourne as John Pascoe Fawkner. He was educated for the Roman Catholic priesthood, but took to journalism. He came to Melbourne in 1841, the year our friend, Gordon McCrae, arrived. He was employed on the stall of the Port Phillip Morning Herald, and his two volumes, “The Chronicles of early Melbourne” are proof of his powers as a journalist, as a man who can gather news. He is described as short of stature and short sighted, but devoted to his calling. He left the press to become a civil servant. The one thing I have against him is that knowing the historic value of the Old Cemetery, he should have exhumed the body of his father and his grandfather. He was a Roman Catholic, and you can see the leaning towards that persuasion in his book. He succeeded Sir John O’Shanassy as President of St. Patrick’s Society. He affirms that when John Charles King organised the Orange movement in this community, he had left them from prejudice and feeling. I prefer to take C. Wurford’s sketch of early Orangeism in Victoria, as published in the Sentinel, an Orange paper, published here for some years. It does not mention the name of King. He says the institution commenced about the 9th of June, 1845. He bases his story on a minute of the Grand Lodge of Port Phillip, which was in the hands of Alderman Strong, who died a few years ago. Several of the pioneers of the Orange Institution were buried in the Old
Cemetery, including their first Provincial Grand Master, William Kerr. Their first dinner, that in 1845, passed off quietly, but in 1846 there was a riot. They intended to have a procession, but the other side, hearing of it, resolved to break it up, and advertised a game of hurley on Batman’s Hill. So the Orangemen withdrew their procession, but resolved to have their dinner in the long room of Gordon’s Pastoral Hotel. They hung their banners out and commenced their banquet. Soon a crowd of Roman Catholics gathered around the hotel and a disturbance commenced. Moor, the Mayor, appeared on the scene, and read the Riot Act, and demanded that the banners be removed and handed over to him. The Orange men removed the banners, but declined to surrender them, and thereon came a fight, and shots were fired. The police took a hand in the matter, and two Orangemen were arrested. When they came before the Court, they were acquitted. This seems to have been the first religious riot in Melbourne. The Orange Institution has become a considerable force in the community. Lodges are advertised in nearly every issue of the Age. I have come in touch with three of their Grand Masters, and they have impressed me as superior men. I have a happy recollection of H. T. Vale presiding at a debate I took part in in Ballarat with R. J. Clow.

He was then a very old man, yet he spoke with his wonted ability. He joined the Orange Institution in 1869, and presided at 34 of their July gatherings, and declared that he never said a word in the lodge-room that he was not prepared to say in public. He entered Parliament for Ballarat in 1886. He was supported by the temperance movement; that party always believed that he was one man they could count on. He was thirteen years in Parliament, and was at one time a Minister without Portfolio. Simon Fraser was also a Grand Master, and was also in the Victorian Parliament, and was a member of James Munro’s Ministry. He was on the convention which framed the Constitution of the Commonwealth, and later was in the Federal Parliament, and represented us at the Imperial Conference at Ottawa. O. R. Snowball is still among us, and I am avoiding referring to living men, but he, like R. T. Vale, represents both the Orange and the Temperance movement in the Victorian Parliament. He sat on the Royal Commission that agreed to alienate our Cemetery. I believe he looked at the matter purely from the market position, and what I said to him personally, I write here, that in this matter I believe he made a mistake.

The riot of 1846 led Orangemen to aim to build a hall, and they laid the foundation of the first Protestant Hall on Easter Monday, the 5th April, of 1847. The stone was laid by William Kerr, and the congregation led in prayer by A. M. Ramsay. Mr. Meredith was the architect. That hall was superseded in 1882 by the present building, erected on the same ground. The street has changed its name. When the first hall stood in it, it was Stephen Street, but with the coming of the second one, it is Exhibition Street.

The present building, erected on the same ground. The street has changed its name. When the first hall stood in it, it was Stephen Street, but with the coming of the second one, it is Exhibition Street.

John C. King repudiated all connection with the founding of the Orange Institution.

I came on this letter in the Port Phillip Gazette of the 5th of July, 1846: I think it only justice to myself to state that so far from being the originator of the Orange Institution, I was neither directly nor indirectly connected with that movement, or even aware of the existence of an Orange Lodge in Melbourne until long after its establishment.

In 1919, Hugh Francis Brophy, a noted Fenian, died in North Carlton in his 90th year. In 1865 he was sentenced in Ireland to ten years imprisonment. After serving over two years in English prisons he was transported to Australia. During the last 47 years of his life he resided in Melbourne, and as one of the founders of the Land League here, and was also a member of the United Irish League.

There are a class of men who have contributed to the development of the city who are likely to be overlooked, because they have come and gone, or have not been permanently associated with any institution, such as scenic painters or visiting artists. For instance, Thomas Woolner, R.A., the great artist, was in Melbourne for a time. He was the guest of Dr. Godfrey Howitt, at his residence at the corner of Collins and Spring Streets. He did a bronze medallion of Latrobe, and a plaster one of the Reverend James Clow, which are in the National Gallery. George Coppin, when he came to Melbourne, brought with him a Mr. Opie who is said to have been the first scenic artist of any merit in Melbourne. William Pitt, John Hemmings, and Mr. Wilson were well-known scene painters in the fifties. They were succeeded, we are told, by William Moore in his Studio Sketches by Gordon, Spong and Brunton.
W. R. Coleman was for many years scenic artist at Her Majesty's. Among the artists clubs that have been in existence here was The Butterfly, later it changed its name to The Cannibals. When Buvelot first arrived in Melbourne he earned his living as a photographer. Frederick Woodhouse, was painting in the forties. He sold his first picture at Ipswich in 1840. His son, Herbert, is an art dealer in the city, and spoke at one of our gatherings on his father's work. Thomas Ham, we have seen, made the Seal of the City in 1842. He engraved the first New South Wales Bank notes, and the first Union Bank cheque forms. The bank notes were printed on the promises of the Bank, Mr. F. rice, a copper-plate printer, being entrusted with this part of the work. Well-known artists were employed by Ham in the production of his art printing and illustrated magazines.

For instance, David Tulloch in 1848, George Stafford in 1852, Cyrus Mason, who was for a time chief draughtsman in the railways; he came to Melbourne in 1853, and went to Ham's and was employed on the production of one of Ham's maps at £1 a day. Later he, with F. Stringer, bought Thomas Ham's Collins Street business. Stringer soon retired, and left Mason to carry on until 1856. It is said that he introduced the first zinc plate to Victoria by producing on it the map of the County of Bourke to the satisfaction of the Surveyor-General, Captain A. Clarke. H. Glover came to Victoria in 1858. Among the firms he worked for was Ferguson and Mitchell. Tulloch worked for most of these early firms. First for Ham, then for De Gruchy and Leigh, and later for Ferguson and Mitchell and E. Whitehead and Co. Charles Nettleton arrived in 1854, in the ship The Schornburg, and found employment with James F. McKenzie, from whom he learnt something of daguerreotype making. He was in business himself as a photographer about 1859. About 1890 he was employed at various times by Government and the Melbourne Corporation to take photographic views, and did some of the work published under John Noone's name. He died on 4th January, 1902, aged 76.

I think art and refinement were encouraged by Latrobe. He came into a world clouded by convictism, built a chateau and surrounded it with flowers and fruit, and with his refined literary and scholastic mind set the Port Phillip man thinking alike of the vineyard and the University.

He encouraged us in reading books, and sent us to study the geography, geology, botany and zoology of our land. He made it a point himself to see the whole of Victoria. When gold was discovered he went to the diggings. He was the only Governor who remained as long as fifteen years with us, and during that time he successfully fought the authorities on the question of transportation, and took up arms in the cause of the extension of the boundaries of the State:-

I think the Government of the Mother Country understood, for they made him for a time Lieut. Governor General. When Wilmot, the Governor of Van Diemen's Land was suspended from office Latrobe was made Superintendent both of Van Diemen's Land and Port Phillip. Judged by comparison with his contemporaries, Judge Willis and Governor Hotham, his work must be pronounced a great success, and to him we owe many of these institutions which have refined and exalted us. Our present Governor's partner in life, Countess of Stradbroke, wished a grove of wattle planted at Stonnington, but Latrobe had been before her, and thought on the domestication of Australian plants in his gardens at Jolimont; and yet he had time to think of Australian sport. In his day arose our first cricket grounds and our first racecourses. John Conway, one of the fathers of Victorian sport (he took the first eleven home to England), was buried in the Old Cemetery. He was a sporting writer, and was successively on the staff of The Age, The Argus, and the Sydney Morning Herald. Everybody who knew him bore testimony to his manliness and his intellectual attainments, as well as his success as an athlete. I met his widow at his grave. She told me the story of his life. His brave, like that of many others, was well kept. This, with the Wattons, the Littles, and the Parnells, represented the well-kept graves in the Cemetery. Another of our sports much earlier than Conway, was William Skinner; he died at the age of 22, on his 21st April, in 1851. The stone was erected by the Australian Cricket Club, and the figure of the cup is traced on the stone. This takes us back to the earliest age of Victorian sport.

The following are Mr. Trumble's (Secretary of the Melbourne Cricket Club) notes on Conway:-

"John Conway, promoter and manager of the first Australian Cricket Team (that of 1878) which visited England, died at Frankston on the 22nd of August, 1900. He was born at Fyansford, near Geelong,
on the 3rd of February 1843, and was educated at Melbourne Church of England Grammar School. He was a very fast bowler, sound batsman and able captain. He played in Australian matches and against English Elevens with success as a bowler. He was an interesting and able writer on the game, and a good judge of a young cricketer, being the first to recognise the merits of Blackham and Morris.”

We had a French lady here lecturing on French literature, and she put forward the view that the English archers triumphed at Cressy because they played at archery in the green lanes of England. Sport is the parent of virility; it produces character, while war destroys it. The Greeks who swept over Asia with Zenophon and Alexander first won laurels in the Olympic games, and the soldiers of Caesar were entertained and educated in the circus. Some kind of sport is part of the life of a great people. Here we learn valour, fortitude and justice, and we need not descend to the cruelty of the Roman amphitheatre, or the vices of an English racecourse. Our game of football is so humane, that when I was in America their colleges were sending to Australia to get the Victorian Rules of Football, that they might adopt them in the Republic.

They believed that they were superior to the Rugby, Cricket and football have diversified the landscape of Melbourne. You see ovals, huge cricket grounds, golf links, tennis courts and bowling greens scattered over Melbourne. The Australian Saturday afternoon is set aside for sport. In all the factories work finishes at 12 o’clock, and the afternoon finds the workman on the cricket oval or the football grounds.

On the football grounds Dr. McInerny studied our Australian peculiarities. I heard him tell, at the Eclectic Institute, how he watched the British and Australian footballers contend. He noted that our men were fleeter than the Englishmen. We outran and outmanoeuvred them, but when it came to close quarters the English proved themselves the stronger. They were heavier and they knocked our men spinning, and from this he argued that we were developing a distinct variety of the human species in Australia, and if we were let alone and immigration stopped, in time a distinct race would be formed. I heard Dr. Bevan argue that we play too much by proxy. Twenty thousand people will gather together around the Melbourne oval to see twenty-two men play cricket. He thought the twenty thousand should play and the twenty-two look on. However, these great games are only an encouragement to the masses to play. Every suburb has its cricket and football clubs, and when the seasons come, they on Saturday afternoons meet each other on the suburban grounds, but the men who contend in these matches are chosen from a sporting community.

We have not space here to write notes on Melbourne cricket, but the city that gave Conway and Armstrong to the cricket world deserves justice, and I give the following sketch, supplied to me by Mr. Trumble, from Sporting Victoria:-

This ground is considered second to none in the world in matters of public convenience and accommodation, of grandstand and pavilion, and of picturesque surroundings. It is situated in the Richmond Park, about 10 minutes tram ride from town, and is also easily reached by train and cab from any of the suburbs of Melbourne. The area of the ground is about 9 acres, and the playing area is an oblong containing about 4½ acres, the iron picket fence surrounding it being 568 yards in circumference. The ground was selected by the Melbourne Cricket Club in 1854 and has been in possession of the Melbourne Cricket Ground (M.C.C.) since that date. A Crown grant was issued to the Club in 1867 by Sir Henry Barkly, the then Governor. It is only within a comparatively short period that any extensive improvements, and expenditure in any large way, has taken place. Since 1880, however, immense strides have been made, and the ground is now almost surrounded by grandstands, pavilions, &c., built for the convenience of the public and the members of the Club. The stand has a frontage of 480 feet, and cost about £30,000, and accommodates about 6000 people. It is built of brick and iron. There is ample accommodation for refreshment rooms, dressing-rooms for competitors, training-room, skittle alley, luncheon rooms, and a gymnasium, 80 feet by 40 feet, having all the best appliances up to date. The embankment round the playing area now accommodates 55,000 people, all being able to witness the games. The present, members pavilion was built in 1852, the foundation stone being laid by the Princes Albert and George of Wales, who were then midshipmen.
on board *The Bacchante* man-of-war. The building, which has been twice extended since that time, cost nearly £10,000. A new two-story stand to accommodate over 3000 members, has recently been erected at a cost of £20,000. It has commodious dressing-rooms for cricket and football players, ladies' tea room, and refreshment room. The number of members at present is 5353, of whom about 5000 are entitled to bring in two ladies.

**Melbourne Cricket Club**

The Melbourne Cricket Club was founded in 1838, and has in its possession the facsimile of the first minutes of a meeting with the names of these present. The site of the club's first ground was close, to the old Cathedral Church in Little Collins Street, near William Street. The Club afterwards had a ground on the other side of the river, where the Emerald Hill Club afterwards played. This site was given up, as it was so liable to be flooded, and the authorities obtained the present site in the Richmond police paddock (as it was then called) which has been in the occupation of the Club since 1854. Not a vestige of the old wooden buildings or fences remain, everything having been replaced by handsome and substantial brick buildings and iron fence.
CHAPTER 11
A HISTORY OF THE SUBURBS

The first form of popular Government in Port Phillip was the Town Council, and in this we see the beginning of Democratic Government in Australia. The formation of suburbs led to the extension of representative government, and its study enables us to know many representative men. In passing the suburbs in review, we must turn once again to our first Town Council.

Our first Town Clerk was Henry Field Gurner. He only acted as such during the elections. He was an Australian native, and was born in Sydney on the 31st of March, 1819. He was admitted to the Court to practise as a solicitor in New South Wales in 1841, and in the same year was appointed Registrar of the Supreme Court of Port Phillip, and accompanied Judge Willis to Melbourne. He was the first man admitted as a solicitor in Melbourne. He resigned his position as Registrar, and became an attorney in Melbourne, and was appointed Crown Solicitor and Clerk of the Peace in January 1842, and in that capacity acted as Town Clerk at the formation of the Town Council. In July 1851, when self-government was granted to Victoria, Gurner became Crown Solicitor for this colony. He held the office for twenty years. He published several books, among which are the Chronicles of Port Phillip. On the 17th of April, 1883, he died, and was buried in the St. Kilda Cemetery.

Our first elected Town Clerk was King, and our second Kerr; memorials to both of these men were in the Old Cemetery. Our municipal life commences properly with King. The name is symbolic, for Professor Jenks, in his book on the Government of Victoria, argued that the relation of the Town Council to the State Parliament was that of servant to master, and that all the Secretaries and Ministers of State were only evolutions from the King’s Secretaries; that the King would have done it all, but he found the work too much and appointed Secretaries and servants. The earliest councillors here, if so subject, were such to the Parliament sitting in New South Wales. Jenks held that that Parliament called the City Council into existence, and determined how far it might make laws; that it provided funds and limited the power of the Council to borrow, thus making it subject in money matters; finally it appointed its officials. He contrasts its origin with some local institutions in England, which he held arose spontaneously, but it seems to me his simile is unhappy and his contention only partially true. Many of our first Councillors were the expression of the life of early Melbourne, and were elected to our Parliament when separation came. The units of Greater Melbourne, the various suburban councils have grown up independently. Thus men like E. G. Barnard and John Butler Cooper are able to trace the origin and history of a distinct life, and Parliament only seems to have conferred upon the districts the regalia of office, as they spontaneously matured. It is this very distinct life that bars unification and determines that if we have a Greater Melbourne scheme it shall be Federal. We must recognise that our tramways, lighting and water supply are inter-suburban, and would doubtless be better under one direction, but this direction should represent all centres, and should not destroy the character and personal enterprise that made us.

Authority comes from below more than above. We can retain our municipal councils, and let each be represented on the Metropolitan County Council, which will be a duly recognized Metropolitan Board of Works, based on representative government, and materially freed from the control of Parliament. Hawthorn, Kew and Camberwell opened negotiations to amalgamate. They were historically related, but it was nevertheless found that they had separate interests, and that they could not amalgamate without sacrifice. They could all, however, be represented with the other councils in a County Council. They all have an individual life. Richmond is first of all a pleasantly wooded and pastoral river retreat. The Governor and Archbishop are living at Jolimont; St. Kilda is a waterside village; Newtown is a residential area for the business men in Melbourne, and so each starts to develop on its old lines. Studying the men buried in the Old Cemetery, we come on to
these primitive conditions. John Charles King was born at Dromana, County Down, in the North of Ireland, on 10th July, 1817. He came here on the 1st of June, 1841. Our first Town Council is created on the 12th of August, 1842, and he is appointed Town Clerk. He was Town Clerk when, on the 25th June, 1847, by Letters Patent, it is made a City. About the same time Bishop Perry arrives, and it ecclesiastically becomes a City by the creation of the Cathedral, and the parish is behind all our suburbs. King framed the first Bye-laws, and the Rolls and Order of Proceedings are published under his supervision. Although he gave up the position to Kerr in 1851, to go to England to bring before the English people and the English Government the inequities of transportation and the need of preserving our freedom, yet he returned and became manager of The Argus. For thirty years he served this community, dying on the 26th of January, 1870. It is from his book of bye-laws that we learn of our first municipal legislation. Then we turn to the successive plans of our old surveyors; we find them in the Lands Office. Russell’s Map, shown in this book, is but a sample of the excellent work done by all, Hoddle, Darke, and William Wedge. On the first plan, North Melbourne is the whole area north of the Yarra, and South Melbourne the whole area south of the Yarra. East and West Melbourne and South Yarra did not then exist as names of localities. Robert Hoddle gives a map of the settled parts of Victoria in 1839. It shows his perfect workmanship, although it is in an impaired condition from old age and frequent handling. Nearly all the natives for the districts in the metropolitan area are on this map. The suburbs are parishes, Parish of Prahran, Parish of Boroondara, Cutpaw Paw-Paw, Doutagalla, Maribyrnong, Derrimut, Tullamarine, Jika Jika, Keelbundoora, Bulleen, Moorabbin, Willwillrook, Nunawading. The name Nunawading is not on these maps. You find on very early maps the Dendy, Unwin, and Elgar surveys. The earliest map found of Nunawading was 1853. On these old maps you find the names of people buried in the Old Cemetery as property owners. A plan of East Melbourne is made by Robert Hoddle in 1848. A plan of a railway to Hobson’s Bay is shown on one of Hoddle’s plans as early as 1840, when only a punt is running at the spot where Princes Bridge now stands, and there is a suggested plan for a township south of the Yarra, and a mention that the marsh overflowed in December 1839, and also in 1840, the year the map was made. Clement Hodginson also made an ideal plan in 1855 of what is now North Melbourne, showing a circus and residential place, Alma Circus, and Balaclava Place Another of this surveyor’s ideas was to have a Merriville on the banks of the Merri Creek. The old colonists have somewhat fulfilled that ideal. Robert Hoddle’s earliest map of Melbourne is dated the 25th of March, 1837. Melbourne, like its daughter municipalities, now embraces several localities, North Melbourne, East Melbourne, West Melbourne, Carlton, North Carlton, Princes Hill, Flemington, Newmarket, Kensington, and Jolimont. All these names are absent from our earlier maps; the earliest of them is probably Jolimont, The Pretty Hill, which Latrobe gave to his estate, using the French language, in honour of his Swiss wife. We will see the civic changes in these localities later on; how, for instance, North Melbourne became a town in 1874, called Hotham; how it changed its name to North Melbourne in 1887, and reunited to Melbourne on the 30th of October, 1905. The Old Cemetery sheds light on the origin of the suburbs. Williamstown: this name which is now a compound word, was originally written as two words, Williams Town, and it so appeared on the stones in Spotswood’s grave. John Stewart Spotswood was a pioneer of the suburbs; Spotswood is named after him, as Seddon is named after his distinguished son-in-law.

In 1840 Melbourne was one of four towns in Australia-Felix, Melbourne, William’s Town, Geelong, and Portland. Melbourne grew more rapidly than any other, branched out and took in Williamstown as a suburb. Suburbs grow up, and sometimes formed themselves out of private estates. James Jackson bought Toorak, now a suburb. A locality Dr. Hobson lived at, Bona Vista, South Yarra, when South Yarra was a generic name for a district. Melbourne started her municipal life in 1842, with only one suburb, Newtown, or Collingwood. The name Newtown was not in the Old Cemetery, but Collingwood was on Fogarty’s stone in an inscription bearing the date 1854. Doutagalla, an old name of Melbourne, was on a memorial which has disappeared. Port Phillip is the general designation of the district on the stones erected prior to 1851, although the name Australia-Felix did appear on one stone which was taken away. A butcher, George T. Stevens, had the name Batman’s Swamp on his wife’s memorial. Nunawading, the district in which Box
Hill is situated, was on one memorial, and Hawksburn was given as the name of Cassel’s house on his monument. In this way light is shed on the origin of the suburbs by the Old Cemetery.

The Yarra has given its name to three important places, South Yarra, Yarraville, and Yarra Glen. Yarra Glen and Yarra Flats were on the stone over the grave of William Little, and on the same stone was the name Janet Steele, and Steele Creek flows through the Yarra Flats, loading us to think that it is named after one of this family; one would also think Ruffy’s Creek, Templestowe, was named after Henry Ruffy, the settler, who was buried in the Old Cemetery in 1847.

We have to be thankful to Batman for his use of native names, and to John Helder Wedge and Robert Hoddle for also setting us the example of their use. Prahran, we have seen, is such. Toorak is a native name for a swamp with bushes, or tea tree springs. Mordialloc is on our memorial stones, and is derived from two native words, Mordi and Yallock. Yallock means a stream. The name was given to this district by William Thomas, the Protector of the Aborigines, and apparently the word means near the stream Mooroolbark is a native name for red clay. Murrumbeena, then or belonging to you. Moonee Ponds is given as named after Moonee. Moonee, who was a member of the mounted native police, is reported to have died in the Wimmera in 1845. Mrs. Kong Meng said that they were in the habit of calling the whole of the tribe Moonee Moonee. Moorabbin is the native name for mother’s milk. Carrum is a word for a boomerang. Batman called the Yarra Batman’s River, but Wedge renamed it the Yarra-Yarra, and the native name has survived on our old stones. The duplicate use of the word Yarra occurs. Grimes called it the fresh-water river, and that name contrasts with the Saltwater River. Batman also called Merri Creek Batman Creek; the native name, however, has been accepted. In a small way he is compensated by having his name attached to the Federal Electorate of Northern Melbourne, which is now Batman. Jika Jika, the adjoining electorate, is named after Jacka Jacka, one of the aboriginals who signed the Treaty with Batman. Richmond appears on our maps from its earliest days; Hawthorn comes in later. Rucker’s name was bestowed on Rucker’s Hill; he laid the foundation of Brunswick. Victoria Park was formerly called Dight’s Paddock. In our Cemetery were the namesakes of several streets and squares, Lonsdale, Johnstone, Nicholson, Balcombe.

The Wattons have given their name to more than one place in Victoria. Mornane has given his name to a place in the city; also Crossley. I take it McArthur Square is named after David Charteris McArthur, but it may be after General Macarthur. James Westwood’s daughter, standing by her father’s grave, told me that Westwood Place was named after her father. Murchison Square, where the railings of the northern end of the Cemetery went to, is named after Sir Roderick Murchison; recently a relative of his, who took an interest in our movement, died here. Hobson’s Bay is named after the uncle of our doctor, the Captain of The Rattlesnake.

We acknowledge our indebtedness to Mr. O’Callaghan, who has so profoundly studied this subject, but must regret that with his general knowledge, and large sympathy for historical research, he should have hesitated to throw himself into the fight to save the Old Historic Ground. We have to record that he and other dilettante members of the Historical Society were slackers. Our suburbs have but recently arisen as municipalities; back of them all are the runs and farms of our earliest settlers. Our dates are taken chiefly from Arnall and Jackson’s Victorian Municipal Directory and Gazetteer. They show the steps by which Greater Melbourne has arisen.

I Recently I called on Mr. Arnall. He resided at Gnarwarre, Maud Street, Kew. I found him ill, yet interested in our work. Two of his brothers were buried in the Old Cemetery, and he did all he could to preserve it. He was then eighty years of age. He both owned and edited the Municipal Guide. It was originally brought out by a Geelong firm, but Arnall and Jackson bought it after it had run for a few years, and for fifty years Arnall had been its editor. He came with his father to Victoria in 1852. He was sick and sorrowful, for this month (August 1923) he had buried his wife. His Directory gives a full orbed view of the suburbs as they are to-day. He died on 1st May this year. He had been an enthusiastic bowler, and was Vice-President of the Victorian Bowling Association.
Our Old Cemetery often corrects the distinguished intellectual. Mr. O’Callaghan says Laverton was named after Longmore’s Estate. In the epitaph on Alfred Langhorne are the words, Late of Laverton. Perhaps it was named after Langhorne’s Estate. Campbellfield, I should have thought, was named after J. D. Lyon Campbell, who settled in the beginning there, and whose body was brought from that place to the Old Cemetery, but Mr. O’Callaghan tells us it was named after Neil Campbell. Probably neither of us are right, and it may be named after the Campbell family; three men so named had estates in that northern district. Latrobe was most interested in J. D. Lyon Campbell. Liardet says that Frankston was named after Franks, the settler, who with five others was buried on Flagstaff Hill before the Old Cemetery was set apart as a burial ground. We have seen that Latrobe built a chalet out of love for his Swiss wife, and for the same reason named the locality Jolimont, after her father’s place of residence in Switzerland. This led to the east of Melbourne becoming the fashionable residential area. It is now, however, drifting into a boarding house district, and this is true of all the nearer residential suburbs. Even in Toorak and Kew some of the best houses have been converted into guest-houses; for instance, the noble residence of Joseph Clarke, Mandeville at Toorak. In our sketch of the suburbs we pass over Williamstown, because its history has been given under Naval and Military topics. Batman landed his sheep here and it was named at the same time as Melbourne. It embraces such localities as North Williamstown, Gellibrand Point, Altona, Newport and Spotswood.

Collingwood

The Fawkner and Evans Party commenced settlement south of the Yarra. When warned by Wedge that they were trespassing, they seem to have doubted their right to the northern bank, and Fawkner went south, on agreement with Batman, and a portion of the land then; was tilled, but when the exodus from Van Diemen’s Land came he returned. While South Melbourne was the first suburb to become a municipality, Collingwood, originally called Newtown, was the first suburban area to be occupied with residences. Collingwood and Fitzroy were wards of Melbourne before they became suburbs, just as Flemington and Kensington were formerly wards of Essendon. The district was named by Hoddle after that naval hero, Admiral Collingwood. The name is put in red ink on his map of 1842, and is also found on the first Electoral Roll. It is evidently worthy of its name, for in 1920 Sir William Irvine, who was then Lieutenant-Governor, opened a carnival in aid of the Collingwood Soldiers Memorial Hall. He said that three thousand soldiers enlisted from Collingwood, and that three hundred had made the supreme sacrifice. Collingwood had done the same thing seventy years earlier. In 1854 the district which embraced both Fitzroy and Collingwood sent a contingent to the Volunteer Artillery; they were ready to join in the defence of the Empire during the Crimean War. In the fifties James McKean was the tallest man in the district, and he walked at the head of the Collingwood Rifle Companies.

Edward A. Petherick, F.R.G.S., has written an interesting account of early Collingwood. While that name was on the map, Fitzroy or West Collingwood was called Newtown. Petherick says that this name in large letters could be seen on the side of a shop in Brunswick Street as late as 1855. The first sale of suburban lands was on the 13th of February, 1838. What is now called Victoria Parade was known as Simpson’s Road in the early days, and Newtown was bounded by it on the south and by Reilly Street on the north (Alexandra Parade), by Nicholson Street on the west, and by Smith Street on the east. Beyond this was East Collingwood. Fitzroy to-day is larger than this, and includes Delbridge and Clifton Hill. On Clifton Hill even at that time (in the forties) they were quarrying stone, and the brown gravel of Clifton Hill was used for road making. Collingwood was a flat. It was commonly called the flat, while Fitzroy was undulating, and good houses were rapidly built there. Goats were plentiful on the Flat. The names of Gertrude Street, King William Street, and Hanover Street attest the antiquity of Fitzroy. Labour in Vain and The Builders Arms are two of its oldest hotels. The Collingwood Observer was the first local paper, and one of its earliest churches was the Wesleyan, and another St. Mark’s. In recently preparing the ground for their new building, the workmen at St. Mark’s found buried in the ground the skull of an aboriginal. Fawkner was a prominent figure in the early life of these two suburbs, Fitzroy.
and Collingwood. He generally took the chair at the municipal public meetings. He gave books to many of his friends with his signature in, and nearly always put J.P. after his name. Mr. Victor L. Trotman, the grandson of G. B. Hailes, showed me one. Fawker seems to have been fond of books all his life, and always had a good library. He died in Smith Street in his residence at the north-east corner of Smith and Johnstone Streets; and Raven, whose business is still in Fitzroy, buried him. Fitzroy became a municipality in 1858, a town in 1870, and a city 1st February, 1878.

In the May of 1855 Collingwood was made a municipality, in 1863 a borough, in 1873 a town, and in 1870 a city. Robert Caldwell, writing in 1855, thus describes Collingwood: The oldest and largest suburb, inhabited by many of the most respectable merchants and shopkeepers; it consists chiefly of lodging houses for clerks and other young men engaged in the city. It also has a Mechanics Institute, six churches, a theatre and music room, and several good hotels. He was speaking of both West and East Collingwood, and in thinking of the residences was referring chiefly to Fitzroy. Since the fifties it has completely changed. Its population is now (1922) 34,243. South Melbourne and other suburbs have a larger population, and although it sent so many to the war, yet it returns labour and anti-militaristic men to Parliament. It now embraces Abbotsford and Victoria Park.

South Melbourne

Mr. Childers, afterwards Member of the House of Commons, and Mr. Ligiar, our Surveyor-General, Mr. Petherick tells us successively occupied Abbotsford House on the site of which now stands the Convent of the Nuns of the Good Shepherd. Victoria Park was formerly Dight’s Paddock. Snakes, we are told, were prevalent in the district down to the sixties. Among the principal events in the fifties was the opening of the Johnstone Street Bridge in 1851, and the Studley Park Bridge in 1857. Hoddle Street is a reminder of the old surveyor, and in Fitzroy the streets recall our old councillors and statesmen by such names as Kerr and Westgarth.

Suburban divisions have been modified and frontiers redefined, so that we are prone to confound localities and the names. Collingwood and Fitzroy often mislead us in this district. South Melbourne in its origin is contemporaneous with Newtown and Richmond, and was the second suburb to have a municipal council, which came into existence on the 20th of May, 1855. Prahran preceded it by a month. It may therefore claim to rank before Newtown, and originally it was the other half of Melbourne. Melbourne in Hoddle’s survey (1839) is divided by the Yarra into North and South Melbourne. A copy of this map is reproduced here; from it will be seen that in 1839 the brick makers were making bricks from the fire-brick clay, opposite where Princes Bridge now stands. Indeed the suburb may set up a plea to having been founded after the first ground there; for although he gave up that locality, yet he was quickly followed on by Russell and Darke, who fixed their residences there. It did not, however, succeed in getting a populated area at the commencement. Le Souef and one or two others built residences there, but it did not take the form of suburb in the sense that Newton did. This is easily explained. The banks of the Yarra were fringed with a scrub, in places a very dense scrub and nearly the whole district was either swamp, morass, or sand hills. Beyond this swampy ground Hoddle planted a settlement, and put on his map of 1839 a proposed railway to it and mapped out a wharf, but later he wrote in red ink over the Plan of the settlement that it had been cancelled in favour of another arrangement. The basin of the Yarra was then below the Falls which were across the River where the Queen’s bridge is now built is now built. When Melbourne was incorporated in 1841, the Melbourne Council did not seem to have authority over the south of the Yarra, which was under the direct control of Latrobe, but we read in their minutes for 1845 that they had recently been given jurisdiction south of the Yarra, and therefore a motion was tabled giving each councillor the right to cross the river without paying tolls. It was a miserable time trying to cross the river in a ferry or punt on a dark night. A long gangway led over the swampy ground to the ferry, and there was always a danger of slipping over into a bog. It has been a hard battle to drain and fill in the lands south of the Yarra, and thus so many people were drowned in the Yarra that it was proposed in the Melbourne Council to get a drag and keep it.
in the gauging shed ready for use. There was romance in these dark nights, when they carried lamps, and also in the daytime. They watched the ladies walk the plank to vessels tethered to the bank. One old pioneer remembered a girl of fine figure, well attired, with rich brown hair, take the plank, and with a steady step and upright carriage fearlessly walk to the vessel. That was seventy years ago, but he has been searching for her ever since. He secured one glance of her handsome face, and it has haunted him ever since.

The great influx of population came in 1852, when Canvas Town was created, and extended from what is now Moray Street to St. Kilda Road. The first tents were on the rising ground near this road. Exact history of the suburb starts with Emerald Hill as a municipality. It was created a borough on the 26th of May, 1855. This district was enlarged in 1857, and made a town on the 26th of February, 1872. Ten years afterwards, on the 17th of September, 1883, it became the City of Emerald Hill, and later on in the same year it changed its name to South Melbourne. The suburb includes Albert Park, Middle Park, Montague and that beautiful frontage to Hobson’s Bay, Beaconsfield Parade. That Parade was formerly called Military Road, and on one map I find it marked as Marine Parade. In this locality was the Rifle Butts, and Albert Park railway station was originally known as the Butts Station. Middle Park has been called the Toorak of South Melbourne, there being such fine residences as Hughenden, the home of J. R. Buxton. The finer residences, however, are on the Queen’s Road and St. Kilda Road. At the first election for South Melbourne (1855), the following gentlemen were returned Sir John O’Shanassy, James Service, Robert Stirling Anderson, Albert Hancock, Henry South Gardner, Charles Chessell, Peter McLean Ross, and James O’Brien. Service Crescent was named after Service, Anderson Street after Anderson, Hancock Street after Hancock, Chessell Street after Chessell, and Ross Street after Ross. James Service was the first Chairman of the Council.

This distinguished man lived in a two-storied house in Dorcas Street. As the council offices became vacant, well-known pioneers like W. G. Sprigg, John Whiteman, and Andrew Lyell were elected members. The Town Hall was built on the site previously occupied by the Melbourne Orphan Asylum. This institution was removed to Cheltenham. The Town Hall was completed in 1880. South Melbourne was divided into wards in 1886.

It was not until 1859 that the water was laid on. Previously to this there was a tank at the corner of Montague Street and Sandridge Road, which was filled by pumping from a station at Jolimont. The first contract for the St. Kilda railroad was let by the company which had it in hand in 1856. Our suburbs have struggled against bad roads, want of water, and poor sewerage. The Metropolitan Board of Works is still building up this city. It has always been intimately related to Melbourne proper. The first dispensary created in Australia, the Friendly Societies, was opened here on 1st February 1869. The city has improved its roads, recreation grounds, and places of public resort by successive loans. South Melbourne started in debt and had to take over its share of the Gabriella Loan. Albert Park has now an area of 600 acres, of which 113 are occupied by the lake. The swamp that stretched to St. Kilda Road was reclaimed, and now such noble houses as Lakeside look from Queen’s Road over the waters of a placid and beautiful lake. Middle Park, now a superior residential district, was almost entirely a swamp, and Beaconsfield Parade was originally a line of sandhills.

The City of Melbourne is not a city that has favoured co-operation: in fact, all Australia has been more socialistic than communistic, it has had a mutual store and a co-operative civil service store, but most of its co-operative efforts have ended either in being sold to private firms, or have failed. We may except the dairying industry. The country seems to have been helped by the farmers forming themselves into co-operative societies to build butter and cheese factories.

Mr. William Howat once said to me that the millionaires and large capitalists, like W. J. T. Clarke, had done more to develop the country than anyone else; that Clarke not only made his own fortune but that of every other man who became associated with him. This is one side of the subject. There seems to be two forces in society as there are two forces in the solar system, the centrifugal and the centripetal, so in society there is the individualistic and the socialistic.
Millionaires in America systemized industry, and then stood in the way of their nationalisation and municipalisation. Up to a certain stage they helped us and then did as much injury as they did good. Where the Gas Company lightened our city possibly it was the only way to light it, but to-day that work is being done by the Council, which must absorb all these monopolies. We are behind Birmingham and Glasgow in this matter, and although the merchants and manufacturers of South Melbourne delight to call their suburb sometimes the Birmingham, and sometimes the Manchester of Australia, still they can be neither unless they provide fittingly for their working population, and South Melbourne being a labour suburb, we naturally enquire as to what they have done for municipalisation. I find that one of their earlier swimming baths was started by a Mr. Stubbs and that the Middle Park Bathing Company started a bath there, which in 1912 was purchased by the municipality. The municipality owns the abattoirs and provides good meat for the people. This is a grand example in municipalisation for all our suburbs. They also own the markets. South Melbourne nearly became the market centre for the entire area of greater Melbourne. Its markets commencing with small things is to-day one of the greatest industries in the city. In this it has demonstrated that a municipality can successfully manage a utility. An old residential centre is St. Vincent Place; this is marked on old plans in very much its present form as a garden reserve.

South Melbourne has played its part in the volunteer defence of the Empire. A volunteer corps was enrolled as early as 1859, and in 1905 the Jubilee day of the suburb was commemorated by the unveiling of the memorial fountain erected to honour the soldiers who lost their lives in the South African War.

Port Melbourne was originally a ward south of the river. Some wanted it called Smith ward after John Thomas Smith, others Newcastle ward after the Duke of Newcastle; but while the discussion was on, General Macarthur was appointed acting Governor and it became Macarthur ward. It continued also to bear the name Sandridge until it was proclaimed Port Melbourne.

It became a borough in 1860, a town in 1893. It changed its name from Sandridge to Port Melbourne in 1884. The station en route is called Graham. It is at Graham Street, a street named by Latrobe after James Graham who was buried in our Old Cemetery.

Richmond

We now turn to Richmond, the birthplace of Dame Melba. A writer in The Australian, a local paper of the sixties, declared it to be one of these self-constituted towns that private enterprise rears up. If he had lived to-day he would have found it returning only socialist members, that it was the first suburb to send a labour man to Parliament. In the sixties, however, He wrote that the Hill of Richmond on the Thames, or the old Castle of Richmond, on the Swale, had their historic scenery paralleled by the beauties of slope, upland and plain in its namesake by the Yarra. This writer, however, lived at a time when every house in Richmond was detached and surrounded by gardens. If he saw the suburb to-day, densely crowded in places with houses packed close to factories, he might become a disciple of town planning, and join Barrett and McPherson in their pleas for open spaces; but we go back to the day when it was a wilderness of verdure. Its first land sale, F. G. A. Barnard tells in a historical sketch of it, was on the 1st of August 1839, and we find familiar names among the first purchasers of land, such as William Witton, Dr. Farquhar-McCrae, Thomas Wills, J. S. Brodie, William Hightett, Chas Williams, D. Lyons, and several others. The Reverend Joseph Docker bought what was known for a long time as Docker’s Hill.

Mr. Barnard says that the Church of England was indebted to him for the site of St. Stephen’s. The church preceded the bridge, and as a name Church Street is older than Bridge Road, but I am inclined to believe that the road, as a road, is older than the street. It is reported to have been made by convict labour. A gully ran across the Fitzroy Gardens in these early days. It was a hopeless looking place covered with native bush, and yet to-day, by the enterprise of the pioneers, it is one of the finest gardens any city possesses, enticing the citizen to walk to Richmond through its beautiful avenues. That walk over rougher ground was taken by the pioneer settlers in Richmond, for they could only reach it by boat if they wished a conveyance. No railway ran to it until 1800 Rules had a Nursery in Richmond district in the forties. William Hull, whose family was represented in the Old Cemetery, came to
Victoria in 1842 and lived in Flinders Street, near where St. Paul’s now stands. He moved to Richmond in 1849, and while there became a member of Parliament. He found a village there. Joseph Le Strange is said to have built the second house there in 1847, but as an outstation had been built in Richmond in 1842, I am inclined to think that there were more houses there in 1847, for according to the Melbourne City Council’s papers, they wished, in August 1840, to take over the suburb of Richmond and carry the town of Melbourne out east to the Yarra. Dr. Considine Stewart did much to promote the welfare of the suburb. He is said to have been the first president of the Medical Association in Victoria.

St. Stephen’s Church was built in 1851, and was restored and extended in 1804-1805. Charles Perks was incumbent from 1851 to 1891. In the time of the Crimean War, Richmond, like Collingwood, formed a company, a rifle corps, of which Dr. Stewart was surgeon, and this suburb showed an equal ready response during World War I. The Memorial Hall to the Richmond soldiers is erected in Church Street; the building plan of the hall was prepared by the surveyor for the Richmond City Council, and the cost of the building was over five thousand pounds.

What interests most people in the history of Richmond is the Cremorne Gardens, originally owned by Ellis, and remodelled by Coppin; Cremorne Street is a reminder of its existence. It was a well laid out ground, with a lake in it, surrounded by a landscape garden, with rural Heats; it had fountains, grottos and aviaries, and even a small zoo, spacious refreshment rooms, a theatre, a ball room, a bowling saloon, and concert hall; these were illuminated by gas manufactured in the gardens. At night there would be a display of fireworks, the fortress of Sebastopol, and later, the Mountain of Vesuvius. A little vessel like The Expert plied up the River bringing the pleasure seekers to this home of amusement. This in the eighteen fifties and the eighteen sixties. In 1859, Bosisto and Don had their respective chemist’s shops in Swan Street. At that time the Reverend J. S. Waugh was closing his ministry with the Wesleyan Church in Richmond. Richmond was already a municipality, proclaimed such in 1855, but not a town. Coppin was Chairman of the Municipal Council in 1859. Yarra Park was then called the Richmond Paddock and the Police Paddock. The Richmond Railway opened in December 1800, and ran to Picnic Station. Bathing Houses were on the banks of the Yarra in this district. It became a town in 1872, and a city in 1882. The first working man it sent to Parliament was William Trenwith; he became leader of the Labour Party, but eventually left them. The constituency has remained a Labour constituency, and sent Frank Gwynne Tudor to the Federal Parliament. When the party was in power at the beginning of the War, he was Minister of Trade and Customs, and later became leader of the Party. His constituency embraced Yarra province, both Richmond and Collingwood, and before he became a statesman he worked in the Denton Hat Mills in that large district.

There is an inartistic fountain in front of the Richmond Town Hall, which was erected to the memory of C. H. Bennett, J.P. and M.L.A., who was Mayor of Richmond in 1807. The inscription tells us that he was formed on the good old plan, a true and brave and downright honest man.

This Yarra province with its large population was unpeopled and primeval when in 1830 Gardiner drove his cattle over it to his station across the river. Burnley is named after an early settler, William Bust Burnley. The first tram that ran in Melbourne ran to Richmond; but I cross the river to look on Prahran, the suburb that comes next chronologically. Hawthorn was under the Boroondara Road Board down to 1800, while Prahran was a municipality in 1855.

**Prahran**

This History of Prahran, from its first settlement until it became a city became a city, was written to the order of the Prahran City Council by John Butler Cooper. That he did it well has been proved by the fact that he was asked to also write that of St. Kilda, and continue his narrative down to the present time. The late Mr. E. A. Petherick, the Archivist of the Commonwealth, assisted him by placing at his disposal his collection of books n Australasia. Petherick was our greatest Bibliographist. A tradition is mentioned by him that William Buckley traversed Prahran when he escaped from the camp at Sorrento. It has been assumed that Buckley crossed the river at Dight’s
Falls when Melbourne was settled. A kettle was found in the scrub, on the spot where Elsternwick afterwards arose. Certain history, however, begins with John Gardiner, the first overlander who depastured his cattle where are now the crescents, gardens and villas of Toorak. The names Gardiner and Gardiner’s Creek are the memorials of this fact. The word Kooyong takes us back, like that of Prahran, to the days of the pioneer and the aboriginal. Kooyong Koot is the haunt of the waterfowl.

Joseph Hawdon opened the way to Dandenong. There are many roads in that district (Toorak Road, Dandenong Road, Commercial Road), some of them leading to nowhere. Later than Gardiner, but before the roads were formed, Walpole and Gogg ran cattle in Prahran, said Bonwick, which Sir. Cooper thinks is open to doubt; but he is on surer ground when he affirms that Archibald McLaurin and his brother drove cattle across Prahran in 1835 on the way to their camp at Red Bluff, St. Kilda. He thinks that they were the first men to pass with cattle through the district. James Backhouse, the Quaker missionary, saw the district when he visited George Langhorne and John Gardiner. These two men were the pioneers of Prahran, one a schoolmaster teaching the aboriginal children, and the other a pastoralist and overlander. G. F. Belcher, whose name appears among our records in the Old Cemetery, makes us familiar with George Langhorne. He remembered his arrival in 1830, and his camp on the Yarra, near Punt Hill. He spent many an evening with him in his tent, which was surrounded by the mia-mia: of the natives. The natives were in the habit of moving about, and Langhorne moved with them. He had great influence with them, and often prevented tribal fights. He, as we have seen, named the district Puraran, then Prahran, afterwards jocularly referred to as Poor Ann. Dandenong is the native word for The Big Hill. When Backhouse saw the station, it seemed to have grown beyond the tent stage, and temporary buildings of mud and plaster with thatched roofs had been erected. John Gardiner was a bank manager before he became a pastoralist, and he soon gave up the station to go back to the bank. He became the Managing Director of the Port Phillip Bank, which was established in Melbourne in 1838, and which had such a short life. Gardiner returned to England in 1853. This South Yarra district remained a pastoral and agricultural domain of doubtful merit for some years. David Hill bought land from the Langhorne brothers, who had grazing rights to the lands of Prahran and Brighton. In 1842 Thomas Napier was bailed up by two bushrangers on the Dandenong Road. William Westgarth, the Historian, lived in South Yarra in the forties, and tells the story of Jackson buying Toorak, a story qualified by Cooper. The mansion Jackson built is still one of the best houses in Victoria.

Old Derrimut was a familiar figure in Windsor in the late forties. Fawker, we see again. He has interests south of the Yarra, and his name appears in the land sales of 1850, but not in these of 1840. The first land sale took place on the 10th of June 1840. It was then that A. Langhorne, not George Langhorne, bought land. C. Williams, after whom Williams Road is named, became a purchaser, also J. D. L. Campbell, and others whose names have passed into history. It is, however, in the fifties that we read about H. Glass, T. B. Payne, Frederick Sargood, S. Staughton, Colonel Anderson, and Major Davidson. The names of Glass and Payne are on very old maps. Glass came to Melbourne in the year 1840. Earlier than this, Yarra Street Tanneries had arisen, and the South Yarra Pound had come. One of the first doctors in the district was the short lived Dr. Edmund Hobson, of Bonavista. Another early physician was Dr. Coates, and another Dr. Job Phillips. One street still bears the name of Cassell, the Collector of Customs, as the locality of Hawksburn is named after his estate. R. A. Balbirmie, a tall Scotchman, bought and in Prahran in 1849. He was a descendant of a Scottish Lord Balmerino, and he called his home by that name, as an Irishman, T. Colclough, named Tintern. Both names have survived in the names of streets in Toorak. Chapel Road was called by that name because the Independent Church was erected in that road in 1850. It changed its name to a street, and Chapel Street is now the greatest commercial street of any suburb in Australasia a unique shopping centre. A Mr. Moyle lived in a house called Ivy Cottage; there was no ivy about it, but, nevertheless, a blind street has been named after it. Clarke, a land owner, gave his name to Clarke Street. A very popular house in Prahran was Como, owned by J. G. Brown, who accumulated a large fortune, and died there in 1871. The name Lake Como was originally attached to a Prahran swamp, which was the haunt of immense flocks of Native waterfowl.
of the estate of Mrs. John Glover, daughter of David Hill, who sold it to C. H. James, a land speculator, and later it passed into the hands of John Brown (Como Brown) who surrounded it with landscape gardens. Dr. Arthur Mullane owned Mullane’s paddock. It was subdivided with frontages to Chapel Street, Chatham Street, Greville Street, Grattan, and Izett Street. Mullane named the two streets Greville and Grattan out of sympathy for the cause of Ireland. Izett was a pioneer who held land in the district. He erected the first two-storied house in Commercial Road, and his work is memorialized in Izett Street. One of the older hotels in Prahran was the Prahran Hotel, where a Sheoak Ale was first brewed, and where this slang word for inferior beer originated. Murphy Street was named after the proprietor of this hotel, J. R. Murphy. Among the early business men was Graham Berry, who had a grocery store at the corner of Chapel Street and Gardiner’s Creek Road (now Toorak Road). Berry took part in one of the first public meetings, aiming to secure Municipal Government for Prahran. Here he starts life as a politician on progressive fines, and was received with groans and uproar, getting his first wounds in the Battle of Prahran. As James Service commenced in South Melbourne, so Graham Berry in Prahran. Peter Snodgrass was also in the battle, and entered into litigation with the sheriff for neglecting to preside at a public meeting, properly called for the purpose of conducting an election. The sheriff was acquitted. By their defeat at the first public meeting in Prahran, the progressives were compelled to put up with another nine months of nuisances, until a Council was duly elected in 1850, comprised of F. J. Sargood, J. Mason, Peter Snodgrass, W. H. Pye, J. B. Crews, W. Oliver, and Andrew Izett.

When Prahran thus became formally originated as a municipal district, it was relying for its subsistence chiefly on the squatters, the merchant residents, the tanneries, the brick makers, the firewood sale yards, and the market gardeners. Brick makers were at work as early as 1838. John Goodman was the leader of the obstructionists; he is accused of having tried, in the interests of the squatters, to keep the district without an elected council. Goodman denied the justice of taxing the people of Windsor, or Murphy’s Paddock (Punt Hill), to make the streets of Prahran. A Mr. Dickson took a very broad view, and said he hoped to see the corporations of the suburbs, Emerald Hill, East Collingwood, Prahran, and others, in a position to create one great municipality, which had been done with success in Glasgow. Mr. Cooper thinks that this was the first prophecy of greater Melbourne. When the election came, Sargood topped the poll; he was the first Chairman of the Prahran Council. He came to Melbourne in 1852, and found employment at his trade in the Government Printing Office. He commenced business in Prahran as a baker, in a shop which he built in Chapel Street, and continued to live in the district after he had become a wealthy man. His descendant, A. H. Sargood, took an interest in the preservation of the Old Cemetery, and spoke with regret of the action of the Melbourne City Council in alienating the graves of the pioneers, pointing to the Old Cemeteries in Britain, and the sacred associations that surrounded them. Mr. Crews, although unknown to our generation, was a character in old Prahran. A life-long friend to the blind, he became blind himself in his old age. He died at 90 years of age, in a little brick cottage in High Street. W. R. Pye died of starvation on a bush road in New Zealand. He had bravely served Prahran, being captain of their first fire brigade. Peter Snodgrass (See After Many Days” by Cuthbert Fetherstonhaugh) only served the council for one year. He bought the house of George Augustus Robinson. He was the ather of Lady Janet Clarke, the wife of the late Sir William Clarke. Peter Snodgrass is said to have lost his wealth and died in comparative poverty, Andrew Izett we have seen. William Oliver was the keeper of the Windsor Hotel, Punt Road. James Mason was the owner of the Royal George Hotel, in Chapel Street. He afterwards represented Prahran in Parliament, and lived to be over ninety years of age. He was the last of Prahran’s first councillors to die.

The Council adopted as their motto, Spectemur agendo, “Let us be seen by our deeds.” Prahran in receiving representative government, was in the age of the weatherboard cottage. The humpy had nearly passed away, says Mr. Cooper; it was now serving as a washhouse, and the wattle and daub only existed as a monument. The clay from the swampy ground The Toll Gate on St. Kilda Road, 1865, came well into use for the local residents, and brick villas commenced to arise. Hart and Preston owned one of the most important of the brickyards. The first two-storied brick house erected in Prahran was
The Ayres Arms. Millions of bricks were turned out, and proud edifices were designed for Toorak; but Chapel Street benefited most and rapidly became transformed. Water was being supplied from a huge tank, fed from the Yarra, by the South Yarra Water Supply Company. Their pumping station was where the Chapel Street Bridge is now; previous to this the primitive tank was attached to each house. Yarra water seems to have been freely drunk in the fifties. The Council also had a water supply system. The Yan Yean supply came as a real blessing to the people living south of the Yarra. The father of James Munro, Donald Munro, had charge of the Yarra Street pump belonging to the city. He apparently induced his son to come here. He, like Graham Berry, started as a grocer in Prahran, and from that simple beginning passed through that chequered career of success and failure that has left us a suburb named after his fashionable residence, Armadale. The first produce store in Prahran is said to have been owned by William Frederick Ford. We have to read the story of the progress of the suburbs with the rise of Melbourne. Melbourne’s powers to draw population made the suburbs. Thus Cooper notes the effects of the gold discoveries on Prahran. This applies all round and can be seen in all the first suburbs. I here recall a few facts that come before us in the study of any city, or enter into our conversation, concerning this suburb, with no lineal relationship to each other.

Greenwood, a draper, is reported to have been the father of the first white boy born in Prahran, 1850. T. B. Payne was the eldest son, and was the first of the Payne’s to arrive here. The Payne’s were farmers in Ireland. Commercial Road was to have been the chief business thoroughfare, but failed to live up to its name. The name of Cassell’s house was suggested by a hawk sitting on the side of the gully, where the stream flowed. They therefore called their house, Hawksburn. Everyone knows that Punt Road was named after the punt. Orrong is supposed by some to be a corruption of the aboriginal word, yearong, a native grub, by others, corrong, a species of snake, or pour ur pong, one of the names of the laughing jackass. G. W. Rusden wrote his histories in a house on Punt Hill. William Street, Mr. Justice Hartley Williams stated in an election speech, was named after him. The foundation of the Prahran Town Hall, was laid on Wednesday the 31st of October, 1860. The first train arrived in Prahran on Saturday evening, the 24th of November, 1860. Joseph Crook asserted that he and his father built the first house in Chapel Street, in the year 1849. Cooper seems to credit this, and says that they passed the first night in the house on the 22nd of August, 1849.

Enoch Chambers, while driving along Dandenong Road, in May 1870, was thrown from his buggy and killed. His funeral was the largest that, up to that time, had passed through Prahran. He was buried in the St. Kilda Cemetery. His wife outlived him by many years, dying at the age of ninety-five. We have referred to him elsewhere as the man who built one of the first locomotives in Victoria. G. W. Taylor presented the statues which were erected in the Victoria Gardens. He was Mayor of Prahran, 1884-1885. The first telegram received in the Prahran Post Office was taken on the 1st of August, 1872. A son of Garibaldi kept, in the seventies, a small fancy goods shop in Toorak Road. He had distinguished himself in his father’s battles, and walked with a limp, the result of a bullet wound. The streets of Prahran were lighted with gas in 1800-1801.

Enoch Chambers made the lamp-posts at his foundry. In 1890 electricity was introduced. The Prince Alfred Hospital was built to commemorate the Duke of Edinburgh’s escape from being shot at Clontarf by O’Farrell.

Prahran has had some noted total abstainers. James Munro was a life-long abstainer, so was John Craven, their first Town Clerk, and Matthew Burnett, the Temperance Missionary, who received a torchlight procession. Prahran was divided into wards in 1888. The Windsor Railway accident occurred on the 11th of May, 1887. Geologically, South Yarra and Toorak are interesting, but we deal with that in treating with the Geology of Melbourne. The pathways are kerbed with bluestone found in the district. Prahran’s first municipal experiment was building a culvert; now it is trying to run a dairy and see that its infants are supplied with good milk. In 1880 Charles D Ebro furnished the designs for the facade of the Town Hall. We have seen that Prahran is an old and interesting suburb. It was gazetted a municipality on the 24th of April, 1855. F. J. Sargood was the first Chairman of the Council, and the first meeting was held in 1850. It was made a borough in 1803, a town in 1870.
and a city in 1879, and is now the largest suburban city in Melbourne, and the fourth city of all cities in Australia.

Brunswick

In the forties we find the name of Brunswick on the roll of electors for Melbourne; it is put down on the roll of 1843 as a place near to Pentridge. Pentridge has since then altered its name, and is no longer as conspicuous on the roll as Brunswick. People in Brunswick vie with those in South Melbourne, and call their city the Birmingham of Australia; this is suburban pride and patriotism. Some dispute exists as to whether it was named after Captain George Brunswick Smythe, whose relatives are in our Cemetery, or after the House of Brunswick. Certainly the Royal Family gave the name currency. Mrs. Joseph George erected on the Sydney Road, at the entrance to Brunswick, a memorial drinking fountain to her father, Thomas Wilkinson. She believed, with Benjamin Cooke, that he named Brunswick after the house of Brunswick. T. C. Callaghan takes the other view, and affirms that it was named after G. Brunswick Smythe. Wilkinson arrived in Tasmania in 1834; he came to Melbourne in 1840, and bought land in Brunswick in 1841. He was M.L.C. for Portland from 1851 to 1855. In 1857 he became the first Chairman of the Municipal Council of Brunswick, was a prominent Wesleyan, and gave the land, on which a Wesleyan Church is built. He died in Brunswick in April 1881. He must not be identified as the Wilkinson, who was also a Wesleyan, who is buried in our Old Cemetery. Mrs. George, his only surviving daughter, erected the fountain in 1915. She too has since passed away.

Mr. Cooke writes that the survey of Brunswick was made by the assistant surveyor, Darke, in 1839. He ran a line between Moonee Ponds and Merri Creek, and at the centre of this line a road one chain wide was set off at right angles running north, which is now the Sydney Road, the principal business street of Brunswick. The land was sold in blocks varying from 98 acres to 132 acres, at prices from £3 to £10 per acre. For its name, Brunswick, it is indebted to two men who rendered the State some service. Sections 102 and 105, originally purchased by Mr. D. S. Campbell, were sold by him to Mr. Thomas Wilkinson and Mr. Edward Stone Parker. These two gentlemen, in keeping with the times, divided their land into allotments, and to do this two streets were laid off running east to the Merri Creek. Her Most Gracious Majesty Queen Victoria had just commenced her long and prosperous reign, and the news of her marriage had just reached Port Phillip. This filled the hearts of the far off denizens with joy, so they named their estate Brunswick, and the two streets they laid out they gave to the public in the names of Victoria and Albert Streets. Wilkinson and Parker were both Wesleyans, and left a portion in the cutting up as a reserve for the Wesleyan Church. Mr. Wilkinson settled down on the land close to the church reserve. Mr. Parker was Protector of the Aboriginals. He settled down at what was then known as the Jim Crow Ranges, teaching the natives the truths of the Gospel. Mr. Wilkinson was in the service of the Corporation of London, arriving in Tasmania in the thirties. Mr. Cooke adds: I have been a resident of Brunswick for close on 70 years, and what I have written has been known to me since boyhood, and F. Giles bears out in full all I have written."

Mounted Policeman

Brunswick was made a borough on the 29th of September, 1857, a town on the 13th of April, 1888, a city on the 15th of January, 1908. Moreland is not a municipality, but a locality in Brunswick. Brunswick, by virtue of its great population, suffered so much during the influenza outbreak that it incurred liabilities, which was set up with other reasons for increasing rates. It has a large number of working men among its citizens, and several of the firms are pioneers of their industries. Here are the workers in clay, stone, brass and other metals. Pottery work was started there 60 years ago. In England the natural products of the district often gave rise to industries. Coal and iron being found in the same district gave rise to a great manufacturing city, but in Brunswick’s case it was not the clay or the raw material that made it, but its proximity to Melbourne, its accessibility. In raw material it is no more favoured than other suburbs, and while it has clay for bricks, yet much of its pipeclay has to be imported. The easy carriage of goods is essential to its life, and this will yet bring the unused part of the railway to Campbellfield into service. It is a strange thing that the brick industry did not start until after the pottery; such is determined by private enterprise. Smith was the pioneer of a metal
industry. John Pender, in the eighties, founded the horse shoe nail industry in this district. His was the only firm in Australia to do this work. He created a new Victorian industry, that is now in a very precarious state owing to the want of sufficient encouragement and protection. Pender applied machinery to the manufacture of the horse-shoe nail, and built large works at Brunswick.

J. W. Fleming died at his residence at Brunswick on the 5th of April, 1919, at the age of 82. He claimed, prior to his death, to be the oldest Australian Native in Victoria, but he was not Melbourne’s first-born as some claimed, and it is questionable whether Flemington was named after his father. Garryowen says that it was named after Fleming, a butcher in that district.

Mr. O’Callaghan refers us to The Argus of the 5th of June, 1896, to show that it was named by Mr. Watson, of Watson and Hunter, a very early firm of pastoralists, in honour of his wife, whose father was manager of a Flemington Estate in Scotland. Mr. O’Callaghan, after a study of all claims, accepts this view. Mr. Fleming became a member of the Greensborough Road Board in 1851, and a few years later of the Brunswick Council, in which he sat until the time of his death. He was Mayor seven times, and the oldest Justice of the Peace in Victoria. He was also the first President of the A.N.A., and a member of both the Agricultural Society and the Zoological Society, and an honorary member of the Victoria Racing Club.

**Coburg**

Pentridge altered its name to Coburg in memory of the visit of the Duke of Edinburgh, who was also Duke of Saxe-Coburg and Gotha. It became a municipal district in 1869, but in these days folks only thought of it as an off shoot of Brunswick, or the place where the Pentridge Penitentiary was situated. It was the twentieth century before it moved forward. It became a shire in 1874, a borough in 1905, a town in 1912, and a city in 1922, and straightway devised a plan for new municipal buildings. Its recent progress, like that of Preston, has been surprising. It embraces Moreland, Pentridge, and extends to Pascoe Vale. Moreland is named after the estate of Dr. Farquhar McCrae, a pioneer who was buried in the Old Cemetery. He took up land in the Brunswick district in 1838, and he named it after an estate which had belonged to his grandfather, Alexander McCrae. The memorial hall for the use of the returned soldiers of Moreland and Coburg is in the new municipal buildings. The northern district east of Coburg comprises the suburbs of Northcote, Preston, and the Heidelberg district. We have three important places around Melbourne bearing German names, Heidelberg, Coburg, and Elsternwick. Some attempt during the World War was made to get rid of at least one of these historic names, but the larger-minded spirit triumphed, and they have been retained. Rolf Boldrewood’s (Thomas Browne) (see Memories of Old Melbourne) furnish us with a good sketch of this northern district. His name was Browne, and he says that his family assisted in the colonisation of Port Phillip and in the founding of the city of Melbourne. His father bought seventy acres at Toorak (the land in which the vice-regal residence was afterwards built), but he gave it up for agricultural reasons, and after buying land in a dozen different places in Melbourne, such as Flinders Street, Collins Street, Elizabeth Street, and Bourke Street, he finally resolved to settle at Heidelberg. In 1896 his son wrote his book and comments on the fact that they had arrived at that stage of development when they were likely to have a railway. Had he lived until to-day, he might have congratulated himself on a prospective tramway. It was a good place in the early days. There lived Captain George Brunswick Smythe, David Charteris McArthur, the Reverend John Bolden (whom I judge from Boldrewood’s narrative) was father of both Armyne and Sandford Bolden, J. Hawdon, Dr. Martin, Justice Willis, and other well-known men of the beginning.

Talking of these times, he refers to Charles Burchett, and said that he named his estate The Gums, because in England certain estates were called The Oaks, The Ashes, and The Beeches, and he told Boldrewood that he thought that in naming our places we should remember things Australian. Our early market gardens seem to have been in Heidelberg and Moonee Ponds. A granite obelisk was unveiled in 1921 in honour of the men from this district who lost their lives, “To the glory of God, and in loving and grateful memory of the men who fell in the 1914-1918 Great War.” The present State Governor, the Earl of Stradbroke, performed the unveiling ceremony. The Shire President, Cr. W. Rank, introduced the Governor. The Governor said that they went out to save us from great
disaster, and to make this country a better and happier home for those who remained to live in it.
The descendants of the pioneers inherit the spirit of the old settlers, and carry their work to a natural conclusion. Heidelberg was named by a land agent, who was known in town as Continental Brown. Fairfield Park was named after an estate of C. H. James. Rosanna was named after a settler’s residence. Hurstbridge after a family residing in the district. Northcote I thought, was named after a squatter who was bailed up by our first bushranger, but Thomas Callaghan says it was named after Lord Northcote. It is but a recent creation as a separate suburb. It was made a borough in 1883, a town in 1890, and a city in 1914. It was well known from the beginning, and on its borders Batman made his treaty with the natives. Ivanhoe has a relation to Walter Scott, but here it is named after the estate of Richard Pender, and Alphington after the birthplace of Sir William Manning. line is now completed to Hurstbridge. The train, in its journey from the city, runs over such historic creeks as the Merri, the Darebin and the Diamond, and the Plenty River. By the Hurstbridge Station, in the midst of a clump of pine trees, is a granite tombstone, and on it are the words: “Sacred to the memory of Henry Faczy Hurst, formerly of Hantford, Dorset, who, while defending his home, full near this spot, by a ball fired by the bushranger Burke, on 4th October, 1800. Aged 34 years. This tablet is erected by a grateful public, as a memorial of this heroic self-sacrifice”

Preston

Preston is named after Preston in England, and the word originally meant, Priest Town. It is situated between the two large creeks the Merri and the Darebin, which coming down from the north empty their waters into the Yarra. Our Old Cemetery is remembered in the story of that settlement. The Parnells were among the first families that settled there. In 1841 Mr. Jeffrey’s purchased forty acres of land there from Major Webb at five pounds an acre. Several army men have settled in this district from the first, and recently some of the debated soldiers homes have been erected. Its progress was very slow until the beginning of the twentieth century, when the industries of the district became transformed. Originally a farming district, naturally tanning, wool scouring and bacon curing readily grow up, but it added to these brickmaking and quarrying, and having an abundant water supply, it had in it, lying latent, these elements which are the basis of municipal progress.

In this district (Bundoora) the Brocks lived, an old family, members of which were buried in the Old Cemetery. Someone had a cottage there by the name of Preston before the municipality was born, but whether that cottage gave its name to the suburb I have not been able to ascertain.

It was formerly under the Morang Road Board. That Board took control of it in 1804, but in 1870 amalgamated with the Epping and Woodstock Road Boards, under the name of Darebin Shire. In 1871 Preston, Gowerville and Northcote separated from the Darebin Shire and formed the Jika Jika Shire. Fourteen years later Northcote separated, and the northern district became Preston Shire.

The Shire Hall was opened on the 24th of April, 1895. William White built the first brick cottage in Preston in 1853, on the site where Hutton’s factory now stands. John White, his son, died in 1919 at the age of seventy one years. Although it is called Priests Town, it has no great ecclesiastical pile. In place of domes, spires and colonnades it has chimney stacks, brick kilns and factories. This is true of the district from Merri Creek, through Northcote and Preston, to Regent. It is served with both electric and cable cars. There is a lake in Edwards Park (Reservoir) covering an area of fourteen acres designed by W. Arthur Kelly, the local Engineer and Town Clerk, in memory of the declaration of peace in 1919. Preston became a borough in 1920 and a town on the 24th of May, 1922.

We cannot give a complete history of every suburb, but here and there we look well back over the past, and gather from representative suburbs the general story of all.

Malvern was a municipal district in 1850. It was then called Gardiner. It changed its name to Malvern in 1878. In 1901 it became a town and in 1911 a city. Gardiner, we have seen, was the pioneer of this eastern district, and the story of most of the eastern suburbs goes back to him. The site of Malvern’s Memorial Hall is at the corner of High Street and Tooronga Road. While Melbourne has been the Capital of the Commonwealth, the State Governor has lived at Stonnington,
Malvern.

Heyington takes its name from Heyington House, the home of William Zeal. Armadale was named after the residence of the late James Munro, just as Hawkesbury was after that of J. H. W. Cassell, and Auburn after the house of the Reverend W. H. J. Liddiard, Kew after the estate of N. A. Fenwick, Balwyn after Andrew Murray’s vineyard, Burwood after Burwood House (the residence of Sir. James F. Palmer), Glen Iris after the residence of J. C. Turner (an early settler in that district), Deepdene after the residence of the late D. C. Askew. Deepdene is an old name for a spot on Deep Creek to the north of Melbourne: the same name is here found in the east. Manor is named after P. Chirnside’s house. Kew was originally part of the Boroondara district. Boroondara is the native name for dark, evidently a shady place. Mr. Barnard thought that it must have been suggested by the shade cast by the trees in its dells.

One of the first places in which gold was discovered in Victoria was Anderson’s Creek (Warrandyte). N. A. Fenwick was the Commissioner of Lands at the time, and he passed through Richmond, Kew and Bulleen on his way to these goldfields. He saw the land as he passed and appreciated it, and in 1851 took up sections which he called the Kew estate. On this he planned a village, and the village of Kew gave its name to the suburb; and here is a long story and an ancient history for Melbourne. One of the earliest things Bonwick ever wrote was his historical sketch of Boroondara. From his book, and that of F. G. A. Barnard, I gather this narrative.

Kew

Many visitors have been impressed with Kew as a residential area. It lies south-east of Heidelberg. Lady Brassey said if she were going to settle in this part of the world she would make her home at Kew. Flinders, when he visited our port, had on board Robert Brown, who was collecting plants for the Royal Gardens at Kew in England, and its namesake here is alike the home of the wattles and the rose. It has been the dwelling place of some of our great men, James Bonwick, David Syme, Judge Stawell, Henry Miller, Francis Henty and others of that family. It is the last haunt of the wattle within a radius of five miles from the Melbourne Post Office. The wattle grows on the banks of the Yarra at Burnley, but does not luxuriate as in Studley Park. F. G. A. Barnard’s father was one of the oldest councillors; he was three times mayor, and his son, the historian of the suburb, was mayor when it became a city. Therefore no man was more able to write the story of the evolution of this city. One Saturday afternoon he took a number of us over Studley Park, and pleasantly told us the story of the garden city, carrying us back one hundred and twenty years to the days when Phillip Gidley King was Governor of Australia, and close to the time when Port Phillip was discovered. A descendant of King, A. S. King, made his home in Kew and there is a memorial to him in the Trinity Church there. Grimes and Robbins were sent by Governor King, just after Murray had discovered the port and Flinders had surveyed it, to survey the district. Grimes walked around it, and James Fleming, one of the party, kept the journal. Grimes found what are now called Dight’s Falls, on the 8th of February, 1803.

Fleming’s Journal is still extant, and Mr. Barnard read portions of it to us in the park, and showed how much of it had remained unchanged. He pointed to the bend in the River described by Grimes, on which the Yarra Bend Asylum now stands, and to the island in the river. The falls have altered since 1803, but we marked the character of the foliage, and found the flora very much as it was described by these who first saw it. Even the gum trees were There, possibly some of them had been seen by the first surveyors. The bird life has changed, but the parrots and parakeets have not entirely disappeared, although the large flocks seen by the pioneers are gone. It was here at Dight’s Falls that Gardiner, Hepburn, and Hawdon crossed the river in Batman’s time. They in this district founded the first cattle station in Australia-Felix. Gardiner bought his partners out. He built his house on the banks of a creek called by the natives Kooyong Koot. Kooyong, as we have said, means the haunt of the waterfowl, others, however, affirm that it is the native name for camp; and here Gardiner camped. The creek is one of the border lines between Malvern and Hawthorn. It is not, however, in Kew. The name is now attached to a federal electorate. The land is very interesting to the geologist; while near the Yarra we have alluvial deposits, yet the district of Kew is Silurian,
and represents our oldest sedimentary rocks, over which break Dight’s Waterfall.

The first sale of land in Boroondara took place on the 13th of December, 1843, but it was not until 1845 that that part known as Kew was sold. H. S. Wills bought ninety acres at £39 an acre, and commenced the creation of the Willsmere Estate. It had been occupied by George Langhorne. One cannot tell whether he received satisfactory compensation for his cultivated land and other improvements. He was allowed one month to remove and hand over the property to Wills. The house Wills lived in was called Lucerne, and is still in existence. J. W. Cowell at the same time secured land in Kew. He did not live long to enjoy it, for he was buried in November 1850 in the Old Cemetery. His land lay near to what are now the grounds of the Kew Asylum. His hotel in Collins Street apparently paid him, for both he and his wife (Catherine) bought land in Kew. He died at the age of 44. His wife was buried three years after him. She was only 28 at her death, in the beginning the district was set aside for farms and market gardens. Hoddle, from the nature of the soil, judged that it would be suitable for this purpose. George Wharton surveyed it and laid out the streets. Some people say it ought to have been called Skew, but the citizen of Kew says its irregularity is not so marked as its natural features might lead you to believe, that the surveyor did the very best for them, and that on the whole it is rectangular, most of the streets running east and west, and north and south. Their names bear comparison with these of other suburbs. In St. Kilda, many streets are named after literary men such as Tennyson, Scott, and Byron, and after battles like Alma and Balaclava; but Wharton preferred to call these in Kew after English statesmen, Walpole, Peel and Derby. These were followed up with the names of Victorian judges and pioneers, such as A’Beckett, Stawell, Fenwick, Howard and Barker. Men of letters like James Bonwick, created a literary and scholarly spirit, which gave birth to their Athenaeum. The suburb is known to the world because there is a great hospital for the insane that is a conspicuous feature in the landscape; but many Kew people affirm that they would be better off without it. Mr. Barnard referred to the coincidence that in England, Kew is near to Richmond, and it is also near to Richmond here. He says that Fenwick, when he named his estate Kew, had that relationship in his mind. William Derrick wanted the village called Cotham, but failed to displace Fenwick’s denomination, and Cotham had to take second place as the name of a road. The first house built in Kew was not Lucerne, that had been preceded by a house built by a Mr. Morgan in Charles Street, which was probably the first house.

Boroondara was a parish before it assumed any political form of local government. The Road Board which secured the tolls seems to have been the first form. Tolls were taken in the early days in many places, for instance on the St. Kilda and Heidelberg Road, and on the bridges over the Yarra. One narrow bridge in Kew took its name from this, and was called the Penny Bridge. You could not walk over it without paying a penny. The petition for a Road Board was granted in 1850.

In future the roads were better built, and High Street came into existence. The punt preceded the bridge at Hawthorn, as elsewhere. John Hodgson built a punt that ran across the river to where the Abbotsford Convent now stands. He was one of these who had taken up a squatting lease in Boroondara at £10 a year. These squatters preceded the purchasers of land to whom I have referred. Someday Mr. Barnard proposes to go over the records concerning these squatting leases around Melbourne.

In 1852 the Government bought Hodgson’s house and punt, and converted the house into a police barracks. It is near here that the Reservoir has been built to supply the Melbourne Botanical Gardens and Albert Park Lake with water. It is said that Latrobe, who laid the foundation of our system of parks, once thought of building Government House in Studley Park. No one can deny the beauty of the spot and the judgment of such a selection. When I first came to Melbourne it was a favourite picnic ground. It is still proposed to build little bridges across the Yarra and utilise it in that way. No part of Kew, except near to the river, is less than 75 feet above the level of the sea, and a position in the park could be obtained two hundred feet above the level, at the eastern end of Cotham Road. Mr. Barnard reported that it was 270 feet above the level of the sea. This alone is equal to the height of the top of the flagpole over the present Government House. Once Government House was put in Studley Park, you have not only the house but the life of
Melbourne elevated. The windings of the Yarra around Kew are in themselves eleven and a half miles. What a picturesque reach of river would then stretch up to Parliament House, an unsurpassed landscape surrounding a building situated on a historic spot. It is believed to have been John Hodgson who gave the name Studley to the park. His native place was Studley in Yorkshire. The park is surrounded by noble houses like Studley Hall, Clutha, built by John Carson in 1850; Moorabbeek, the residence of the late Frank Madden, Speaker of the Legislative Assembly; and these of a number of other representative men. Within the range of vision is Mt. Macedon and the Dandenong Ranges. The eye looks over a glorious landscape to these mountains, and sees the tower of Raheen, the house in which Sir Henry J. Wrixon lived, which was originally the home of Edward Latham, and which was purchased by the admirers of Archbishop Mannix and given to him as a residence. Opposite to Raheen is Dalsreith, the home of the late S. W. Gibson, of Foy and Gibson. It was built, Mr. Barnard tells us, on the site of the Honourable W. Degraves house. Along the Studley Park Road we have a succession of stately mansions.

Francis Henty called his house Field Place in memory of an estate in Sussex. Thomas Henty, his father, came from Sussex. In this suburb dwelt Malcolm McEacharn, George Ramsden, Captain John Murchison, a relative of Sir Roderick Murchison, and a number of celebrities.

George Wharton called his mansion Fernhurst in memory of primeval conditions. He could look back to the day when these lands, now owned by some of Melbourne’s richest citizens, were the camping places of the natives, where grew the wattle and the fern. We must remember that when the asylums were placed in this district, they were a great distance from the residences of Melbourne, and it was never contemplated that they would be surrounded by a large population.

Yarra Bend was built when we were part of New South Wales; that Government established it in 1848. The Kew Asylum came later, and its establishment was opposed by a large number of the residents of Kew. The site was originally set aside for a village. This can be seen on a map of the district prepared in 1838. The asylum was not built until 1805, and not opened until 1872. The first contractor failed to complete the work, and it was finished by Samuel Amess, who at one time was Mayor of Melbourne. The bricks were made from clay found in the district. The beauty of this spot, combined with the scenic loveliness of the view from the summits of Studley Park, would make it pre-eminently the place for Government House. It is still the home of the native flora, and the opossums may again be seen among the foliage of its trees. A wooden bridge was erected to connect Collingwood with Kew in 1858 at Johnston Street. It cost about £30,000. It was superseded by the present iron bridge in 1875. The Victoria Street Bridge was built in recent times, and was opened by the Mayor of Richmond in 1884, and three years later was widened to allow the tramway to be carried across. The first trams plying to Kew were horse trams. Bonwick tells us that until 1856 there were no public conveyances.

The traveller walked over the Richmond Bridge, or rode on horseback or in some conveyance from the farm. A three horse bus was put on in 1855. At that time Hawthorn had a wooden bridge which was built in 1850. The present bridge, by way of Bridge Road, was opened in 1801. This bridge cost £43,000, and took four years to construct. In connection with this work of communication an interesting man appears. Dr. James Palmer. He was knighted in 1857. He was a son of the Reverend John Palmer, of Torrington, Devonshire, England. He was born in 1804 and educated for the medical profession. He came to Melbourne in 1839, and for a time pursued his calling as a physician, but then commenced business as a cordial manufacturer, and later as a wine merchant. In 1840 he was Mayor of Melbourne and in 1848 member of the Legislative Council that met in Sydney. When we received Representative Government he was made Speaker, and under the new constitution (1850) he was the First President of the Legislative Council. He retained this office until the year before he died. He resigned in 1870, and was succeeded by Sir W. H. F. Mitchell. He built Findon, one of the earliest houses in Kew, which was afterwards purchased by Stephen George Henty, brother to Edward Henty, the first settler in Victoria. Later this house became the property of Henry Miller. The house no longer exists. Findon Estate has been cut up and built over. Palmer, we have seen, was interested in our earlier swimming baths, and finding the
crossing of the river between Richmond and Hawthorn necessary, he built a punt in 1840. Then came the wooden bridge, and lastly the present one over which the bus ran and circled round to Kew. Later on, cabs came in, then Albert cars and wagonettes’, which gradually went out as the trains and trams came. Palmer died on the 21st of April, 1871. The horse tram over Victoria Bridge was the first tram to Kew. It was preceded by the Melbourne Omnibus Company's buses over the old route, the Hawthorn Bridge. The railway line to Kew was opened in 1887. In the boom days the outer circle line was run round from Oakleigh to Fairfield Park, through Kew. I have referred to this elsewhere as a disused railway that may yet be of service to Melbourne. It was opened in 1891 and closed in 1893.

In the beginning the district was set aside for farms as the soil seemed suited for that purpose. Cattle and sheep grazed upon its hills. Then it became, in addition to this, a fruit growing district, and dairies and vineyards sprung up. It was never an industrial centre, but naturally grew into a residential district. It has had one of the greatest farms in Victoria, one on which were all the modern farm machinery and appliances, Belford Farm. This was cultivated in the forties by William Wade, and here the first steam ploughing was done. The owner of the farm in the fifties received The Argus gold medal for the best farm in the colony. The Great Flood of 1803 ruined it. That flood affected all the river suburbs.

Kew achieved its independence in 1800, and became a municipality distinct from the Shire of Boroondara. In that year Governor Sir Henry Barkly gazetted it a municipal district. Now we can watch the beginning and evolution of three cities which arose out of the territory of Boroondara, Kew, Hawthorn and Camberwell. The first public meetings in Kew were held in the Athenaeum, which continued to be the civic centre, and was eventually taken over and converted into the Town Hall. Mr. G. Wharton was the first Chairman of the Council. The first meeting of this Council was held on the 15th of January, 1801. In February they chose their motto, Cresco, I grow. Its growth is attested in its history. It was created a road district in 1854, a municipality in 1860, a borough in 1803, it was divided into wards in 1892, proclaimed a town in 1910, and a city on the 10th of March 1921. Their first clerk embezzled some of their money and committed suicide.

When in 1851 Victoria was made a separate colony, Kew was situated in South Bourke, an electorate represented by Henry Miller. At the first election under the new constitution, South Bourke returned Captain Paisley and Patrick O’Brien. In 1859 Dr. L. L. Smith and Herbert Newton became M.L.A.’s for this district. In 1861 Dr. L. L. Smith and Michael O’Grady, E. G. Fitzgibbon, afterwards Town Clerk of Melbourne, was at the bottom of the poll. In 1865 Dr. L. L. Smith found his place taken by George Paton Smith, a well-known man in Kew. He was a protectionist, and it is said that the influence of The Age returned him. In 1877 the new electorate of Boroondara was created, when G. P. Smith, who had become an apostate and joined the conservatives, was again returned. G. P. Smith was followed by another well-known Smith, Robert Murray Smith. For a time he represented the Colony in London as Agent-General.

Boroondara in 1889 returned Duncan Gillies, in 1894 Frank Madden. In this century we have seen E. W. Greenwood represent Boroondara, and in Parliament lead the prohibition party, and this electorate, comprising Kew, Camberwell, Canterbury, Box Hill, Surrey Hills and Balwyn, was the only dry area in Melbourne. Its dry localities deprived thirteen hotels of their licenses at the poll on the 20th of October, 1920. Alfred Fuller, in the seventies, established a brewery in Kew, which he later converted into an organ factory. This was a promise of what followed many years afterwards under prohibition. We cannot forget that the Honourable. James Balfour for many years represented Kew in the Legislative Council. Boroondara is the State electorate, Kooyong the Federal. The first representative in the Federal was W. Knox. Recently R. W. Best represented the Nationalists in that constituency.

James Bonwick founded the first school in Kew. He lived in Parkhill Road, near to the Boroondara Cemetery. Frank Tate, who is now the Director of Education, many years ago established a school at Bulleen. St. Xavier’s College, one of the six great schools of Melbourne, was built in what in former
times was known as Mornane's Paddock, in 1872-1878.

It is said that the Yarra tribe frequently held corroborees in this place. The Congregational Church was the first church organized in Kew. Worship was commenced on the present site in April 1854. Among the distinguished men who ministered to this church was Richard Conneebee, who, in 1803, gave it up to accept the church in Dunedin. The first religious service in Kew is said to have been conducted by a lady, Mrs. Thomas, who was an eloquent advocate of temperance. The Baptists had the first tea meeting in Kew. The Church of England had a schoolhouse there in 1850. The foundation of Trinity Church was laid in 1802. The first police-station was opened in 1855. Kew, of course, has been freer from serious crimes than the crowded suburbs of Collingwood and Fitzroy. The local paper, The Mercury, came into being in 1888.

The main sewers reached Kew in 1904 and the post-office was established in 1850. The Yan Yean service came in 1805, gas in 1809, Melbourne omnibus service 1870, railway opened on the 19th of December 1887, Alexander Gardens in Kew 1887. On the Queen's Jubilee. 1887, the marble memorial in front of the post-office was erected. Kew held its jubilee celebrations on the 8th of April 1908. The first electric tram ran to Victoria Bridge on the 24th of February, 1915. The Kew (Boroondara) Cemetery has the finest tomb in Australia, that erected over the remains of Mrs. J. W. Springthorpe.

Another great sepulchre in the same ground is that erected to the memory of David Syme. Probably the most interesting grave in this cemetery is that of Edward Henty, the first permanent settler in Victoria. It was reserved as a Cemetery in 1859, and the first burial was on the 12th of March that year, a Mrs. Ellen Quick. Governor Stradbrok, when proclaiming Kew a city, said it was a garden city, and it reminded him of Kew, the suburb of London. Although it has extended, the houses remain detached and surrounded with cultivated or ornamental grounds, and it is the very antithesis of North Melbourne, civically, socially and politically, and apparently always has been.

Hawthorn

Many of our suburbs have shown their loyalty to the Motherland by their names, Kew, Richmond, Windsor, Kensington, Preston, Essendon, St. Albans, Sydenham, Surrey Hills, Chelsea, Brighton, Clifton Hill, Croydon, Footscray, Ringwood, and several others, as our railway map shows. With these mingle the names of old settlers. Glenferrie is named after a house; built by Peter Ferry. Glenferry and Auburn are but localities in Hawthorn. Hawthorn was made a municipality in 1800.?? a town in 1887, and a city in 1890. There is a dispute as to whether Hawthorn was named by Latrobe after the Hawthorn-like blossoms on the hill, or after Lieutenant Hawthorne. C. G. A. Colies, in his little history of Hawthorn, says that the view that Hoddle named it after Lieutenant Hawthorne of Her Majesty’s Ship, The Phantom, is credited by the spelling of the name on the early maps, where it is spelt Hawthorne; but the historical truth is that it was named by Latrobe after the white flowers of the native plant growing on the hills. Many English names are attached to places around Melbourne, which by contrast set off the native names on the map, such as Mitcham, Melton, Malvern, and places like Kew, which although taken from an estate, are still a reminder of the Motherland. While all these suburbs in the east were part of Gardiner’s estate, yet he was also interested in the town of Melbourne, and built a wooden house in Bourke Street as early as 1838. Gardiner’s name is now only attached to a creek, to a small locality, and to the railway station. His cattle station, the first in Victoria, covered Kew, Hawthorn, Camberwell, and portions of other suburbs. He first came with Gellibrand, in The Norval, and crossed from Westernport to Melbourne, as we read in the letters of the old pioneers. He was also associated with Hebdon and went to Sydney, and together they brought over their cattle. One of the early settlers in Hawthorn was James Connell, after him Connell’s Creek was named, which is now the main drain in Hawthorn. He was a publican in Melbourne, and for a time kept the Royal Highlander Hotel. Probably James Frederick Palmer, one of the earlier town councillors in Melbourne, did as much as any man for the welfare of Hawthorn in the early days. He is said to have been a grand-nephew of Sir Joshua Reynolds. This eloquent man lived at West Bank Terrace, Richmond, but later crossed the river, and built his residence at St. James Park, Hawthorn. Sir John O’Shanassy, who came to Melbourne as a young Irishman, took up land on Burke Road, near to that of Dean Macartney. Gavan Duffy, when he was Premier, was Minister of

324
Lands. Duffy wished to render them both immortal, so two places were named after them, Ballyshanassay and Ballanduffy. Ballyshanassay was the original name of Burwood. Burwood was called after Burwood House, a house erected by Palmer in 1852. It is also an English name. The name of Palmer’s was changed to Amoe. Burwood was the first name.

Some of the early pioneers in Hawthorn were Germans, and Weinberg Road reminds us of this fact. Swan Street, Richmond, is named after a pioneer of both Richmond and Hawthorn, as Burnley was named after the early settler, William Bust Burnley. The first land sale in Hawthorn is reported by Mr. Colles to have taken place in 1843. Among the men who came in the fifties were John Collins, Henry Spencer, John Conran, Edward Silk, Apollos Slattery and Richard Serpell. Haines Street is named after Charles Haines, the street was run through his property, while Auburn was named after the Reverend W. H. Liddiard’s House. Liddiard Street was named after the man himself. I understand that the Reverend William Henry Liddiard lived in the next house to James Patterson of The Terricks. We have seen that Hawthorn was made a town in 1887. On the memorial stone of the Town Hall is this inscription: This stone was laid by Mrs. T. Barrett, Mayoress, on the 7th of August, 1888. Councillors: Thomas Barrott, J.P., Mayor; G. G Munro, James Swan, J.P., ?? Fee, J.P., William Bell, J.P., F. L. Flint, W. T. Wallis, J.P., William Cowper, J.P., James Westley. James Warren, C. E., Town Clerk.

Twenty eight years ago (1895) I was present at the opening of the Burwood Boys’ Home by Lord Brassey. R. C. Edwards, the tea merchant, originated this work, and has been President of the Institution ever since. Hundreds of boys have been sent out from this Home to become valuable citizens of the Empire.

One spot in this district is the golf links. Melbourne does not forget Scotland’s national sport.

I have covered the story of Hawthorn, in some degree, in sketching Kew, because they both arose out of the original cattle station of Gardiner, and out of Boroondara. I have said that this district is the first to go dry in the metropolitan area. Prohibition commenced on the 20th of October, 1920. Thirteen hotels lost their licenses. The boundaries were, in the west, Burke Road, Camberwell in the east, Middleborough Road, Box Hill. The dry region embraces Camberwell, Canterbury, Surrey Hills, Balwyn and Box Hill.

**Camberwell**

Camberwell, like Kew, was originally a part of Boroondara, but it changed its name as well as its character as it grew. It was named by Mr. George Eastaway, and its development has come within the twentieth century. It was a shire in 1902, a borough in 1905, a town in 1906, and a city in 1914. The Governor-General laid the foundation stone of the Camberwell Soldiers Memorial Hall. Lady Best was deeply interested in this movement. The accepted tender for the hall was £5350, and the total cost was to be £10,000. The Prime Minister, Bruce, opened the Memorial Institute on the 28th of July, 1923. It was erected at a cost of £14,000, subscribed by both the people of Canterbury and Camberwell. It stands in the centre of Canterbury, on the Canterbury Road, and was designed by two returned soldier architects. The people of the district affirm that it is Victoria’s finest Memorial Hall. Lady Best organized the magnificent ball given at its opening, when the fashion of Camberwell and Canterbury revelled in the joys of the dance.

Older than this memorial, however, is that erected in Beckett Park, Balwyn. It stands on higher grounds than that of any other war memorial in Greater Melbourne. A simple square monument with four panels, and above it a flagpole. On one panel is this inscription: “To commemorate the names of those who enlisted from the North Ward, Camberwell, and served abroad in the Great European War, 1914-1918. Their names shall live forever.” Camberwell’s history is associated with the other suburbs I am sketching. Balwyn was named after Andrew Murray’s vineyard, which at one stood on Balwyn Road. It is said to be the Gaelic word for winehouse. There is also in this district a station called...
Roystead, which is named after an estate, and another Shenley after the estate of C. Wentworth. Wentworth’s father had resided at Shenley in England before coming to Australia.

**Nunawading**

Surrey Hills has an interesting old story. The Henty’s took up land there, after settling in Portland. The name of Surrey Hills was in use in 1845. We find a notice in the papers of that time. It is reported that in April of that year, Mrs. John Adam died there, and that she was the mother of the Reverend T. W. Bodenham. Mr. O’Callaghan says that the name was given to it by Mr. J. Hanlan Knife. The first soldiers memorial erected during the war, in Greater Melbourne, was that erected here in Union Park. Mr. Inglefinger and other German families seem to have been among the earlier settlers. The Roman Catholic Church is said to have been the first church building in this district. It stood at the corner of Riversdale and Boundary Roads, near Wattle Park. Wattle Park was then the property of Fenwick, a warehouseman, who become Mayor of Melbourne. It was then known as Fenwick’s Paddock. A considerable part of the land on Surrey Hills was described in the titles as Elga’s subdivision. He seemed to have a grant and survey akin to Dendy’s at Brighton. The Roman Catholic Church was rapidly followed by the Church of England, the Presbyterian and the Congregational. Although there were so many Germans living in the district, there was never a Lutheran Church there. The Church of Christ was established in 1889, the year William Wilson went there. Mr. Woodhead was already in the district, and the church was built on his land, so also the first hall, and other important buildings near to the station. Wilham Wilson’s influence was an important factor in securing prohibition in this district.

Elgar’s special survey was a mile square, bounded on the west by the Union Road, on the east by the Elgar Road, on the north by the White Horse Road, a road that took its name from a hotel, and on the south, the Canterbury Road. The whole at one time was rented by Thomas Cragg, who used it as a dairy farm. The name Nunawading appears on our stones. Box Hill is an old suburb that is up to date in service. The other day (1920) the Returned Soldiers Memorial Club Rooms were opened there, and handed over to the local branch free of debt. The funds were subscribed by the public. It is named after a place in England, but it is said that the name was suggested by the box trees growing there, just as Oakleigh was suggested by the sheoaks, Broadmeadows by the meadow land, although there is such a place in Scotland. Spring Vale was named after a spring of water in the district, and Fern Tree Gully after the ferns. Gembrook, we have mentioned before, was named by Le Souef, the father of the director of the Zoological Gardens, because he found small gems there. Lilydale was named after the wife of Paul de Castella. Dame Melba has Coombe Cottage at Coldstream, the next station to Lilydale, and some affirm that the place was so named because the stream There is cold, but it also parallels Coldstream in Scotland.

William Ellingworth, who died only a few years ago, left behind him this brief sketch of Box Hill:-

“My father and mother moved from Fitzroy to Nunawading in 1855, and my wife and I joined them the following year. The only persons at that time residing in what is now the Box Hill Riding were R. Blood, S. Saddington, A. Cain, who resided in what was then known as Murphy’s Paddock, a strip of land on the north of the White Horse Road, running from Elgar Road to Middleborough Road. P. Trainor owned the White Horse Hotel. A. Wright had a grant of 320 acres, secured from the New South Wales Government for public services rendered in Van Diemen’s Land. The others were B. Lawford, Joseph Aspenall, S. Toogood, T. Hone, J. Fithie, Smith, Murchell, T. Hance, T. Finley, and W. Nelson. The next two years brought several new residents, including S. and A. Padgham, W. Clisy, Stewart It. Sargent, W. Williams, G. Blood, R. Sutton, M. G. Sim, and S. Creek.

About this time, 1850, the land known as Murphy’s Paddock was sold in ten acre blocks. This had the effect of forming the Box Hill of to-day. Mr. S. Padgham bought the lot on which he built his brick store and residence, and he afterwards established the Post Office there. When the Post Office was applied for, the Government asked for a distinctive name, Nunawading or the Main Gippsland Road was not sufficient. Mr. Padgham therefore invited the residents to meet at his house and select a name. Mr. Clisy proposed Box Hill, which was agreed upon. Mr. R. Sutton also bought land at that time, next to Air. Padgham, and established his business on that side of the road. Mr. G. Blood built and
settled on a portion of the same land. R. Simpson was also a purchaser, so too G. Gatter and H. Hillier, each of whom planted orchards. In the year 1857, about the same time, the Government had the land between Middleborough Road and Tunstall Road surveyed large blocks, and submitted to auction, but not much of it was sold. The practice then was that if land were not sold at auction, any person could within one month take it up at the upset price, a pound per acre. Several of the lots were taken up by persons who became permanent settlers. Mr. S. Sargent took the south corner of the White Horse Road, J. and W. Williams and R. Sargent the opposite corner. Messrs Frankham, Whitman and King also made purchases. One by Mrs. Tranter was resold to Mr. W. Cooke. A lot comprising 500 acres of wooded land was taken by J. Woods and became known as the Red Gate Paddock. Some of these lots were cut into small sections, sold and brought people into the district. Thus municipal government became necessary, and in 1857 the first Road Board was formed. The Act provided that the Board should be elected by a show of hands at a meeting presided over by a J. P. As we had no such person in the district, a deputation waited on Sir James Palmer, of Hawthorn, who consented to undertake the duties. A number were nominated and a show of hands taken for each. Sir James announced numbers. The six highest were W. Ellingworth, P. Trainor, W. Yeomans, F. Laverage, 1). Delaney (a man whose name became attached to part of the Canterbury Road), and J. Aspenall. These Sir James Palmer declared were duly elected. At the first meeting W. Yeomans was appointed chairman. They decided to proceed with valuations, and Mr. Lowry, of Kew was, appointed valuator, and his valuation for the whole of the district was £4400, upon which the rate of I shilling was struck, giving a revenue of £220. The Government subsidy was £500. Our Members of Parliament for the district were P. O’Brien and S. Ricardo. Captain Paisley was our member in the Upper House. Through them we succeeded in getting another £2000. Twenty-three square miles came under the control of the Board, and while we have said the rate was 1 shilling in the pound, yet the Act provided for 1/1 an acre for grass land, and 1/3 for land cultivated or with buildings or other improvements. The social life grew, and churches and schools were built. The first church was the Wesleyan, opened in 1856, in Woodhouse Grove; it was built of stone. The United Methodist Church opened in September 1856, a weatherboard building. In the sixties a Primitive Methodist Church was established at Box Hill; it was built of brick. The United Methodist Church served as a school. This day-school was opened in 1858. It was provided by the Denominational School Board that to keep a school open an average attendance of 20 was required, and in order to sustain that small average several young women had to enrol as scholars. About 1863 the Church of England built a brick church and school on Delaney Road, opposite where the pound is now. In 1868 or 1870 the Presbyterians opened, and in 1872 the Wesleyans built a brick church in Station Street, and the United Methodists built on White Horse Road. In 1860 the Primitive Methodists sold their church to the Government, who converted it into a Court House. The resident justices were William Witt, W. Ellingworth, and afterwards C. Bishop was appointed. This remained the Court of Justice in the district until the present Court was erected.

In 1865 Mr. Sutton became much interested in the Melbourne Hospital, and called a meeting and proposed that we make an annual canvass for subscriptions, and out of this the Hospital Sunday grew, and also the first move towards Methodist Union.

The Council of the Shire of Nunawading erected, in the same avenue in which stands the memorial to the men of the South African War, the figure of a soldier sounding a bugle in memory of these who fell in the World War.

**Doncaster**

Farming seems to have been done by the squatters in the Doncaster district in the forties. Among the early settlers there were the cattle stealers, called the cattle duffers, who kept their stolen cattle in the bush that grew over the district. One of the first men to secure a Crown grant was William Bust Burnley, after whom Burnley is named. He has one grant dated January, 1853, but he was not a settler, only a proprietor of land. The brother of the schoolmaster Oswald Thiele, Gottlieb Thiele, was one of the very first settlers in the district. He was there in 1854. He was a German, and we have to acknowledge that he and his brother Germans were among the first and best settlers in this district. At one time
part of Doncaster was called German Town. The Lutheran Church was not the first church; that honour must be given to the Church of England, but the Lutheran Church remains a monument to the enterprise of these Germans, and the first cemetery in the district was their old cemetery around the church. The first schoolmaster in the district was the Reverend Mr. Schram, an educated German, who afterwards became pastor of the Lutheran Church. The school was then taken up by Oswald Thiele, and carried on by him until it became a State school. Among the oldest residents were Finger, Petty, Lawford, Surple, Crouch, and Clay the father-in-law of the present Shire Clerk. Richard Clay died in 1923. He, at the close of his life, was the oldest living resident in Doncaster. Clay originally occupied what was known as the section, which was a Crown grant. He had been in the district over sixty years, and was a pioneer of the fruit growing industry. Fruit is now the chief production of the district. It has two large cool stores for preparing and packing the fruit for transportation. Little help, if any, was given to this district by the Government. This great native industry is the result of the personal energy of the pioneer. He conserved the water, and created the great dams to be seen throughout the district. The system of irrigation in use There is a monument to the enterprise of the pioneer. The Petty’s received their Crown grant in 1868, and the land has continued in the family. George Petty I knew for over thirty years, and he was one of the foremost in promoting the progress of the district. He died this year.

We can all remember Hummell's Doncaster Tower; he had three, the last of which was destroyed a few years ago. The first was near to the Church of Christ, the second near to Mr. Tully’s home, and the third on the opposite side of the street near to the Shire Hall. From these towers the magnificent sweep of country to the east of Melbourne could be well observed. Thousands of people visited Doncaster just to get this view. The tower was destroyed a few years ago. A. O. Hummell was at one time a temperance man, but he renounced his connection with this party, and established the Tower Hotel. He built his first tower about the year 1878. The first form of local government was the Templestowe District Road Board, which became later the Shire of Bulleen. Doncaster then separated from Bulleen, but later was reunited, and the amalgamation took the name of Doncaster. The district was proclaimed in 1856. The Road Board was formed in 1863, and continued until 1874, when the Bulleen Shire Council came into existence; this continued until 1890, when Doncaster severed her connection. The severance continued until 1915, when the union took place which created the present Shire of Doncaster, which comprises such localities as Templestowe, Rooming Creek, Box Hill, Warrandyte, and touches the fringe of Blackburn. The Church of Christ is an influential church in this district, and comes very near to being the oldest Church of Christ in Victoria. It was founded by Mr. Crouch in 1863. The Athenaeum, commonly called the old Athenaeum, is one of the oldest institutions in Doncaster. It is at least sixty years old, and the building was rebuilt just before the war, and at the close of the war the front was adorned in order to make it also a memorial of the men who fell at the front, an unconscious adaptation of our idea of building the national memorial on historic ground, uniting the enterprise of the past with the valour of the present.

Doncaster was a pioneer in the use of electricity, and established the first electric tram in the Southern Hemisphere, that connecting Doncaster with Box Hill. (Tram Road) This ran for a few years in the eighteen eighties, and was then discontinued. The enterprise was initiated by the Doncaster people. To-day the surprise of the Metropolis is to find the electric light out in the bush, five miles out from Doncaster, the result of the co-operation of these orchardists with the Metropolitan Council. For eight years the electric light has been in this district. When I first passed through it, it seemed a pioneer district and the market gardener drowsily drove his cart to the Victoria Markets. To-day he rushes there in a motor car. He stands for good roads, good lighting and good water, and is contending for the laying on of the water supply in the outlying district of Melbourne.

**St. Kilda.**

There is, I understand, a good history of St. Kilda in Manuscript in the possession of the St. Kilda City Council, but we have not access to it. Latrobe named it after a little vessel lying in Hobson’s Bay, Sir Thomas Acland’s yacht, *The Lady of St. Kilda*. When the Melbourne City Council received jurisdiction south of the Yarra, in 1845, I learn from their minutes, that the residents of St. Kilda sent a
petition to the Legislative Council, then meeting in Sydney, against the Melbourne Council exercising authority over them. It had no effect. There is in the Land Office a plan of the suburb made about this time. It is dated the 30th of October, 1845. Two of its streets are even then named Acland and Gray, and among the men who owned land there were Messrs’ Airey, Hutton, Main, Palmer, Ogilvy, Firebrace, Dean, Lonsdale, Peers, Spencer, Bunbury, Howard, Watton, Mills, Gurner, Dalgety, Bardwell, Thomas Native and R. Donaldson. They had purchased land in the village at from £30 to £50 an acre. These were some of the brainiest men in Port Phillip. It was evidently this class of man that gave names to the Poets Corner, Dryden, Milton, Byron, Scott and Tennyson Streets. It was a centre of intellectual culture in the sixties, when Archibald Michie and others gave lectures in the St. Kilda Hall. It must have been a borough hall, for St. Kilda was never a town. It became a borough in 1803, and a city in 1896. It seems to have been our earliest watering place. St. Kilda and Brighton Road has a tale of bushranging. One Saturday afternoon, on the 16th of October, 1852, four bushrangers appeared on the road, and for two and a half hours stuck up and robbed all the travellers who came along. Two of them were Williams and Flannagan, old convicts from Van Diemen’s Land. On a summer’s afternoon they stopped the people going home and took their money from them. As soon as they robbed their victim s they took them into the scrub where two men stood guard over them with their guns. A Mr. Moody came along on horseback and was challenged. He gave spur to his horse and galloped away. They fired at him but missed him, and fearing that he would report on them they mounted their horses and rode off with their booty. They had held up quite a number. They secured from one man twenty-three pounds, and from another forty-six, and thus well supplied with funds they retreated. They were not disguised, and when described, the detectives soon got on their tracks, and eventually brought them to justice. While in prison Williams joined in the murderous attack on Price, and was one of these who were executed.

One of the first timber merchants in St. Kilda was William Allen. He preceded Thurgood and Flatman and all other known timber workers there. An interesting fact is that Marcus James Collin’s, the eldest son of Alfred Collins, who was a nephew of David Collins, is living at St. Kilda. It would seem that David Collins, after whom Collins Street is named, brought his brother out to Van Diemen’s Land. His brother married Mary Ann Sydes, and Marcus is their grandchild, and the grand-nephew of Collins. Howard Smith lived in a house at St. Kilda named Caenwood. It was built by Captain Curry, and is one of the oldest of the better class of houses in the suburb.

St. Kilda Road has been beautified with statues and memorials, and so improved that it was proposed to erect the National Memorial at Princes Bridge, and they have succeeded in securing it for St. Kilda Road. The leading men of St. Kilda have encouraged these movements, and have tried to make their suburb a picturesque watering resort at the end of the road. There has been a marked development in this direction during the last twenty-five years. The monument to Captain Cook was erected about twelve years ago. Most visitors are impressed by the pillar or column surmounted by a sail before the sheds of the Yacht Club, a unique drinking fountain erected by Sali Cleve in April 1911. He was an old colonist who died in 1920. In 1901 there was erected by subscription a memorial to Edwin Knox of the Victorian Bushman’s Corps. He died in South Africa on the 26th of February, 1901, aged 24 years, and his monument is a fountain.

In view of St. Kilda’s past acts, it is not surprising that she should be early in the field with war memorials. That to the sailors, at the end of the pier, and that in Alfred Square, designed by Arthur Pecks, a President of the Victorian Royal Institute of Architects, and manufactured by the Australian Tessellated Tile Co. Here again is a fountain. A tower-like tile obelisk with a fountain at the base. Another fountain is that presented by Mrs. Fairchild in 1906. She was a colonist of fifty-seven years. St. Kilda was created a municipality in 1855, a borough in 1863, and a city in 1896.

St. Kilda was the landing place of the Duke of York, and many of our distinguished visitors have entered Melbourne by this way. The St. Kilda Yacht Club have erected a monument in the form of a conning tower at the end of the Pier, in memory of its members who fell in the war. The tower is a relic of the old British torpedo boat The Childers. The Mayor of St. Kilda, Cr. T. G. Allen, unveiled it in 1919, and
Brigadier-General Lloyd spoke on behalf of the relatives of the departed members of the Club. “Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends”

Brighton

We have already told how Dendy bought the whole district of Brighton, 5120 acres, a special survey in the parish of Moorabbin. Dendy seems to have been a poor business man, and lost his own and his wife’s fortune. An exceptional man, however, became associated with him in the building of Brighton, Jonathan Binns Were. His son tells me that, he was one of the sons of Nicholas Were, an English gentleman of good standing in (The County of Somerset.) He arrived in Melbourne on the 15th of November, 1839, and at once took a foremost place among the commercial men of the town. He bought from Dendy half his interest in the special survey, and built at Brighton Beach, Moorabbin House, in 1842, a house that to this day is one of the best built family homes in the district. Governor Latrobe, while on a visit to that house, observed a vessel, The St. Kilda, and thus came the name. Brighton was made a borough on the 18th of January, 1859, a town 18th of March 1887, a city March 1919. Settlement soon started there. We read of James Cockrane buying early in 1844 ten acres of the Dendy Estate at £2 10s. an acre. George Staynor seems to have been a pioneer, settling There in 1850. It grew rapidly after being connected with the city by railway, but seems to have had a quiet normal growth, prior to that being an orchard and market gardening district. Now it is a residential suburb for the business man, and a watering place for a great city. This was foreseen from the first, when it was named Brighton, although it is reported that earlier than this it was called Waterville. John King was farming There in 1847. In 1854 the whole of his family were stuck up by bushrangers, and his ploughman shot. An exceptional memorial is St. Andrew’s Church, at the corner of New Street and Church Street. In the early forties an area was set aside for a township, and ten acres were granted by Henry Dendy, Jonathan Binns Were, George Were and Robert Stevenson Dunsford to the Church of England. In September 1842 a small wooden building was erected near to where St. Andrew’s now stands, and services were conducted in this place on the 29th of August, 1850. The foundation of the latter church was laid by Bishop Perry. It was built of stone found in the district, and gave place in a few years to a Milestone building which was consecrated on the 11th of December, 1862. Its anniversary is always kept up on St. Andrew’s Day, and in 1923 the Church celebrated the sixtieth anniversary of the consecration of this building. References were made to the fact that four of its previous ministers had become Bishops. These were the Reverends Chalmers, Green, Stretch and Stephen. In the graveyard at the back of the church is a tablet with this description: This tablet records the first interment in this churchyard, 1845. Around are old graves. One reads the names of Were, Roberte, Arton, Rose, Drawsfield, Baxter, Wallstab, Selwyn, Rusden, Bowman, Plovin, Bent, Monckton, Mair, Harriss, George, Alleyne, Wray, Billing and others. Most of the stones date back to the fifties, therefore we believe that we are reading the names of the pioneers of Brighton or Moorabbin. Jonathan Binns Were’s grave is surrounded by a wooden picket fence, and is adorned with shrubs, in the centre of which is a small square tomb covered with a stone canopy. On one of the panels it is stated that he was born on 25th April, 1809, that he arrived in Victoria in 1839, that he was the first member for Brighton in the Victoria Legislative Assembly (1856), and that he died on 6th December, 1885. There is no longer a Little and Big Brighton, as the Brighton’s were spoken of in the early days, but a North Brighton, a Middle Brighton, a Brighton Beach and Elsternwick. Elsternwick sounds pro German. Elstor in German is a magpie, but the name apparently is Old English, and I presume belongs to the era of the Angles, Jutes and Saxons. Before this name was attached to the district, the locality was known as the Red Bluff. That name was specially attached to the point now called Point Ormond. Some of these who died in the Glenhuntly were buried here. One sees in this locality the open drain, which was the Elwood Canal, designed by Thomas Bent to drain the Elwood swamp. He is credited with making a new suburb, Elwood, but Mr. Young says that the canal was not needed and it was the filling in of the swamp with sand from the seashore that reclaimed the district, and that this could have been done without the canal. Henry Figsby Young is the owner of the choice and beautiful residence Normanhurst. He was the founder, and probably the earliest settler in Elsternwick, and is now a
brainy and healthy man of the age of eighty years, one of the oldest living colonists on the continent. He came with his parents to Melbourne in 1849. At that time there was a certain liberty in taking up land. Free selection often preceded the survey. The surveyor came after the settler in these outlying districts. At that time the south-eastern part of Elsternwick was surrounded by a dense forest of red gum and wattle, in which the natives often camped and held their corroborees.

Even later when the district was practically settled, Thomas Bent was held up by bushrangers opposite to Elsternwick Hotel, and tied up to a red gum tree. The Church of England now stands on the site of that hotel. In these earlier days Ebden was residing at Native Rock. McCombie held a good many acres of land in this district. The public house next to Normanhurst was his, and Rusden, the historian, had his home in this district. All three are now memorialized in the names of streets. Carre Riddell, of the Metropolitan Board of Works, resides here. We can remember Elsternwick thirty years ago, when not a single shop existed in its main street. It is one of these places which has become popular since the days of the land boom.

Ripponlea was named after the home of Frederick Sargood, Highett after William Highett who owned land there, Bentleigh in memory of Sir Thomas Bent’s garden. He is one of the few statesmen whose names have been attached to suburban districts. Ormond is named after Captain Ormond, father of Francis Ormond. Glenhuntly was named after the immigrant vessel known as the fever ship, some of whose dead were buried at the Red Bluff and some in a long grave in the Old Cemetery. Cheltenham, we would think, was named after Cheltenham in England, where Adam Lindsay Gordon spent his youth, but Mr. Callaghan affirms that it took its name from a local public house. The suburb was originally called the Two Acre Village. Charles Worrall built hotel there which was called The Cheltenham, and the place took its name from the hotel. Mentone is named after Gladstone’s favourite watering place. Still I like the old name formerly given to a part of it, The Dover Slopes. Sir M. H. Davies christened it Mentone. Aspendale is named after the races, and not from the drooping aspens, but Garden Vale was named because of the gardens there. Sandringham was formerly called Gipsy Village; now it is named after the residence of the Prince of Wales, but this came in a secondary way, C. H. James having previously named his estate Sandringham.

**Sandringham.**

Sandringham only became a borough in 1917 and a town in 1919. The late Mr. A. Batman Weire, the grandson of Batman, took up his residence there. It was the last suburb to become a city. Lord Stradbroke proclaimed it one on the 22nd of March last year, 1923. Since it became a borough it has been singularly progressive and has grown in interest as a seaside resort. Joseph Daly resided in this district seventy years ago. Among the earliest settlers were Messrs’ Maggs, Rusk, Bertotto and Hampton. Hampton’s name has become attached to a locality in this city. Sandringham, Hampton, Native Rock and Beaumaris were separated from the Shire of Moorabbin together, and formed into a municipality in 1917. Moorabbin was made a shire as early as 1860. The agitation commenced in 1885. The horse tram once ran round from Cheltenham through Beaumaris to Sandringham. This is shown on the map in this chapter. Now an electric car runs from Sandringham to Native Rock.

**Cheltenham.**

The first settler in the Beaumaris district was J. B. Moysey, who died in 1889, at the age of 80, and was buried in the Cheltenham Cemetery. His son, George B. Moysey, had a taste for literature, and became a Christian minister. One of the old and stronger churches of the denomination known as Churches of Christ is in Cheltenham. The Pennys and other old settlers and gardeners were members of it. Its chapel bears the date A.D. 1878. We have seen that he name Cheltenham was originally attached to the hotel. It is now delicensed and known as the Cheltenham House. A strong prohibition party exists in the district, and they have built a Temperance Hall. Henry Jenkins was one of the proprietors of the Cheltenham Hotel. He too, is buried in the Cheltenham Cemetery, and is known as a pioneer. The first burial in that Cemetery was John Hunter, who died in March 1865, and the second dated memorial is that of Richard Tilley. William Wilkinson, who at the age of 90 was buried in the Old Melbourne Cemetery, seems to have been an early settler at Bentleigh, for when the Old Cemetery was
appropiated by the City Council, his body was transferred to Cheltenham. He came to Melbourne in 1840. There is a tradition that eighty-three years ago a house was built in this district, but no correct information can be obtained about it. The first church in the district seems to have been the Church of England, at least the first school was theirs, and the first schoolmaster was Thomas Wilson Courtney. This school was started over sixty-five years ago, and was in existence in the eighteen fifties. There is a doubt, as to whether Robert Trail or John Hitchins was the first store keeper in the district. Both apparently were among the founders of the village.

Sizar Elliot was another very old pioneer. Cheltenham sent men both to the South African mid the World War. In the centre of the township is the obelisk to the South African men, hearing the dates, 1899-1902. It was unveiled by Bent when he was Premier in 1904. Thirty-three years ago the Methodist-Church established a home for children here. Their first house was opened in 1891. About six years ago the Benevolent Asylum was removed to this district. William Organ, the sexton in the Cemetery at Cheltenham, went to school in the district, and saw it. arise from a few scattered houses and grow into a township.

Caulfield

Caulfield with its Military Hospital reveals to us, as few suburbs do, the aftermath of the War. Last June (1921) the Caulfield Grammar School received a captured gun from the War Trophies Distribution Committee as a tribute to the service of the school. Five hundred who attended that school had enlisted for the front. Brigadier-General Elliott made the presentation, and said that the gun was captured at Villiers Bretonnoux on the day that the Germans said was the blackest in their history, the 8th of August, 1918.

At Caulfield, Archdeacon Hindley laid the foundation of a church as a thank offering for Peace after the World War. The suburb was named after one of early Melbourne’s builders, John Caulfield. He was a valuator of the Melbourne City Council for a short time in the eighteen forties, and he buried a child in the Old Cemetery as early as 1842. He was therefore a very old pioneer. He came to Melbourne in 1837. It was first a district, then constituted a shire in 1871, a borough in 1901, and in September of the same year is made a town, and in 1913 a city. The Caulfield Racecourse hung fire, only an occasional race came off! on the primitive course, and the authorities of the district resolved to make a Cemetery of it. This would not have been as bad as converting cemetery into a vegetable market. John Heywood, an old settler and the proprietor of the Turf Club Hotel, thought it a reflection on the turf, and jumped in and advertised a day’s racing programme. This saved the ground, and set up the sporting world There, and ended in making Caulfield one of the foremost racing resorts of the colony, but as The Leader said, the course came very nearly being scratched. Now the Caulfield Cup is an event, and Caulfield is a city.

In the Caulfield district is Carnegie, one of the more recently named suburbs, taking its name from the great Scotch-American millionaire. It has built its Memorial Hall in Rosstown Road. Ross, after whom the original town was named, was a remarkable man. He was brought out by the Liverpool, London and Globe Insurance Co. Being frugal and thrifty he accumulated money to buy land in this locality in blocks. He bought constantly over a period of years, until he had an estate seven miles long and one and a half broad, then he built a sugar mill, and tried to get the farmers around to grow sugar. He had a private Railway Bill passed through the Legislative Assembly, and laid down a railway. It is said that about this time he married his second wife. She was much younger than himself, and like most elderly men who secure such a prize, he was proud of the venture, and celebrated the event by opening the railway line. The train ran that day, but it was the first and only train that over ran on that line. His fortune seemed to be in jeopardy, but the land boom came and he saw the advantage and sold the land. Unfortunately at this stage, his right hand lost its cunning, and he put his money into all kinds of bogus companies, Tasmanian silver mines, brewery companies and other wild cat schemes. He not only lost the money he put in, but in some cases incurred other liabilities. Finally he died in the house of a market gardener in the district in a state of destitution. The district had a party of progress in it, and at a meeting presided over by F. G. Wood, they, against his advice, carried a resolution to change the name from Ross Town
to Carnegie, and to solicit from the millionaire a gift similar to that he had bestowed on Northcote. Carnegie's reply was that he thought that having bestowed a library on one locality in Melbourne he had done sufficient. His name, however, remains attached to a place that recently has shown great signs of progress. The railway cuttings of the disused railway can still be seen, a memorial of the failure of private enterprise in that direction.

Oakleigh

The sheoaks growing in the district brought back to a settler's mind the name Oakleigh, the name of a park near his house in England, so this district was called by that name. From being the part of a shire it was converted into a borough on the 13th of March, 1891. Sir John Monash, at a fete in aid of the Oakleigh Soldiers and Sailors Memorial, congratulated the suburb on having sent a higher percentage of men to the front, in proportion to its population, than any other district in the whole of Australia. There was very little settlement in the Oakleigh district prior to 1860. The Proberts went there in 1803 and found a few graves in the Oakleigh Cemetery and a few families were scattered over the district. Moroney was living on the hill nearby, and the O'Brien's were farming. Phillip Kidney had a market garden, George Chaundy was doing fencing work, and the Strong's were pioneer bakers. The Wheats, who are old pioneers buried in the Oakleigh Cemetery, were living in Malvern. Recently a monument was erected in the Oakleigh Cemetery to Robert Craig by his colleagues and friends, but he was not an Oakleigh man. He is described on the monument as a man of merit and a scholar, and was a well-known educator. Another interesting memorial is that to George Henry Dalton, A Mutiny Veteran. He seems to have lived at Malvern.

The clay at Oakleigh has led to the creation of the tile industry. There, but farming from the first was the staple industry of this faraway suburb. Tunstall was so named because of its pottery works, Tunstall in England, being a large pottery centre. Mitcham, Mr. O'Callaghan tells us, is the Michalam of the Doomsday Book, and that this place is named after Mitcham in Surrey, England. There it is near to Croydon, and it is not far away from it here. Ringwood is named after a town in Hampshire, England.

Let us now turn from the eastern suburbs to the western.

Footscray

A brief history of the first fifty years of Footscray as a municipality was published by Jamieson, the publisher of The Advertiser, the local paper. In the Foreword are these lines:-

\[
\begin{align*}
    \text{God} & \text{ gave all men all \textit{all} earth to love,} \\
    \text{But since our hearts are small,} \\
    \text{Ordained for each one \textit{place} should prove} \\
    \text{Beloved over all.}
\end{align*}
\]

And thousands of people to-day love the city by the Saltwater River better than any other suburb, yet to the majority of us it is drear and bleak. We feel the cold wind blowing from the river, and are oppressed by an old time vision of scattered houses and the bluestone rock.

I read in the Gazette of 1848 of trouble with John Price at the Footscray pound. This was not the John Price who was killed at Williamstown. The name Footscray was in existence then. Originally the district formed part of a great sheep walk, extending from the Maribyrnong to the Werribee, and as on the Yarra, so on the Saltwater River, the ferry and the punt preceded the bridge. The overland way to Melbourne was by way of the punt, and was called the Summer Road because the journey was almost impossible in winter. Communication was then down the stream in a whale boat. A good boat with water compartment was put on by a fisherman, Landorg, and it carried water from the pumping station at the falls on the Yarra to Footscray. Previous to this water had been carried by water carts. The origin and growth of the suburbs have been largely dependent on a good water supply. A small creek would help them materially. For instance a small creek in Footscray once ran into the Saltwater River, in this there was a plentiful supply of eels, and therefore the natives made it their camping ground, and just these facilities for camping are the first elements in the production of a village.
Joseph Pickett was there in 1848, but he had been preceded by others like Price and Ryan, whose names and records are forgotten. M. Lynch erected the Punt Hotel, and as far as can be learned, man known as Paddy Ryan was the first citizen of Footscray. The Punt Inn was afterwards renamed the Ship Inn. Ships coming to Melbourne in the early days anchored in the Saltwater River to take in stone ballast. The names of these primitive hotels suggest early conditions, the Punt Inn, the Junction Hotel, the Bridge Hotel, the Station Hotel, and when the railway came, the Railway Hotel. The first Government sale of land is said by the brief history I have referred to, to have taken place in 1851. Railway communication came in 1857 with Geelong. A connection was soon afterwards made with Melbourne, and Sir Henry Barkly performed the ceremony of opening the railway to Spencer Street, on the 13th of January, 1859. It is from this date that the history of the municipality commences. The population was then about 400. Footscray and Yarraville grew together. When Footscray had sixteen houses Yarraville had seven, and Yarraville has never been able to rise above that proportion. It is therefore but a part of Footscray, so named because it is near the junction of the Yarra and the Saltwater river.

The first bridge, I take it, would be the railway bridge, the next came in 1863, and the suburb has been going forward ever since. In 1887 it had a population of 11,000, and it was proclaimed a town, and on the 23rd of April, 1891, when it had 17,000 people, it was proclaimed a city. Its bluestone quarries have furnished stone for a great many of our public buildings, such as the General Post Office, the Treasury Building, the Town Hall, and the Flinders Street Railway Station. There was a regatta on the river in 1868, superintended by our old friend Mr. Warne, who was then Captain Warne of the Volunteers, but who in our day was Mayor of Footscray, and in 1879, 1880 and 1881 Footscray won the eight oared races for the championship of Victoria, the Clarke Challenge Cup, and broke the record of the world for a two mile race. A Footscray Soldiers War Memorial is to be erected beside the main gates of the Footscray Park in Nicholson Street. It will be a statue in memory of the men who served in the war. In December 1921 a portion of the Shire of Werribee, 1300 acres, was re-annexed to the city of Footscray. Part of it will be known as the west ward. It originally belonged to Footscray, by an agreement with the Wyndham (Werribee) Shire Council, and the Footscray Borough Council 1871. It was annexed to the Werribee in 1882, and it is by the provisions of this agreement that it now reverts to Footscray, 1921. The present bridge over the Saltwater River at Dyon Road, was opened on the 28th of January, 1903, by the Honourable Sir Samuel Gillott, then Lord Mayor of Melbourne, and is called the Hopetoun Bridge. The engineer was A. C. Mountain, and it was the joint work of the Melbourne and Footscray Councils. Melbourne complains of having to share in the expense of suburban roads, bridges and other projects initiated by the suburbs. This will ultimately be adjusted by a larger Melbourne scheme.

Sunshine

Newport commemorates a new port on the Saltwater River. The rise of the Government workshops made this district. Richard Seddon, the Labour Premier of New Zealand, when a young man, worked in these shops, and while living there married Louisa Spotswood. Tottenham is named after a working man’s district in the London area. Sunshine is named after the Sunshine Harvester Works. It was originally a farming district in the Shire of Braybrook. Braybrook embraces Maribyrnong, Derrimut, Sunshine, Deer Park, Maidstone, Brooklyn and Tottenham. The Kororoit Creek runs through it, and the Saltwater River touches it. The district was pioneered originally by Joseph Raleigh. C. B. Fisher owned the land on which the Cordite works now stand. Probably the oldest church building in Sunshine is the Wesleyan. Jimmy Mirams father preached in this district. The junction of the railways to Bendigo and Ballarat took place here, and it became known as the Braybrook Junction. The Bendigo line ran through the district as early as 1858. Manufacturing commenced before the advent of Hugh Victor McKay, but the co-operative works failed, and to Hugh McKay s the credit of the creation of the present township of Sunshine. He is naturally a progressive spirit. He, when a farm lad, persuaded his father to buy a combined reaping and binding machine, but it did not satisfy his ambition, and he said why not have all the processes from stripping to winnowing done by the same machine. His practical father challenged him to build a model that would do this. This he
d, and built a machine which worked well. He was discouraged by his father, who was afraid that he was being led away by delusions, and that his inventions might, bring him to poverty, but he persisted, and had his machines built in Bendigo, and created a sale for them. In 1803 he established a mill factory of his own in Ballarat. In 1907 he established and organized his harvester works at Sunshine. They have given rise to a little town, in which up to 1923 there is no hotel. All around houses are being erected, and new industries are being created.

Two thousand six hundred men are employed in the works. In thirty years, under his direction this great industry has been created. He opposes compulsory arbitration, and his conflict with the Federal Arbitration Court is historic. By virtue of an Act which came into force in 1907, the President of the Arbitration Court had power, it was believed, to penalise any manufacturer who, in his judgment, had not paid fair and reasonable wages. Justice Higgins held that McKay come under the penalty, and he was ordered to pay as excise duty many thousands of pounds. This would probably have ruined him. He claimed that the wages he paid were the highest in Australia, and he appealed against the decision, and proved that not only did the Act not apply to him, but that it was unconstitutional. The Court upheld his contention by three to two, and gave a verdict against the Crown with costs. "He strongly antagonizes the creation of a labour or capitalistic jurisprudence, and affirms that the Federal Arbitration Court has done; more injury to industry in Australia than Strikes, lockouts, plague, pestilence, famine fire or floods, and that social salvation is to be found in a return to collective bargaining and kindly conciliation."

North Melbourne

North Melbourne has had different meanings in our history. At one time all north of the Yarra was North Melbourne, then as it commenced to be restricted to a district, it took in part of West Melbourne. The Old Cemetery was in North Melbourne.

Dow to the eighties the present North Melbourne was known as Hotham, named after Governor Hotham. Now Canterbury and Fitzroy are the only two suburbs bearing the; names of Victorian Governors. Hotham Hill to-day is only a small locality in North Melbourne. It would seem from our old maps that a large part of that district was once; called Parkside. Hotham was made a borough in 1859, and a town on the 6th of December, 1874. It eliex next change; its name; until the 26th of August, 1887. As in the case of South Melbourne, its first name; was North Melbourne.

Hotham was next Governor until the middle of the fifties; and Dr. Lang tells us that in 1846 Edmund Wesley paid £270 for 1 rood 30 perches of land in North Melbourne, Hugh Glass £370, and George S. Brodie £305, and that while the land was selling in Borroondara for 30 shillings an acre.

When Hotham became a town it was the smallest town in Victoria, but for its size the most densely populated. It is still thickly populated and this in itself was a sufficient reason for keeping the Old Cemetery as an open space on its southern boundary. With Flemington and Kensington it is the only case of a municipality reuniting with the City. That amalgamation took place in 1905. Newmarket is a division of this district, and was so named after the New Cattle Market. John P. Davies arrived in Melbourne in 1852. He was elected a member of the Melbourne City Council for the Hotham Ward in 1858, and when Hotham was proclaimed a municipality in the following year he was its first chairman. He went to live at Moonee Ponds, and there commenced growing the vine, and making red and white wine and while there in 1801, North Melbourne made him its first representative in the legislative Assembly. John Barwise was called the father of North Melbourne Town Council. His son says that he spent forty years in municipal life and for a time he was Mayor of Hotham.

Carlton

Carlton never had an independent existence. Carlton was the name of the residence of Edward the Seventh, but apparently this district was not directly, named after the residence of the Prince, but after the Carlton Club Hotel. Albert Park was directly indebted to Royalty for its name, so too
Royal Park, Parkville deriving its name from the park. Mont Albert in another art of Greater Melbourne, shows the city’s loyalty, bearing the name of Queen Victoria’s consort.

The history of Carlton and North Melbourne is a part of the history of the City proper. The Carlton Gardens with Fitzroy Square is often mentioned in the earlier minutes of the Council. The gardens became a nursery for trees for all public purposes. My view is that the progress of Carlton originated in the fifties with the creation of the University and the setting aside of the Melbourne General Cemetery at about the same time St. Andrews was built. The University led people to pass through the district, and the Cemetery created a metal road, and secured a fenced in reserve with turnstiles, and later on came the Lying-in Hospital. Redmond Barry made his home in Drummond Street. At that time the street had some of the better residences in Melbourne. It was then almost exclusively given up to the homes of business and professional men.

One of its oldest houses is that at the corner of Nicholson Street and Carlton Street. This was the old vicarage of St. Marks. The Congregational Church came very early into the district. Mr. Leach was its pioneer member, and his son is still in business in Lygon Street. He was one of the first to subscribe to the Old Pioneer Fund and has been a consistent supporter of our movement. The Church of England entered the district in 18?? a wooden building preceded the present edifice, in which Bishop Perry gave a service. The present building was erected by John Pigdon, and the first sermon given in it was preached by Dr. Bromby. The four vicars who have had charge of it are the Reverends Perry, Lewis, Rodda and Good.

The first minister in the wooden building was the Reverend John Barlow. The Vicarage at the corner of Grattan and Drummond Street was built in 1868. Lygon, Madeline and Rathdowney Streets are mentioned in the minutes of the City Council as early as 1854, but no date is given of their proclamation. Smith Ward seems to have been created in 1855, and named after John Thomas Smith. At that time the residents of Leicester Street were permitted to fill in their properties with soil from the adjacent Crown lands. The native trees were all around Carlton. Cardigan street is named but not formed until the winter of 1855. Queensberry Street is in North Melbourne, but is not properly carried through Carlton. In the following year, 1850, it is proposed to make a carriage drive through the Carlton Gardens, connecting Queensberry Street with Gertrude Street. Previous to this it had been proposed to spend two thousand pounds on beautifying the Carlton Gardens and the Fitzroy Square, which later became the Fitzroy Gardens. Very early in our history the Carlton Gardens were fenced in, and a house for propagating shrubs and plants built. The fountain was not erected until the sixties. A ploughing match took place in the Gardens in 1858, when the winners were awarded prizes by the City Council.

It was in 1856 that Robert Bonnet became Alderman of Smith Ward. Lady Barkly died in 1857, and the Governor married again in Melbourne three years later. Barkly Street is reminiscent of his governorship. Among the councillors in the early days for Smith Ward, was Patrick Costello. He was proposed for the mayoralty, but John Thomas Smith defeated him.

Costello lived in Drummond Street. Other councillors for Smith Ward were Joseph Story, John George Goldsmith, James Weedow and Abraham Linacre. William levers, in the fifties, was a rate collector. At the end of 1859 the City Council received a petition from residents asking for separation and Municipal Government. This was negated by a counter petition. Professor Wilson, in 1864, introduced a time gun into the University grounds, but Dr. Featherston of the Lying-in Hospital, made such a protest that Wilson had to discontinue firing the gun. It is proposed to fence Princes Park in 1805. It was then a grazing place for cattle. In 1807 bonfires were lit all over Smith Ward in honour of the visit of the Duke of Edinburgh, and the Council allowed the dead trees to be used for that purpose. Among the conspicuous men in Carlton were the levers, father and son. Cr. G. Iflevers ??? collapsed in the City Council on the 11th of July, 1921, when they were discussing the question of processions. He died a few days afterwards. His family have a remarkable record in Carlton. He was twenty years in the Council, and was a member of the Health Committee and the Parks and Gardens Committee. He could have helped us much, but failed to do so,
whether from lack of character or inclination I never knew. He was born in Ireland, but lived for six years in Carlton. His father and his brother had both been City Councillors before him, and his father for a time was Member of Parliament. A requiem mass was celebrated for him in St. George’s Roman Catholic Church. One of their buildings was erected by the Levers family.

**Essendon**

Flemington and Kensington, now included in the city, were formerly wards of Essendon. Essendon became a borough in 1861, a town in 1890, and a city in 1909. The Prince of Wales accepted as a permanent memento of his visit to a tower to the new Memorial Christ Church. It is to be known as the Prince’s Tower. A Memorial Hall was opened at Moonee Ponds, and an honour roll unveiled by General Sir B. B. White, on a Sunday in 1921, in memory of the forty-three parishioners of St. Thomas Church who lost their lives at the war. Essendon was named after Mr. Essendon King, an old resident of the district. There is in Essendon a railway station called Glenbervie. It was so named after Inverbervie, a place in Scotland where the Napier family dwelt. The people of Essendon wished to call it Napier, after Mr. Theodore Napier of the Magdala Estate, but the Railway Department had given that name to another station, so it was resolved to honour the Laird of Magdala by calling it after the home of the Napier’s in Scotland.

The founder of the estate at Essendon was Thomas Napier, a well-known pioneer who bought land at the first sale in Melbourne. He was the original owner of the land where the Commercial Bank now stands, also that on which *The Argus* is situated. He was one of the earliest builders and timber merchants. When he came to settle he brought a ship load of timber with him. Brown of Como, he claimed, built the first brick house in Melbourne, and he did the woodwork, that in Bourke Street in which the Reverend James Forbes lived. His son, Theodore, was born in the house he erected on the site where *The Argus* office stands, and when he was Thomas Napier. The old Pioneer who did the wood work for the first brick house built in Melbourne. Hoddle’s sketch of some buildings in early Melbourne one year old was taken to Essendon. Thomas bought the land in Essendon from the Government of New South Wales. It was called lot 15 in the parish of Doutta Galla. Parishes preceded shires, as shires preceded boroughs, and he built a house on that estate as early as 1845. Therefore, if he were not the founder of Essendon, he was one of its earliest settlers. Out of this land bought by his father, and left to his mother, which he purchased from her, Theodore gave the ten acres for the Northern Park to the City of Essendon, in 1920. He preferred to give it during his lifetime. He was seventy-five years of age when he gave it, and said at the time that wills are sometimes upset, and he preferred to see it in the hands of the citizens of Essendon before he passed away. They tried to memorialize him by calling it Napier Park, but he named it Northern Park. It will probably be known as Napier Park. Although born in Collins Street, he so loved the Scottish people that he assumed the habit of the Northern Briton, and donned the kilts. When I called on him he was dressed in them, and he seemed to wear no other dress when going about. I was told that he was as well known in Edinburgh as in Melbourne. Faultlessly upright and strongly benevolent, he negates the view that meanness is a trait of the Scotch people. Pride of descent is associated in his mind with the promotion of the welfare of this country. Six of Thomas Napier’s children were buried in the Old Cemetery, but the memorials had disappeared when the graves were transferred to Fawkner. Theodore believes in cremation, and when in 1919, his wife passed away, he had her body cremated at the Springvale Crematorium, and the ashes interred at the Brighton Cemetery.

**Keilor**

Among the pioneers of Keilor was George Dodds who settled there in the eighteen forties. He was a pioneer councillor of the Keilor Shire, and was a trustee to the Keilor Cemetery for seven years. The site of the village was fixed in 1853. Keilor is the Gaelic word for plenty, Pascoe Vale was originally John Pascoe Fawkner's farm. The Diggers Rest was the camping ground of the miners on their way to the diggings. Past this land and through Gisborne, one travels to the picturesque heights of Macedon, with the story of the pioneer in his mind all the way.
I tried to get Mr. O'Callaghan to work with us in our Cemetery work, but he declined to look on the Cemetery as historic ground. He is known for his booklet on names of Victorian railway stations, which with Saxton's book on Victorian names, I have freely used. They give us the reason why places bear their names, and thus explain the name of nearly every suburb in Melbourne. Thus Mr. O'Callaghan shows that although Essendon is in the west it means East Town. I argued that memorial stones were of more value than memorial names, but he replied that the desire to save the Cemetery was pure sentiment. Was it pure sentiment that prompted him to desire that we return to the old name of the Murray River, and call it once again the Hume River? No, it was an historic reason. Hume first saw the river, and therefore had the right to name it after his father. So in the same sense our Cemetery is historic. It takes us back to first things; this I have proven from his own special study. Names often mislead, like Westernport, which is in the east of Melbourne; Essendon, which is East Town, is in the west; and Kew, which is a promontory, is situated inland among the hills. James Blackburn has written an article to show that the names of some of our most important rivers mislead us, that the rivers Loddon, Avoca and Avon in Victorian Geography are not the rivers so named by Major Mitchell.

In view of the mistake Blackburn made in affirming that Batman signed the treaty with the natives on the Plenty River, instead as in fact on the Merri Creek, we regard him in the same class as those who say that Kid wrote Hamlet. He argues that the actual Loddon was the Avoca, the real Avoca, Sandy Creek, and the Avon named by the Major was only a creek that empties itself into the Avon; that the present Loddon is his Yararney; that he twice crossed Kenton's Creek, and mistaking it for two separate streams, gave it two different names. If so, it would have been better for him to have erected landmarks. Monuments mark exact spots, and give exact dates and descriptions, and thus lead to true conclusions.

I would like to be able to say that George Bass, the surgeon who aimed to explore the Blue Mountains, who found and passed through Bass Strait, and who was one of the first white men to set foot in Victoria, was buried in the Old Cemetery; but his love of science led him to wish to stock Australia with the most suitable animals, and he sailed to South America to secure alpacas, and whether he died in the silver mines, or was buried in the deep sea, we know not. His whale boat was made into memorial snuff boxes. He should be remembered on our monument. The narrative comes far short of mentioning all the representative men and women who were buried in our old memorial ground, or have won distinction in the city, but among the number of distinguished colonists who have passed before us, it would be only a figure of speech to say that a hundred of them were buried there. It is not unreasonable to think that a thousand men and women of merit were entombed there. Of course many of these mentioned died outside of the colony. I would like to say that John Murray who found Port Phillip was buried there, or that Tuckey who accompanied Collins was there, but Tuckey died in Africa, a martyr to African exploration. I would like to say that Matthew Flinders who followed him, never spent his time in a French prison on the Isle of Mauritius, but finished as a citizen of Victoria and was buried there; but he died in England on the very day his book was published. I would like to see here a monument to Baudin, who called all of South Australia he knew the Land of Napoleon. As Sydney has a monument to La Perouse, and to the priest who accompanied the expedition, so might we have had one in the Old Cemetery to Captain Baudin, but he died of hardship at sea, and I take it received a seaman's burial in the deep sea. I remember reading that about the time Cassell was dying, Hovell was on a visit to Melbourne. He, with Hume, was the first overlander to see Port Phillip, and I would like to say that his remains rest beside these of Coghill, Graham, Worster and the other overlanders, but he died in Sydney in 1851, while Hume passed away at Yass, N.S.W., on the 19th of April, 1873. I would even like to say that Sir Thomas Mitchell, who wrote of us as Australia the happy, and who thought himself in 1836, after coming overland and sighting Port Phillip and going to Portland Bay, the Adam in a new paradise, that he too might sleep beside that pre-Adamite, John Batman; but he died at Darling Point, Sydney, 1855. Dr. Lang says if Mitchell were Adam, there were certainly pre-Adamites. We would then have a Sir
Thomas in our graveyard, a titled man among the many untitled.

But of all I would like to say that Dr. Lang, our first historian, is buried here. He who said I was the eye witness that the brisk trade, in which the whole of the colony of Van Diemen’s Land took the liveliest interest, had been organized previous to the close of 1835, in the export of sheep, cattle and provisions to the Eldorado of Port Phillip. He was an eye witness because he was evangelizing Van Diemen’s Land in October and November 1835, and by 1847 had produced a volume of over four hundred pages on our settlement. He looked through separation to the great goal, Federation. He saw the successive steps in Representative Government, and although he and the others are not here, yet still I believe this to have been the greatest historic Cemetery in Australia. In no other city is there one Cemetery in which the origin of the colony is so focussed.

Captain Cook was killed at Hawaii, and Captain Clerke who succeeded him, was buried in the Harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul at Kamschatka. An inscription was put over his grave. La Perouse found it defaced and restored it. France was our enemy, but the French respected the remains of a man of science. D Entrocasteau was buried at Louisiade, and Huonat New Caledonia. Mouge, the surgeon under Baudin, was buried at the foot of a tree in Maria Island, Tasmania. La Perouse and his companions were wrecked on the South West coast of Malicolo, New Hebrides. Ferdinand de Quiros, who discovered the New Hebrides, and who was accompanied by Torres, the discoverer of Australia, died in Panama. He thought he had found the Southern continent, and said Tierra Australis del Espiritu Santo. (The Southern land of the Holy Spirit)

Phillip, became impressed with the idea of settling there; therefore he returned to Ireland and married, and induced his father and mother, brothers and sisters to come out with him. His father died on the voyage, and was buried at the Cape of Good Hope. Nevertheless his name is on our stones, which I have thought might be due to his son, when he was returning from representing us in England, having the body exhumed, and buried in the Old Cemetery in the family grave. On arriving in Melbourne he started as an auctioneer, and as Government Auctioneer he sold Cole’s Wharf. At one time he had a station near the Heads, and was interested in squatting.

We have seen, in our previous sketch of him, how he served us as Town Clerk. The first Building Act was the result of his labours. He induced Governor Fitzroy to grant us license fees, when New South Wales was absorbing our surplus revenue. He made the first decisive blow for Separation, by suggesting to Dr. Greesves that Earl Grey be nominated for Port Phillip. King became the Secretary of the Melbourne branch of the Australasian League, and left Melbourne for London in 1851. He spent nearly seven years in England, not only serving us politically there, but lecturing in various spheres, literary, social, political and commercial, he served with success, and at the age of 52 closed a triumphant life.

A man whose crown is held in question was Sir Charles Hotham. In his day came the Eureka Insurrection, which reacted probably as much on the life of Melbourne as on that of Ballarat. We cannot blame Latrobe for this rising, because he held that gold should be taxed at the time of export; then only those would have been taxed who got gold. The license system had been introduced at Bathurst, N.S.W., where gold was first discovered, and when it was found here we followed the example set us by the Mother Colony. We imposed a tax of thirty shillings a month on every miner, and later two pounds, whether he got gold or not. If the money had been taken at the gate, only the successful man would have paid, whereas under the unjust license system, it was imposed on every worker. It is not my province to give a full story of the insurrection but only a sufficient account to show how it affected Melbourne. For a long time it kept us democratic. There seemed to have been scarcely anything right on the side of the authorities.
We can study the causes of revolutions by looking on these in other lands, the English, French, German, American, and Russian Revolutions; and while they may seem diverse in character, yet they all are due to similar causes, and the one distinctive truth we learn from them all is that they are due to arrested development; that social salvation lies along the lines of social evolution; that society is not an edifice that you can pull down and re-erect according to new plans and specifications, but that it is an organism, a living thing like an animal or plant, that grows to perfection.

The Eureka Stockade was due to like causes that produced other risings, and its lessons are kindred to these we learn in other lands. In treating with the French Revolution, you have to look back over a thousand years of French history, and in like manner we cannot contemplate the Eureka Stockade without looking back at least to the beginning of Victoria. Hargreaves, the gold miner who is honoured as the discoverer of gold, was preceded by a convict, who received lashes for his discovery, by a Polish Count, Strzelecki, whose discovery was hushed up by the Government, by an English Knight, Sir R. Murchison, who inferred it from the study of European geology, and by a Church of England minister, the Reverend W. B. Clarke, who found it near Bathurst, and for similar reasons to these of Strzelecki, did not make it known to any but the authorities. Governor Gipps was afraid that it would excite the criminal and labouring classes, and destroy society and stable government. Thus there was a dread that gold would produce revolution from the very first.

It was the pioneer in Victoria who made the character that led to the independence of the miner. The Ballarat district was first explored by Thomas Livingstone Learmonth and his party, who in August 1837 stood on the top of Mt. Buninyong and surveyed the district covered with a forest, in which were picturesque glades and glens. The love of nature is deep in the heart of the pioneer. It makes him free, and this life in the open air helped to produce character that brought on the insurrection. Buninyong means a hill like a knee. The native thought of a man lying on his back and throwing up his knees; the last syllable, yong, is probably the same word as we have in You Yang, the hills we see from Melbourne rising up in the Corio district. Ballarat comes from Balia, an elbow; Burrumbeet means muddy water, and Warrenheip, the emu feathers the native thought the forest resembled feathers; while Wendouree (Wendouree) means “be off.” Evidently the natives did not want the company of the pioneers. Withers, in his “History of Ballarat”, relates that the first farm here was created by the Coghills. David Coghill is credited with ploughing the first land. That family brought the first plough, the first harrow and a hand steel flour mill. George Airey was one of the earliest in the district, and Campbell and Wooley established the first store, while J. J. Lyon Campbell had an interest with others in the Bullarook Forest. These are names that we meet with in the Old Cemetery.

The first condition of Ballarat was that of a quiet pastoral community, surrounded by the primeval. In 1851 a reward was offered for the discovery of gold within 120 miles of Melbourne. Esmond discovered gold at Clunes, and it was also found at Anderson Creek, in which is now our holiday resort, Warrandyte. Then Hiscock found it at Buninyong. A monument has been erected there to mark the spot. Then came the rush. Men worked their way over bad roads, through the forest to this battlefield. The journey often cost from eighty to one hundred pounds, and then when on the fields they lived in tents; drank bad water; prices were high; they had no proper system of sanitation; both shop-keepers and miners were licensed. The miners were industrious, yet all were armed. There were few wage-earners; they worked in parties as mates. It was a daily gamble for bread, and under their work their individualism grow more pronounced. To realise conditions look at Melbourne. Four hundred ships are crowded together in Hobson's Bay. Population is constantly flowing in. The city and suburbs has a population of 100,000. The year before the Eureka Rising there were 4000 deaths here. Most of the burials were in the Old Cemetery. Two of the old undertaking firms have continued in business, Sleight and Daly. It was the year of our Crystal Palace, the first Exhibition. James Ellis owned Cretinomo. Thatcher not only sang here, but also on the goldfields.

The Eureka Uprising
The Queen’s Theatre entertained large audiences. There were 7000 expirees and conditional pardon men in Victoria, yet none of the outstanding men in the Eureka Rising were of that class; still there was always this inflammable material to help it. The princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority over them, but it shall not be so among you, but he that is greatest among you shall be your servant. After Hotham, Governors began to learn this. These miners were a brainy set of men. There were many intellectual men in Melbourne, and on the diggings. We had a Philosophical Society, which the Lieutenant-Governor presided over, and The Argus, The Herald and The Age were generally read. In telling the story of the French Revolution you deal with Voltaire and Rousseau, and trace the intellectual causes of it. So in the story of the Eureka Stockade you have to remember that the people had been educated to air their grievances. They had resisted the landing of convicts, and had created the anti-transportation movement. In France clubs like the Girondist and Jacobin Clubs educated the people, and all over the goldfields the Reform League had taken root. There were riots in Bendigo as well as in Ballarat. Unrest prevailed. Native and Holyoake were running The Diggers’ Advocate. Holyoake was a brother to George Jacob Holyoake, the secularist lecturer, and the historian of co-operation. The Ballarat Times was edited by Seekamp. The Reform League stood for the representation of the goldfields in Parliament, for payment of Members, manhood suffrage and no property qualification, short terms for Parliament, and the abolition of the miners license. Men likened this ideal of the Reform League to the discovery of gold. The League had made a discovery in economics. In the third issue of The Age there is an account of the murder of Isaac Scobie. at the Eureka Hotel. He asked for admission after the hour of closing, and knocked at the window. Bentley, enraged, came out and struck him on the head with a shovel, killing him on the spot. The Age says it was a child that gave evidence to this effect. The miners, indignant at the Police manhunts for a miners license, were led by this event to actively take sides against the Government. Bentley was an ex-convict. Carboni Raffaelo, who wrote the story of the Eureka Stockade twelve months after it occurred, and who took part in it, says that Scobie and Martin had met that day for the first time since they had left Scotland, and they had resolved to have a joyful day together. Bentley, when brought to trial later, affirmed that Scobie, when he found he not get drink, put his fist through the window, and called his wife a whore, and he then went out and picked up a spade and batted them both on the head. When the doctor arrived, Martin was evidently a bit muddled, although he swore he was not drunk, for he said to the doctor that he had been hit on the head with a battle axe. When the body was brought into the Eureka Hotel, Bentley pretended to know nothing about it, and the Coroner’s verdict was that the murderer was unknown. Bentley, however, was charged with the murder, and brought before the Police Court in Ballarat, but through the influence of the magistrate, Dewes, who is reported to have been financially interested in the Eureka Hotel, he was acquitted. Kennedy, a Scotchman, incensed at this evident injustice to his countryman, took up the case, and thus a large number of Scotchmen were brought into the revolt. It was Kennedy who at one meeting said:- “Moral persuasion is all a humbug; nothing convinces like a lick on the lug.”

The field became sensible of a great wrong. A murder had been committed, and through the venality of a magistrate there had been no redress. Thus were the mob led on to burn Bentley’s hotel. They arrested men, who proved to have an alibi. A baker showed that at the time of the fire he was baking the bread. A miner brought evidence to show that he was down the mine, and was called up by his mate to see the fire. Four were acquitted. Three men were found guilty, McIntyre, Fletcher and Westerby, and they were generally believed to be innocent. McIntyre represented that he was trying to restrain the men from burning the hotel. He received a six months sentence, Fletcher four months, and Westerby three. The jury in Melbourne, in bringing in a verdict, recommended the men to mercy, and said that had the magistrates in Ballarat done their duty they would not have needed to perform their painful one. The Age, in a leaderette, while not agreeing with lynch law, said that it was generally prompted by the instinct of humanity, and was often morally right.
Ireland, the barrister, defended the men. The Reform League now undertook to have them liberated. Its leading men were Vern, Kennedy, Native and Humphray. Humphray stood for only constitutional means. He was Secretary of the League, and one of the best men in the movement, a true and consistent radical, although he would not join in the insurrection. They first petitioned Hotham. Native and Kennedy are sent with Humphray to the Governor. When Hotham came to Melbourne he met with a universal welcome. He is represented as a sea captain, with the hauteur of an English gentleman. When he and his lady visited the goldfields the miners met them with enthusiasm, and one miner is represented as doing the same gallant action for Lady Hotham as Raleigh did for Queen Elizabeth, throwing down his coat to allow Lady Hotham to walk with unsoiled feet over a muddy spot. Hotham, however, was a prince of the Gentiles, and not a servant of the people. A tireless worker, it is said he wrote most of the proclamations himself.

He encouraged the collection of licenses, and met the agitation by despatching armed men to the goldfields. The miners sneeringly asked if he had seen gold, while others made fortunes; therefore Latrobe’s proposal for an exchange of licenses was commended. This aggravated the Irish, and put them nearly all into the Eureka movement. An agitation was commenced with the support of the priest, the Reverend Mr. Smythe, in the Roman Catholic Church.

Some of our statesmen from the first saw the iniquity of the monthly tax on all miners. Some men did not get gold, while others made fortunes; therefore Latrobe’s proposal for an export duty was fair and just. Hotham and his administration were responsible for the insurrection. The Age, looking at the critical position, said: “Sir Charles Hotham stands on his trial as a Governor. If he dictates an enlightened policy, and steers us safely amid the present dangerous shoals, he will be esteemed and honoured among men.” It also gave the alternative, which Hotham accepted.

When three companies (Police and Soldiers) with four field pieces passed out of Melbourne through the populace they were farewelled with mingled cheers and hisses. Special constables were enrolled here, and a rifle brigade created. The deputation from the goldfields which waited on Hotham and pleaded for the liberation of the men who fired Bentley’s hotel, presented to him the prospectus of the Ballarat Reform League, and they said to him that if they could take the prisoners back with them to the field it would prevent riot. This was towards the end of November. Hotham thought that that would be subversive of good government. He said that he was prepared to receive a memorial on behalf of the prisoners. This reply did not reach Ballarat before it had been widely spread about that he had seized the deputation. Scobie was killed on the 7th of October, 1854. The
burning of the hotel succeeded Bentley's acquittal in Ballarat. When the hotel was attacked, Bentley got out at the back, and seizing a fleet horse, rode to the camp of the police. He was an ex-convict and a reckless man. He made his way to Geelong, and then a little later to Melbourne. Here he was rearrested opposite the Criterion Hotel, and taken back to Ballarat, and there brought again before the Police Court and committed to be tried in Melbourne. On being tried in Melbourne he was convicted and sentenced to three years imprisonment with hard labour.

It was after the murder that the great meetings commenced. The mob that destroyed the hotel gathered after one of these meetings. There were sometimes impromptu meetings, and thousands would attend. We find in the reports in the Melbourne press the word monster to describe them. The best history of the rising is in the articles of the Ballarat correspondents of *The Argus* and *The Age*. They traced clearly the causes, and told vividly the story of each event in the agitation, and there side by side you also read of the movements in Bendigo and on the other goldfields. *The Argus* naturally upheld the Government, but by no means justified the administration, but in a leader (Editorial) affirmed that it was responsible for the unrest. The rising came along with the agitation for the new constitution. At that time we were governed by a one chamber Parliament, part nominated and part elected. The great meetings in Ballarat were called by placards. There were newspapers on the field, but apparently they were not daily papers, or were not the best means of advertising. It is from *The Age* reporter that we read the expression used on the fields, “*that the men are willing to honour their Sovereign, but will question the expediency of extending the same respect to his man servant, his maid servant, his ox and his ass.*” In collecting the tax the police were overbearing, and freemen naturally resented their conduct; they were subject to daily vexations. Their claims were jumped, and there were frequent fights, and the arbitration of the officer of the law was often wrong. This conduct irritated and demoralized the community.

Still, up to the 29th of November there was hope of a constitutional settlement; but at the monster meeting held at Eureka on that day, the violent spirits gained the ascendancy. Timothy Hayes was in the chair. The Australian flag was unfurled. It was the second Australian flag, and it left out the Union Jack. It had a blue background, with the silver stars of the Southern Cross on it. Already the first blood had been shed, and the soldiers had been joeyed and jeered. The miners met them on the road as they marched from Geelong to Ballarat, and seemed to have the better of the fray. Reinforcements are coming, and on 29th November they meet to discuss the situation.

New men came in. For the first time in his life Peter Lalor speaks at a public meeting. Carboni, an Italian, comes forward to organize the foreigners. After the revolt, Hotham attributed it to foreigners, but there was not a word of truth in this. The foreigners were drawn in, and were not the instigators of the rising. The predominant element was probably Irish. John Basson Humphray was Welsh, George Native was English, so also Holyoake. Frederick Yern was a German, but Timothy Hayes, Peter Lalor, Murnane and several others were Irish. McGill was an American, Boss was a Canadian, and Kennedy and his associates were Scotch. At this meeting they resolved to burn their licenses, and at the risk of their lives rescue those who might be arrested for not having licenses.

The Commissioners met this by ordering a digger (Miner) hunt on the following day. That was the last digger hunt on the Ballarat Goldfields. They arrested some of these who burned their licenses, and so the miners demanded their release and built the Stockade. The last digger hunt was the 30th of November, 1854. In our day five shillings a year was paid for a miner's right, whereas in 1854 the miner paid thirty shillings a month. The allied force, as they were called, police and soldiers, were encamped on Native Hill and in the township. They fortified the Victoria Bank, the first stone building erected in Ballarat. It had been erected shortly before, because the old bank had been broken into by burglars and robbed of a large sum of money. From Native Hill it is said they had a bird’s-eye view of the district. They numbered over four hundred, but could have been easily subdued had the miners taken the initiative; but the miners were not well led, and it was fortunate for all that they were not, for the end would have been the same. It was a diggers revolt, and not an Australian revolution. Eureka was the Hill opposing Native Hill; only a hollow vale
separated the two encampments. Esmond, the discoverer of gold in Victoria, was one of the most useful men on the miners side. He was the forager for ammunition. Ross was one of the bravest men; when the fight came, he was shot down and carried to the Star Hotel, where he died. The correspondent to The Age describes the soldiers before the fight as in good health, except in the evening when they were unsteady and tremulous, and sometimes in the morning they awoke in a feverish condition. Presumably the war correspondent as referring to the effects of the bad beer in use on the goldfields. They attacked on Sunday the 3rd of December. The attack was unexpected, and most of the miners were away; only about 200 were in the Stockade. Thirty or forty are shot dead, and all shot in the breast. Lalor loses his left arm. The soldiers also suffered. Captain Wise is shot dead. King, one of the police, captures the flag and gives it to Peter Henry Smith, the Inspector of the Police. Smith's widow told me that she had it in the house for a number of years, but relic-hunters destroyed it. Why search for an old flag and then eagerly carry a piece of it away, only because it was the symbol of the triumph and the ideals for which the Eureka men fought. The leaders were tried in Melbourne, and were acquitted on April Fool's Day, the 1st of April, 1855. The jury declined to find men guilty who were the victims of misgovernment.

We all know that Lalor went to Parliament, and became Speaker. In a popular sense his life was triumphant, although he was a lesser man than many others who served under the flag. In one year he had changed and was a financier, dealing in mining shares; only for a brief period did he represent Ballarat. Humphray became the representative of Ballarat; although he opposed violence he remained a consistent man and was Minister of Mines in the Heales Ministry, and served under the man who gave us popular education. The triumph of men like Heales, who were never in any disturbance, is as great as that of the man who is shot for his heroism or his patriotism.

When Lalor was nominated for Speaker, Thomas Bent said: "As a native of this colony, I am sorry to think that to obtain the distinction of being the Speaker of this House it is absolutely necessary that a man should be a rebel against the British Crown. I am quite sure the teetotal Members of the House will be gratified and very pleased to go back to their constituents and say that they voted for a man who was drunk on the floor of the House while Chairman of Committees. Shame, shame. I think it is a disgrace to this country to elect Mr. Lalor as Speaker of this House, and I am one who shall oppose his election." Lalor became a Melbourne man, both Lalor and Humphray voted against the grant of money to build Hotham's memorial in the Melbourne General Cemetery. Alphabetical Foster, the Secretary of State, so called because of his many names, John Leslie Fitzgerald Yesey Foster, became the victim of the administration, and had to resign his office, but years afterwards it was shown before a select committee that he opposed the digger hunts, and that Hotham was too self-willed to take counsel.

Sergeant Milne was dismissed, and also Magistrate Dewes. Dewes, on leaving the service, went to America, embezzled money, and finally committed suicide in Paris. Bentley, after his discharge from prison, lived in Ballarat Street, Carlton, and there committed suicide by taking laudanum. Commissioner Amos went down in The London. Timothy Hayes shortly after the trial of the men, became Town Inspector in Ballarat. Later he went to Chile, and after this was in San Francisco, where he met Sweeney, a Ballarat man, and entered into business with him, finally he returned to Victoria and enters into the railway service, and died in Melbourne. Mumane fell dead while working at a shaft at Esmond’s Lead. Of the three men tried for the burning of the hotel, McIntyre seems to have been the most successful. He made money, returned to Scotland, and settled in comfortable circumstances in Glasgow. Fletcher was a printer, and I have not ascertained what became of Westerby. B. C. Aspinal, the barrister who defended the men of Eureka in Court, went to England and died insane. Whether the blow to his administration killed Hotham, the fact is that he died in 1856, and is the only Governor who died in Victoria.

Aspinal defended the men gratuitously. He had a brilliant career here, and then went to England and died insane, but that termination does not rob him of his triumph in his profession, and yet I can see in a primitive bullock-driver a more triumphant life than in them all. A lonely pastoralist, who alone lights the battle against great odds, is triumphant. What nobler death than that of Simpson. John Simpson in
1848 tries to save the life of his bullock-driver when they were crossing a ford with a drove of cattle. In trying to save him both were drowned, and they buried them in the Charlotte Plains. Two lonely graves in the wilderness, that no one would disturb. We glory in the heroes of Gallipoli, of Ypres, of Bullecourt and Pozieres; we tell how they won the Victoria Cross, how they re-captured lost positions and made new ground. Yes, and we call them pioneers because they belonged to these who, like Simpson, faced the torrent. There are a dozen among these we know who are buried in the Old Cemetery who were drowned in creeks and rivers. These are our heroes, with these younger men of like blood who fought in our world war. Ballingall is one. He was a young man of promise. His father was the first appointed of our first staff of rate collectors. He was only twenty-one when he lost his life. He was drowned in the Yarra in 1840. The men of Eureka who were killed rest in the Old Cemetery in Ballarat, and few remember their names, and Vern, the President of the Miners Republic, escapes.

Hotham died at the Government House in St. George’s Road, Toorak. His disease was dysentery. Fawkner moved in the old Legislative Council, which was just passing away, that a sum of money be set aside for his funeral and monument. A Mr. Grant moved an amendment, and asked how could they put an inscription on it, and that no monument had been erected to these who died at Eureka. Humphray seconded the amendment. It is an anomaly that his grave should have one of the finest monuments in Melbourne over it. I doubt if this magnificent trophy in the Melbourne General Cemetery is of as much moral value as some of these wooden slabs were in the Old Cemetery. Although he failed, his funeral was the greatest seen up to that time in Melbourne. A thousand civilians on foot, two hundred carriages, and fifty horsemen followed the hearse. As the direct result of the fight we have Hotham’s discomfiture, and no very great triumph for Democracy. By a peculiar irony of circumstances Ballarat moderated its tone, and sent men like R. T. Vale and Alfred Brennan. We cannot trace any great broad reform to it. Manhood suffrage came through representative government. The new constitution was framed before the Eureka Stockade occurred. The eight hour system was introduced into the colonies by the Presbyterian Church, when Dunedin, in New Zealand, was founded, and these social and labour reforms of which Australia is proud all came by constitutional means. In a general sense it emphasized the need of all power being based on the consent of the governed, and probably from that time our Governors aimed to give fuller expression to the will and wish of the people. Fawkner is much in evidence during the agitation, but is inconsistent. We find him in sympathy with the miners before the great meeting of the 29th of November. Seven days before this meeting he inquired in the House about the miners grievance, and was told that both Dewes and Sergeant Williams had been dismissed, but when the outbreak came, he moved in the House, That the thanks of the House are due to the officers and men of Her Majesty’s 12th and 40th Regiments, sent last week on duty to Ballarat, for their truly soldier-like and highly commendable forbearance in receiving the hootings and violent assaults of a mob of worthless idlers, whom no man can class as true diggers. The merits of the forbearance and steady patience of the men, bearing arms in their hands wherewith to repel assaults, stamp these troops and their commander as truly British troops.

Among the men who supported the Government was Henry Miller, commonly called Money Miller. After the fight at Eureka, Miller moved, and Foster seconded: That the Lieutenant-Governor, having been placed in a painfully embarrassing position since his arrival in Victoria, is entitled to the sympathy and support of this Council, and it pledges itself, by every means in its power, to aid him in restoring and maintaining law and order. Henry Miller, in speaking on the subject, admitted that the miners had a grievance, but held that the redress should not be a surrender to violence.

Large meetings of sympathy with the miners were held in Melbourne. One in sympathy with the Governor led to the Mayor being compelled to vacate the chair, and the meeting carrying a vote in favour of the men. Two large meetings were held in an open space by the side of St. Paul’s. Langlands, Blair, Owens, Fawkner, Fulton, Frencham, Grant, Cathie and Embling took part in
these meetings. One was held in front of the City Court, Swanston Street; others in the Treasury Gardens and over on Flagstaff Hill. The men were tried in Melbourne.

Ballarat at that time was without any self-governing body, so the Eureka question became ours, and seems to be as much a part of our history as that of Ballarat. However, nearly all its monuments seem to be in Ballarat. The names of some of the streets there remind us of it, such as Humphray Street and Eureka Street. Although Humphray opposed the physical force party, yet immediately after the fight he called a meeting in Ballarat to continue the work of constitutional reform. At this meeting Dr. Wills, the father of the explorer, spoke. Humphray was arrested and soon released. In the Old Cemetery in Ballarat the miners and the soldiers lie together, and you can there read the inscription on their memorials. That over the men was erected by one man, a Mr. Leggat, of Geelong, while the Government erected that over the soldiers: In this place with other soldiers and civilians of the military camp then in Ballarat, were buried the remains of the British soldiers, Henry Christopher Wise, Captain; Michael Honey, and Joseph Wall, privates of the 40th Regiment, and William Webb, Felix Boyle, and John Wall, privates of the 12th Regiment, who fell dead or fatally wounded at the Eureka Stockade, in brave devotion to duty, on Sunday, the 3rd of December, 1854, whilst attacking a band of aggrieved diggers in arms against what they regarded as tyrannous administration. And on the same monument are these words:--Not far west from this spot lie the remains of some of the diggers who fell in the courageous and misdirected endeavour to secure the freedom which soon after came in the form of manhood suffrage and constitutional government. This monument was erected in 1879, twenty-five years after the event. The Old Pioneers of Ballarat have saved their old Cemetery, and it would be a hard light to destroy it, as ours has been. This monument is a freestone obelisk with the inscriptions on marble panels. That erected by James Legate is a sandstone obelisk on a bluestone pedestal, and is surmounted ?? by an uni. The inscription on it reads:--Sacred to the memory of those who fell on the memorable 3rd of December, 1854, in resisting the unconstitutional proceedings of the Victorian Government. This monument was presented by James Legate, Geelong, to the people of Ballarat, and by them erected on the 22nd of March, 1856. The names on the monument are:-

John Haynes, County Clare, Ireland
Patrick Gittings, County Kilkenny, Ireland
Thomas Mullin, County Kilkenny Ireland
Samuel Green, England
John Robertson, Scotland
Edward Therton, Elberfeldt, Prussia
John Dimand, County Clare, Ireland
Thomas O’Neill, County Kilkenny, Ireland
John Donaghoey, County Donegal, Ireland
William Clifton, aged 30, native of Bristol
Edward Quinn, County Cavan, Ireland
William Quinlan, Goulburn, New South Wales
William Eminorman, Hanover, Germany
Lt. Ross, Canada
Thaddeus Moore, County Clare, Ireland
James Brown, Newry, Ireland
Robert Jullien, Nova Scotia
Crowe, Scotland
Fonton, England
Edward McGlynn, Ireland.

Between these two monuments is the grave of Scobie, over whose remains his brother, George erected a memorial, on which are the words:--In memory of James Scobie who met with a premature death on Eureka, the 7th of October, 1854. Erected by his brother George. It was not until 1884 that it was proposed to erect the Eureka Stockade Monument. It was erected by public subscription and accepted by the Ballarat City Council in 1886 in a public manner, and with a pledge that they would maintain it for all time. We hope that our old pioneers memorial will be accepted in the
same spirit by the Melbourne Council. Scotchman’s Gully is so named in memory of the Scotchmen who took part in the events and agitations of Eureka. “There may be a fight worth fighting although there be no victory.” To leave a heroic example behind, although you never reach the objective. The Miners Republic has been swallowed up in our larger democracy. The ideal animated us, and when we get the Referendum and the Ballot, there is no more revolution. Montagu Miller was one of the last, if not the last alive, of the men who were present in the stockade. He fought against the soldiers and carried the scars on his body to the last day. I heard him the year, he was 87 years old; he lectured in the Socialist Hall, Melbourne, on From Eureka to the War. He spoke for an hour and a half fluently and thoughtfully, seldom looking at his notes. He produced The Miner’s Right which they paid two pounds a month for before the insurrection, then the right or license afterwards, when they paid £1 a year, and finally one issued in the sixties when they paid only five shillings a year.

He was all his life a working man. More individualistic than socialistic, and in his old age he was sent to prison in another colony for his radical utterances and his association with the red Flag movement. He has gone just recently, but let us remember that he was trying to fulfil his ideal, as he saw it, and died of old age in the discharge of his duty. I do not think that the work of the Eureka men is comparable to that of the anti-transportation men buried in our Old Cemetery in Melbourne, and there too lay William John Mayger who was in the first rush to Eureka, and one of the Urquhaidts after whom I presume Urquhardt Street in Ballarat was named.

S. T. Gill, the artist of the gold-fields, triumphed in art and failed in life. Worn out by his convivial habits he fell into a state of destitution, and died of heart failure on the steps of the Post Office. When one steps into Dr. F. Hobill Cole’s rooms, and looks over his collection of Gill’s paintings and sketches, he marvels at the prolific genius of the man. His scenes of the fifties are historical, the pastoral life, the kangaroo hunt, the bushrangers, and the social customs of the times all come vividly before us. The Melbourne Public Library is neglectful of many things in relation to history. They are very slow to secure historical sketches, on the ground that they have no money for the purpose, but in the case of Gill, they have a good collection of the lithographs of his sketches of the gold diggers and diggings in Victoria which were published by Messrs Macartney and Galbraith, lithographers of the eighteen fifties in Melbourne. The popular picture of Cole’s Wharf with all the shipping of that stirring age around, was done by Gill. Some of his best work was done for a few shillings, and yet there is a tradition that he was once in opulent circumstances, but that was before he came to us. A. W. Greig wrote a biographical sketch of him for the Historical Society of Victoria, and he says that our first definite glimpse of Gill is in July 1846, when he sits at supper among his friends on the eve of his departure as a member of the Horrock’s Exploration Expedition that started away, but returned in a few weeks owing to the loss of its leader, whom Gill tended in his last hours. Yet in the short time they were out around the Gulf of St. Vincent he was their artist and had secured some sketches of the country. It is said that as early as 1844 Gill had published a picture of Hindley Street, Adelaide. He at one time owned forty acres of land in South Australia. When gold was discovered in Victoria he was in one of the earliest rushes, and straightway commenced to sketch as Thacher did to sing. He provides designs for Sands and Kenny’s Victoria Illustrated, and Edward Wilson’s Rambles at the Antipodes. He died of heart failure at about the age of CO. ??? Peck, the architect, had given him employment, but his hand so trembled that he could not hold the brush properly, and Peck suggested that he take a day off. He did so and fell dead that day on the steps of the Post Office, Wednesday, 27th October, 1880.

Just before the war a movement was initiated by Arthur Peck to erect a tombstone over his grave. The grave was found by W. A. Greig and the authorities at the Melbourne General Cemetery. It was opened and the bones transferred to a suitable place, not far from the grave of Burke and Wills, and this inscription placed on the stone:-

SAMUEL THOMAS GILL,
The Artist of the Gold Fields,
Died in Melbourne 27th October, 1880.
Aged 60 years.
Erected by the Historical Society of Victoria, October 1913.

It is to the honour of this Society that they sought out and found the unknown grave of Gill, but equally to their discredit that they neglected these of pioneers in the Old Cemetery.

**Burke and Wills expedition**

It is said that the first historic monument erected in Melbourne was that to Burke and Wills, which was designed by Charles Summers, and cast in bronze. The tin used in the composition came from Beechworth, and all the materials are Victorian. Summers died in London in the seventies. The monument was unveiled in 1864, and for twenty-five years was the only monument on the streets of Melbourne, although there were twelve that ante-dated it in the Old Cemetery. It was erected at the corner of Russell Street and Collins Street, and then removed some years later to Spring Street. Burke is standing upright. His bearing and his countenance indicate the fact that he was the dominant will of the party. Wills is in a sitting position. He is the thinker of the party. The panels in the pedestal symbolize the difficulties they encountered, and try in picture to represent what might have been better told by inscription (the inscriptions have recently been placed on the pedestal). It is hardly a monument of triumph, but rather of failure. Dr. Morrison, the adviser to the Government in China, when he was a schoolboy walked across the continent, and Burke and Wills as a matter of truth never saw the blue waters of Carpentaria, but came to the river that flowed into it. It is doubtful if it be right to call it a historic monument. When Jacob saw God face to face when he had communion with God in a certain place, it is said he erected a stone to mark the spot, that is the idea of history. The heap of stones around which the children play in Royal Park, if they be in the right place, are the real historic monument to the expedition that left there on the 20th of August, 1840, and pursued its journey without much adventure until it came to Cooper’s Creek, on the 11th of November, 1800. Here a depot was formed and the main part of the expedition left in charge of Brahe, while Burke, Wills, King and Gray continued the journey until they saw before them the entrance to the waters of Carpentaria, and demonstrated that no inland sea or Australian Sahara existed.

Burke had promised the party at Cooper’s Creek that they would return in three months, whereas they were away four and a half months, and on the return journey Gray died. Burke, Wills and King struggled into the camp only to find it deserted. The party despairing of their return had but that day broken up the camp, and commenced to retrace their steps to Melbourne. They saw on a tree the words Dig and they dug and found provisions; then they discussed what was to be done. Wills argued that they should follow their comrades to Melbourne. He argued that search would be coming out that would meet them on their The Tree in Burke and Wills Camp. journey, which was correct. Burke said that it would be better to make for Mt. Hopeless and pursue the journey to Adelaide. He thought he knew the way to a sheep station at Mt. Hopeless. He would have his own way, and they set out and were soon lost in the bush.

Burke died of privation, with his revolver in his hand. Wills continued his notes to the last, his last entry being a reflection on the nourishing power of the nardoo seed, a vegetable they were trying to subsist on. King alone survived. He hunted out a tribe of natives, and lived among them until he was found by a search party. The expedition had been arranged under the auspices of the Royal Society of Victoria.

It was at a time when Barkly was Governor. He sometimes held his levee in the old Exhibition Building in William Street, where also the Philharmonic concerts were held. The leading actor in Australia at that time was V. Brooke, and the leading pianist, M. Boulanger. Ebden was the wealthiest man in our legislative Assembly. The foundation of the Treasury Buildings was laid in the same year. Picnics were fashionable and often held at Picnic Point, Brighton. A favourite sport was archery. Archery parties were given at the Government House, and the ladies proved themselves good shots. The most fashionable haberdashery place in town was Alston and Brown, in Collins Street.
Dr. Perry was Bishop, and the very Reverend Hussey Burgh Macartney, D.D., was Dean of Melbourne, an elderly man who was thinking of retiring from the incumbency of St. James. Clara Aspinal was on a visit to the city, and was writing the notes for her little book on Melbourne. Cobb and Co.'s coaches were running to the country towns. General Pratt was Commander-in-Chief of the Military Forces. It was the year of the Werribee encampment, and Colonel Pitt was a popular military man. We are in the habit of extolling such men as Stanley and Nansen, but there have been in Australia martyrs and heroes of science as noble as these who faced the forests of tropical Africa or the ice-bound regions of the frozen north.

Dr. Leichhardt, who crossed from Brisbane to Port Essington, and who in pursuing further discoveries lost his life in the bush. Eyre bearing untold suffering in exploring the south-western portion of the continent. Sturt blinded by the light and heat of the Australian sun as it struck the desert. Cunningham and Kennedy speared by the natives, and add to these our recent Antarctic adventurers. Stanley received a rich harvest by his books and lectures, and became a member of the British Parliament, and Nansen obtained world recognition in the wide circulation of his book, and was enriched by his lectures. But these Australian heroes went down to darkness and to death that we might have a wider range of vision and an easier and a happier life. When the story of Australian exploration has been fully told it will be found that Australia has had as great and noble pioneers of science as those who perished or suffered in making known the unexplored regions of Africa, Asia, and America.

The minutes of our City Council record its admiration of the heroism of Richard O'Hara Burke and his companions. This address of congratulation was given by them to King on his return:

_To John King Esquire,_

_Sir,_

_We, the Mayor, Aldermen, councillors and citizens of Melbourne offer you our sincere congratulations on your return, the only survivor of the Victorian Exhibition party, which, for the first time succeeded in crossing the continent of Australia from the city to the Gulf of Carpentaria. The fortitude which supported you under the fatigue and privation of the journey, and under the disappointment on your return finding the depot at Cooper’s Creek recently deserted, and under subsequent exhaustion from insufficiency of food and clothing, still more your faithfulness to your heroic and lamented leader, the late Richard Hara Burke, Esq., entitle you to our warm praise and admiration. We rejoice in being assured that your constitution received no lasting injury from the hardships which you have suffered, and that we may confidently hope under Divine providence that a long life of health and activity in the exercise of the worthy qualities which you have displayed will add to the honour you have won in the service of this Colony, and in the interest of science and human progress._

A little later the erection of the monument came before the Council. Some wished it to be placed on Batman’s Hill, at that time the Hill was in peril, and some thought that this would secure it as a recreation ground. Others wanted it in front of the Public Library, and others in the Carlton Gardens, but the Council agreed to the proposal to place it at the intersection of Collins and Russell Streets. The unveiling was fixed for Friday, the 21st of April, 1865, the anniversary of the return of the explorers to Cooper’s Creek. At the end of 1863 £4000 had been voted by Parliament for its erection, and the carrying out of the project was entrusted to a Board of Design, consisting of Professor Wilson, the General Inspector of Public Works, Mr. Wardell, Mr. F. Wilkinson, Mr. Gilbee, Dr. Fisher, Mr. James Smith, Mr. W. H. Archer, and Mr. G. J. Griffiths. Competitive designs were called for, and five were sent in, the one by Charles Summers, Collins Street, being unanimously selected. The bronze moulding was enriched with passion flower, the nardoo plant, the desert pea, and other Australian plants and flowers were placed around the base of the upper lip of the pedestal. It was cast but met with an accident and had to be recast. The unveiling as arranged took place on the fifth anniversary of the return of Burke and Wills to Cooper’s Creek. The statue was uncovered at four o’clock by Governor Darling. A salute was fired by the Metropolitan Artillery.
from the Princes Bridge Reserve as soon as he left the Treasury. A detachment of 400 local volunteers, and 100 members of the Castlemaine Rifles, to which Burke belonged for a short time, were present. His Excellency was escorted by a Melbourne troop of the Victorian Light Horse. He himself was in full uniform. John King, the sole survivor, was there, but strange to say no members of the Government. The minutes of the City Council perhaps shed some light on this. Darling was engaged in a fierce dispute with a section of the Government, but they gave other reasons for staying away. The band at the outset struck up the National Anthem. Professor Wilson gave an address explaining how they came to build the monument. The Governor then pulled the cord and gave an oration on the early explorers. He recalled the work of Oxley, Wentworth, Blaxland, Lawson, Hume, Cunningham, Mitchell and Charles Sturt. He told how that the name of the head of his family had been attached to the great river Sturt discovered, he himself was then in Australia, and had both bidden Sturt farewell and welcomed him back. Our Governor was Sir Charles Henry Darling, the Governor of New South Wales was Sir Ralph Darling. Sir Charles was his nephew, and in 1827 became private secretary to his uncle.

After dealing with Sturt he passed to Burke and Wills, and brings under review another body of explorers, Grey, Eyre, Kennedy, Stuart, McKinlay, Walker, Landsborough, Howitt, the two Gregorios, Norman and Leichhardt, and testifies to the munificence of Ambrose Kyte and others who with the Government financed the Burke and Wills Expedition. Then he tells their tale of misfortune, giving the words of Wills in his last letter to his father: “These are probably the last lines you will ever got from me. We are on the point of starvation. Not so much from absolute want of food, but from want of nutriment in what we can get,” concluding his letter with the words, “I think to live about four or five days, my spirits are excellent. He also gives the words of the expiring Burke, “Place my weapon in my hand and leave me unburied as I lie.” He refers to it as the first great monument produced entirely on Australian soil by Australian workmen. It was designed in the memorial spirit not so much to glorify as an imperishable record of the dead. He describes the episode as sorrowful yet successful. Wills thirst for science and Burke’s heroism are both brought out in the oration.

All did not think that Summers had been successful in his sculpture. One writer said that it might represent among and Pythias, or Jones and Robinson as perfectly as Burke and Wills; that the brazen effigy had no resemblance to Burke, it was too long in the neck; that only one man on the committee knew anything about art, and that was Mr. Wardell, the architect; that one of the committee was a good arithmetician, and another a superior man of letters, but none of them save Wardell had any ability to judge a work of art, and that Summers had put a brazen image in Collins Street as if he intended that Burke and Wills should take supper with Dr. Macadam. As a work of art it was not superior to either the monument to Hobson or Cassell, which had preceded it in the Old Cemetery; and let us turn to that old ground once again. Among the men I met during the war at our meetings in the Old Cemetery was William Reed, who came out in 1839. He wrote: My wife has a father, two brothers, and a sister buried in it; we have three sons fighting for the glory of the British Empire, one killed in action, one wounded but is again back with his battery, and is at present in the heat of the battle. I feel certain that many Australians in the fighting line have dear friends and relatives lying in the Old Cemetery, the same as our own sons have; if so what must their feelings be. They are fighting and sacrificing their lives for the honour and liberty of Australia. This from the oldest resident in Victoria proves what I have said to be true. That valour of the pioneers is manifested in the heroism of the sons. To-day we arise on a hot morning and face winds that strike us like a blast from the furnace.

It is a hundred degrees in the shade. We say what a trying day! The University Professor takes up the cry, and says that wind is charged with germs of disease. I doubt him, because I have just been reading Rusden’s History of Australia, wherein he says these winds are health-giving, and this accords with my own experience. However that may be, the day is trying, and it was trying 80 years ago, and came with all the other initial difficulties. Our founders overcame the trial, and overcame it by character.
On the night of December 1847 there was a terrible thunderstorm like that which recently smote Brighton. Two men were fishing in the bay, Jacob Wyer and his son-in-law, John Chaplin, and both were killed by lightning. They brought them here and buried them, and inscribed on the stone: Both called from time to Eternity by lightning. Prepare to meet thy God. If we live the life of principle we have helped the evolution of man. Whether it be cut short at 22 like the life of Renny or whether we die at 71 like William Pascoe Crook, we triumph.

A man may triumph in a worldly sense and yet be a failure. John Mills, the emancipist who died in 1841, left a fortune behind him made as a brewer. He was one of the first, if not the first of our brewers. George Porter, on the 7th July, 1848, aged 48, Garryowen says, dies rolling in wealth. I cannot find a trace of his grave, nor does the City record any great work that he did; still although we do not know it his life may have been successful. My view is that a man who obtains a position among his fellows, like Kitchener, must be a man of merit, yet I cannot hold his career up as the ideal. I would rather look for it in the life of Timoleon, Garibaldi, or Lincoln. Yet these splendid tombs like Peter Thomson, Wooley, Fitzsimmons, Mornane, Reardon, Mayger, and McArthur, stand for lives that have been, in a material sense, successful. A success that has often been tempered and sweetened by benevolence, as in the case of Mrs. Carroll, who leaves a small sum to be given yearly to the hospital. A life of principle is not necessarily inconsistent with the accumulation of wealth. Sometimes it has been closely associated with it. We have seen men in these Colonies where opportunities were afforded for making money, pass from one success to another without the sacrifice of a single principle; and in men like Carnegie, we have to admit that however the wealth may have come, it has been spent to educate the people in a way they can be educated. One of his libraries is here at Northcote, not far from where Batman made his treaty for the purchase of Melbourne. So with the residents of the eight old pastoral districts, our old bankers and merchants. The men of the French Revolution truly contrast with these. The most of these who were guillotined died with very little money.

J. W. Fleming is a Yarra Banker, an atheist and an anarchist, but he has had his victories. He established the May Day celebrations, and with Mr. Mauger worked in the anti-sweating movement. He moved, at a public meeting in the Town Hall, that Sir Arthur Snowden should not be allowed to preside because he had contended that 4 shillings and 11 pence was sufficient pay per day for a man, a horse, and dray. He won the good opinion of Lord Hopetoun, who on leaving Victoria left his old wine that he might have given to the best of his aristocratic friends to Fleming. Fleming distributed it among the working men, who drank to the health of the departing Governor in bumpers of champagne. Hopetoun had been Governor of Victoria, but at this time he was closing this term as the first Governor-General of the Commonwealth. Fleming, though an anarchist and an atheist, signed the petition to save the Old Cemetery, and would not root up the graves of the founders of our city. While these in the State Parliament said but recently that they wished to finalise the matter in the absence of Mr. Rogers, who was away in America, by at once throwing out his bill for the repeal of the Act converting our burial ground into a vegetable market. The finalising of the matter meant a finality to our Memorial Ground.

They would commence with the destruction of the Jewish, the Wesleyan, Independent and Roman Catholic grounds in the north, and finish with the destruction of Batman’s Monument. In the earliest days of Melbourne’s history, England was deporting to Australia body snatchers. Two of them at least crossed over from New South Wales and entered Melbourne. The men who now sleep in the Old Cemetery had them arrested and sent back. Now, however, we have put them in Parliament. When I found that Parliament had finally handed over the ground for a vegetable market to the City Council, I called on Mr. Frank Stapley, the Mayor of the City, and asked him if he himself could not influence the Council to keep it as a memorial ground. He asked me if I viewed the matter as the Chinese, and thought the land itself celestial. I replied No, but historical; for the development of a city many revered spots must go, but if I were in Rome I would object on historical grounds to the sacrifice of the Colosseum. I wrote in a similar strain to the Premier.
What surprised me most was the action of Mr. Hutchison, the Minister of Education, voting for the destruction of the ground, for I had written to his predecessor, showing how the children in the State Schools might be taken there in May or June and learn more of Victorian history in an hour than in many weeks of tuition in school, and one May I saw an illustration of it when a chief teacher in the King Street School gathered the children up in front of Batman’s Monument and told them the story of settlement. Here is a story book for young and old, graphically illustrated, that a Minister of Education, with supreme folly, joined in the destruction of. Instead of joining us in our effort to build there the hall of fame to the men who had fallen at the front, that might be used for University extension lectures on Victorian history, he ruthlessly strikes at it with the hammer of the vandal and the Hun.

The City Council will build a monument to Fitzgibbon on the St. Kilda Road, and near to the Treasury Building will place the image of Sir William Clarke. General Gordon will be remembered in the heart of the city for his failure at Khartoum. Before the Working Men's College will stand the statue of Francis Ormond, who endowed it, and in the centre of Russell Street, nearly facing the Temperance Hall, stands the monument to Ferguson, a comparatively obscure temperance worker, a man who nevertheless led a triumphant life. Room for these and a hundred other memorials, but 110110 for these who preceded them in action and thought, and laid the foundation of our civic institutions. The first and second Town Clerks were greater men than Fitzgibbon, and their monuments were taken out of the City, and so with the hundred and more representative men I have sketched in other chapters. Will a Minister laugh at a monument to our earliest singers, historians, missionaries, heroes, scientists, and men of genius and action, whom he and all his Parliament ought to be proud to emulate. Education is the power to use the stored up past, the strategy that wins the war, or is it but a tale of old wars? Education is the faculty to apply accumulated knowledge. The ministry of knowledge is subjected to the call of ignorance and cupidty. They have succumbed to vested interest, and sacrificed economy, history and morality to the hoped for material prosperity of a few. The Ministry said we have done it because we found the City could borrow £300,000, and therefore they dig up the bones of the triumphant men, who in their public capacity would not borrow a penny, and even surrender their original proposition to reserve a portion of three or four acres for a memorial ground. And to help in this crime there comes forward, fully painted and plumed, Mr. Prendergast, the Labour leader. He clothed himself in immortality by his eccentric oratory. He had been all over the world, and knew that they were tearing up the graves everywhere, but when he looked around for an illustration he came back to Sydney, which removed its George Street Cemeteries. All have heard of the fox who had his tail cut off, and then went about trying to persuade other foxes to have theirs cut off, as he was much happier without it. In all Mr. Prendergast's wanderings, he never seemed to see Westminster, Grey Friars, and Pere-la-Chaise, or to know that western Europe had tried to preserve its burial grounds. The Crimean veterans graves and the Egyptian tombs were passed by, but he did stumble into the Catacombs, but forgot that as they revive the memory of primitive Christianity, so did the tombs in the Old Cemetery recall early Melbourne. He compared this Cemetery to that at the Red Bluff. The Glen Huntly, had been quarantined and the following men died, and were buried at St. Kilda. They were William Armstrong, Samuel Craig and John James, and Mr. Prendergast could see a parallel between the burial of these three men and the exhuming of their bodies, and that of ten thousand pioneers. He thought Batman’s grave would never have been heard of but for the encroachment on the Cemetery by the markets in 1877, and yet some years ago the savants in Melbourne were all enquiring where Buckley was buried. If an interest could be so easily aroused in Buckley’s grave, is it reasonable to think that Batman’s grave would have remained neglected! Mr. Prendergast is really a bad actor. He deviated as all men do in a dilemma. He thought a great monument should be erected on Flagstaff Hill to the old pioneers. Why there ??? t lb; was voting for their remains being distributed among the fifteen Cemeteries in Melbourne, as known relatives might take the remains to the Cemeteries where the present families were buried. He was voting for the destruction of the historical grouping in the memorial ground in the heart of the City, and in the same breath proposing a great monument on Flagstaff Hill. He was the spokesman for the Parliament of
a land made by Batman. Parallel in this the records of the man if you can. He thought a Cemetery should not be near a market! Did he think? If he did he knew that the Cemetery was there before the market, and that a market should not be near a Cemetery.

Therefore remove the market. I presume he thought that the smell of the market was objectionable to the dead bodies. He never defined in his mind the true idea of market, never saw that Labor called for economic production and economic distribution, never looked along our great thoroughfares and saw in these miles of shopping our true markets, never thought of our many suburbs, but seemed to think that distribution mainly depended on these sheds as he called them in Victoria Street. What prompts the act? Is it the love of architectural beauty? Is it a desire for City development? Then I reply that the Architects' Journal, the official organ of town planning, came out on our side. Was it hygiene? No, for we need the open space in a spot where the City is most crowded. They talk of the expansion of trade, but no broad scheme ever shot across their narrow vision for feeding our City, else they would have thought of a centre where in times of emergency, by railway communication, we could have drawn on the whole country for our supplies. The bewildered fools never thought of the ideal, of the spiritualism of Melbourne, young and old. Is there not a moral basis to an Act of Parliament? Is not obligation an article in the faith of the Victorian? Will he rob the dead when he can buy from the living, Macpherson the Treasurer, would tear up a square in the City, and yet banish one that gives the breath of life to our working men. Already they had voted three thousand pounds to move the bodies in that portion of the land which extends 240 feet south of the market. This would have bought a considerable piece of land! You cannot have a triumphant life without the sense of obligation to others. It is as essential to the life of a community as to that of a man, or why did Rousseau and others write of the social contract? On that is based all the freedom that the Allies in this World War struggled to obtain. They could have bought the land on the other side of the street, and yet preferred to destroy our historic ground. Prendergast brought up cremation. The A.N.A. has declared for cremation, but we have already seen it does not dispose of the memorial. The Greeks incinerated the dead, and the Romans fought for the ashes of their fathers and the temples of their Gods, and both their sepulchres and their temples represent monumental beauty. Although Shelley was burned we seek his grave in Rome to-day. Englishmen are buried all over Europe, Fielding is in Portugal, the Crimean soldiers in Turkey, and there is a special Cemetery in a church in Switzerland for the English tourist, and we go abroad to decorate the graves of British heroes in foreign lands and the men who fell at Gallipoli. Mr. Prendergast wandered over the world and never saw them. We thank Mr. Ryan of Essendon, Mr. Maclachlan of North Gippsland, and these other three, Messrs' Outtrim, Cameron and Stewart, who voted for us. I do not believe that one who exhibited such a want of reverence for character should ever again sit in a Victorian Parliament, for these who know not our past cannot legislate for us in the future.

They cried the graves have been neglected, By whom? By themselves, They who never paid a man to keep them in order, who never kept the divisions between the graves distinct, or attended to the pathways. The Wattons, the Conway's, the Steele's, the Parnells, the Grahams, the Coles, and many others were watching over their graves, in some cases tending them for seventy years, and it was the place of the authorities to beautify and preserve the ground No special religious motive prompted our Memorial Union to take up the work, simply the recognition of a duty to the triumphant dead, a love of truth, and a loyalty to the memory of faithful men and women. Early Melbourne is related to the spiritual development of the world. There is a why for every immigrant of the first years. Voluntarily they came here. It was an age of science while evolution had not been expounded. The scientific offensive had commenced, the result partially it may be of a social awakening through the Revolution began in France in 1889 and the creation of the American constitution that year. Australia received her first immigrants the year before this, and we grew while the world democracy was growing around us. The first settlement came in this spiritual cycle, that at Sorrento in 1803. The Ocean Empire differentiated as it developed. It was therefore with their eyes open that the first immigrants came. They were the architects of their own fortune. They came freely with their flocks to
the pastures of freedom. The qualities of great character are seen in them, decision, resource, promptness of action. Men succeed in the work and fail in their lives; such men were Lord Byron and Edgar Allan Poe. Batman has been represented in that light, but there is not sufficient reason for it. You may say he succeeded more in his work than in his life. Backhouse who saw him less than two years before he died said he found him absorbed with worldly projects, but does not say he had become intemperate.

It has been argued that nearly all our literary men did their work in Bohemia, that Henry Kendall, when here, was found sleeping out in the streets in Collingwood, that Adam Lindsay Gordon committed suicide, that Marcus Clarke was a prodigal and failed to realize on his opportunities. These facts give colour to the contention, but earlier literary men, with the exception of George Arden, to whom I have referred, were not so, and George Gordon McCrae, now a man of 90, has lived through it all, coming here in 1840, writing good poetry in the sixties, and now writing poems on the World War. Several men and women in social circles have committed suicide.

Garryowen gives some incidents that I cite. Suicide is not in itself evidence of failure, but as Carlyle puts it, when God takes away our tools it is a very good reason to go, and some have taken the hint. Dr. Mitchell committed suicide in the Lamb Inn on the 24th of January, 1840. He came out as the surgeon superintendent of an immigrant ship, and belonged to a respected Edinburgh family. He was writing a defence of suicide, and committed the act after a bout of drinking. G. W. A. Gordon committed suicide at the Caledonian Hotel, December 1841. He came from Aberdeenshire. In May 1845 Mrs. Cameron committed suicide with her child in arms at Brighton. Mrs. Elliot, the wife of a publican, committed suicide by drowning herself with her child in a waterhole in a fit of insanity in November 1845. Her husband kept the Mechanics’ Arms. In the same month of the following year her father, William Lang, committed suicide. Mr. Alfred Draper committed suicide on the 25th of August, 1840. Had he remained alive until the arrival of the next mail from England he would have known that he inherited a fortune. In 184! George Hudson committed suicide. These are illustrations of how the strenuous life affected some. All did not do it from a sense of defeat. We must say that in a higher sense Adam Lindsay Gordon scored a victory, although he committed suicide on the 24th of June, 1870. Jones, our hangman, committed suicide rather than hang a woman. Some would say this was a moral victory for Jones. I cannot say that Gately, our hangman, did not lead a triumphant life. I have met men who knew him well, and respected him highly; with him it would be a matter of duty and mechanics. Dr. Charles Strong’s paper, The Commonwealth, reports that Ellis, the English hangman, was so sensitive and nervous that when he kept fowls he had to get a friend to wring their necks. Because a man kills by a mechanical process, and by the authority of the law, he is not necessarily brutal. Victory is so various.

The triumph of Carlyle is different to that of Emerson, but both are successful. How different is Edward Curr to William Kerr. They spell their names differently, and two men could not have been more diverse, but both triumph in their own way. So too Judge Higginbotham is very different to David Syme, yet both are successful. James Bonwick led a unique literary life. He came in 1840 to Hobart Town as a school master, and came to know all our Colonies, dying in this century in London, leaving behind the autobiography of a literary octogenarian. His historical sketches seem to touch all our Australian Colonies. He sketches a suburb in his book on Borroonada, a city in his books on Port Phillip, and rises to look over the Colonies in his curious facts of old colonial days. He found in St. Andrew’s Churchyard among the dozen tombs standing, when he went to it, one with an epitaph dating back to 1792, that was within four years of the foundation of Australia. That Cemetery was closed for burials in 1830. Bonwick represents a type of successful literary man, and we are pleased to give in this chapter his portrait along with that of William Westgarth.

Sutherland, a sailor in Captain Cook’s party, was the first white man buried in Australia. Although a sailor he is remembered in history. Men may be eminent but lacking in the full triumph. Napoleon is the most eminent man in history. He is more written about and talked about than any other man, yet he really failed; he finished at St. Helena. His domestic life was a failure. He had the chance to create the United States of Europe, and failed to grasp the opportunity; while Cromwell and
Washington overcame greater difficulties, and secured power to give it to mankind. I think these two classes are in our Cemetery. The one thing which has distinguished their life has been opportunity. It is this which marks out the new communities of the world from the old settled life of Europe. Dr. Abbot, an American Divine, said if a man be in the submerged tenth in Europe, he is always there, but here a man may be a poor working man to-day and to-morrow a millionaire. It is a common expression that our life is mercurial. The original settler loses his money in sheep and makes it again in tallow, loses it in agriculture and some forms of stock, and then grows rich on his produce with the discovery of gold, later loses in land and makes it in silver, makes it in land and loses it in importation and other phases of commerce.

Take for instance the first Chinaman who came to Melbourne. In April 1921 there died at Nimmo Street, Middle Park, Mr. Louis Ah Mouy. He was 92 year of age, and was born at Canton. In China he learned the trade of a carpenter, and became a builder, and was brought here under contract to Captain Glendinning in 1851. He was not only the first permanently resident Chinese in Melbourne, but in all Australia. There were Chinese here even in the eighteen thirties, but they were nomadic. He was the pioneer of that general immigration that has given Australia a Chinese question. A Chinese person was buried in the Old Cemetery in 1838, and Chinese were subpoenaed as witnesses and sworn according to the Chinese custom in the forties. Ah Mouy’s first work was to build three houses in South Melbourne and three in Williamstown, and some affirm that these were the first regular houses erected in either of these suburbs; the statement, however, is incorrect. The material he used was Singapore oak that Glendinning had brought out. Shortly after his arrival the gold fever broke out, and he too when his work was completed here went to the diggings and made good finds. Whenever he had five hundred pounds he came back through the forest past the bushrangers, and put his money in a secure place in Melbourne, and then returned again, and though he went into many ventures in after years he never lost his interest in mining. A simple letter of his sent to his brother, but intercepted by the authorities, it is believed, brought 37,000 Chinese to Victoria. It is said in the days of the diggings that he made money by the bucketful, and assisted in opening mines in Yea, Ballarat, Elaine, Mount Buffalo, Bright, and Walhalla then he turned his attention to the development of Melbourne. He established the first rice mill in Victoria on Flinders Street, which was afterwards purchased by Robert Harper and Co. He gave the Chinese the land on which is built their present Joss House in South Melbourne, the only one in Victoria. He was a member of one of their secret societies. He married a Chinese woman, and by her had seven sons and three daughters. Of these some of them have the tea business in Swanston Street, one is a lawyer, and another an architect in the City. He was buried on the 30th of April in the Church of England division in the Melbourne General Cemetery. I am not aware that there ever was a Chinese funeral in the Old Cemetery. The Chinaman of 1838 was buried in the Church of England ground. The Chinese do not belong to Earliest Melbourne. They date from the gold era, and this man secured the life triumphant that comes from seizing on favourable opportunities. Nor do the Germans belong to early Melbourne. Four thousand of them came here in the tide of immigration that set in in 1849. Initiated by William Westgarth, Westgarth’s “History of the Port Phillip Settlement,” published 1847, was translated into German. How men availed themselves of opportunities is seen in nearly every phase of life in our early history. Peter Perkins kept an oyster saloon. A fine turtle of three hundred pounds weight was found in this locality in 1847, and he bought it and enhanced his business. Unfortunately death claimed him, and he came to the Old Cemetery in 1852. The first to give turtle soup for dinner was John William Cowell, in his hotel, the Royal, Collins Street. In food, land, timber, and all that pertains to life, fortunes were made or lost. Paddy Byrne saw the need of a ferry on the Yarra, and Lynch has a punt on the Saltwater River. One Spotiswood tried to make money smuggling tobacco, and was fined a hundred pounds, others tried it with an illicit still, and were treated somewhat in the same way. The letters of Lonsdale give a variety of illustrations of this kind.

Drink destroyed many whose opportunities were good. A little time ago an old pioneer said to me that 95 per cent, of them were now paupers. It was an extravagant remark, but he wished to
convey the idea that only a small percentage of the pioneers were financially successful. Finance sometimes mars a man’s triumph. Take the case of our most successful lecturer, the Reverend Charles Clark. The fact that he could make money as a lecturer drew him out of the ministry. He was born in London on the 19th of April, 1838, and when about twenty years of age entered the ministry. He preached in a Halifax church with success, and later was pastor of a church in London, then he was called to Robert Hall’s old church in Bristol. He was invited to come, to Melbourne, and in 1869 succeeded Isaac New ?? at the Albert Street Baptist Church. He did a successful work there and in 1873 was invited to lecture in aid of the Caxton Memorial Fund, and his two lectures, one on Charles Dickens and the other on Oliver Goldsmith, brought in £100. ?? This, it is said, suggested to him the idea of devoting his whole time to lecturing, and he resigned his position as a preacher, and lectured throughout Victoria, and then toured the other Colonies. Smythe, who at one time was a broker, became his manager, and later on brought leading lecturers from England, and became the Major Pond of Australia, just as Beecher was Pond’s best card, so was Clark Smythe’s most successful man. I have had the pleasure of hearing Clark both preach and lecture, and preferred him as a lecturer. His greatest lecture was The Tower of London. I heard him in the seventies, and then again thirty years later, on Westminster Abbey, and I could not detect any diminution in his power. He was a reciter, wrote his lectures, and learned them off by heart, and would never miss a word. I heard him give his lecture on Macauley, on what I understood was its first delivery. He had committed it well to memory, still having acute hearing, I could hear Smythe behind the scenes prompting him. He generally had large audiences, but once I remember when he came to Dunedin he was advertised to lecture on a Saturday night. That night the audience was very small, and Smythe came forward and said that they had forgotten the habit of the Dunedin people to go shopping on a Saturday night, and that Mr. Clark would not lecture that evening, but that the tickets would be available for the following week. He preached on the Sunday, and had a successful season in Dunedin. He lectured with success both in America and in England, and occupied a unique place on the lecture platform in Australia.

A peculiar man of talent was C. E. Jones, Charles Edwin Jones. The Argus said if his wisdom had equalled his wit, he would have exercised a great, influence in Victoria. While he finds a place in the history of Ballarat, he was also well known in Melbourne. He was returned for Ballarat in 1805. He is reported to have opened an election speech on one occasion with the words, Gentlemen of Ballarat and savages of Bungaree. He became Minister of Railways, but was turned out of Parliament on a charge of bribery, members of his own party voting for his expulsion as well as these of the opposition. Among the charges laid against him was one that he had written a letter soliciting money for his vote. In the letter were the words The paschal lamb is ready to be offered up, all that is wanted is the mint sauce. Jones declared that he was innocent, and was again returned to Parliament for one of the constituencies in Ballarat. Many people did not believe that Jones was innocent, but that he had done no more than other Members of Parliament. It seems, however, to have killed him as a politician, and he became a lecturer and a writer, and started a weekly paper in Melbourne called the People’s Tribune. It did not last long, and Jones became known as a lecturer on historical and social subjects. He contrasts with the Reverend Charles Clark. We have tried to know the men who fulfilled the prophecy and the project of William Pitt. That statesmanship which rightfully or wrongfully unified the United Kingdom, and initiated that gradual system of expansion that built our Ocean Empire, and prepared the Anglo-Saxon and Anglo-Celt for federation. The Earl of Chatham, Pitt’s father, used the words, the consent of the governed, before Jefferson put them into the Declaration of Independence. Triumphant lives created a triumphant Empire. While history, in the general sense, repeats itself, yet in a special sense it never recurs. Only once does Abraham appear in the Plains of Mamre after breaking with the idolatry of the world, and listening to the voice of God as he looks on nature primeval; only once does Socrates appear in the Market Place in Athens to lay the foundation of the inductive method of reasoning and the basis of moral science; only once will Moses give the world her first Republic, and Jesus declare for the one universal morality and
the worship of God in Spirit and in Truth and only once, in a lesser way, can John Batman open up the Port Phillip district to the world. These lives of the early pioneers are gone forever, only their register remains in the Cemetery of History. Still may we emulate them. We may not be Luthers, Lincolns, Voltairees or Spurgeons, other than in the sense of followers, but one thing we have learned from the pioneers is that the Triumphant Life is the Life of Principle, persevering and pursuing to the end an object and an ideal, resolution, decision in difficulty, and the moral strength to face temptation. Fortitude and the continual culture of the human soul brought forth their triumphs, and thus they took advantage of the opportunity. Edward Henty gave the first guinea to the Old Pioneers Memorial. He is the lineal descendant of the eldest son of Thomas Henty set an example of larger giving by giving twenty pounds. Theodore Napier, Hugh Purves, and Dr. F. Hobill ??? le have been equally generous. We have shown the need of a memorial, and we give the picture of the suggested design here.

It is a Temple of Liberty, because this was the first free State on a penal continent, and Richard Bourke dowered it with religious liberty. Our Memorial is Australianised. In place of the acanthus leaf which adorned the Corinthian columns we have the foliage of the eucalyptus, and instead of the old classical volute the opossum peeps out at the corner. The story of the city is told in the picture panels below, from the survey of Victoria by Captain Cook to the embarkation of the troops for the front in the World War for Liberty.

On the long panels above are the names of the old pioneers whose remains have been transferred to Fawkner and other suburban Cemeteries; these were the men who made our Flag.

Liberty stands on the round globe where the pioneer and the Anzac placed it in cooperation with the Motherland. The roof is laureated with the Victorian laurel to suggest the triumphant life. The symbols between the panels are taken from the tombs in the Old Cemetery. The cross the open book the flame of light, the reverted torch, the hour-glass, and the oak leaves and the vine. On the frieze below the entablature, will be the seals of the city, the Commonwealth and the Empire, with medallions of Governor Bourke, Lieutenant-Governor Arthur and of Queen Victoria, while the temple itself will be surrounded by the cenotaphs of Henty Batman Buckley and the aboriginals, Fawkner and Evans, Lonsdale and Latrobe white marble figures resting on Native pedestals. The panels, roof, and statue above will be in metal, probably bronze. The Memorial will be placed in the Flagstaff Gardens because it will be on the same hill where the old Cemetery was situated, and where the six first burials took place: these date back to 1836. It will be illuminated by night, and we believe that the light from it will be seen all over the Port Phillip District.
CHAPTER 12
CIRCUMSPICE THE EPITAPH OF THE ARCHITECT.

The epitaph on Batman’s tomb was handed to J. W. Brown, the monumental mason, by J. J. Shillinglaw, therefore we credit Shillinglaw with writing it. Brown thought that the word Circumspice had been suggested by the use of the expression in St. Paul’s Cathedral, London.

While you see there many monuments to the great men of Britain, yet there is none to the architect who designed this temple, but there is an inscription stating that if you want to see one, you had better look around, and so it is thought that the real monument to Batman was not so much the stone memorial as the great city that had grown up on the site which he stated would be the right place for a village. Therefore in this chapter we give a general view of the city that we hope will be circumspective, retrospective, prospective, and not out of perspective. It is doubtful whether Shillinglaw was inspired by St. Paul’s, because the word occurs in Horace, Eregi monumentum aere perennis si queris circumspice, I have erected a monument more durable than brass; if you ask why, then look around. The poet thought that his work was more durable than any metal monument. And while we value Batman’s monument, we turn from it in this chapter to get a general vision of the city. It is now the ninth city of the Empire, and has a population of over 800,000. Originally it was not a mile square; now there are 7,740 acres under the control of the City Council, and that in this alone there are 185 miles of streets, 127 miles of which are large streets. Melbourne, in Sands & McDougall’s map, takes in a radius of from ten to twelve miles from the Post Office, an area of over 200 square miles. There are thirty-four suburbs shown on this map; but beyond these there are several watering places and pleasant resorts where you can go for a holiday by boat or motor; McCarron, Bird & Co. give the names of the suburbs and they number up to 158. But they include the names of localities as well as accepted suburbs, such localities as Hotham Hill, Princes Hill, and Jolimont. Hotham Hill is a part of North Melbourne, Princes Hill of Carlton, Jolimont of East Melbourne. The city proper is divided into eight wards, and is governed by thirty-two councillors, of whom eight are aldermen. The Federal Parliament sits in Melbourne, until the Federal Capital, Canberra, is completed. It was a compromise between the two great Australian Capitals. In the fight for Federation it was determined that neither Melbourne nor Sydney should be the capital, but a place in New South Wales was to be selected at least 100 miles from Sydney. Canberra, in the Yass district, was chosen, because it is far enough away from Sydney and could be connected by railway with Jervis Bay. Melbourne, however, remains the capital until the Parliament builds the new Federal City. The residence of the Governor-General in New South Wales was found impracticable, and he now resides here, and lives in our old State Government House. Thus we have had two Parliament Houses in Melbourne since 1901, the original State Parliament House at the top of Bourke Street, where the Federal Parliament now meets, and the Exhibition Building in the Carlton
Gardens, where the State Parliament meets while the Federal Parliament is the guest of Melbourne.

This is the most conspicuous building in Melbourne. Here in the main hall the great meetings are held, 6000 to 8000 people being present. The Roman Catholic had his great fair here, and the Jew his carnival. Here the Labour Party have their Eight Hour Day fete, and Chapman and Alexander conducted their great mission. The police give an entertainment here every year in aid of the hospital. Here once a year an Old Folks At Home is held, arranged by the Central Wesleyan Mission, when all the old people in Melbourne meet and are entertained at supper. The State Parliament meets in a wing of the building. The entrance to the main hall is from Nicholson Street, and grouped in front of it are a number of monuments; a very appropriate one is that erected by public subscription to Dr. L. L. Smith, a promoter of the exhibitions held in the building. There is also a fountain cut out of granite, with the inscription, To Victoria from one of her earliest colonists, in pleasant remembrance, 1840-1888. The entrance to the 1880 Exhibition was from the south. By the side of the Great Hall in the annexe is the Aquarium. On entrance you pass into a hall, in which are replicas of some of the finest statuary in the world. Hanging in this hall is Nuttall’s picture of the Duke of York opening the first Federal Parliament, in the Aquarium are rare fish and ferns, and once there was attached to it a Cyclorama of Old Melbourne, and you were also permitted to climb to the dome and look out over Melbourne as she is to-day and contrast the new and the old. The Cyclorama is gone, and you are no longer allowed into the dome. The old way was Circumspice. There is an Insectarium, a Museum, a Maze and a Picnic Ground. The whole edifice is picturesquely placed in gardens arranged by a master landscape gardener. During the war the flag and other national emblems were represented in flower beds. Here our great Exhibitions of 1881 and 1888 were held. The first Exhibition in England was that at the Crystal Palace, in 1851, therefore we could not expect to find an Exhibition in early Melbourne; but it is reported that there was a local one in 1850. Our first Exhibition, however, followed very closely on that of the Crystal Palace. It was opened in wood, but resembled the Crystal Palace in the glass work of the walls. Our second Exhibition, of 1861, was also held in this building, but these of 1866, 1872 and 1875 were held in the Public Library buildings.

The magnificent pile in the Carlton Gardens was designed, as we have seen, by Joseph Reed (or Reed & Barnes), and built by the father of Madame Melba, to house the great Exhibition of 1880. Globe-trotters have from the parapet surrounding the dome seen marvellous Melbourne, and on that vision have written books about us. Here, too, we commemorated in 1888 the Centenary of Australia, and we were trying to preserve the memorials of Melbourne for the day when we celebrate the centenary of the coming of Batman. When the Duke of York (now our King) opened the first Parliament of the Commonwealth in this great building, He spoke so clearly he could be heard distinctly by everyone in the House. The Prince of Wales followed in his father’s footsteps and held the People’s Reception. He was mounted on a dais under the dome, and was thus able to see the enormous crowd of people as they passed by and salute them We have had several visits from members of European Royalty, and it is well to commence with the present visit of the Prince of Wales and look back. When the Senate presented their address to him they omitted the title the Duke of Cornwall, and folks from Cornwall dissented, and held that his names and titles represented his position in the Empire, and should be given in public documents in full. The list of titles were then given by Colonel Grigg, as follows:-

His Royal Highness Edward Albert Christian George Andrew Patrick David Prince of Wales and Earl of Chester in the Peerage of the United Kingdom; Duke of Cornwall in the Peerage of England; Duke of Rothesay, Earl of Carrick and Baron of Rornfrew in the Peerage of Scotland; Lord of the Isles and Great Steward of Scotland K.G., GMM.G., G.C.V.O., GM.B.E., M.C.

He left London on the 16th of March, 1920, and with a naval demonstration at Portsmouth said adieu to Britain. He sailed from the Antipodes to the Antipodes, from Britain in the north to New Zealand, the Britain in the south, and claimed that he was as much a citizen of the one as of the other. On the way he calls at the West Inches, passes through the Panama Canal, and crosses the Pacific, stopping at Honolulu and Suva. He lands at Auckland on the fifth anniversary of the day that the
Australian and New Zealand Army Corps (Anzac) landed at Gallipoli (24th April). On that historic day he is greeted by the southern world, and on the following he is at the memorial service in the Anglican Cathedral in the first Capital of New Zealand. After a tour through New Zealand and a journey across the Tasman Sea, the first point in Australia is sighted, Deal Island, the promise of a square deal here. The lighthouse on this island was lit for the first time in 1848. Some captains averred that they could then see it fifty miles away. A little later Wilson’s Promontory arises from the sea, and soon after they sighted a light at the Heads of Port Phillip. The first city he visits in Australia is ours, formerly the village by the Yarra, now temporarily, the Federal Capital of Australia; and he enters its portal just three days before the anniversary of Batman’s arrival. Batman came on the 29th, he comes on the 26th.

But Batman in one of his letters makes a slip and says that he came through on the 26th. His journal, however, shows that it was on the 29th. He came in The Renown, the greatest vessel ever seen in Port Phillip up to that time, one that travelled in spite of wind and wave, and could be timed to arrive at a given hour; it contrasts with the little Rebecca that Batman came in, which beat about the Straits for two weeks before being able to enter the port. But even the Renown had its difficulties; a heavy fog hung over the entrance to the port, so the Prince came through the Rip in our destroyer, The Anzac, and The Renown came in later on in the day when the sky cleared, and berthed at the New Pier at Port Melbourne. The Prince, on arriving at Port Melbourne, was transferred to The Hygeia and landed at St. Kilda. The day had been proclaimed a public holiday. The crowds on the streets were unparalleled, excelling in numbers anything seen before in Melbourne. Seven hundred thousand people lined the route along which he travelled. He did not avoid the crowd, but asked them not to overcrowd him, to let the people see him, and to avoid the crush he would stand up in his carriage and salute them.

This strenuous time lasted from the 26th of May to 7th of June. This was a memorable time for other reasons. It was the period when we celebrated Batman’s arrival, and Melbourne’s eighty-fifth birthday. Empire Day, the birthday of the Queen after whom our State is named, came at the beginning, and the present King’s Birthday at the end, and in between was celebrated the Battle of Jutland. He came to us along St. Kilda Road and over Princes Bridge, a bridge well named, for he was the third Royal personage who had passed over it; first the Duke of Edinburgh, then the Duke of York, and now the Prince of Wales. Nevertheless the old wooden bridge was called Princes Bridge before ever a Prince came to Melbourne. Along the route were stands for societies and municipalities, societies like the Caledonian, the Cambrian, and the Old Colonists. The Melbourne and Metropolitan Board of Works had their post at FitzGibbon’s monument.

On the first Sunday that he was here, he attended service at St., Paul’s Cathedral, when Archbishop Riley preached. It was an impressive service. By 10 o’clock the Cathedral was filled. The Bishop took for his text, Joel 11:28: “Your old men shall dream dreams, and your young men shall see visions. And he gave them illustrations from Australian history, looking back to the landing of Captain Cook and then to the first cottage built in Melbourne, and to other episodes in the history of our race, showing what enterprise had grown out of our dreams and visions, and finally came to the vision of Christianity, that led men into warfare with social materialism, drunkenness, idleness and immorality.” But to my mind the great service came the following Sunday, when the Prince was at the Old Pioneer Service at St. James.

The church is now situated at the corner of Batman and King Streets. It is adjacent to Flagstaff Hill and our old burial ground. It is Melbourne’s oldest church, rooted up from its historic place in Little Collins Street. It has the same material in it, and the same form, and these who defended the change say that it was transferred without alteration to where it now stands. Archdeacon Hindley preached from a verse in Psalm 87: “Glorious things are told of thee oh City of God.” I would like to have believed that the words applied fully to our own city, and to think that God was its builder and the bearer of its glory, but while men like Augustus Sala could truthfully say it is marvellous, and all can look back to the hospitality of the beginning, yet the glory that Circumspice reveals is more material than spiritual. This latest visit of Royalty enables us once again to look over the entire
panorama of our life. The aim was to allow the heir to the Throne to see its principal features. There was an opportunity to meet the Members of Parliament at Parliament House, to be taken over the Public Library, to have a people’s reception in the Exhibition Building, to meet the children of Melbourne on the Melbourne Cricket Ground, to attend a smoke social of the press at the Grand Hotel, to be made a Doctor of Law and Letters at the Melbourne University, to plant a tree beside that planted by his father in the Botanical cultural Show. Thus Melbourne sought to show him all her glory, but showed him more of that of today than that of yesterday. It was a general view of present-day life he obtained. What were largely hidden from him were the sources of our life and the agencies at work to produce moral declension; therefore I regard as the greatest event in his visit his presence in the oldest church in Melbourne.

The ephemeral side of the celebrations was in the gala at Her Majesty’s Theatre, or in the illuminations. These saw generally from the top of the Auditorium, a building erected since the visit of his father, on the site of St. Enoch’s, the old Assembly Hall of the Presbyterians. From the roof of this building we looked along the lighted front of Collins Street, and could also take in the full expanse of the city. Looking out towards the bay we expected to find the Australian Fleet all aglow, but a heavy mist covered the water for most of the time that the Prince was here.

The old-time bonfires that lit up the heights were also absent they had gone with the roasted bullock; and when you looked for the conspicuous domes on Parliament House, Exhibition Building and the Law Courts you found them plunged in darkness, whereas at the Duke of York’s visit the domes of the Exhibition and Law Courts were lighted with coloured lights.

The Law Courts were now dark, but the Equitable Building was hung with tessellated chains of fiery jewels. This building contained the Commonwealth Hall, the American Consul’s office, and the offices of several business men. Although built at an enormous expense by the Equitable Insurance Company of New York, it has been entirely diverted from its original purpose. The Equitable Company bought the site for £363,000 in June 1890. The original block sold at our first sale was much larger, and it was sold to Thomas Browne for £41. The Argus, speaking this year (1923) of its transfer to the Colonial Mutual Life Assurance Company, a company that purchased it on their jubilee, says that it is the most impressive building in Collins Street.

Its building commenced in 1892, and it was completed in 1896. It is chiefly composed of granite, steel and marble, and was thought by The Argus to be the most notable building for commercial purposes in Melbourne. It was therefore an act of loyalty to have it all illuminated The theatres probably never looked better. Her Majesty’s was a flood of light from basement to tower. The Princess was not so well illuminated. Now with its improvements it is a well-lit building; then it stood in the dark, but was specially illuminated that night. The Britannia Picture Theatre stood out in Bourke Street as if it intended to sing Rule Britannia. The Theatre Royal maintained its historic position. The Opera House is always well lit, and for that reason the change was not so impressive. We missed the triumphal arches on Princes Bridge and across our streets, but the Fire Tower at the chief office of the Fire Brigade recalled to us the illuminations on the Duke of York’s visit. The unique feature of the illuminations this time was the flooding of three public buildings with reflected light. This was an American idea put in practice for the first time in Melbourne. Thus the face of the Parliament Buildings was bathed in light. The tower of the Post Office was thus illuminated, but the Town Hall stood alone, combining the old idea of illumination with the new. The lower part of the building had all its pilasters and panels brought out with coloured lights, while the tower was beautifully flooded with variegated light on the American plan. The Treasury Building was lighted in the old fashioned way; St. Kilda Road and Alexandra Gardens are always beautiful at night time, but in this season of rejoicing they were surmounted by an illuminated Government House. Standing on the hill it could be seen far and wide over the city. The entrance to Flinders Street Station was specially designed to add to the lustre of the scene. Private enterprise seem to rival in its display the work of the Government. The face of many hotels like Menzies were well illuminated, and stores like the Leviathan. The Melbourne Club had a facade of light. The public buildings, however, were the better decorated. The Navy Offices had exalted the anchor to a symbol of light. The Congregational Church put an
illuminated cross on its building at the corner of Collins and Russell Streets, which has remained there; and the Salvation Army had their headquarters in Bourke Street specially illuminated. In the History of Melbourne the Masons always stood to the fore, but this time we do not find them so much in evidence, fifteen thousand of them showed their loyalty by a special gathering, but the Prince was not present. The Prince’s visits seemed confined chiefly to public bodies or institutions arising out of the war. It is claimed that the Naval Pageant in the port, when the Prince reviewed the fleet from the deck of The Franklin was an historic spectacle. This and his visit to Anzac House was typical. He had no great work to do as his father did, such as opening our first Commonwealth Parliament; that came in New South Wales when he laid the foundation stone of the Capital at Canberra. Speaking at the official dinner at Parliament House, he said: “It is fitting that his Majesty’s Australian ship Anzac and five Australian destroyers should have brought me through Port Phillip to Melbourne (Cheers) and I was much impressed by my passage through the Australian fleet. It struck me as a splendid example of the forethought and enterprise of the Australian nation, and you must feel very proud to look upon these ships and their personnel, realising how important a part they played in the great war. The larger ships, after clearing up the Western Pacific and the Southern Indian Ocean, sailed for the North Sea, and joined up with the battle cruiser force. The smaller craft, destroyers and submarines, sailed for the Mediterranean. The work of these ships will never be forgotten. (Cheers.) I was particularly pleased yesterday to see his Majesty’s Australian ship Sydney, and to remember with what smartness and efficiency she disposed of that troublesome and enterprising enemy raider the Emden. (Cheers.) I was present when your flagship, The Australia, then flagship of the second battle cruiser squadron, after taking part in the surrender of the German fleet, sailed again for Australia to take over the peace duties after the war, had the privilege of going to Portsmouth on the day on which she sailed, and of conveying his Majesty’s good wishes to the Australian fleet. I am very proud to have been appointed a Captain of the Royal Australian Navy, and I wish the Australian Navy every success. (Cheers.) It was, however, the people’s welcome in the streets which touched me most deeply yesterday. I shall never forget the friendly greeting which met me everywhere.

I have been a long time coming to Australia, much longer than I liked, and much longer than I should have allowed had it been possible to arrange, with convenience, for an earlier date, but now that I am here I am all the more glad to find myself in the Commonwealth at last, and I am gladly looking forward to my tour. Let me assure you at once, however, that I do not feel a stranger in Australia. How could I after my close association with Australian troops during the war in Egypt, in France and Belgium, and in the old country? (Cheers.) I feel that through having seen and known so many Diggers in the field I have already had a thorough introduction to the Australian nation as a whole, and I hope no further introductions are necessary in order to make you regard me as one of yourselves. There is so much to which I am looking forward that I find it difficult to distinguish between the different interests and pleasures which I anticipate. First of all there are your returned men, and naturally I look forward to seeing as many of them as possible, and in many cases to renewing an acquaintance first made at the other end of the world. You know how magnificently your soldiers served King, Country and Empire in the great war, and no words of mine can enhance the well-earned praise which they have already received. Their achievements are indelibly written upon the hills of Gallipoli, and upon the plains of Flanders, France and Palestine. It is the greatest pleasure to me to think that I am going to see so many of them again back in their own homes and amongst their kith and kin.”

A series of balls were held in the city, the Lord Mayor’s Ball, the Matron’s Ball, the Hospital Ball. The last was at Government House, tendered by the Governor-General and his wife. At these balls, Melbourne exhibited her jewels, and few thought us capable of such a display of diamonds. He visited a number of our suburbs; Essendon on the way to the Show. Caulfield gave him triumphal arches when he went to the Caulfield Military Hospital. The arches that characterised the Duke of York’s visit were not in the city on the Prince of Wales visit; therefore the Roman arch at Caulfield was something all its own. The Mayor of St. Kilda met him at St. Kilda Pier when he landed, and the Mayor of Port Melbourne saw him depart. He was at the Anzac Hostel at Brighton, at the Town Hall at
Prahran. He visited Stonnington, our State Government House, at Malvern. Mr. William Morris Hughes went with him to Sassafras, where he gets a sight of the mountain districts near Melbourne, and then entertains him at dinner at his home at Kew.

He does not seem to have spent much time in private houses. While in the country he stayed for one night at the residence at Glenormiston of Mr. S. J. Native, President of the Shire of Hampden. His health giving way, he was compelled to stay an extra week in Melbourne. This he gave up chiefly to recreation, riding at Caulfield and Moonee Ponds, and that week he moved about without recognition.

**The Renown** left the port on Sunday, the 13th of June. One of the most pleasing features of this ship’s visit to Melbourne was to see it one day converted into a children’s playground, when the children of Melbourne visited it. It was in Melbourne that he first set foot on Australian soil, and he succeeded in getting a good reception, at a season when Melbourne was wearied with war demonstrations, and when the whole world was more; or less inclined to republicanism. While his vessel left the port on Sunday, the official farewell came on Saturday, when Melbourne was on the football ground. A feature of that day’s proceedings was the flight of aeroplanes along the line that the Prince took. They had been present on the first day, and like a flock of birds they circled over him at his farewell. It was a new feature in Melbourne processions. He did not lay foundation stones or unveil many memorials. When at the Agricultural Show they insisted on his unveiling that one which commemorates his visit to the grounds. But there was an absence of this moral feature, which in the past has cemented and sealed our best institutions. I felt that had his advisers responded to our appeal for him to place a wreath on Batman’s monument, that act would have nobly harmonized with his last words to the New Zealand people, when he said Your achievements since the country was annexed to the British Crown only eighty years ago justifies the almost visionary confidence of your pioneers, and constitutes an amazing monument to the enterprise! of those who have so rapidly civilized and developed the land. Both races of New Zealand the Hakeha and the Maori are essential to the life of the Dominion. They had successfully demonstrated, he held, that a European race might take over a new country without doing any injustice to the original inhabitants. That ideal that he believed had been worked out in New Zealand we have already seen was in the mind of John Batman, and as the Prince was here on the Anniversary of Batman’s arrival at Port Phillip, and on that of the anniversary of his purchase of the land, Melbourne’s 85th birthday, from the historic standpoint it seems to me that a feature of his work should have been the honouring of the memory of Batman. I cannot but believe that had it been left either to the Prince himself or to General Sir G. B. B. White, the Commonwealth Organizer, it would have been gladly done, for spontaneously he placed a wreath on the tomb of W Washington, and while in Canada he placed one on the statue of Macdonald. In planning his tour the historic position was not sufficiently regarded. He travelled west as far as Colac, and never reached Portland, the historic home of the Henty’s, and in crossing the Pacific no provision was made for him to visit Tahiti, where Captain Cook observed the transit of Venus. True, he visited the Melbourne Club, our oldest club, and went to Ballarat, Bendigo and Castlemaine, and descended into one of the deep mines, the Unity mine, and happily reminded the miners that he, too, was deeply interested in a mining district in England, for he was The Duke of Cornwall.

We welcome him, however, almost solely as the Prince of Wales. Alfred G. Lumsden, of Glenferrie wrote this new verse for the old song:

> God bless the Prince of Wales!
> The children of Australia their song of welcome sing,
> And hail with hearty greetings their Prince and future King.
> When in the cause of freedom Great Britain fought and won,
> She found the blood of heroes bequeathed from sire to son.
> And now amongst her children all loyal thought prevails,
> God save the King and Empire, God bless the Prince of Wales.

Admiral Halsey, Colonel Grigg, Lord Louis Mountbatten and others of his staff had a joint welcome with the Prince. There were not so many people on the streets at the Duke of York’s (the King)
reception, yet there was a multitude, and during his stay Melbourne day and night put on such an appearance as it had never in its history before, and has not since been equalled by war celebrations or the visit of the Prince of Wales. In the streets were many triumphal arches of various designs.

Venetian masts were erected along the side of the paths at given distances; this was repeated at the Prince’s visit. Wreaths of verdure stretched from mast to mast; banners and flags intermingled with the verdure; the city was pavilioned in colour. The Chinese had all their Oriental decorations in Little Bourke Street, and also marched in procession along the street headed by the Chinese band, with the long Chinese dragon following. In the midst of the demonstrations Labour held its annual carnival. The municipality was not alone in the work of decoration, but private firms lavishly seconded them in a display of loyalty. The illuminations at times were inexpressibly beautiful. The dome of the Exhibition rising above the city was an orb of coloured light; so also that of the Law Courts, and all the public buildings were illuminated with innumerable gas jets. These illuminations were often emblematic or expressed our special welcome to the representative of the Chief Magistrate of the Empire. All Melbourne seemed to be on the streets; the greatest crowds surged along Collins and Bourke Streets and around past the Parliament Houses. Thus our Commonwealth commenced with a glorious exhibition of devotion to the Motherland. My memory goes back to the arrival of the Duke of Edinburgh in the colonies in 1807, and while he was greeted with enthusiasm fifty years ago, yet nothing has paralleled the welcome to the Duke of York, our present King. The Duke had been here before, with his elder brother, Albert Victor; that was in 1881, the year Batman’s monument was erected. Then he was Prince George, and his father the Prince of Wales. They visited Alcock’s factory, and Alcock gave each of them a billiard cue. They said they would play billiards with them at Sandringham, alluding to the English home of their father. They wrote the story of their cruise in The Bacchante in two large octave volumes. It is interesting reading, and the references to Melbourne recall Victoria as she was in the early eighties. The railway had not been completed from Adelaide, and they rode a part of the way in Cobb and Co.’s coaches. Tom Cawker, who is still alive, drove them. They took train at Hamilton for Melbourne. Our Victorian fleet lay out in the bay. It was the ironclad Cerberus, built on the Tyne, for the Defence of Melbourne, the old wooden frigate Nelson, and two small vessels, The Victoria and The Albert, which our Government had willingly sent to help the Motherland. General White wrote to me that the reason he did not wreath the monument was pressure of work, this was true. His health broke down at that time, and when there was trouble at Suakim. Berry was in power, but his Ministry was trembling in the balance, and Lord Normanby was our Governor. The Princes coming overland arrived in Melbourne at 4.20 p.m. on the 25th of June. The Bacchante had damaged its rudder, which was repaired here. They sailed away for Sydney on the 8th of July, passing out of the Heads on a moonlight night at 12.30. While they were here the news of the shooting of Garfield, the President of the United States, was received.

Let us pause here in our story of these Royal visits to think once again of Batman, in order to ascertain the facts about the building of Batman’s monument, I called on the builder, J. W. Brown, of Cardigan Street, Carlton; he died this year at the age of 92, and was the oldest monumental mason in Melbourne, and knew the Cemetery well. This sketch, made by Joseph Anderson Panton, Police Magistrate of Melbourne. It represents the spot where (+) the remains of John Batman were interred in 1839. These papers are now buried in the plinth of the Public Memorial which was initiated and successfully carried through by John J. Shillinglaw. This picture was on their subscription list, it was found in the bottle placed in the plinth in 1881, and when they took down the monument in 1922 a photograph of it was sent to me by the late Mr. Ellery. He worked under the direction of J. J. Shillinglaw, who was Secretary to the Memorial Committee Shillinglaw found among the archives of New South Wales the report of Charles -nines, the first surveyor of Port Phillip. He had made a very special collection of Australian books, and it was he who gave the epitaph, with the word Circumspice. Mr. Brown. The movement itself was initiated by the Honourable Sir William Henry Fancourt Mitchell. He was Chairman of the Memorial Fund Committee. The idea of the monument originated with certain remarks he made at a banquet at Kyneton. He was a remarkable man. He arrived in Tasmania a very early age, and came to Victoria in 1840, and engaged in sheep farming. He
entered Parliament in 1856, and passed through several offices there, and in 1870 succeeded Sir James F Palmer as President of the Legislative Council. He was five times re-elected and continued in office until the year of his death. He died on the 4th of November, 1884. He was not able to be present at the unveiling of the monument; this took place on 3rd June, 1882, and among the assembly were George Coppin, the founder of the Old Colonist Movement; Mr. Weire the son-in-law of Mr. Batman, who at that time was Town Clerk of Geelong. He was accompanied by his son, A. Batman Weire, who is still alive. Dr. Ambling, G. F. Belcher, Gordon A. Thomson Joseph Solomon, Robert Russell, Henry Creswell, Edmund Finn (Garryowen), William Gumming and the Mayor, who, in the absence of Sir William Mitchell, presided over the service. A guard of honour from The Cerberus presented arms, while a band played the National Anthem The Cerberus while at Queenscliff had a serious accident with a torpedo; when about to discharge it blew up and destroyed a boat’s crew. These early eighties, when Batman’s monument was erected and when the young Princes visited us, was the age of the big-wheeled bicycle (Penny Farthing) and other beginnings of present-day machinery and appliances. In 1914 there was a wreath placed on the monument during the Governorship of Stanley and the Mayoralty of Hemiessv, and yet later using their terms the Act of Parliament was passed to destroy the ground. A picture of the unveiling is given in the previous chapter. We believed that if we had induced the Prince to wreath the monument it would have saved the ground. He was apparently prepared to do it, but his health broke down, and General White’s letter reached me on the Saturday before the event, which was to have been on Sunday afternoon, saying that he could not be present.

I saw the Duke of Edinburgh of Edinburgh festivities in Dunedin, New Zealand. His tour was in 1867 and 1868. He was Captain of H.M.S. The Galatea. The story of the cruise is given us by Milner and Brierley. The ship came into Port Phillip on the 23rd of November, 1867, the 24th being a Sunday. The Duke remained on his ship. He landed at Sandridge on the 25th, accompanied by General Chute. Our volunteer Cavalry escorted him to the city. He was welcomed on the way to Emerald Hill. Even at this time the Druids were in evidence, and they formed a grotesque feature of the Friendly Societies division of the procession. The Duke came over the old Princes Bridge and there was an arch at either end; there was also one at Emerald Hill. At the bridge, the crowd was tremendous. Melbourne’s population at that time was only 150,000, but a hundred thousand people came in from the country. The road was kept and the crowd held back by the 14th regiment. A great crowd stood near where the new Town Hall was to be built: 12,000 children filled the space opposite the Argus office. He passed under triumphal arches.

A feature were the illuminations at night time. When the Galatea came into port the country was illuminated with bonfires that could be seen from the ship and all the shipping was lit up: and while the Duke was in the city the Public buildings had illuminated mottos and images of The Galatea on them. Children were entertained at different points. The Collingwood Council had 4000 of them in Dight’s Paddock and distributed medals among them. The Chinese The Chinese quarter in Bourke street was described as Celestial. The electric light was on exhibition by the Telegraph Department. It was exhibited at five points – Parliament House, the Electric Telegraph Buildings, the Observatory, Flagstaff Hill, and Williamstown.

The Protestant Hall was illuminated with a picture of William the Third crossing the Boyne, and here a riot took place. The Duke visited the Agricultural Show, which is now called Royal, but was then called the Port Phillip Farmers Society Show. Six hundred of the Old Colonists waited on him with an address.

A well-remembered event was the ball at the old Exhibition, the last time the building was used for a great event. There was an illuminated fountain, a thing of great beauty, the changing form and colour being the work of a great mechanic and artist. At the fireworks on the Yarra Park there was an enormous representation in fireworks of Britannia with the dhalten in the distance. These huge and artistic displays of fireworks, such as Payne’s fireworks in the nineties, have drawn great crowds, and they were anticipated by this display during the visit of the Duke of Edinburgh.
On the night of the 29th the Germans had a torchlight procession. A thousand marched, headed by the band of the 14th Regiment, to the Public Library. There they met the Prince and addressed him in German, while the Liedertafel sang German songs; at the request of the Duke they sang Becker’s March, Frisch die ganze Compagnie, and the Prince replied to their address in German. They closed the proceedings with their true National Anthem, which is without the militarism of The Watch on the Rhine, Was ist der Deutschen Vaterland? “What is the Germans’ Fatherland? He met the four great high schools of Melbourne at the Old Exhibition Building, and distributed their prizes Church of England Grammar School, the Wesley College, the Roman Catholic College, and the Scotch College.

During his stay Lord Newry and others gave a performance at the Haymarket, a theatre long since gone from among us. It was the greatest amateur performance ever beheld in Melbourne. He left Williamstown on the 4th of January, 1868. Before leaving he laid the memorial stone of the Graving Dock. The golden trowel with which he laid that of the Town Hall was of the quality of the sovereign, and weighed 22 oz., that of the Alfred Graving Dock (Williamstown) was of solid gold, and weighed 50 ozs., and was beautifully engraved with representations of the native flora, and other memorial emblems.

It is said that the first time Melbourne had any general illuminations was at the marriage of King Edward the Seventh, sixty years ago, when as Prince of Wales he married Princess Alexandra. These illuminations partook of the Chinese lantern display. These primeval lights out among the old gum trees were no mean illuminations. These were the days when you went to the fireworks in the Cremorne Gardens. Our public buildings were gracefully illuminated on the night of Queen Victoria’s Jubilee, 1877.

It is not generally known that the father of the deposed Empress of Germany visited Melbourne in 1850. He was then only nineteen years of age, and made himself very agreeable to the people. He is well known as the Prince of Schleswig Holstein. He was entertained by the first German immigrants, and kindly received by all. It was his immature and naive days, when he danced with many fair Melburnians.

Of the things in this chapter I am chiefly an eye witness, but they are also retrospective, prospective, circumspective, and as I have said I hope not out of perspective. Our city contrasts with Sydney. George Street in Sydney ran along the line of the bullock dray tracks, the drays which came into Sydney Cove with their produce in the early days of settlement, while Melbourne shows the plan of the surveyor from the commencement. Robert Russell laid it out in squares, and Hoddle continued it on the same lines, giving us broad main streets. The four principal of these are Collins and Bourke running east and west, and Swanston and Elizabeth running north and south. Here at the intersection of these streets is the centre of the city. The Town Hall at the corner of Swanston and Collins Streets, and the Post Office at the corner of Elizabeth and Bourke Streets. The foundation stone of the Town Hall was laid by the Duke of Edinburgh, and the memorial stone has this inscription:-

This Foundation Stone
was laid by
H.R.H. The Duke of Edinburgh,
29th November, 1867.
James Stewart Butters, Mayor.

One day I met Mr. Lawrence, the builder of the hall, in the street, and he told me he had been to an Old Pioneers meeting and heard one of their number deny that the Town Hall had any foundation stone. That is something like the man who denied that Batman was here in 1835. Strange to say no one at the meeting contradicted him. Mr. Lawrence turned to a friend and said, I built the hall, and I know that there is one, but Mr. Lawrence was not a public speaker. An older Town Hall preceded this one, and before we had a Town Hall the Mayor of the City would convene a public meeting in a public house. Thus Henry Moor called a meeting in the Royal Hotel, to receive
the report of the Hospital Committee, on the 7th of February, 1845.

The Block, on which the fashion and beauty of Melbourne is seen, is Collins Street from Swanston Street to Elizabeth Street. In the centre of the City are three good arcades, the Royal, the Block and Centreway. The Royal runs off Bourke Street, and was built in 1870, and the Block off the Block, while the Centreway is on the other side of Collins Street running to Flinders Lane. This rectangular city contrasts with such a trapezoidal city as Sydney. Melbourne is undulating, Sydney often abruptly hilly. In Sydney you find a magnificent building in some out-of-the-way place, while the building of Melbourne has been worked systematically from the centre to the suburbs. You approach Sydney through one of the grandest harbours in the world, in deep water right up to the Circular Quay, but Melbourne is five miles from the mouth of the Yarra. When I first came here before the Coode Canal was cut, we ran the gauntlet of the chemical works, the soap works, and the tanneries. There are many things still left to regale the senses, but nothing so offensive as in these days. The sights, sounds and smells made it almost unbelievable that this was once one of the most beautiful streams. It still has its factories, timber yards, and a long line of busy wharves. The shortening of the stream came in 1883 and 1884.

Mr. W. J. Carre-Riddell, on being re-elected Chairman of the Board of Works in 1919, made
the following comparison between Melbourne and Sydney. In Melbourne the working expenses for water supply were on the average 7 shillings and 6 pence per house per annum, exclusive of the cost of connection, while in Sydney they were 20/- per house. On the sewerage side, the working expenses in Melbourne were 11 shillings and three pence per house, and in Sydney they were 21 shillings per house. Another feature was that they had 151,000 houses connected with sewers, whereas Sydney had 139,000, or 12,000 less, though Sydney had 25,000 houses connected before the Melbourne Board came into existence. Of houses supplied with water in Sydney 50,000 were not connected with sewers, and in Melbourne there were only 10,121, so that Sydney had practically five times as many houses that were unconnected. He thought that this was an answer to the criticism recently advanced that they were too slow in getting along with the work. Melbourne had 513 miles more of sewers than Sydney, but, on the other hand, Sydney had 860 miles more of water mains than Melbourne, including nine small towns outside the metropolis. The debt of the Sydney Board was £15,300,000, whereas the debt of the Melbourne Board was £12,30,0. Another interesting fact was that the population of Melbourne had increased by 200,000 in the past ten years, a very high increase. With an average of 5.68 of inhabitants per house, it would be a very high increase for any city. The population of Sydney was very difficult to estimate, but, estimating it on the basis of 4.5 per house, the same as they calculated in Melbourne, it was 875,000, as against 744,000 here on the same basis, or 131,000 more than in Melbourne. It has been proposed to carry Batman Avenue down past the railway stations to Spencer Street, and there would be new bridge. The Yarra is continually changing its appearance. Here we can see the evolution of the city. First the ferry boat plies across it, then we have the punt, then the wooden bridge. In 1846 Latrobe lays the foundation of the one-arched bridge, and it is opened on the 14th of November, 1850. Since that time bridges have multiplied; at nearly every important street or road we can cross the Yarra. The foundation to the splendid three-arched bridge was laid on the 7th of September, 1886. Towers and spires are yet to be erected over St. Paul’s. Latrobe was a literary man, the friend of Washington Irving, and his and Hoddle’s influence, united with that of Robert Russell certainly made for refinement and improvement.

Our broad streets lined with the elm, the oak, the plane, and the Moreton Bay fig trees are an evidence of their aesthetic taste, while many of these tree-lined streets came after them. Yet it was Latrobe’s desire for parks and gardens, and Hoddle’s for broad streets that gave us these noble thorough fares. As you wander through the Botanical Gardens you can see a wattle bearing Latrobe’s name, a fitting symbol of the Moravian Missionary. I know of seventy parks, gardens and cultivated public squares within a radius of ten miles of the Melbourne Post Office. This foundation on ethical and aesthetic lines saved the city, and if these can be so beautifully kept
and adorned by the palms and shrubbery of Australasia, our Old Cemetery could have been preserved and beautified without much expense.

When gold was discovered in Ballarat, Bendigo and Castlemaine, there came that marvellous growth of the city, which filled the brain of the world with wonderment, and left Melbourne permanently a great city. This rush from all parts of the world did not overpower us because of the prevision and provision of our founders. Therefore we have beautiful drives like Alexandra Avenue along the southern bank of the Yarra. This is appropriately overlooked by the Temple of the Winds, which W. R. Guilfoyle had erected in the Botanical Gardens as a memorial to Latrobe. The Australian feature in it is the capitals to the columns. In place of the acanthus on the Corinthian columns we have the staghorn fern. From this spot you have a panoramic view of a large part of the city outside the Gardens. Before Government House is the Queen Victoria Memorial and Lady Janet Clarke’s memorial, and on the 21st of July, 1920, Sir Ronald Ferguson unveiled, in this ground, the equestrian statue of Edward VII. Probably the best drive in the city is along St. Kilda Road, which runs from Princes Bridge to St. Kilda. Sydney has nothing that corresponds to this. Since 1901, when the Duke of York (now George V.) and his consort visited us, it has been continuously beautified. On either side of the road are motor avenues which are motor drives, while the central road is reserved for the trams and horse vehicles. Along this way are several memorials. At the entrance to it is the statue of the white knight, Edmond Gerald Fitzgibbon.

The Town Clerk is credited with having encouraged this beautifying of the city. On the opposite side is the bronze statue of Robert Burns. It arose in 1904 out of a proposal by George Gibbs, a member of the Caledonian Society. He suggested it at the time that Sir Malcolm McEacharn was President of the Society. It was taken up with enthusiasm, Mr. Gibbs succeeded to the office of President himself, and visited Great Britain in 1902. There he interviewed sculptors, and their designs and those of local artists were submitted to the Society on his return. R.A. Lawson, an eminent artist was appointed sculptor. His statue is a replica of that in the town of Ayr, the birth place of Burns. It was brought to Melbourne towards the end of 1903, and unveiled on Saturday, the 23rd of January, 1904. Burns was born on the 25th of January, and Australia was founded on the 26th so the anniversary of Burns birthday precedes A.N.A. only by twenty-four hours. At the same season the birth of the poet ploughman and the foundation of Australia are celebrated. It was unveiled by Sir John Madden, Lieutenant Governor of Victoria. George Gibbs presided, and delivered an oration on Burns, which was published in the succeeding issue of The Scot at home and abroad. Within the pedestal was placed a brief historical sketch of the Caledonian Society. Various Scottish Societies had preceded it. It originated in the year 1884, and the first President was Sir James MacBain. He was for many years President of the Legislative Council of Victoria. The statue was presented to the corporation of the City of Melbourne.

Sir Malcolm McEacharn was then Lord Mayor, and he accepted the monument on behalf of the city. Professor Peterson of Ormond College presented a wreath of Scotch thistles, which were placed on the pedestal. The service closed with the singing of Burns universal anthem, Auld Lang Syne.

Some distance down St. Kilda Road, on the Domain side, is the statue to Lord Linlithgow (Hopetoun), and not far away from this is the memorial to our South African soldiers. Government House itself is memorial like. It is in the centre of parks and, situated on a hill, and thus overlooks the Yarra to the north and the Domain to the south; in the east are the Botanical Gardens and to the west St. Kilda Road. This long avenue is fringed with vegetation, where not only do we see the flora of Australia, but the symmetrical trees of the motherlands.

In the Domain Gardens that are before Government House and off St. Kilda Road is a pavilion for the band where the Anzac Memorial Bands play. From the first, Melbourne had military bands; the band of the 40th regiment that was stationed here is reputed to have been one of the finest. It played on Batman’s Hill in early Melbourne. Latrobe intended that the Botanical Gardens should be on this side of the river. The reserve for them stretched from Batman’s Hill to the river. The rapid growth of the city soon made this impossible, and both Government House and the gardens
crossed the river.

The contract for the removal of Batman’s Hill to make room for the extension of Spencer Street Railway Station was let to Messrs Overend and Robb on the 10th of November, 1863. The material was thrown into the adjoining swamp, and in 1805 Batman’s Hill was no more, and even the name of Batman for the locality vanished from our maps, and the only elevation left to us near the banks of the Yarra is that on the other side of the river on which Government House stands. Government House was completed during the time that Bowen was Governor. He, writing to the home Government, said that it had taken nearly five years to build. It was commenced in 1872 and finished in 1876, and he claims that it was the largest Government House in any colony, and surpassing that of the Lord Lieutenant of Ireland or the Viceroy of India.

He said that Mr. Wardell was architect, and it was built in the Italian style of architecture. Up to that time the Governors had resided at Toorak. To-day they are temporarily housed at Stonnington, Malvern, the Governor-General occupying Government House.

The Ocean Road links up with the Melbourne-Geelong Road, which runs into Dudley Street, and Dudley Street terminates at our Cemetery. This road with a subway under the railway, properly cared for, would make one of the finest motor drives in the world, and would have been a great memorial road terminating in Australia's greatest memorial ground. It easily connects with Sydney Road, which in the north corresponds to St. Kilda Road in the south. Wide and beautiful it runs by our University reserves.

Melbourne is probably behind Sydney in her great stores, although it is doubtful if Sydney has a suburban emporium like Foy and Gibson's in Smith Street, Collingwood. Mark Foy was born in King’s County, Ireland. He came to Victoria in the Champion of the Seas in 1858. He started in business in the country, and it was only in 1870 that he commenced business in the City. But by far the greatest thing in the world of shops in Melbourne is Cole’s Book Arcade. It is the largest book shop in the world, having nearly two million books on its shelves. I used to wander down there on a Monday in the nineties to see what new books had come in by the last mail, and ascertain if there were any new sermons that I might purloin from British preachers, and repeat them at the Antipodes without any danger of the authors arresting you for stealing their thunder. At certain hours there is a string band playing in the arcade, and at one time you could retire to the refreshment room and get biscuits and the best of tea for threepence, and see yourself in the mirrors all over the room. Old Mr. Cole is not selling books now; he died recently at the age of 80 in his home at Essendon. One day I met him in the arcade, and he picked up a new book of the Saxon series that had just come from England, The Best Thoughts in the World, and gave it to me. A venerable old book-man, who in his old age was struggling to make Melbourne a temperance city. He was described in the Archives as a unique personality. He had, as a youth, known hunger and had slept on doorsteps in London, but he ventured forth and comes to Melbourne almost contemporaneously with our other two great booksellers, Mullen and Robertson, and opened a small business in Paddy's Market, the old market that stood on the site of our Eastern Market in 1868. He remained in his first shop until 1873, and it was there that W. T. Pyke, who now manages the business, entered into his employment on Cup Day.

He opened in the present arcade which has gone on growing and expanding under the rainbow sign. Henry Gyles Turner told me that he lent him the money to start it. He left three daughters and two sons. Valentine took his father’s place in the business, Andrade is another bookseller. His firm is younger by probably a quarter of a century.

Our city has, in addition to a service of cable tramways, a colossal city railway system, with inner and outer circles. The carriages are both English and American. That is a trait of Melbourne. There are also Tait or corridor cars. In long distances you can either travel in a cozy English carriage, or ride in a long American saloon carriage. Thus we follow the ideals of the two divisions of the Anglo-Saxon world. In the city proper there is no railway station. At the south side of the city proper are the Princes Bridge and Flinders Street Stations, while on the west is the Spencer Street Station,
which is connected with the Flinders Street Station by a massive viaduct. The building of the Flinders Street Station with this viaduct is one of the greatest works ever completed in the city. Our first railway was built by the Melbourne and Hobson Bay Railway Company. Our first railway, like our first tramway, came by private enterprise, and fell into the hands of the State, as the tramways have fallen into the hands of the Municipality. In the beginning the Government obtained sixty miles of railway by purchase, and on this built up the Victorian system. Our first railway was commenced in 1853, and opened on the 12th of September, 1854. On its provisional committee were C. H. Dight, W. F. Rucker, and others who are in the Old Cemetery. The through line to Sydney was completed in 1883. One of the earliest advocates of railways was Dr. Lang. In his book on Phillip Island he advocated the use of wooden railways, thinking that our hardwoods might be used that way. He travelled overland from Sydney to Melbourne by coach, stopping at Albury and other places, and in his book he prophesied that this would be the line of the railway. It is so, and we now have 4139 miles of railway.

The Geelong Company’s line was opened to Greenwich Pier, now Newport, in 1857. Messengers were conveyed from that spot in The Comet to Sandridge (Port Melbourne).

The Williamstown branch line to Footscray was laid out and commenced by the Melbourne and Mount Alexander Railway Company, but it was operated by the Government. The first railway bridge was that over the Saltwater River, mentioned in the sketch of Footscray. Three had been built in England for the Egyptian Government. They had intended to span the Nile with them, but financial difficulties prevented their getting there; then they were bought for Victoria. One was put across the Barwon at Geelong, one across the Yarra at Church Street, Richmond. Both of these were used as road bridges; that at Church Street is now being superseded by a new bridge. The third became a railway bridge across the Saltwater River, which too was replaced in 1914 by a new up-to-date bridge. In 1802 the Moorabool Viaduct, on the line between Geelong and Ballarat, was completed. The official opening of the first Government railway, the line to Williamstown, and also that to Sunbury which was afterwards continued to Bendigo, was by Sir Henry Barkly on the 7th of January, 1859. The first railway offices were built on what was afterwards continued to Bendigo, was by Sir Henry Barkly on the 7th of January, 1859. The first railway offices were built on what was afterwards continued to Bendigo, was by Sir Henry Barkly on the 7th of January, 1859.

The Geelong Company’s line was opened to Greenwich Pier, now Newport, in 1857. Messengers were conveyed from that spot in The Comet to Sandridge (Port Melbourne).

The Williamstown branch line to Footscray was laid out and commenced by the Melbourne and Mount Alexander Railway Company, but it was operated by the Government. The first railway bridge was that over the Saltwater River, mentioned in the sketch of Footscray. Three had been built in England for the Egyptian Government. They had intended to span the Nile with them, but financial difficulties prevented their getting there; then they were bought for Victoria. One was put across the Barwon at Geelong, one across the Yarra at Church Street, Richmond. Both of these were used as road bridges; that at Church Street is now being superseded by a new bridge. The third became a railway bridge across the Saltwater River, which too was replaced in 1914 by a new up-to-date bridge. In 1802 the Moorabool Viaduct, on the line between Geelong and Ballarat, was completed. The official opening of the first Government railway, the line to Williamstown, and also that to Sunbury which was afterwards continued to Bendigo, was by Sir Henry Barkly on the 7th of January, 1859. The first railway offices were built on what was once Batman’s Hill, but is now Spencer Street. They were erected in 1858. By an Act of Parliament passed in 1883 the railways were placed under a board of three commissioners. The Chairmen of these Commissioners has passed into history. Richard Speight to whom I have referred in the sketch of David Syme, John Mathesen and Sir Thomas Tait, whose name is attached to the corridor car. He created the Victorian Railways Institute, and in 1910 presented to it his engineering library. W. F. Fitzpatrick and C. E. Norman, who recently retired (1920) after fifty years of service, working in different departments until he rose to be Chairman of the Commissioners. He was in the service when there were only 300 miles of railway, 100 engines, and a gross revenue of about £000,000 a year, and he saw it grow to a system of over 4000 miles, with a revenue of £8000. He is succeeded by Harold W. Clapp. During the visit of the American Fleet in 1908, 2,500,000 passengers passed through the Central Station, Flinders Street, in a week, the highest record for one day being 526,283.

The city railways are known as inner and outer circles, but we should also include in the Melbourne railways these that encircle the Port, and make it easy for us to get to our watering places. In the early eighties the outer circle line was commenced for the purpose of bringing the goods from Gippsland around to Spencer Street by an eastern and northern route. It started from near Oakleigh and circled through Burwood, East Camberwell and East Kew to Fairfield Park, and then linked up with the line to Clifton Hill, and followed on the inner circle to Spencer Street; this was designed to take the traffic off the southern segment, and would now relieve the Viaduct. It cost, including the price paid for the land, £298,000. A bridge over the Yarra, near Fairfield, cost £60,000, and it turned out as The Age says, a white elephant, and is now marked on the map unused. Still, as The Age believes, it may yet be of great service in preventing congestion, and in developing the northern and eastern suburbs.

We give here three pictures, one showing Swanston Street before the train ran, and the second showing our first railway station, and the third our present station. Messrs Alfred Hall and Alfred Chitty
(the numismatist at the National Museum) recently struck a medal to commemorate the origin of the railway system. Mr. Chitty contends that our railway to Hobson’s Bay was the first in Australia, and that the first locomotive was not built by Enoch Chambers, but by Langland and Fulton in 1854. One of our earliest engineers on the railways was George C. Darbyshire. He was engineer-in-chief as early as 1856.

The Government report of 1857 on the railways shows that the idea in building them was to connect the centres of population with the seaboard. In the minutes of our City Council are the reports of the first railway company’s dealings with the city. For instance when the St. Kilda railway is proposed in 1856, Cr. Bowden moves and Cr. Walsh seconds that it receive the sympathy of the council. The matter is referred to the works committee. The council thinks about the first trains as it thinks about the first omnibuses running to our different suburbs. On the 27th of September, 1858, the Hobson Bay Railway Company wrote to the council asking for permission to build a tramway from Sandridge pier to the train terminus at the port, and also from the station at Princes Bridge along Flinders Street to Spencer Street. Some objections were raised then, and it fell through, and later in the sixties it is proposed to connect the two stations by train. The end came when the viaduct was built in our own time.

On the 17th of January, 1859, the council congratulated the Government on its inauguration of the Government railway system. In a spirit of loyalty, they applauded them on their resolve to build the main trunk lines, and especially refer to the opening of the first portion of the Sandhurst line to Williamstown and Sunbury, and they express their satisfaction at the rapidity of its construction, and their pride that they can secure the confidence of England and obtain the necessary capital. The Governor replies in the same spirit, and says that it is meet that the council of the commercial metropolis should offer their congratulations. The Coal-fields of Cape Paterson son are being thought about, and it is suggested in the council that a railway be built to these coalfields; this was a prophecy of Wonthaggi. Batman’s Hill was not appropriated without a fight. The council wished to preserve it as a recreation ground, but the railways got it in 1863.

On the 28th of May, 1919, the first official electric train ran from Flinders Street Station to Essendon, and from Essendon to Sandringham. The Acting Prime Minister, Mr. Watt, declared the line open for the new service; it is a great and successful experiment, and marks a departure in our railway system. The motive energy is 100,000 horse power, and the power house is the biggest in the Southern Hemisphere. Mr. Barnes, the Minister of Railways, said that it put Melbourne in the forefront of progress, as the possessor of a splendidly equipped and up-to-date suburban system. The scheme was the largest undertaken in any part of the world; it covered 140 miles of route, and 280 single track lines, and 34 miles of siding, embracing not only Broadmeadows, but Dandenong, Frankston, and Ringwood. In addition to the power house, 15 sub-stations were necessary, and the equipment of 700 coaches. The normal number of coaches would be six to each train, and the average speed, including stoppages, 21 miles an hour, compared with 16 miles under steam conditions. The other suburban lines are being rapidly electrified.

There have been but few disasters on our railways. However, two should be mentioned, the one at Windsor in 1874, and the one at Richmond in 1910. Our railway service is not dependent on atmospheric conditions, nor have they played any prominent part in the development of the railway system. The first settlement here took into account the water supply, and the pioneers sat down on the emerald undulations by the Yarra, but this patriarchal life did not create the railway system. When Dr. Lang, in the forties, advocated railways, and contended for wooden ones, the evergreen forests with their store of hardwood did enter into the argument, but his scheme was not adopted, and agricultural life neither created nor directed the development of our railway system. The railways came in the second period of our history, the gold era. Our first railway was suburban, uniting the port with the city. Our second commercial, connecting Geelong with Melbourne; and those that directly succeeded it were dictated by our mineral discoveries, and Melbourne was united to Ballarat and Bendigo; then we seemed to think of the farmer, and the Ballarat line was continued to Maryborough, and the Bendigo line to Echuca. Our chief concern then was more political than rural, and we
tied ourselves up to Sydney and Adelaide. We have gone on ignoring the call of the country. True, in the eighties we heard the call of the Mallee, yet its voice to me seemed to sound more feeble than the cry of the coalfields of Gippsland, and our railways extended into that eastern mountainous district. The flowers may bloom at certain seasons, but the leaves of the forest are evergreen. If the childhood of mankind had been spent in Australia it is questionable whether man would ever have had an Easter festival.

For we always are green,
And the trees in this strange clime
All unfaded are seen.
Thus the folks who came hither,
Can most kindly recall
That few winters will wither,
And no autumn is fall.

Our railways are not poetic, they are determined by economic conditions. The railway man goes on his way like the man in the factory absorbed in his work. He hardly ever notices that the country makes changes in springtime. In fact, all Australia has been in that condition, and Wattle Day is a matter of the twentieth century. In England and America, the seasons dictate to the people. In the central and northern States of the United States, the thermometer sinks in winter to twenty degrees below zero, while in the summer it is nearly as hot as it is here. We have not this difference: our indigenous vegetation marks the spring and summer by flower rather than foliage. At the end of August, or in the yellow-haired September we have a day when the city bursts into yellow bloom; old gold is the colour of the Anzac. This kind of thing breaks into the mind of the railway man as it does into that of the broker on the Exchange, who listens on that day to the singing of some great prima donna on the streets.

Wattle Day has been moved about; it is like Easter, as it seems to have no certain day on the calendar. It is only the beginning of spring, when we exalt the national flower; this sentiment we share with New Zealand. There the national flower is the kowhai. Both wattle and kowhai are old gold, and both bloom in September, therefore we have rightly called it the colour of the Anzac; it is the voice of the spring, the aspiring from the soul of the young man.

As the springtime comes round, the world is unbound To freely its powers employ The youth of the year with its passion is here, The cold and the cloud to destroy. This is the spirit of the Anzac in nature. This national flower service arose to foster Australian sentiment and it can only find its full expression in the memorial idea, in the remembrance of the dead.

No they never shall die, and we need never sigh
For the sleep that came er them at death;
They had worked for the best, and sought but a rest,
And wearied lay down out of breath.
We do our greatest we follow in their footsteps.

When we build our overland railway, we follow the track of Hume and Hovell, first with our coaches, driven by horses (in these Dr. Lang rode overland), then in our trains, which coming to Albury almost run into the monument of Hume, put down not far from the river he discovered. We are changing; we are growing less materialistic, and we side-track to take visitors to Hurstbridge to pluck wattle blossoms in the district named after an old settler who lost his life in conflict with the bushrangers. The weekend brings now a special train service, and the summer has a railway time table of its own.

Late in the day we listen to the call of the country. In times gone by the train flew by wheatlands, sheep lands, pine lands, plum gardens, orchards and orange groves to some industrial centre. The result was the farmers organized; they wanted sidings with silos, where their produce could be stored and picked up, and this with the demand for closer settlement has in the twentieth century
contributed to a new development in our railway system.

A sentimental feature of the service was the erection, a few months ago, of a flagpole in the shunters yard, for the flying of a memorial flag when an employees in the goods yard lost their lives in the discharge of their duty. When Guard Sutton died, a red light was displayed at night, and a flag was flown half-mast high in the daytime.

This year we celebrate the centenary of the coming of Hume and Hovell, along whose track came the overlanders, and later the North-Eastern Railway. This year the Melburnian will try to see Port Phillip as the explorer saw it. He will visit Mt. Disappoint, Beveridge, and climb the mountain originally called Mt. Bland. He will cross the Deep Creek, the Keilor district, Sunshine, and the Werribee on his way to Lara and Geelong, the nearest places to Melbourne that Hume and Hovell touched. We will discuss the quarrel between the two men, and laugh again at their fighting about their only frying pan, until in their anger they destroy it. Hovell found himself dependent on Hume. Hume was as great a bushman as an aboriginal. It is said he used to amuse himself when a station holder by tracking his stockriders and finding out by their tracks what they had been doing in the day. O’Hara Burke hadn’t a bush brain, hence the failure of Burke and Wills Expedition. Mitchell knew his danger, and always kept a native with him, so that when he lost his way the native would track his steps back to the old camp. Hume’s services are inestimable. The country had been declared by the chief surveyor of New South Wales as uninhabitable. It had been condemned alike by Collins and Wright, and Hume found the snow-clad mountains, the great rivers, and the fertile land that Mitchell called the Happy Land, and we should not forget in our rejoicing the convict servants and the others who accompanied the expedition. Thomas Boyd, one of the party, lived down to 1883. He was then eighty-six, and signed a document giving to Hume the full credit of leading the expedition to safety. Ernest Giles, the explorer of Central Australia, as on our goldfields, and his first employment on leaving the fields was as a clerk in the Melbourne Post Office.

The tramways are the complement of the railways, The Tramways Act of 1884 authorized the use of streets for tramways, and in the following year they were running. Our first tramway was that running to Richmond. We have drawn both on Britain and America for our models. Although in no other city have I heard the front car in which is the gripman, called a ummy, three yet I cannot conceive it to be a word coined here. Our street cars are chiefly cable, but are being gradually electrified. They passed out of private hands on the 1st of July, 1916, into the hands of the State, but they are practically city property, and were fully in the hands of a Tramways Board on which the city is represented in the November of 1919. We have accepted the electric light, the city proper is so illuminated. It was introduced in 1892, and several of the suburbs have used it. But withal we have not discarded gas, and in our public balls we often have both, so that if one fails we fall back on the other. And on our railways the locomotive is still ready to retake its place if electrification fails. But on our tramways, once the cable tram goes, it goes forever. The first electric tram that ran from the city was that to Hawthorne, along the Batman Avenue. It was once thought that Williamstown or Geelong might outrival Melbourne. Dr. Thompson went to Corio Bay, and in Geelong built his house, Kardinia, giving it his native name for the sunrise; but it only has a population of 40,000 inhabitants. Williamstown, too, was thought of as the capital, but it is only a seaport suburb of Melbourne. That is where the great ocean-going vessels unship and reload and leave for Europe. Port Melbourne rivals it, even in that class of shipping. Melbourne is therefore alone the metropolis of Victoria, surrounded by many suburbs and pleasure resorts. We have shown in our chapter on Representative Institutions that twenty-two suburban divisions of Melbourne are called cities, and there are towns and boroughs and shires within the network of the city, many of them beautiful spots that we run to by char-a-banc. Mt. Macedon, Warburton, Gembrook, Healesville, the Werribee Gorge, Warrandyte, and the many seaside resorts, that we aim here to bring before the mind of the reader.

The best part of the journey from Melbourne to Mt. Macedon is the climb up the mountain. On the way to it you pass through an interesting country, with many memories of the pioneers, through the
Keilor district and over Deep Creek and the Upper Maribyrnong. Diggers Rest is the old camping ground of the miner, who in the fifties travelled on foot or in a cart to Bendigo.

Gisborne was named after Henry Fysche Gisborne, the Secretary to Sir Richard Bourke. Its streets are planted with trees, and the State School there, as everywhere, helps to make the village attractive.

From New Gisborne you make your way towards the summit, and there you can best see the ravines covered with trees, many of which have been planted. The road passes by pleasing summer homes and villas picturesquely situated. The Governor's cottage is some distance from the road. As you climb the mountain you cross a little stream that goes singing among the dense vegetation. On one peak there is a plantation of European trees. From a point near to this you look out on the panorama of Port Phillip. On the right towards Geelong you can clearly see the You Yangs. Then our eyes rested on the bay, and we recalled the narrative of Major Mitchell. From this eminence he looked on Port Phillip, and thought of Philip of Macedon and so named the mountain, disregarding the fact that Arthur Phillip spelt his name differently to the Greek. I presume both names came from philos, love, and hippos, a horse, and perhaps he was not wrong in making the parallel. He thought he saw the tents of the first settlers, but we couldn’t make out the shipping; only the general features of the landscape were discernible. Away to the left were the Dandenong Ranges, and to the north of Melbourne the Plenty Ranges.

We could see what what appeared to be the east cost of Port Phillip. The undulating lands of Melbourne were at our feet. Brown was the prevailing colour, interspersed with patches of dark green. It was February, and the district was doubtless effected by the summer heats. Melbourne as a settled district was lost to our view; buildings played no part in the outline of our vision. We returned through Sunbury and Bulla, and as we rode rapidly along, we noticed that the war had left its memorials in this district of the pioneer. Here it was that Aitkin, Jackson, George Evans, and W. J. T. Clarke had estates. This trip is taken by the worker in the city during the holidays, and it is the summer resort of the rich man. Sunbury was named by William Jackson after a place in England, and Bulla, in the native dialect, means good. This we learn from one of E. I. Watkin’s pamphlets. His studies in Australian History and of Australian native words deserve to be remembered.

Looking east from Melbourne you see the long line of the Dandenong hills. William Morris Hughes built a summer residence among these mountains, at Sassafras, a two hours journey by motor car from the city. It is pointed out to us as we return by way of Fern Tree Gully from Mount Dandenong. One goes through Blackburn, Mitcham, Ringwood and other eastern districts to North Dandenong, and moves on to Mount Olinda, getting successive views of Melbourne and the country around. This trip in the east corresponds to Macedon in the west, but it is more diversified. While Mount Dandenong is a specific spot, the Dandenong’s are a general term for the Gembrook, the Warburton, and the Healesville mountains. And the town of Dandenong is miles away from the mountains, and derives its name from the Dandenong Creek. Fern Tree Gully, you would imagine, was a fern-clothed ravine, but it is not so; while bracken and fern abound, yet the gullies generally, in the neighbourhood, are covered with eucalypts. One passes through in the train to Gembrook. In these mountain regions there are a number of small streams. On the way to Gembrook you are surprised at the absence of any large streams. At Warburton you strike the Upper Yarra, and at Healesville the Watts River. Along the Gembrook line you pass beautiful ravines clothed in vegetation, and wonder why it is so fresh and green, and you find out that under it there is a succession of small creeks. Bayswater, the railway station, was named by J. J. Miller after his birthplace. I. Miller will be remembered as a racing man who carried on a large sporting business in sweeps. Upwey is named after Miss Tullidge’s estate; her forefathers lived at Up-wey, an old English village on the Wey River. Belgrave, after the estate of E. W. Benson. Selby, after G. W. Selby, who was at one time president of the shire. Wright, also, was named after an old pioneer. Gembrook is a township on the hills. In most places you have to go up to see the mountain. An Irishman pointed out to me that the Gembrook man goes down to see the mountain. The Church of England
minister there said to me that he was up and doing, and one when he looked at the cross on the altar at St. Giles thought that he was rather a high churchman. Gembrook, we have seen, was so named by Le Souef, because he found gems in the creek. He was one of the pioneers of the settlement and had a reserve there, associated with the Zoo, for preserving the wild life of Australia. That is now destroyed. Gembrook is 1020 feet above the level of the sea.

Warburton contrasts with Gembrook. It too, is high up (523 feet above the level of the sea), but it does not seem so, because it is in the valley of the Yarra. It was named after Charles Warburton Carr, a police magistrate and a warden. It looks best after the Yarra has been fed by heavy rains. Then the river runs in all its volume, through the folds of the tree-covered hills, and you can think of the river as Batman saw it further down, fringed with natural vegetation. It arises in Gippsland and by a sinuous course comes from the back of the mountains to Warburton.

Here in this alpine retreat they have the electric light, reflecting itself in the faraway rapids of the stream. The Upper Yarra Returned Soldiers and Sailors Association built a monument there to the memory of their comrades who fell in the great war. Warburton is especially interesting from a religious standpoint, for there are the publishing works of the Seventh Day Adventists.

Their printing house derives its power from the rapids of the Yarra. The tired Melbourne man is refreshed among these sequestered groves. All around is the Cootamundra wattle, and other forms of our flora, the leaves healthy and beautiful. The hills constantly revived by rain have a verdure hard to parallel in the surroundings of our great city. The journey to Warburton is full of historical interest. Mt. Evelyn, that we pass, was named after William J. Evelyn, a member of the British Parliament from 1849 to 1857. Wandin is the native name of a creek (Wandin Yallock); just as further on we have Woori Yallock, which is a reminder of Mordialloc. A Councillor Mordialloc, and recalls the aboriginals who dwelt in this district. Killara, although it sounds like an Irish word, is nevertheless a native name, meaning always there. Seville was named after the daughter of William Henry Smith, a settler. The Launching Place reminds us of the days when the Yarra was our chief mode of transport to this district. This was the place where the flat bottom boats unshipped their goods to be carried by pack-horses to Wood's Point and other diggings. The Yarra Junction recalls another form of transport, for there the tram line with the trolley on it runs into the primeval forest to Powell Town, the finest natural forest near Melbourne. The saw mills are at work there. Millgrove is named after the Millgrove Saw Mills, and recalls the horrible tragedy that led to the recent imprisonment of Kelly. These bush villages, Ringwood, Beaconsfield, Millgrove and such places are not only scenes of natural beauty, but often carry in their leafy dells a tale of horror.

Probably our best mountain resort is Healesville, named after Richard Heales, our pioneer temperance statesman; and Marysville, a beautiful spot a little further on, is named after his daughter Mary. At Native's Spur in this district we have the fern in rich profusion. Probably nowhere else is there such a display as we get in the gullies and glens beyond Healesville. The name Feenshaw suggests this. Once there was a small settlement here, but the Metropolitan Board of Works took it over, and it is now a State reserve. The European trees planted by the first settlers at Fernshaw are found now in a new growth of forest, and are surrounded by a dense mass of Australian vegetation; exotic trees amid primeval conditions. The yellow leaves of these deciduous trees contrast in the autumn with the foliage of our evergreens.

Thirty years ago I passed along this road, and looked down into the glens on successive lakes of fern. We see the same scene to-day from the motor car that yesterday we saw from the wagonette. The fern is still verdant and prolific, but we miss the native bear that in these times sleepily crossed our track. Both he and the aboriginal have gone. The native settlement at Coranderrk is practically no more. Fire, too, has done its work of devastation in parts of the forest, and the tall trees stand up with their naked trunks above the fern. They are dead, and many have fallen. The fire killed the eucalypts, but the ferns lived on and renewed their growth.

A surprise awaits those who descend into the glen; there they come on a mountain stream that at times rushes a torrent under the fronds, and the boulders and trunks of trees below are covered with a rare
carpet of moss.

The journey to Healesville is through Richmond, Hawthorne, Kew and Deepdene. Here you pass the Survey Cafe, reminiscent of the special surveys, Elgar, Unwin and Dendy. This cafe was in the Elgar Survey. Elgar was a merchant in the East India trade. We travel along old roads. The White Horse Road carries us to Box Hill, through the Nunawading district. Nunawading is a native word for who is coming? On we go past Blackburn, the Tunstall Potteries, and come to Cave Hill, out of which David Mitchell took his great store of lime for his building work. In this quarry alone there was a fortune. At Coldstream we see Coombe Cottage, where Dame Melba, David Mitchell’s illustrious daughter, lives. She has sung not only before the Crowned Heads of Europe, and before great audiences in London, Berlin, and Paris and other European capitals, but over and anon returns to Lilydale, and is still popular in her native city. On entering Healesville we enquire for Watts River, which supplements the Yan Yean supply of water, and we are shown the site of the great dam that is being built in this district. Here is a holiday resort where we are recreatet. Among this mountain scenery the citizen of Melbourne becomes a new creature. Healesville fills us with hope. Dum Spiro Spero while I breathe I hope.

In this district are the Mathinna Falls, Mathinna is the native word for beautiful. At the week-ends the char-a-banc rapidly translates us to ferny gullies, mountain heights, rugged cliffs, seaside resorts, and the many pleasant spots on the banks of the Upper Yarra, and it generally takes us over pioneer ground. As we ride by Wheeler’s Hill we remember that it was named after A J. Wheeler. Similarly, when you get out beyond Warrandyte and our great wattle district, Hurstbridge, you come to Christmas Hills, and are told that one Christmas it snowed there, and so they called the place Christmas Hills.

Scientists prefer to these, the Werribee Gorge and the basaltic columns at at Sydenham. Bacchus Marsh has not the suggestion of a marsh. It is 343 feet above the level of the sea, is about thirty eight miles from Melbourne, on the bends of the Werribee river. The famous gorge is five miles from the township. The place was named by Kenneth Clarke, after W. H. Bacchus, who settled in the valley in 1838. It contrasts with Gembrook, Healesville, Warburton and the various spots of interest in the Dandenong Ranges. It is a distinct place of interest to the west of Melbourne. The old elms along the main street and other thoroughfares recall the ideals of the pioneers. It has one of the most beautiful avenues on the continent. It seems to have been a loyal community, for before the Post Office stands a memorial to the men who fought and fell in the South African War, and the gates to Maddingley Park, which is perhaps the finest park ever seen in a country district, was erected by the local A.N.A., to the memory of the men who fell in the world war. It is the nearest spot to Melbourne where you can see the irrigation works. The large farms, orchards, and pastures rendered fertile and beautiful by irrigation and careful cultivation.

The University students occasionally go in a body to study the gorge. It is believed that Werribee was the original name of the river, but in 1824 Hume or Hovell called it the Arndell. Wedge called it both the Werribee and the Peel, and it was known to Batman. The name means backbone or spine. The way to the Gorge from Bacchus Marsh is along the banks of the river.

You are in the valley of the stream, and pass by scarred cliffs, past Table Top Mountain, and over the hills to the Gorge. (Lerderderg) It is the haunt of the wild fowl; the sea birds seem to have found their way to the Gorge, and you listen here to the echo among the hills. Hill overlaps hill, and through these highlands the Werribee has cut its way. Dr. J. A. Leach believes that this is the finest sight the nature lover can find around Melbourne. Returning we pass through the Melton district, and remember that it was named by G. W. Rusden after Melton Mowbray in Leicestershire.

We have plenty of bathing; we are not like Sydney with sheltered coves like Rose Bay, Watson Bay, or Manly, nor ocean outlooks like Bondi and Coogee, but yet few watering places excel our St. Kilda, Brighton, Sorrento, and Queenscliff. n ???. Sydney you cross to Botany and pass over to Kurnell where Captain Cook landed, but here we go down to Sorrento to find the historic spot where Collins men were buried, or trace the way of Buckley's escape. At Point King, half way
between Sorrento and Portsea, the first British flag was flown in Victoria. Murray, the discoverer of Port Phillip, anchored at Portsea in January 1802. He hoisted the flag and took possession of the port in the name of King George the Third. Flinders came next with Sir John Franklin as a middy, then Grimes, and lastly of that time Collins. Here the first white man was buried and the first child born, and the first marriage celebrated in Victoria, that between Bichard Garrett, a convict, and Hannah Harvey, a free woman. These went, as we have seen, to Hobart, and not until 07 years later was a settlement formed. In 1839, a party of lime burners founded the township. Gavan Dully named it after Tasso’s birthplace, Sorrento. George Coppin, by his enterprise, converted it into a leading holiday resort.

We cross to Queenscliff to look for the cave in which Buckley lived. We climb the hills and look out on the ocean, and drowsily watch the ships passing through the Rip, (The Heads) sailing from or making to the port. Shorthand’s Bluff of the old days, and Queenscliff of the present time are two very different places. Now it is armed to the teeth; a natural jaw at the mouth of the harbour, and the Swan Island batteries command the entrance. Queenscliff was made a borough on the 12th of May, 1863, and has never got any further. These watering places show us how the newer life of the city is only an evolution from the labours of the pioneers. There we go in the Ozone, or the Hygeine to get fresh air and health. The long day’s walk, the fresh luxurious bath far from the trodden path, the bodily joys that help to make us wise.

Australia’s great scullers, Trickett, Beach and Searle, belonged to New South Wales. They have been victorious over both English and American scullers, and in Melbourne we have never equalled them.

The Parramatta River and Sydney Harbour are more fitted for regattas than the Yarra River, but east of Princes Bridge is the spot called Henley after the racing course on the Thames, and here are the boat sheds, the rowing clubs quarters, the prepared embankment in front of the Government House, and the Botanical Gardens, from which 150,000 people view our annual regatta. Then the river presents a picturesque appearance, and hundreds of pavilioned boats float by the side of the course, where our schools and clubs struggle for honours. The first Henley Carnival was in the twentieth century.

Let us quickly run around our port and see a few watering places of interest. Probably the gayest of them is Mordialloc, 16 miles from Melbourne; Carrum is 23 miles. Here is the shelter of the tea-tree scrub. Parties pitch their tents and live under canvas, as the first settlers did, in the summer time. Frankston is 26 miles from Melbourne. Purves, the well-known barrister of the latter part of the 19th century, had a house there. Mornington is 39 miles from the city, in the neighbourhood of Mt. Eliza and Mt. Martha. You go by motor to Dromana, Rosebud, Sorrento, Hastings, Balnarring, and Flinders. Schnapper Point is a picturesque promontory on which stands a light-house from which you look along this side of the port. It is not named after the fish, but after a Dutch craft called The Schnapper, but it is always spelt as if named after the fish.

The Old Cemetery makes the country round Mornington interesting to us. There was a Balcombe grave there, and in trying to find out who were the Balcombe’s I found that Alexander Beatson Balcombe was the first settler in the Mornington district. His daughter, Mrs. James Balcombe Murphy, still lives on their first freehold estate, The Briars. These two boys in the Cemetery were her brothers; and here comes an interesting piece of history that I give in her own words:— “My father, Alexander Beatson Balcombe, was a son of William Balcombe, the first Colonial Treasurer of New South Wales, appointed to the position by the Home Government in 1823. Sydney was then a Crown Colony. He and his family, consisting of three sons and one daughter, arrived in The Guildford, 600 tons, early in the year 1823 (I think the 0th April).”

My father, Alexander Beatson Balcombe, was born on the 4th of September, 1811, and died on the 21st of September, 1877. He was the youngest son of William Balcombe, of St. Helena. Their residence there was The Briars. It was there that Napoleon remained till Longwood was ready for him. My grandfather was a Captain in the Navy, and retired. He became the Naval Agent at St. Helena, and
agent for the East India Company, and was Governor of the Island before Sir Hudson Lowe. His daughter, Lucia Elizabeth Balcombe, was the child Napoleon was so fond of. She was very beautiful. He made so much of her, for she had been educated in France, and spoke French well, which charmed the Emperor. His sister Jane died on the voyage to Sydney. Lucia Elizabeth afterwards married Mr. Abell. He died and she came to New South Wales with her father. This place, The Briars, in 1843 when my father first came here, was called Tichingourk, which I believe means the frogs. He had the lease of many thousands of acres. The town of Mornington was part of his leasehold, and there were no houses between his house and Mordialloc, it was all bush, and no roads, only tracks made by the bullock drays which brought supplies and took to the town what produce we had. I was born in Sydney in 1844, and came with my parents the following year. This property belongs to me. Her estate, The Briars, is named after that of her grandfather of St. Helena.

It is the original freehold of 1200 acres that Mr. Balcombe secured in the midst of his run. While he took this land up in 1843, yet he was here as early as 1838, and bought his city property then. She continued: He was a pioneer in these parts, and a magistrate. They may destroy his children’s grave, but his name is in universal history, and in that of Port Phillip forever. His grandson, Dr. Balcombe, after fighting for us at the front, is back to his practice in Collins Street, decorated as Lieutenant-Colonel, and created a member of the Distinguished Service Order. For four and a half years he was at the war. Mrs. Murphy thinks the original name of the district was Tichingourk. Gourk or gurk means the grave, or the ghost. Buckley’s name was Murrumgurk because they thought he had come out of the grave. Therefore the natives called this spot The Blackman’s burial ground, or to put it in their figurative language, the ghosts in the frogs. It has also a record of death among Europeans; at the corner of one of its parks is a monument to fifteen young men who were drowned in the bay near Mornington, on the 21st of May, 1892.

There is a motor car service from this township to Dromana, but the public generally go there by the paddle boat The Hygeia. In the journey by this boat the coast is in sight all the way from Melbourne. At certain points very distinct views are obtained of the scattered settlements. The object of the visitor to Dromana is to climb to the top of Arthur’s Seat. The ascent has been facilitated by the local Progress Association. A winding way has been made up to the lookout tower on the top of the mount; from this tower the whole expanse of Port Phillip can be seen. A magnificent sight. Twice have I had a bird’s eye view of Port Phillip, once from the summit of the Barabool hills when we looked out over Corio Bay and the northern part of the port, and this time from Arthur’s Seat, when we trace not only the blue outline of Port Phillip, and have distinct views of the Nepean Peninsula, but look away over Westernport from the entrance right up to the naval base. The reader should turn to Grimes map of 1803, and see from the notes on it how his impressions accord with these of the tourist of to-day. Near the summit is a by-path that leads to a cairn erected to the memory of Flinders, on which is this inscription:-

On 27th April, 1802, Matthew Flinders, R.A., stood on this mount, named Arthur’s Seat by Lieutenant Murray, who discovered the Bay on the 5th of January, 1802.

Franklin verified this spot 1844.

Dromana Progress Association, 1914.

These bay-side districts attract their visitors in the summer time because of their salubrity, but we go to them because of their historic interest. Hobson, the surveyor of the bay coast, names Mount Eliza after the wife of Lonsdale, and Mt. Martha after the wife of Batman. The pioneers seemed to see all the great landmarks, and as we drive along the road to Mount Martha and hear the names Fossil Beach and Balcombe Creek, we are carried back to the pioneers. They just as certainly recall the old days as the finding of the old casks and the old muskets did.

Portsea is two miles from Sorrento, where there is a quarantine station, and at Point Nepean are the batteries that defend the entrance to the port. Rosebud takes its name from the wreck of The Rosebud, which occurred about sixty years ago.
On the western side of the port are equally historic spots, and enjoyable retreats where you may fish, shoot, sail, row or study. Portarlington, Clifton Springs, and St. Leonards are on that peninsula on which Batman landed, and which was called by Flinders, Indented Head. Hotels, coffee palaces, cafes, good boarding houses, boat houses, and bathing houses are found in all these watering places. Only in the summer time, you must book beforehand.

At Clifton Springs you enjoy the mineral waters, and are cured or cleansed of your rheumatism and dyspepsia. Batman landed, some of the old residents affirm, half a mile from Portarlington, on some stones. I walked from Portarlington to St. Leonards, and came to the conclusion that what I had read in Batman's Journal was correct. However, some say that the wood cutters followed Batman and The Rebecca. The earlier boats that went there were wooden boats. Many can remember the vessels that came after these, The Despatch and The Athletic. The Edina is a little older than The Courier. The Edina has been at least forty years in the trade. The geological changes since the boats ran are remarkable. The pier was built from the water’s edge, and the goods sheds stood on piles in the water, and the bather plunged at once up to his neck in deep water. Since then the low land has been formed, and there is now a gradual descent in the beach, and the strip of land around the sheds was formed by a natural process and was not reclaimed by man. The secretary of the Library, Mr. McLean, had seen all this take place during his lifetime.

An interesting old gun stands in the reserve, bearing the date 1838, near to the Free Library. As we walked over the undulating lands we looked towards the Bellarine Hills, and visualized the landing of Batman. The name Bellarine, J. G. Saxton tells us, is derived from the native word Balia, an elbow, or a camping ground. It evidently has both meanings.

Here were built the first huts erected by the Batman party. It is difficult to find out what immediately followed his temporary occupation of the district. His party were surrounded by natives, and it was here that Buckley made himself known to the white settlers. In an early part of the book I have given a picture of Buckley meeting Batman at Batman’s Hill, but previously to this he met the party at what is now Port Arlington. This picture was painted by Woodhouse, and as I have said that the painter was indebted to the elder Nuttall for the Native and white sketch from which Batman's features were taken, but this statement is doubtful. The elder Nuttall, although an early Geelong man, may never have seen Batman. The Native and white sketch was the property of Batman’s daughter and son-in-law, and who made it originally is not certainly known. It is difficult to ascertain what were the early institutions on the Bellarine Peninsula.

I was told that the first church was the Wesleyan. The temperance movement, in spite of the large family hotels, is firmly established in the district. The Temperance Hall there was built in 1873, and the Foresters Hall was erected about the same time. Wheat growing has not been a very great success. They grow more onions than wheat. It struck me that there was an absence of streams. The gardeners and farmers have, like these in the Doncaster district, created dams to receive the rain water. To foster wheat growing, the farmers formed a company, and built a flour mill. They came to grief over it, and to-day it stands as a memorial to the failure of a pioneer enterprise. The pioneers had their failures as well as their triumphs. The railway to Queenscliff opened up the back country, and gave access to Clifton Springs.

The Swan Ponds referred to in Batman’s Journal are still at Queenscliff. Lieutenant Shortland, after whom the Bluff was originally named, accompanied Hobson to New Zealand when he became Governor of that colony. It was at Jan Juc, on the Queenscliff coast, that the whale was found stranded whose skeleton stood for so many years before the Museum in the University grounds. Queenscliff has a unique history about seals, whales, shipping, lighthouses, and naval defence. It comes in with the story of Port Arlington. They are divisions of the one district, and when our City Council was first formed they wished to exercise a sort of suzerainty over the Heads, and wished the mails from England landed there, instead of having them taken round to Sydney. However, this was not agreed to until later on in our history.
History of Melbourne - Revisited

We have done very little in golf, and our Caledonian sports are not to the front. Bowling greens and lawn tennis courts are found in different suburbs, and in the grounds of the well-to-do. Our streams were never great places for angling, but our harbours and seas always abound in fish. English fish were first acclimatized in the lake district in Tasmania in 1864, now they are in all the Australasian colonies, and at certain seasons the Victorian travels to some of our seaside districts, and catches English trout and other European fish in Port Phillip streams. In addition, however, the aboriginal Murray cod remains.

Melbourne has her boxing schools and arenas, and we can always boast that Bob Fitzsimmons became the champion boxer of the world. In taking a comprehensive view of Melbourne, we are naturally led to contrast this city with other Australian capitals. Occasionally as our narrative ran on we compared or contrasted it with Sydney. When I was in Brisbane I found that the business men there thought that there was more affinity between Melbourne and Brisbane than between any other cities. All Australian cities have their distinctive peculiarities, although there is a general resemblance.

Brisbane is the capital of Queensland, the northern State. It used to be called the Moreton Bay Settlement, and is situated on the Brisbane River, which flows into Moreton Bay. It was discovered by a shipwrecked sailor. Captain Cook thought from the colour of the sea that there was a river there. Flinders went by without discovering it. Oxley, however, found the shipwrecked sailor who directed him to the river, and later he and others founded the settlement. Captain Henry Miller, the father of Henry Miller whose family is well-known in Melbourne, was one of the earliest commandants. His great grandson is a profound student of history, and has helped us in the production of this book by his historic photographs. I lectured in Brisbane at the time of Queen Victoria’s first jubilee, and found, even at that time, the radical element there was very strong. Among other subjects I spoke on the Kings of England, and the Presidents of America, to an enormous audience. Therefore it was not surprising that many years later Andrew Fisher should represent a Queensland constituency and lead the Labor Party in our Federal Parliament. The spirit of social unrest obsessed a large section of the people in the north. In outward appearance the city is more like Sydney, although it resembles Melbourne in being situated on the banks of a river, and being subject to periodical floods which destroyed workshops and warehouses; but in addition, as in Melbourne, it prospered, a prosperity helped by Victorian investors. You cannot separate Melbourne from the development of the continent. The Queensland sugar industry is part of Victoria, and the sugar is often refined here.

Adelaide is the capital of South Australia. What is South Australia? Adelaide is very nearly in the same latitude as Sydney. Really speaking, Victoria is South Australia, and Melbourne the southern capital. Adelaide was named after the consort of William the Fourth. It is called the city of churches, and is supposed to be the godliest city in Australia, and as cleanliness is next to godliness, it is the cleanest city in Australia. It originated almost contemporaneously with Melbourne. While Colonel Light chose the site in 1836, yet Edward Gibbon Wakefield initiated the movement in England for a free settlement as early as 1829. The South Australian Association was formed on the lines he proposed, and the appointments for the foundation of the Colony were published in 1835. Therefore both colonies started out as free colonies and both cities seem to be laid out very much on the same plan, but Adelaide is before us with a statue to its founder. Colonel Light’s monument was unveiled in 1906.

Adelaide was settled by the leisured class who were unable to cope with pioneer difficulties. They had to part with their land to the men who came out to be their servants. The British workman has been the great coloniser. Its streets, like ours, run at right angles. King William Street is the chief Thoroughfare in the centre of the city, and one of its best lungs is called Victoria Square. It is a feminine sort of a city, and wears a lady’s name. There is a delicacy pervading it, and an apparent absence of vice, and South Australia was the first colony on the continent to grant woman suffrage, although New Zealand was the first to grant it in Australasia. As I was on the Victorian Council of the Woman Suffrage League, I know that women were in full sympathy with the movement. Glenelg is to
Adelaide what St. Kilda is to Melbourne, and Port Adelaide is to that city what Port Melbourne is to ours.

Largs Bay parallels Hobson Bay. Glenelg is also a river that separates Victoria from South Australia, and some wished to give the name Glenelg to our city, but the name of the English Premier was the more acceptable. Their story of exploration runs along kindred lines to ours.

South Australian’s magnify Flinders as we do, and Sturt is as much an explorer of South Australia as Victoria, and John McDouall Stewart is a rival to Burke and Wills. While we thought of the same statesmen in the beginning, and we can parallel much in the early history of Adelaide, yet we soon commenced to diverge. Governor Hindmarsh and Colonel Gawler were the antithesis of Lonsdale and Latrobe, and we have grown apart, and thus have more fellowship with Perth than with Adelaide. We, too, have contributed to build up Perth as a capital, while we have rather drawn from Adelaide than built up Adelaide.

While Perth is the smallest of the Australian capitals it is one of the most prosperous, its recent revival being due to the influx of Victorians and others to the West Australian goldfields.

Here you see the truth of the statement made by Mark Twain in his book Following the Equator. He says that the Australian women are well dressed. You see that in the remotest corners of the Commonwealth. It is observable in Coolgardie and Kalgoorlie. The women there seemed, in many instances, as well dressed as the women doing the Block in Collins Street. A carriage drives along the bank of the Swan River, and there comes from it the cheerful laugh of the gaily clad women. The equable climate and continuous sunshine of Australia permit the ladies to don their good apparel without having it destroyed by unexpected storms. Hence these unrivalled crowds of beauty in the streets of Melbourne which welcomed the soldiers back from the war.

Hobart came before us, yet our settlement at Sorrento bore that name before it was bestowed on the town on the Derwent, and Lieutenant Bowen was in the Derwent and laid the foundation of Tasmania before Collins went there. Collins found Hobart, and thus our men of the beginning are theirs. Then later Batman, Fawkner, and others from Tasmania came here, so I asked the Tasmanian Government to have fellowship with us in building the Old Pioneers Memorial, and suggested that they give us a thousand pounds. They pleaded that they did not have the funds. Hobart kept a convict settlement for many years on the Derwent. When the heat wave swept over Victoria, and towards Tasmania, we went there and climbed Mount Wellington or Ben Lomond and visit the lake district. There are still some relics of the convict age there, but you have to go to seek them. Years ago I met some of them who were transported from England, and one thinks how different might have been the history of Melbourne if Collins had brought his settlement to the Yarra. In the public park is a monument to Sir John Franklin, the Arctic explorer who was here with Flinders and who succeeded Arthur as Governor of Van Diemen’s Land, and in St. David’s churchyard, one sacred to the memory of David Collins with these words:

Destined to form a settlement at Port Phillip on the south coast of New Holland, but which subsequently removed to Van Diemen’s Land.
He died on the 28th of March, 1810, aged 56 years. His monument was erected under Sir John Franklin.

Lt. David Collins
Formed the Sorrento Settlement

When I called at Hobart on my way back from America in 1910, I found that Tasmania, under Federation, had awakened. I remember walking the crowded streets of Hobart one Friday evening, and feeling as if I were in Bourke Street.

It accepts the Australian Saturday half holiday, and therefore the shops in Hobart, as in Melbourne, are open on Friday night. Its cozy little public houses remind one of sketches in Dickens, while other of its hotels are large, and on the Melbourne pattern. Of our six capitals:

- Sydney has a population of 955,900.
- Melbourne 816,800,
- Brisbane 230,200,
- Adelaide 270,329,
- Perth 161,773, and
- Hobart 54,566.

It will be seen that Hobart is only as big as one of our suburbs. The effort to keep it as a convict settlement retarded its growth. It is only now that Curr’s Van Diemen’s Land is being wound up. These figures are up to December 1922. Tasmania has the landmarks of its early horror in Port Arthur and Macquarie Harbour. In comparatively recent times the hut of the bushranger was found on Mount Wellington. As we looked around how changed is the world; freedom has transformed Australia.

Modern aviation commenced in Melbourne in 1909 with some flights at Sunshine, arranged for a French aviator by J. and N. Taitt, concert and theatre managers. However Coppin had balloon ascents at Cremorne, back in the middle period of our history, and more recently there were balloon ascents in the Exhibition Grounds with the descent of the aviator in a parachute. The first important flight in Melbourne was that by Harry Hawker, arranged and managed by Mr. Sculthorpe, of the Sculthorpe Pictures. This occurred on the 27th of January, 1914, at Elsternwick.

Hawker gave an exhibition of flying stunts. He was a Melbourne man born at Moorabbin. At twelve years of age he entered his father’s motor repair works at Balaclava. At 21 he left for England, and eventually took service with the Sopwith Aviation Company. He became their chief pilot, and while in their service attempted to fly around Great Britain in a seaplane. In this he only partially succeeded as in his great flight across the Atlantic. His fame is now worldwide. Many of us thought he had lost his life in that journey. Leaving St. John’s in Newfoundland, he pursued the flight under
great difficulties, battling with adverse currents, and was forced to descend into the ocean when half way across. He was picked up by a Danish tramp steamer, and taken to England to receive the consolation prize of £1000. His father, brother, and two sisters are still with us. At his death it is said he was the best paid aviator in the world. He was killed while flying at Hendon, in England. He was practising for the Aerial Derby. His doctor testified at the inquest that he had advised him to abandon flying owing to his illness, and he gave it as his opinion that he had become paralysed while in the air. The post mortem examination showed an abscess extending from the spine to the thigh. His death occurred in July 1921 while the Imperial Conference was sitting in London discussing, among other subjects, a line of airships to Australia. He was a lifelong teetotaller and non-smoker, and was 32 years old when he was killed. He was buried at Hook, in England, and was honoured in his death by the Empire. Distinguished men attended his great funeral, and the Commonwealth placed a wreath on his grave.

Sir Ross Smith, who is considered to have performed the greatest feat of aviation in the world, flying from England to Australia, arrived in Melbourne on Wednesday morning, the 25th of February, 1920. When they were trying to take Jerusalem, the old maps were found to be insufficient, and the air force was ordered to make a new map. The order was issued one night, and the map was practically made the next day. When Sir Ross Smith and Lieutenant Austin photographed the whole area for 57 square miles between the British forces and the city of the Great King, such was their service that before a week expired Jerusalem was taken by the Allies. It is an interesting fact that Sir Ross Smith in his flight from Sydney to Melbourne at the close of the flight from England, through an accident to his machine was compelled to descend at Henty, in New South Wales, thus bringing the historic name into the story of the flight.

At a Parliamentary lunch in Melbourne he was presented with the promised reward, £10,000. Sir Ross Smith and Lieutenant Bennet were killed in April 1922, at Brooklands, 40 miles from London, while testing a Viking machine for a great world flight. James Mallet Bonnet was born at St. Kilda. Before the war he was an engineer in Melbourne, and was trained at Point Cook. He had been decorated by the King with the Air Force Cross. His body was embalmed and brought to Melbourne. The air has new surprises for us; inventions are multiplying rapidly. We have only started our career in the air, therefore we look for development and variety.

Thus Melbourne added another chapter to her story when the first seaplane alighted on the Yarra. That took place shortly after the Ross Smith flight, on 16th May, 1920. The seaplane was manoeuvred successfully. The aviator was Captain H. F. de La Rue, D.F.C. He brought it from the Point Cook aviation school to the waters of the Yarra. Aviation is adapted to Australia, and has advanced here more than in any other country in the world. It, however, can only take a popular form with the introduction of the airship. Captain Jorgenson travelled from England to Australia in a tank, bent on showing the world how to save life at sea. He said to me that you can always save life when you have floating power, and thus he traversed the roughest seas in a tank. To allow the lives of our citizens to depend on a delicate machine, or the supply of petrol, is contrary to the Anglo-Saxon spirit of prudence. The advance in aviation here is illustrated by the sham fight in the year 1923, fought in the air over Melbourne. The establishment of the flying school at Point Cook made Melbourne a place for observation. The air routes between the great capitals have been surveyed.

We have no mountain ranges that force our airmen above the freezing point. They can always travel at a reasonable height all over the continent. We are free from air sickness. It is not comparable to sea sickness; therefore once the way of security is found, the air becomes the highway of travel. It will also be the means of exploration over a partially explored, continent.

Already places like Cloncurry spring into vision as air stations, and Central Australia will become known to us. The Melbourne photographer points his camera to-day on the children’s tableau in the cricket ground, to-morrow he photographs the corroboree in Central Australia. It is said that the landing of the Vickers Vulcan airplane in February 1923, at Melbourne, marked a stage in the history of
aviation. Doubtless special airships will yet be mentioned in the history of the air, as the Great Britain is mentioned in the history of the sea service.

The aeroplane has been spoken of as a rival to the eagle, but it more properly resembles our great southern bird, the albatross. No eagle ever had the span of wing, the graceful aerial float, or swoop of the albatross, and there is more hope for the plane on the sea than on land, and with the albatross we may yet fly across the Tasman Sea. The newspaper, The Herald has been delivered in our seaside suburbs by aeroplane.

It is said that the first motor car seen in Melbourne was owned by an American who introduced it in 1900. He was quickly followed by Dr. Atkinson Wood who was using a car in 1901.

Our public Holidays are:-

New Year’s Day,
Foundation Day,
Eight Hours Day,
Good Friday,
Easter Monday (sometimes also the Saturday),
King’s Birthday
Agricultural Show Day,
Cup Day,
Christmas Day,
Boxing Day, and every Saturday afternoon.

Neither Anzac Day (30th April), nor Discovery Day
24th November, are holidays.

Batman Day comes so near to Empire Day that we remember him on the same day (24th May).

The founders of our city, and the defenders of our empire, are remembered together. It is on these holidays that we visit our gardens.

The holidays have not greatly differed during the last seventy-five years. There is little, if any, mention of them in Fawkner’s paper from 1838 to 1840, although he glories in the welcome given to Lady Franklin in April, 1839. She was on her way to Van Diemen’s Land from England, and stayed at his hotel. He reports that the whole town was illuminated, and that the four sides of his hotel were lit up. It is on occasions like this that the holiday spirit in early Melbourne is made manifest. Separation Day was first celebrated on the 15th of July, 1851, when Latrobe was installed as Governor; after that it was remembered on the 1st of July. On that day, in 1870, E. M. Curr gave the Argus his sketch of his father. In the fifties we were celebrating, as now, the Foundation of Australia on the 26th of January. At that time more attention was given to the days of the national patron saints, St. George’s, St. Andrew’s, and St. Patrick’s Days.

All the public offices were closed on St. Andrew’s Day 1856, and sometimes Whit-Monday was observed by the public bodies. From the first our holidays have been heydays for our theatres.

Eighty-five years ago Mrs. Clarke sang on Christmas Eve (December 24th) at the British Hotel, “Meet me at the Willow Glen,” and since that time our musical societies have entertained us with their philharmonic melodies. I don’t suppose the pioneers, any more than ourselves, always spent their holiday evenings at the best places. Salle Valentino and Rowe’s Circus seemed to be well patronized. It is said Madame Caradinni sang at the Salle Valentino.

We have seen that there are three epochs in the life of our city. Melbourne as the capital of the Port Phillip district, Melbourne as the capital of Victoria, and now Melbourne as the Federal capital until Canberra is ready. This marks the beginning of a new epoch, the third is federation; and the revolution in our life that commenced 23 years ago is as great as that which commenced in 1851 with the discovery of gold. During that quarter of a century our entire political life changed. The Labor Party arose. Our municipal life changed, the tramways became the property of the municipality, our parks were transformed, and our social life changed by the introduction of military training, when squads
of boys appeared at night time exercising on our streets. The motor car was fully introduced in its several variations; the street that in one epoch saw the bullock dray, then the horse vehicle, at length becomes alive with rapidly moving motor bicycles and automobiles. Life is growing more intense. During the war we have seen the aeroplane float over the city to scatter bills. Business has been transformed by the telephone and the card system of book-keeping, and the commercial college has arisen. The introduction of the picture theatre has revolutionized the habits of the people. Everywhere there is transformation. Melbourne seems to be essentially suited to the new life. Her founders contemplated progress. The Sydney streets are called after men like Pitt and Castlereagh, while ours have modern names, and St. Kilda tells of its modern origin by naming its streets after Inkerman and other battles in the Crimea. There is history in the names of our streets that speak of progress. The life of Melbourne since federation is a unique story in itself, which the future historian will treat as a division in his work. It is only for me to close mine with a brief circumspect of this era in which all seems transformed.

Australia stood in January 1901 dressed in a white robe, girt about with a golden girdle. Her hair was white like wool, and the sun was in her face. She was awaiting her marriage to humanity. Capital had sought her hand, and told her how her great resources would be developed with his money. The old man in the Vatican claimed her. He offered her a supreme place among the heavens upon her, and so we have named her from her history, The Southern Cross. For ages the quiet waves of the Pacific had washed her shores, and the bright emblem of patient suffering looked down from the heavens upon her, and so we have named her from her history and geography, The Commonwealth. We could not call her a dominion. Canada is one, because by conflict with the French and the Indian she arose and dominion was hers. Not so with us. We could not call her a union. We are not so much a union as a federation. South Africa is a union, but from the first we were interested in the salvation and culture of men. Transportation arose out of the beneficent work of Howard and Blackstone. They belonged to the ago when the stealer of sheep and the slayer of men were hung up together again and again, and they thought transportation was more humane. This was only the commencement of these many social reforms worked out on Australian soil which aimed at promoting human brotherhood. Therefore we are properly named a Commonwealth. It has been said by George Eliot that the noblest nation, like the best woman, has no history, and in that class Australia is placed. If you mean by that a long past with romantic records of kings, their battles and their amours, and the other paraphernalia that adorns some European books that men call history, then we have little of it; but we have the story of a people’s struggles towards civilization and a well-organized life that shall bring happiness to every member of the community. This is the ideal of the Commonwealth, whose Parliament opened in May 1901.

We were federated in spirit before we had political union, and our federation was but part of that movement towards combination everywhere at work in the world in the latter part of the 19th century. Italy, under Garibaldi, had secured freedom, unity, and independence. Germany, under Bismarck, had unified, and the United States had extended their federation by the creation of new States. The one book that stood out beyond all others in the discussion was that of James Bryce on the American Commonwealth. Our federation came with city government and state autonomy. I do not make a strong contention for State rights, but rather for individual and communal rights. Large States become a menace to the sovereignty of the union, not so cities. Paris unifies France in the days of the Revolution. Our best security is in city and district governments where the town meeting ensures the expression of the voice and will of the people. That has been menaced in Melbourne on more, than one occasion, when the Town Hall has been refused for a civic meeting, as in the case of the market and the cemetery question.

In small countries like Greece there was liberty, in great countries like Rome, strength. A great confederation is strong for defence. It combines the liberty of the small state with the strength of
the large one. Nations dare not attack, hence we plead for national federation. I was the first to put forward the idea that has since been accepted by Mr. William Morris Hughes. I pleaded for it in my anti-Home Rule lectures. A great federation ensures peace. But what would be its value were the individuals and the communities reduced to slavery? Therefore we rejoice that our Commonwealth came along constitutional lines, securing our civic and State life.

Our federation arose out of sentiment. We were not driven to it by civil war, as in America, or by pressure of circumstances, as in Germany and Italy, but from a consciousness that we are naturally one. Sir Henry Parkes asked us to remember our Crimson thread of kinship, and we carried out the policy of Dr. John Dunlop Lang. The land that separated to secure State life became one to secure Federation. The Greek Confederacy was 0110?? in sentiment. Homer and their religion made them such, and democratic Athens became the champion of the Pan-Hellenic life. They were free, yet one, in their "League of Neighbours" council, and one in their Olympic games. So with us, we treasure Mill’s idea that every man shall do and think as he pleases, so long as he does not encroach on the freedom of any other man, and we apply that view to cities and communities. This liberty is the guarantee of the permanency of any federation of the English people.

We started our federal life with adult suffrage. Melbourne had never known that condition before. It was not an article in the constitution, but became law under our first Federal Parliament. Federation was not designed to take away any inherent right of a State or an individual, but to develop these rights.

The population of all the States at federation was 3,773,801, now it is 5,634,552. The population of Melbourne was well-known from the beginning. The statistics at the commencement may not have been as well taken as now, but they were taken. Lonsdale states in a letter to Bourke, on the 24th of November, 1836, that there were 314 people here at that time, and gives their religious persuasions to Bishop Broughton. This was our first census. Arden published our first book in 1840 and gives the following as the growth of population in Melbourne, 250 in 1837, 1800 in 1838, 3000 in 1839, 5538 in 1840. He underestimates; his figures are lower than these of Lonsdale for 1836, and lower than these of Kerr for 1840. William Kerr, in his directories of 1841 and 1842, gives the population. In 1840 he says there were 6000 in Melbourne and 3000 in Williamstown and the vicinity around Melbourne, making a population for Greater Melbourne of 9000. A census was taken on the 2nd March, 1841. By that census there are 7200 people in Bourke County. Greater Melbourne must have then had a population of over 10,000. In three years from June 1837, to October 1840 we had multiplied at least twenty-fold.

We quiet down, and McCombie tells us that in 1847 there were 16,000 people in Melbourne, but in 1851 the inrush comes again with the discovery of gold, and according to an old Almanac at the end of the year we have 77,345. Hayter gives over 97,000 for the whole of Victoria, and Knibbs tells that in 1854 there were nearly 140,000 in Melbourne. We then become quiet once again, and do not reach 200,000 until the seventies. There is a steady and normal increase in population from 1856 to 1873, when Hayter brings out his first year book. Other annuals and almanacs had preceded it. It comes forth with the authority of the Government behind it. The Australian Handbook, an earlier publication in Melbourne, in 1869 gives us as only 130,000, and that of Sydney as 90,000. In its issue of 1870 it represents Melbourne as the first city in Australia with three morning dailies, the Argus, The Age, and The Telegraph. Hayter brings out his first year book with its summary of statistics in 1873. In 1888 (Exhibition time) there were 391,546, and we gather that in 1891 the population had arisen to 490,896, while ten years later (1901) we had practically the same population, 496,079, because of the collapse of the land boom.

This is a phenomenon in the statistical history of Melbourne. From that number at federation it has arisen to 816,800. The growth of population was always mercurial, and this of course was again manifested when, during the war, Melbourne became a port of embarkation. Some have tried to show that the tariff affected our population. You might say with equal truth that the beer saloon and the picture theatre altered it. The first great cause of centralization was the port. New
Zealand has her population distributed because she has an immense coastline, and many good harbours, and was established on a provincial system, under which each province had a capital. Portland can never become a port because nature made her a sheltered stretch of water near the shore, therefore we cannot look for a revival of Portland. At present the population of Melbourne is 51.35 per cent, of the whole State. In 1921 it was 05 per cent. This is seemingly abnormal, but the trend of population to the cities is seen all over the world. While we civicise the country and encourage settlement on the land, we ought not to neglect to expand and ruralise the city, by preserving our open spaces. The population of each state at federation was:-

New South Wales 1,300,305,
Victoria 1,190,213,
Queensland 493,847,
South Australia 302,107,
West Australia 179,907,
Tasmania 172,900,
Northern Territory 3750,
Federal Territory 2258.

The population of Melbourne we have seen was at that time 490,079.

Here we might look back on the Melbourne men who went for federation. In some respects men in other colonies reacted on us, or visited us. I have no recollection of Sir Henry Parkes often being here, but he visited us in 1890. A council of Australian Premiers was established by authority from England in 1885, and met biennially at Hobart. Here federation incubated, and passed through its embryonic stages. The men who went from the different colonies to these council meetings, spoke in Melbourne, and also at the Melbourne conference of 1890, which decided on the election of the convention to frame the constitution. It was here that Sir Henry Parkes threw in the full weight of his influence, which culminated in the convention of 1897. Parkes presided at this convention and dominated it. He was born in England in 1815, arrived in Australia in 1839 at the age of 24, was in Parliament in 1850 (aged 41), formed his first Ministry in 1872 (aged 57), attended the conference in Melbourne in 1890 (aged 77), died on the 27th of April, 1890 (aged 81). He prepared a will in 1893, and gave instructions that his death was not to be communicated to the press, that he was to have a private funeral, and that the New South Wales Government was not to erect a monument to him. His great book is “Fifty Years in the Making of Australian History.”

I once spoke at one of his meetings. We were in a room in a hotel in Pyrmont, Sydney, and the window sash was thrown up, and we spoke to the crowd out of the window. I, with others, preceded him, and entertained the audience with words in favour of his administration, until he, the hero of the evening, came on. He was a massive man, and I was amused to see how his admirers fawned on him. When he went to the window he found that the sash was hardly high enough for him, and he dreaded striking his head, so he remarked to the crowd that he had been built on the old fashioned plan. This was true of him, both in mind and body. He stood for free trade, and was profoundly English in his sympathies. A rugged strong man, poetic in mind and generous in spirit, but he was not always in full accord with the progressive ideas of his age, and thus he was the subject of continuous ridicule from the Sydney Bulletin. While he stands as the chief figure in the movement for federation, yet he delayed it by failing to co-operate with the earlier movers. One of the foremost of these was Sir Samuel Griffith, the Chief Justice of the Commonwealth. I heard him speaking thirty years ago at a banquet at Charters Towers, Queensland. He was dressed in a grey suit, and was a man of regular features and symmetrical build, cautious and thoughtful in speech. He led the Liberals of Queensland, and when federation came, sat first in the council of the Premiers, and then on the convention which made the constitution. Melbourne has entertained him, both as a politician and a judge. He was in public life for over 40 years. He was born in Wales, but was brought to Australia when eight years old, in 1853. He retired from the bench in 1919, in his 75th year, and died at his residence at New Farm, Brisbane, on the 9th of August, 1920.
Dr. Cockburn represented South Australia. I remember him when he was Minister of Education there. He was deeply interested in Egyptology, and as I was lecturing on Biblical Archaeology in Adelaide, he invited me to call on him. We met and he told me that he held that the Egyptian alphabet antedated the Phoenician, and as I am writing on the Old Cemetery, I may mention that he promised to send me some copies of the Egyptian Book of the Dead, which have not yet come to hand. My book of the dead reaches him before his does me. He lectured and wrote in favour of federation, and his volume of addresses in our Public Library shows the way we came. He represented South Australia in London, and his fellow colonist, Mr. Downer, had a place in the first Federal Cabinet. From the same State came. Holder, the Speaker who fell dead on the floor of the House.

The convention, elected by popular franchise, met in 1897 in Sydney, and sat for four and a half months. In 1898 their constitution was submitted to a referendum, but failed to the required vote in New South Wales. Victoria was more anxious for federation than the older State. It was submitted again the following year, and in 1899 was carried by a large vote.

Many men outside politics took a deep interest in federation. Dr. Bevan, who passed away a few years ago. I think a general sympathy with federation pervaded the Christian ministry in Melbourne. Long before Sir Henry Parkes threw his soul into the movement. Sir George Grey of New Zealand advocated it not only here, but in South Africa. As a boy I sat in the Princess Theatre in Dunedin and listened to the eloquence of Sir George Grey. He told us of the game laws, when a man came under a severe penalty for killing a hare, and he said that such oppression should never reign in these new lands. He was truly an interesting speaker. But Alfred Deakin was the orator of the movement for federation.

He was first a teacher in a suburban high school, then a Liberal lecturer, later a lawyer, then a politician, then Chief Secretary of Victoria, and lastly Prime Minister of the Commonwealth. He was a man who loved books who added literary pursuits to his labours as a statesman, who had visited England and been appreciated there, and who represented Australia at the Panama Pacific Exposition in San Francisco. He always commanded a good hearing. To my mind his speeches seemed more polished and literary than naturally eloquent, but that was not the opinion of good critics. One thing I have pleasure in relating of him is that he never accepted a title. He was born in Fitzroy, and died in South Yarra on a Tuesday morning, 7th October, 1919, aged 63. He was distinctly Melburnian, was educated at the Melbourne Grammar School and the Melbourne University. His was a remarkable career. Called to the Bar at 22, he commences at once to write for *The Age* and wins the lifelong friendship of David Syme. He was returned for West Bourke in 1879 and for twenty years he represented a Melbourne constituency in the Victorian Parliament. At 27 years of age he was in the Ministry, and later when Chief Secretary, he introduced the first Factory Act. He encouraged irrigation, and visited India for *The Age* to study it. He wrote an interesting book on India, he Temple and the Tomb, and looks through the memorials of that old land to its history and its life. This book gives one an idea of his eloquence. He was three times Prime Minister of the Commonwealth, and represented < arat in that Parliament down to 1913. The last six years of his life were in partial retirement Page owing to ill health, but during that time he visited England and America. He was buried in the St. Kilda Cemetery, and Archdeacon Hindley conducted the service. Mrs. Deakin is a daughter of the late Hugh Juror Browne, a business man who took a deep interest in modern spiritualism, and who wrote a book called Holy Truth. The widow of Mr. Deakin and his three daughters survived him.

Sir John Quick (with R. R. Garran) is the historian of the federation. He was not a Melbourne man, but represented Bendigo in our Parliament. He came here with his parents in 1854, when he was an infant two years old. At ten he went to work, yet in spite of having to earn his own living, he matriculated at twenty-one, and so complete became his scholarship that he was numbered among our foremost scholars. He wrote *The History of Land Tenure in Victoria*, and advocated the leasing system, ridiculing the idea that our mountains, like that at Macedon, could become private property.
Sir Edmund Barton was the first Prime Minister. He became an associate judge of the High Court of Australia. A prosaic speaker who marshalled his thoughts with order, and with an apparent aim at exactness of statement. He gave, says, Mr. Wise, 200 addresses on federation in New South Wales, and his audiences were seldom over a hundred. The Australians have esteemed him very highly, and always believed in his fidelity. If he sometimes had small audiences in N.S.W. he had a very large one when he spoke in the Town Hall in Melbourne.

He died on Wednesday morning, the 7th of January, 1920, at a health resort in the Blue Mountains of New South Wales, of heart disease. He was 71 years old. He received a State funeral. Like Alfred Deakin, he was an Australian native, born at the Glebe, Sydney, on the 18th of January, 1849.

Sir George H. Reid, who was the leader of the free trade movement, was late in extending his sympathies to federation, likening it to one teetotaller setting up house with tipplers, because it meant that free trade New South Wales would have to unite with five protectionist States.

We heard him speak at the time of Queen Victoria’s death, in the Town Hall on The Victorian Era. Everyone thought him a good speaker, and the great audience followed the narrative of the reign of the Great White Queen, as the Indians called her, after whom we are named, with sustained attention, and responded to his eloquent and patriotic words with enthusiasm.

He became Prime Minister, and then High Commissioner for Australia in London, then a member of the Imperial Parliament. He died recently. On the convention was Henry Bourne Higgins, now Judge Higgins. I know him because he, Mr. Barr, and myself contested Northern Melbourne at the first Federal election. He had followed the course of federation, sat on the convention, and had written a book on the constitution. He did not believe that the constitution was a finished work, and held during the election that it would not allow of the initiative and referendum, a point on which I disagreed with him. I do not think he fulfilled expectations in the Federal Parliament, but his work as a Federal Judge has received the highest encomiums from the Labor Party, and he sits in the Senate of our University. Yet I believe his influence has been negative in placing our constitution in its right place in the mind and heart of the community. The work which Marshall and Storey did for the American constitution has been done by the High Court for ours, and during the miners’ strike, which threatened to paralyse the despatch of troops during the war, we saw the Prime Minister of the country enter into conflict with a judge.

Melbourne people admired Lord Forrest, the expositor of the Liberal Party’s programme. He was a surveyor, then an explorer, then a statesman. He does not seem to have done much original work as an explorer. He followed in the footsteps of Eyre and Grey; but he succeeded where others failed. The lucidity of his addresses appealed to me. In arguing against the Labor Party’s plea for preference to unionists in the civil service, he argued that if you taxed people you could not deny them equal rights to employment in the civil service. That it was making a class distinction, and although I was a unionist, I thought his objection valid, that it was creating a class privilege which we deprecated so much in the rich. It was the Australian form of the American idea of the spoils to the victor. Lord Forrest died at sea on his way home. Let us hope that he got there.

The Honourable Isaac Alfred Isaacs is another associate judge who was in the first Federal Parliament. In contending at the first federal election that protection should be the policy of the Commonwealth, he said that England maintained her free trade policy against the world by virtue of her capital. She was financing the manufacturing interests in other countries, and therefore if manufactures grew in other lands to the detriment of her own, she still came out on the right side financially, because she drew the interest on these investments.

Bernard Wise has written one of the most recent books on the Commonwealth. He was early in the federal movement in New South Wales, but when through with his book, I felt that you cannot give any one man or any coterie of men full credit for the work. You cannot even pick out any men of pronounced genius, originality, or greatness, like that in the American Revolution. There were a great number of thoughtful, industrious, and practical men. The idea of federation was in the air, and the people took it in as they breathed. Our men did not think the constitution out
themselves to the bed rock. That it was thought out is not denied, but we derived it from America, and it was thought out by Madison, Hamilton, Jay, Jefferson, and Franklin. Deakin, in his elaborate and persuasive speech, fell back on Franklin’s illustration of the rising sun. Far back we find its roots in the British constitution, with which Hamilton was fondly in love, and beyond this again it was in the life of the ancient Germanic people, and so it naturally comes to us to preserve our Anglo-Saxon union. Some of its provisions were doubtless thought out to the very foundation, but who among these men looked along the line of evolution which brought the constitution to us? John Fiske and other writers have made us familiar with the making of the American constitution, and we know that every article came naturally out of the life of the American people, although it stands to-day a stereotyped canon.

Yet it is only such because it expresses the conclusions which resulted from the life and experiences of a hundred generations. These divisions, Legislative, Executive and Judicial, have been taken over from British and American documents.

The Labor Party, when led by Mr. William Morris Hughes, committed the supreme folly of breaking with the age-long evolution that has characterised Australia, and they declared for unification after we had separated with the hope of federation. They threw the whole country into turmoil, and one referendum succeeded another with the hope that the control of the wealth, and the institutions of the country might be centralized. Had this passed, at any time an oligarchy might have seized the Government, and then we would have had a despotism far more terrible than the despotisms of old, because it would have been sustained by all the machinery of an advanced civilization.

Mr. Andrew Fisher, then head of the Labor Party, addressed an enormous meeting in the Town Hall, and he spoke as if we could amend the constitution every ten years. America made some amendments at the beginning, and then left its constitution untouched until after the Civil War. We had only been twelve years in existence when this attack was made on ours, and our Prime Minister seemed to think it was like a building that we inhabit for ten years, and then call for fresh plans and specifications, and having received them, pull it down, or a portion of it, and rebuild according to the now design. No! Herbert Spencer has shown us it is rather a living organism, a plant dependent on great natural laws, and you cannot go chopping about its roots, nor can you put any party spirit into a constitution. It must be framed on the broad lines that give fair opportunities to all parties to pursue their policies consistent with the radical principles proven by past experience to be essential to the life of the Commonwealth. The reason a man does not marry his sister is not because there is a law against it in a book, but because nature abhors it. The plant is healthier by cross fertilization, and so throughout the realm of nature. The law in the book is but a statement of the divine law, and the political constitution must come naturally out of the life of the people. The written constitution is but a statement of the natural constitution or it is not a constitution. Therefore no party can mangle an historic constitution. They might as well challenge the multiplication table.

Turn to the proposed amendments which were rejected by the referendum of 1913. We find that Hughes and Co. were only aping the Americans, who amended their constitution early in their career to prevent a man being twice put in jeopardy for the same offence, to secure religious freedom, to extend trial by jury to civil cases, to give a citizen the right to use arms to protect himself. These were natural principles of justice which had been left out of the written constitution, but not so with the things proposed by Hughes and Co. There were six amendments proposed, only one of which was of any value, namely the power to purchase monopolies, and that was already in the constitution. The amendments proposed were:-

To unify trade and commerce,
To give to the central Government the control of all corporations,
The settlement of all disputes on the railway, whether owned by the Commonwealth or not,
To settle all industrial disputes,
To nationalize all monopolies.
There is nothing of value in these amendments that are not already in the constitution. In the preamble, section 51, to our constitution are these words: The Parliament shall, subject to this constitution, have power to make laws for the peace, order, and good government of the Commonwealth with respect to etc. This is comprehensive, and it also has special power to acquire what property it needs.

Section 51, XXXI. The acquisition of property on just terms, from any State or person, for any purpose in respect of which Parliament has power to make laws.

But while the Commonwealth has power to buy monopolies, still they should be as big as the Commonwealth, or extend over several States. For instance, we have commenced to own coal mines. Wonthaggi is a colliery district owned by the Victorian Government. We commence by the States buying or opening up their coal mines, then the Commonwealth takes possession when they have reached that stage that they are in more than one State. That is the way all our reforms have come. If prohibition is to come it must come that way. First a district goes dry, then a State, then several States, and finally national prohibition may come. You cannot rightfully coerce a State. Socialism comes step by step if it comes at all.

The tendency of the amendments was to grant power in one direction, and take it away in another. For instance, a clause was inserted depriving them of the power to handle religious and benevolent combinations. Now who can say that benevolent or religious combinations will never be a menace to the welfare of the Commonwealth. If we had passed the amendments we could not have nationalized medicine, because churches own hospitals. The security of socialism is in proper local management, as well as in general direction.

In a sense all are socialists, in that all men are in society, and subject to social laws; but all men are not national socialists, because once you are thrown out of a national business in one place you may be out of it in all places. Whereas if Fitzroy owns a business, and I get out there, I may get in at Carlton, or in Richmond, without waiting till my grievance is redressed in Fitzroy, but if all be centralized, and I am out, as the centre office get their reports from the branches, If I am out everywhere until my case comes up in some far away centre. Socialism if not communistic sacrifices the individual, and even does injustice to a State, because there are many industries that peculiarly belong to one or two States, like the sugar industry in Queensland and the pearl industry in Western Australia.

In 1842 a Mr. Bagot picked up a piece of copper at Kapunda, in South Australia, and South Australia became distinctively the copper producing country. Broken Hill, in New South Wales, is the chief silver producing community. For these, and apparently other good reasons, Australia rejected the referendum. Municipal control or ownership of industries is, however, not a distinct feature of Melbourne.

Our Senate is elected differently to that of the United States. Each State, as in America, is represented, but instead of their being chosen by the Legislative Assembly, the whole State votes as one constituency or six representatives. This is the weak point in the constitution. We have found that the American idea is right because there have been collisions between the Senate and the Assembly, and in order to get the mind of the States we have had to call conferences of State Premiers and State Treasurers, whereas by the American system the different State Governments are always represented in the capital by the Senate.

We have the advantage of America in our jurisprudence, which is federal. There is some break in America between the State Courts and the Federal Courts, but not so in Australia. You follow in natural sequence through our State Courts from the Court of Common Pleas into the High Court of the Commonwealth, and from that to the Privy Council of the realm. In America a case of counterfeiting could not be tried in a State Court because it is an offence against the Central Government. Thus there is a Federal Court trying cases of the same grade as are being tried by the State Courts, not so here.
The Courts graduate thus:

- Petty Sessions, which in civil offences try cases up to £50,
- General Sessions, Criminal and County Courts,
- Supreme Court,
- Full Court,
- High Court,
- Privy Council.

The States in America are, however, before us in codifying their laws, and along that line simplifying litigation. Both Sir Samuel Walker Griffith and Sir Edmund Barton were in the front rank of the Federalists. Mr. Barton was our first Prime Minister, and gave up his political position for a place on the judiciary. Sir Samuel Walker Griffith, our Chief Justice, got £3500 a year while his six associate judges had £3000 each. The majority of these have been in the Federal Parliament. Thus the lawmaker becomes an administrator. It is not fair to say it is all a political job. In some cases Parliament had been the school of equity and higher jurisprudence.

Our State Law Courts are in Lonsdale Street, surmounted by a symmetrical dome. The Law Courts took ten years to build, and cost £300,000. Above the facade, in William Street, sixty feet from the ground, is a splendid and appropriate statue to Justice. Some of these symbolical statues in Melbourne appeal to us because of their proper association, like that of old Father Time over the Royal Arcade, with Gaunt, the watchmaker, below. Smith and Johnson were the architects of the Law Courts. Samuel Amess had the first contract, and Pearson and Downie the second. They were completed in 1884. The old Law Courts were in Latrobe Street. The first Supreme Court in Melbourne, that was presided over J. W. Willis, was at the south west corner of King and Bourke Streets. The old Court of Requests dealt with small cases. The Police Court in early Melbourne was presided over by Major Frederick Berkley St. John. Most of the men connected with our early judiciary I have already referred to. Some general view of their works is called for here.

John Walpole Willis was made judge of our Supreme Court on the 3rd of February, 1841, but he had been preceded by Edward Jones Brewster, who was chairman of the Court of Requests, and was the first barrister in Melbourne. Willis was followed by William Jeffcott in 1843, Willis having been removed because of the many complaints laid against him. He was an upright but eccentric man. William Jeffcott was followed by Roger Therry, who a year later (1846) was succeeded by William A. Beckett. When our Colony received self-government, and was named Victoria, our first Chief Justice was Sir William A. Beckett, and at least one of his family is buried in the Old Cemetery. At the same time as Justice A. Beckett was created Chief Justice, Redmond Barry was made Judge, and in the same year, Justice Williams was made third Judge.

In 1850 Mr. Justice Molesworth was appointed the fourth Judge. In 1857 Sir William A. Beckett retired, and was succeeded by William Foster Stawell, our first Attorney-General. Our Attorney-Generals came with our Solicitor-General at Separation, or, the beginning of Victoria. In the period that stretches between Stawell and Mackinnon there were thirty-eight changes. Thomas Howard Fellows, John Dennistoun Wood, Butler Cole Aspinall, George Higginbotham, George Paton Smith, Robert Walsh, James Wilberforce Stephen, William Mountford Kinsey Vale, Henry John Wrixon, John Gavan Duffy, Sir Samuel Gillott, John Mark Davies, James Drysdale Brown, and William John Evans held office once only, while Henry Samuel Chapman, Richard Davies Ireland, Morgan Augustus McDonnell, Archibald Michie, Robert Le Poer Trench, William Shiel, William Irvine, Isaac Alfred Isaacs, held it twice, Sir Bryan O’Loghlen three times, and George Briscoe Kerford, four times. Alfred Deakin was never Attorney-General, but he was Solicitor-General, taking office 13th November, 1883.

Law has been much changed since federation. New questions have come into State Courts, and old ones have taken a different form. The following are federal issues. From the first we looked to uniform or federal patent, copyright, divorce, and marriage laws. The State has control of lands, agriculture, manufactures, education, prisons, public charities, and all trade and commerce that is within the State. There is no such crime as smuggling within the Commonwealth. We can remember how our
luggage was overhauled at Albury when crossing the border, and how we were made to give up any contraband goods or pay the custom duties. All this is now history.

When federation came we were going to reduce State Parliaments, and, if possible, diminish State Government expenses. We did so. Then there were 95 members of the Legislative Assembly, now there are only 65; then there were 48 members of the Legislative Council, now 34. We were before federation higher in representation than the average American State, now we have come to something like them. There is a danger of being too low, and disenfranchising the people. Federation was rather to relieve the State of the stress of business than to rob it of representation.

The federation, for instance, has taken over the work of old age pensions, the pensioners receive their pensions at the post office, and in this matter of provision for the poor has added an invalid pension, and a maternity allowance. This is a new feature in the life of Melbourne.

Federation simplified the postal system. In place of each State issuing stamps we have but one federal stamp. During the World War they made the terrible blunder of increasing the penny stamp to three half pence. One system of distribution, one staff of officers is undoubtedly economy. The gain in facilities enabled us to face the burden of the war. Nearly as many as 500,000,000 letters and post cards have been delivered in the Commonwealth in a year, and a hundred and forty million newspapers. The one thing that marks Melbourne in connection with this federal work, has been the securing of federal buildings. They are scattered all over the city. The Electoral Office is in the Masonic Buildings, the Foreign Affairs at the corner of Spring Street and Collins Street, the Home Office was at the corner of Collins and Russell Streets, which is now Stott’s Business College. A new postal building has been put up at the corner of Spencer and Bourke Streets. Therefore it will be well when the Federal Government gets into its own city. It may not seem well for Melbourne, but right for the Commonwealth. These years that we have been a federal city will be a great episode in our history.

We are building the Federal Capital in New South Wales. It is situated within a federal territory of 912 square miles, and the capital itself is ten miles square, or 100 square miles. They have resolved to retain the native name. The Labor Government, led by King O’Malley, did this. It puts us in line with Canada, that has Ottawa for its capital. The prize design for Canberra was prepared by an American. The whole designs were on exhibition in Sydney and Melbourne, and in looking over them, one could not but approve of making our Capital a garden city. I thought the provision for a great body of water in the heart of the city was a mistake where the city was to be only within a few miles of Lake George, the largest fresh water lake in Australia. (Lake George dries up without reason)

The plans are to be revised, and we can remedy any feature which is objectionable. One great policy in connection with that capital is that all its land is nationalized, and can only be leased to the occupiers. The unearned increment always goes into the coffers of the Commonwealth.

We see what this means by remarking that John Holder Wedge bought the site of Menzies Hotel, one of our most fashionable hotels, for £67. We have to surrender our position as the capital. We will be true to the compact, and oven hasten its execution, for our future has to be formed on other lines.

Two years ago Frank Tudor passed away. He was a man we saw rise and hold his position, and pass away. He was only a fair speaker, never an orator, and a man of average attainments. He was born in Williamstown, on the 27th of January, 1866, and I never heard him until the first federal election, when he was returned for the Yarra electorate. He was one of the men created by the Labor Party. By trade a felt hatter, and while a journeyman visited and worked both in England and America, getting experience in his trade. He then returned to Melbourne, and was elected President of the Felt Hatters Union. In 1899 he was made President of the Trades Hall Council, and when the Watson Ministry was in power, he was the whip of the Labor Party. He became Minister of Customs in the Fisher Government, and continued as such under Mr. Hughes, until the split came in 1916. When Hughes took the side of conscription, Tudor, to his credit, opposed him, but never surrendered his interest in the recruiting campaigns. His eldest son enlisted on his eighteenth birthday. I saw the whole of
Tudor’s public life. I had been for twenty years a lecturer or preacher when he was elected to the Federal Parliament, and I have watched his career for the last twenty years. I never knew him take any interest in literature or science.

He was an amateur swimmer, and it is said a devout member of the Congregational Church at Richmond, and was personally liked and reputed to be a man of good common sense, but like Trenwith and others in the Labor Party, he has never contributed anything of value to literature, nor personally done a great work. Mr. Tudor was fifty-five years of age when he died on 0th ?? January, 1922 these men are given positions by organizations. Distinguished ministers, writers, doctors, win their place by personal merit, but parties, it may be rightly enough, keep men under the Public eye, who never give us a thought, or contribute materially to any branch of human knowledge. It is to the credit of Sir Henry Parkes that he provided for a man like Kendall, but we have seen many statesmen come and go, who lived for their party, and a thousand a year. William Morris Hughes has never exercised any great influence in our city, and our press did more than any other this year (1923) to throw him out of power. He sits in Parliament for North Sydney. He has been purely a politician, and never been associated with any scientific, literary, religious, or great educational movement.

We turn from thinking of these men to reflect on our contemporary men of science. They have established within the Commonwealth an Association for the Advancement of Science.

Their session of 1913 held in Melbourne, discussed pure food, pharmacy, good medicine, and the diseases prevalent in Australia. They thought about technical education, aviation, Australian botany, zoology, and ethnology. They told us of the geology of Melbourne. One of the names in the old Cemetery is Balcombe, and geologists have called the strata around Newport, Balcombian. They took us to the Northern Territory and to Papua, and went in imagination with our men into the Antarctic regions. Our observatories were reported on. Every visitor goes to that off St. Kilda Road, or rather in the Government Domain. They reported on matters pertaining to the sun, moon, stars, eclipses, transits, and reflected on the memorable visit of Haley’s Comet, and turned prosaically to plead for taking off the tariff on scientific books and instruments, and for restrictions on the exportation of native curios and indigenous animals.

I felt at the time that what was wanted was a great scientific bureau at Canberra. We can commence with it at once, and William Morris Hughes has taken up the project. It should be like the bureau in Washington, which has completed the geological survey of the American continent. Visitors with money going to Washington to seek an opportunity to develop the country are directed to the best mineral lands where they may find gold, silver, lead, iron, copper, and other raw material that may be mined or used in manufactures. These men of science will explore not only the continent but the ocean, and join with other lands in giving information about icebergs, ocean currents, and all else that will safeguard life on land and sea. Since federation meteorological research has made great strides, and stations for observing atmospheric changes are being erected at strategic points all over the continent. These are in touch with our wireless telegraphic stations, and these all over the world. This has come, and is coming with federation. Our daily papers have had weather maps since 1911.

There will have to be associated with our science bureau a labour bureau, especially for men of training and talent, so that every man be usefully and fittingly employed for his own good and for that of his neighbour. We need scientific farming. Americans have developed winter wheat, and each decade they carry the wheat belt further north. We banish disease from the vineyard and the orchard, and the plague from the sheepfold, and recognising the catholicity of science withhold no secret that helps from any community of men. In this spirit we entertained the British Association of Science in 1914, and issued a federal handbook, by which each visitor might familiarize himself with the science and life of Australia. William Bateson presided, and Sir Oliver Lodge spoke eloquently at the Pleasant Sunday Afternoon in Wesley Church. We have not yet a scientific Australian magazine corresponding to the Scientific American, or the English Mechanic and World of Science, but we
have some good scientific journals of proceedings, and monthly papers like the Naturalist. We may include among scientists, the men who invented and built our harvesters and agricultural implements.

Bertram Mackennal is more than an artist, he is a child of both art and science. He designed the coronation medals and the coinage of the present reign, and was the first Australian to be elected Associate of the Royal Academy. On a certain plane he puts us in fuller touch with the Motherland, and has gone to live in London.

I wish I could say that the inventor of the periscope, by which we can see all around, was born in Melbourne, but he was a son of Beach, the sculler, and came from New South Wales. Art and science alone make all men one. We rejoice wherever a victory is won by science, be it in our land or your land. If Sir Oliver Lodge were right, then Sir Joseph Banks might come back to us and learn more than he ever knew in our Botanical Gardens of the Australian flora, and Linnaeus sit down on one of our iron seats and forget his gout, and Erasmus Darwin pull out his pocket book and write a new song of the loves of the flowers.

The old maps of the first explorers showed neither Bass nor Torres Straits. These geographers were not clear as to whether Australia embraced both New Guinea and Van Diemen's Land. We have to separate in order to federate, and we affirm that politically, as naturally Papua and Tasmania belong to our federation, and without any spirit of vengeance, we ask Germany to leave the Pacific. We promise that her culture shall be worldwide. Max Mueller went seeking help in Germany to translate the oldest book in the world and could not get it. He sought it then in Paris, but Renouf could not help him, and so he came with a letter to Baron Bunsen in England, and Bunsen introduced him to the East India Office, and they put him in Oxford, where he married an English woman, and gave his German culture to the world. Leichhardt is ours, and all the Germans that came since the days of Westgarth are welcome here, but federation requires our dominance in the Pacific. We have two places near us both bearing Scotch names, the New Hebrides and New Caledonia, in which France has menaced our welfare by her penal establishments. The condominium has not been satisfactory, and now that we have been faithful to the Alliance, and saved France, she ought to make an exchange or sell us the Islands. We have our full proportion of foreign residents in Melbourne. We realise that we cannot exploit a great continent, and since the days that Westgarth initiated German immigration we have welcomed immigrants from European countries. This has made our present-day Melbourne distinct from early Melbourne, which was purely British. At the present time there are in the Commonwealth, 22,396 persons who were born in Germany, 15,224 from China, 8135 from Italy, 6002 from Denmark, 5025 from Sweden, 4138 from Russia, 3654 from Greece, 3014 from Norway, 2761 from Japan, and about 0,000 from other foreign countries. I do not include India as a foreign country, which is British, and from which have come in this generation about 7000, nor America, which has only given us 6604 of its inhabitants.

America's position is now that she will take no more foreigners that they can republicanize, and our position must be that we will only take these we can colonize and naturalize, and we must fully balance it with immigration from Great Britain. In the same period there have come from England and Wales 459,614, from Scotland 108,756, from Ireland 105,033. About one fifth of our immigration has been foreign. There has been a general intermarriage, and an absorbing of this population. The best foreign influence since the forties has been the German.

They established their Lutheran Church in Melbourne, created the Turn Verein, joined in our educational work, supported the Liedertafel, took part in all great exhibitions, and joined in the welcome to the princes who came here, and materially assisted us in building our suburbs and country districts. They have been naturalized, and their children, part British and part German, fought for us at the front.

The Greek community in Melbourne has secured a strong footing in the catering business. The most of them are also naturalized, and several have married Australian women. Their present minister, the Reverend Irenens Casimatis, informs me that their first consul was Mr. Curtain. He, I take it, was an
Englishman. Their first merchant, Andreas Loukas; their first Christian minister, Dorotheos Bakaliaros. They erected their church on Eastern Hill in Victoria Parade in 1901. They have two clubs, an amateur society, the Orpheus, and a philanthropic Ithacan society, Ulysses. There is a weekly Greek newspaper printed in Greek characters, called The National Bugle.

I taught a number of the Russians in Melbourne to speak English. Some of them were from Siberia, they had been soldiers there. They laughed at me when, during the war, I predicted the Russian Revolution in the Selby and Ross debate, but the Revolution came, and some of my old scholars went back to Russia to assist in upholding the Soviet, but a number have entered into our community, and some stood behind Professor Meredith Atkinson when he raised money to assist the starving people of Russia and Central Europe. The pioneer was familiar with all these foreign countries. Jonathan Binn Were represented a number of them as consul in Melbourne in the eighteen forties.

New Zealand did not come into our federation, although she plays an important part in our life. The Dominion has an office in William Street. When Richard John Seddon came to Melbourne he wrote me a note saying that he intended to establish that office, and it was instituted in 1906, and Mr. H. J. Manson was appointed general agent. Seddon said that the 1200 miles of ocean were twelve hundred arguments against New Zealand entering the federation. New Zealand is more fitted to take the leadership in the formation of a Polynesian confederation, but Australia has control over Lord Howe and Norfolk Islands, which are related to us historically.

It is well to know that Sir Joseph Ward, Baronet., formerly Premier of New Zealand, was born in Melbourne. The Canadian Dominion has also an office in our city. New Zealand has given the Commonwealth, in this generation, 38,011 native born New Zealanders, and Canada has given us 3550 Canadians.

Militarism has transformed us for four years. Our defence and security in the Pacific was assured by federation, and vessels, with little loss, have plied between Canada and Australia.

The foot of a foreign foe has never been planted on our soil. For 100 years Australia has stood before the world free from invasion, nor have we been disturbed by Civil War. One single outburst mars our history, the Eureka Stockade, when the miners of Ballarat rose against oppression, and had one short tilt with the soldiers. We have borne our portion of the expense of defending the empire, and have yet set our face against militarism. Our soldiers have been volunteers, the best dressed, best fed, and best paid men in the British Army, and I believe the most heroic. We volunteered for the Sudan, and then for South Africa. We felt that ours was the duty to volunteer. If the Home Government cared to refuse our help, well and good, but men went from here even in the Crimean War, and their assistance was welcomed. It was then that the Victoria Cross was instituted.

This was our first co-operation with France. For ages we had been her foe. The suburb of St. Kilda was arising, and the streets there were called after the battles, such as Inkerman Street, and what is now a suburb was called Balaclava. One of the vessels that carried supplies to Florence Nightingale was called The Robert Lowe, apparently after the Australian statesman. Admiral Price was in command of the Pacific fleet, and appalled by the largeness of his work, committed suicide at the age of 70.

Australia, while not called on to send contingents, contributed liberally to the patriotic fund, while Manchester was refusing to do so. We twice rejected the Referendum to try and make Australia a conscript country. Melbourne, Northern Melbourne, Port Melbourne, Collingwood, and other working men’s suburbs gave large majorities for No Conscription, but it was not Victoria but New South Wales that so heavily turned the scale against compulsion.

Melbourne is represented in the Federal Parliament by Dr. Maloney, a socialist. The Labor Party has never objected to a citizen soldiership. They put the compulsory clauses into the Defence Act, which demands compulsory service within the Commonwealth. All of us contend that our boys should be trained while at school to use a rifle, but a number have protested against encroaching on the boy’s time after he goes to work, and compelling him to come out at night time and parade the streets. This was a new thing in Melbourne, and our police reports prove it to have been the largest cause of juvenile
crime in the history of Australia. The Freedom League charged the Defence Department with having arrested twenty-two thousand boys, and imprisoning three thousand four hundred of them. The old cadet movement is full of pleasant memories, and the scout movement is of real service to us, developing the mind and body of the boy, and we with genuine sincerity welcomed Baden Powell, its founder, to Australia.

If the millions received by the State, when the Braddon clause in the constitution became inoperative, had been devoted to developing the volunteer system and the fostering of gun clubs, then when the war broke out we would have found men trained to arms all over the Commonwealth. Melbourne stands for a citizen soldieryship sustained by the enthusiasm of free will service, like unto that given by the naval and military men sleeping in the Old Cemetery.

Our present fleet has been called an Australian navy. There can be only one navy, the British. Think of an American calling Uncle Sam’s navy after Texas or Massachusetts, instead of the United States navy. There in only one navy, the National Navy. remember the commencement of the Australian fleet. A quarter of a century ago. I attended a banquet given to Sir Samuel Griffith in Charters Towers, Queensland, and spoke to the toast of the health of the navy, and I still support that toast. I remember quoting the words of Paine, That for a commercial nation to go to war, was like a shopkeeper putting a dog at his door to frighten away his customers, and arguing that our navy should be purely for defence. I remember Commodore French asking me if I thought that their little Peluma would ever be a source of offence. I thought it might grow into a big fleet, and it has grown. In the first year of our federation we spent £801,000 on defence, in 1912 £4,082,000, in 1913 £4,331,000, and arranged for a future expenditure on the fleet, stretching over a number of years, of £88,000,000.

The first product of our policy was The Sydney, that destroyed The Emden, and we have a cruiser called The Melbourne. This is better than calling the fleet the Australian navy. The navy is federal, and our cities can be represented in it by ships. The laws of the Commonwealth apply to vessels sailing in Australian waters, and the Labor Party is seeking to enforce union conditions on the great passenger ships entering our ports. How matters have changed since Fawkner’s party tethered their vessel to a tree on the Yarra Bank. This control of the sea brings us to national federation. If we want our progressive views to prevail in the shipping industry, then we must be equitably represented in the great council of the empire, the Federal Parliament.

Alfred Deakin is reported to have said that Home Rule for Ireland must come before Imperial Federation. This was a piece of narrow political sectarianism. The United Kingdom can only have one form of State Government, and when Ireland has State Government so should England, Scotland and Wales. Our security is in the Motherland having a Federation, or at least State Governments like our own. Thus the federal problem should bring separation in England on a large principle. Say twelve States for England, two for Wales, three for Scotland, and four for Ireland, and all represented in the Imperial Parliament on the basis of population. How essential it is that we should be there is not alone seen in our desire to have a voice in the terms of peace, but also in many civil matters. Richard Seddon opposed the introduction of the Chinese into the mines of South Africa. He thought that their introduction would react on Australia and New Zealand. To settle such a question it would have to be discussed in an Imperial Parliament, which I prefer to call a National Parliament, where the representatives of South Africa could meet those of Australia and New Zealand, and discuss the position. Every day in Australia we are face to face with federal problems. The Presbyterians here say that it is their money which is financing the missions in the contiguous islands, Norfolk, Lord Howe, New Hebrides, and New Caledonia. Under national federation that problem can easily be solved, and all our interests watched. America is stretching her arms across the Pacific. We meet at Samoa and Honolulu. It is necessary that some clear understanding should exist towards bringing about Anglo-Saxon union. We welcomed their fleet in the beginning of this century. We are now involved in peace and war. Her difficulties in the Philippines are ours in India. One statesman is reported by Stead to have suggested that if we got into a hopeless muddle we could haul down our flag, but there is a better alliance with America.
Japan is our ally, and we have made her America’s ally, and secured peace in the Pacific, and to this and our men should be at the centre to secure certain alliances. We cannot pass laws that contravene British treaties, therefore we must have a voice in the making of them. We will not hamper the central authority, or tie its hands by imprudent laws, but claim a full fellowship in England’s foreign or world policy. Moreover, the fact that we are in pawn to British moneylenders, that we owe them many hundreds of millions, demands an imperial shekel, and a national system of federation. The United States of America have a hundred million represented in Congress. It therefore would not be difficult to have the seventy-five million white people in the Empire represented on a basis of population in the Imperial Parliament. Therefore we ask for constitutional federation, with Australia having as many members in the Central Parliament in proportion to its population as England, Scotland, Ireland, or Wales.

Germany has a population of sixty millions of people. These are crowded up against other millions in Austria, speaking the same language. Let us offer the German people, who have accepted democracy, a place in the sun, a wider field. We have seized this great estate in Australia for mankind. Melbourne is human, has always been human, although she has sometimes, through lack of understanding, maltreated individuals. Let us offer the democratic Germans a home among us. Why should we not have as many immigrants from the northern part of Europe to Australia as from any one of the three kingdoms. America has been doing this, and still the Anglo Saxon mind predominates. In the second generation they are Americans. They take their language, adopt their habits and customs, and in the second generation are entirely with us. To this end was Motley’s History of the Dutch Republic written. This is better than building dreadnoughts (Battle Ships) or encouraging the spirit of antagonism. We have fought well, and the complement of that is no enemy after the battle. In the Melbourne Turn Vere in and in the Adelaide Liedertafel are good citizens who have fostered the musical life of both cities.

Some say the Liedertafel in Adelaide has the best singers in Australia. We have all had German friends whom we love, and if we do not offer to Germany an outlet, we have failed in our mission to ourselves, for we build for mankind. To that end our marvellous city. Germany does not need, never did need, to fight for a place in the sun. We give it to her, and immigration from Britain is but solidarity. Liardet builds his hotel at Port Melbourne to entertain visitors. They immigrate, we emigrate, the tide ebbs and flows to and from the motherland. If we take their mechanics they train our singers. The Cecil Rhodes Scholarship is based on this idea, and on this principle English, Scotch, and Irish professors are and have been in our Melbourne University. No longer shall we have assisted immigration for helping capital. Our policy henceforth is national fellowship and federation. The solidarity of the empire. To that end we have sought the Imperial Zollverein, and the Imperial Krieg Verein. Surely the eight hour committee did well when it used to offer for a prize in its lottery a trip around the world. This was the reward of a lucky number in their Art Union. Let us all aim at having one trip in our lives to London. Thus Englishmen will know fully our character, and we theirs. They will see the land of the morning, and we will study their historic places. Cromwell, Hampden, Pitt, Milton, Shakespeare, Burns, and Moore will be ours, and our statesmen theirs. This sentiment precedes national federation.

We have gone for the Nationalisation of certain great utilities, and the Imperial Government has found the necessity of doing the same with their submarine cables, their wireless telegraphy, and imperial postage. Later the mail steamer falls in line, and all barriers are broken down that stand in the way of human brotherhood. The world will yet speak one language, and that language will be English, that of liberty and brotherhood. Great linguists, like Grimm and Max Mueller, acknowledge that it is the most perfect vehicle of human thought on earth.

There is no reason why we should not federate at once. It cannot be said we have not men to represent us, because long ago Robert Lowe went home from New South Wales, and took the leadership of the conservatives, and Hugh Culling Eardley Childers went from Victoria and became a Cabinet Minister in a Liberal Government. We have men capable of taking a place in the National Parliament. Sir George Reid proved that, and the colonial Premiers at the Imperial Conferences,
This is the next step to the goal. The League of Nations will not do it. It is only preparatory to world federation. When Otis led the party in the American Revolution in separation from Britain he cried aloud, “The goal is a world Venice.” Our goal first an oceanic empire, then a world brotherhood. The time has come. We stand at the critical period of imperial history. The Motherland altering her Parliament to realise the hope of Anglo-Saxon unity. To promote that unity, to advance the original ideals of our race, America has returned to us. We as a Teutonic people started with folk debates (moots), hundred debates (moots,) county debates (moots), and a supreme council of wise men, a witenagemot, that by election, made Alfred the founder of the English Monarchy, King. Step by step representative government passes on from the family to the council of the world, and as Rome, Jerusalem and Athens were the cities of empire, so Melbourne, named after England’s Prime Minister, becomes one.

There is an occult influence in the life of Melbourne that I have not attempted to follow, because I do not understand it and I am not under its influence, + but have often felt it operate against me. This narrative I have written in memory of better times. Let those who know the other tell the story of mysterious Melbourne.

The End

SONNET OF OLD ENGLAND.

Old comrades say there is no land like France,
The Marseillaise makes all the world its friend,
America helps science to advance,
Great Russia seems to look toward the end.
Each to his ideal, the common goal for all.
We measure them by that high holy aim,
Humanity’s plain, just, fraternal call,
When under one true flag we are the same.
And so we say old England leads the world.
She built her ocean fort, and made her island free,
World-wide her federated Flag unfurled
Liberating the broad circuit of the sea.
Demanding freedom for man, bond and thrall.
And to that end, old England led them all.
THE MAYORS OF MELBOURNE

The following are the Mayors of Melbourne:-

1842-1844, Henry Condell;
1844-45, Henry Moor;
1845-40, James Frederick Palmer;
1845-47, Henry Moor; 1847-48, Andrew Russell;
1847-49, William Montgomerie Bell;
1849-50, Augustus Frederick Adolphus Grooves;
1850-51, William Nicholson;
1851-53, John Thomas Smith;
1853-54, John Hodgson;
1854-50, John Thomas Smith;
1850-57, Peter Davies;
1857-58, John Thomas Smith;
1858-59, Henry Sellers;
1859-00, Richard Eades;
1800-01, John Thomas Smith;
1801-02, Robert Bennett;
1802-03, Edward Cohen;
1803-04, John Thomas Smith;
1804-05, George Wragge;
1805-00, William Bayles;
1800-07, William Williams;
1807-08, James Stewart Butters;
1808-09, Thomas Moubray;
1809-70, James Amess;
1870-71, Thomas McPherson;
1871-72, Orlando Fenwick;
1872-73, Thomas O'Grady;
1873-74, John McLlwraith;
1874-75, James Gatehouse;
1875-75, Alexander Kennedy Smith;
1870-77, James Patterson;
1877-78, John Pigdon;
1878-79, Joseph Story;
1879-81, George Meares;
1881-82, Cornelius Job Ham;
1882-83, James Dodgshun;
1883-84, Charles Smith;
1884-85, Godfrey Downes Carter;
1885-80, James Cooper Stew art;
1880-87, William Cain;
1887-89, Benjamin Benjamin (Knighted in second term);
1889-92, Matthew Lang;
1892-95, Arthur Snowden (Knighted in third term);
1895-97, William Strong;
1897-1900, Malcolm Donald McEacharn (Knighted in third term);
1900-92, Sir Samuel Gillott. Lord Mayors
1902-3, Sir Samuel Gillott;
1903-4, Sir M. 1). McEacharn;
1904-8, Henry Weedon (knighted during third term);
1908-10, James Burston;
1910-12, Thomas James Davey;
1913-17, David Valentine Hennessy (Knighted in his third term);
1917-18, Frank Stapley;
1918-19, William Whyte Cabena;
1919-20, J. G. Aikman;
1920-23, J. W. Swanson (Knighted in third term);
1923,